The History of the Nutter Family
The History of the

Nutter

Family

Including Histories of the Following Families

Bachiler  Coleman  Downing
Efland    Fabyan   Field
Furber    Gibbs    Hall
Ham       Hatch    Heard
Hull      Huntress Langstaff
Leighton  Nute     Phillips
Pickering Richardson Shackford
Sharp     Tillman  Trickey
Willix    Woodman

by

Roger D. Hunt

Copyright © 1998
All Rights Reserved
Roger D. Hunt
1060 Mordred Ct.
Tillamook, OR 97141
Acknowledgments

The preparation of a book such as this would not be possible without the assistance of many. I am deeply indebted to the numerous friendly, helpful individuals in libraries, county courthouses, state archives, museums and all the other places I found to scrounge just one more record about the Nutter and related families. With most of them, I never knew their names; but without their help, the content of this book would be sorely lacking.

For those who were forced to endure my legendary impatience, I apologize. In the summer of 1997, a clerk in the courthouse in Franklin County, Illinois spent nearly half an hour trying to convince me that the typewritten records she had directed me to were the original county marriage records dating back before the Civil War. I spent the same amount of time trying to convince her that our pioneer ancestors did not own IBM Selectric typewriters. Finally, after a considerable amount of wrangling, she checked with other clerks and was able to produce old ledgers with the original handwritten marriage entries. When I requested copies of two pages, I got them, at two dollars per page. She gets no apology.

A special thanks to Rex Nutter, Marilyn Nutter Pederson and Jan Nutter Alpert and other Nutter researchers for their contribution to this work. Jan Alpert has printed the Nutter Newsletter for years at her own expense and deserves the thanks of every genealogist that follows this family line.
# TABLE OF CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Introduction</td>
<td>i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Foreword</td>
<td>vii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 1. THE EARLY EXPLORATION OF NEW ENGLAND</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 2. THE NUTTER FAMILY ARRIVES IN AMERICA</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 3. THE NEXT FIVE GENERATIONS OF NUTTERS</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 4. THE RICHARDSON FAMILY</td>
<td>41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 5. JOSEPH RICHARDSON AND GRAFTON NUTTER</td>
<td>58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 6. THE FURBER FAMILY</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 7. THE HULL, HEARD AND NUTE FAMILIES</td>
<td>81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 8. NEHEMIAH FURBER AND THE LEIGHTON FAMILY</td>
<td>105</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 9. THE FABYAN AND RELATED FAMILIES</td>
<td>119</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 10. THE FIELD, DOWNING, HATCH AND WOODMAN FAMILIES</td>
<td>142</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 11. THE COLEMAN, BRACKETT AND JOHNSON FAMILIES</td>
<td>165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 12. RICHARD FURBER AND OTHER RELATED FAMILIES</td>
<td>176</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 13. LEVI AND WILLIAM FURBER</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 14. THE NUTTER FAMILY MOVES WEST</td>
<td>213</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 15. THE TILGHMAN AND DRYDEN FAMILIES</td>
<td>226</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 16. THE GRAVES, SHARP AND TILLMAN FAMILIES</td>
<td>238</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 17. THE EFLAND AND GIBBS FAMILIES</td>
<td>258</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 18. THE WILEY AND RICHARDSON FAMILIES</td>
<td>281</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 19. ALEXANDER WILEY RICHARDSON</td>
<td>298</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 20. PHILLIPS AND WALKER FAMILIES</td>
<td>315</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 21. LEWIS PHILLIPS</td>
<td>333</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 22. WILLIAM H. NUTTER</td>
<td>350</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 23. NELLIE BLY NUTTER</td>
<td>363</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bibliography LIST OF REFERENCES USED</td>
<td>379</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ancestral Chart</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Index to Key Family Names</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

Fig. 1. The 1634 will of Anthony Nutter of Woodkirk Parish in England
Fig. 2. Map of Dover Neck in New Hampshire colony
Fig. 3. Site of the Dover "meeting house" and home of Hatevil Nutter
Fig. 4. Inventory of the estate of Hatevil Nutter
Fig. 5. The First Settlers Burying Ground of Dover
Fig. 6. Township map of New Hampshire
Fig. 7. Map of Strafford County, New Hampshire
Fig. 8. Old map showing the region around the Piscataqua River
Fig. 9. A gift deed from Joseph Richardson3 of Newbury to his son Joseph4
Fig. 10. A 1800 map of the Lake Winnipesaukee region of New Hampshire
Fig. 11. The township of Moultonborough, New Hampshire
Fig. 12. The 1769 deed where Joseph Richardson bought land at Moultonborough
Fig. 13. The 1794 deed where Grafton Nutter bought his land at Tuftonborough
Fig. 14. Map of Tuftonborough township where Grafton Nutter lived
Fig. 15. Old lighthouse at Pemaquid Point on the coast of Maine
Fig. 16. Old map of the Bloody Point area of Dover, New Hampshire
Fig. 17. Old drawing of the Cochecho area of Dover showing garrison locations
Fig. 18. The Newington Town Church today and a commemorative placard about it
Fig. 19. Drawing of the pew locations in the old Newington Parish Church
Fig. 20. Copy of the Newington town records mentioning family of Nehemiah Furber
Fig. 21. Old drawing showing the land owned by Samuel Huntress
Fig. 22. Map of Kittery (now Eliot), Maine, where Dennis Downing lived
Fig. 23. Burial site of Edward Woodman in Newbury, Massachusetts
Fig. 24. Map of locations of early settlers at Rowley, Massachusetts
Fig. 25. The Revolutionary War pension record for "General" Richard Furber
Fig. 26. The 1775 muster list for the New Hampshire militia from Wolfeborough
Fig. 27. Deed of land passed from Nehemiah Furber to his son Levi
Fig. 28. The Newington town records showing the family of Levi Furber
Fig. 29. Probate record for Levi Furber
Fig. 30. Old map of original land grants at Rochester, New Hampshire
Fig. 31. One of several legal judgments against William Furber6
Fig. 32. A map of Illinois showing Madison and Macoupin counties
Fig. 33. Township and section numbering system
Fig. 34. Federal land tract book showing land purchased by Joseph R. Nutter
Fig. 35. The 1850 census showing the family of Joseph R. Nutter
Fig. 36. Plat map of Bunker Hill, Illinois area
Fig. 37. Enlarged plat map of Bunker Hill showing the farm of Joseph R. Nutter
Fig. 38. The home of Glenn Scroggins in Bunker Hill, Illinois
Fig. 39. Death certificate for Joseph R. Nutter
Fig. 40. The Nutter monument in Bunker Hill Cemetery
Fig. 41. Another view of the monument of Joseph R. Nutter
Fig. 42. The commemorative grave marker for John Graves in Tennessee
Fig. 43. Historical markers that commemorate the site of Sharp's Station
Fig. 44. The Revolutionary War pension record for Tobias Tillman
Fig. 45. Map of Germany showing the location of Grumbach
Fig. 46. The passenger list for the ship *Phoenix* in 1754
Fig. 47. Roadside markers along Emory Road northeast of Knoxville, Tennessee
Fig. 48. The old log house owned by Nicholas Gibbs and built about 1793
Fig. 49. The 1810 will of Nicholas Gibbs
Fig. 50. Tombstones of Nicholas Gibbs and David Gibbs and wife
Fig. 51. Birth register of the First Presbyterian Church of Philadelphia
Fig. 52. A 1765 deed in which John Wiley sold his 400 acres to his sons
Fig. 53. The early settlements of Augusta County, Virginia
Fig. 54. Evolution of Augusta County, Virginia into other counties
Fig. 55. Map of Washington County, Virginia about 1870
Fig. 56. The 1809 will of Alexander Wiley
Fig. 57. Old map showing the Powell and Clinch Rivers of Virginia
Fig. 58. Marriage bond for Alexander Wiley Richardson and Elizabeth Gibbs
Fig. 59. A drawing of Black Hawk
Fig. 60. Shawneetown Land Office records showing land purchased by A.W. Richardson
Fig. 61. Township map of Franklin County, Illinois
Fig. 62. The graves of Isaac and Robert Richardson, buried at Nashville
Fig. 63. The 160 acres of land that A.W. Richardson owned in Labette County
Fig. 64. The Richardson Cemetery in Labette County, Kansas
Fig. 65. A map of Kentucky about the time the Revolutionary War ended
Fig. 66. A map of the Indiana Territory about 1800
Fig. 67. Drawing showing land claims of early settlers of Hardin County, Illinois
Fig. 68. Service record for Jacob Phillips in the War of 1812
Fig. 69. Family record written in 1886 mentioning Jacob Phillips and his brother
Fig. 70. Locations of land claims of early settlers in Franklin County, Illinois
Fig. 71. Jacob Phillips' entries in the Federal land tract book at Shawneetown, Illinois
Fig. 72. Drawing of the northeast corner of Northern Township in Franklin County, Illinois
Fig. 73. The location of the old Jacob Phillips homestead and his watermill
Fig. 74. Gilgal Cemetery on what was once the Jacob Phillips homestead
Fig. 75. The house that Peter Phillips built just before leaving for the Civil War
Fig. 76. George M. Phillips in his Civil-War vintage home
Fig. 77. Marriage records of Lewis Phillips and Sarah Richardson
Fig. 78. A "Bit Act" land entry for Lewis Phillips
Fig. 79. Map showing location of the counties in Missouri
Fig. 80. Location of Lewis Phillips' land in Jasper County, Missouri
Fig. 81. Fraudulent mining contract that Lewis Phillips signed in 1873
Fig. 82. John A. Logan, who Lewis Phillips tried to influence
Fig. 83. The grave of Lewis Phillips in Dove Cemetery near Hallowell, Kansas
Fig. 84. Lewis Phillips' wife, the former Sarah Richardson, and a grandson
Fig. 85. Some of the children of Lewis and Sarah Phillips
Fig. 86. Florence Phillips in 1896 and with husband Aaron Wells in 1913
Fig. 87. Sarah E. Phillips as a young woman
Fig. 88. William H. Nutter as a young man with his older brother James
Fig. 89. 1875 map of Pike County, Missouri showing where William H. Nutter lived
Fig. 90. The land that William H. Nutter owned in Pike County, Missouri
Fig. 91. Marriage record of William H. Nutter to his second wife, Ann King
Fig. 92. Identical tombstones for the first two wives of William H. Nutter
Fig. 93. Deed where William H. Nutter sold his farm in Pike County, Missouri
Fig. 94. Letter from William H. Nutter to his former brother-in-law in 1885
Fig. 95. Drawing of the Indian nations in the Indian Territory, now Oklahoma
Fig. 96. Marriage record for first marriage of Sarah E. Phillips
Fig. 97. Edward C. Jones in 1908, the year that he committed suicide
Fig. 98. The death certificate for Eddie Jones
Fig. 99. Old newspaper article about the suicide of Eddie Jones
Fig. 100. Court record giving guardianship of Hugh A. Nutter to his uncle
Fig. 101. Two old photographs of a young Hugh A. Nutter, Nellie's half brother
Fig. 102. Two photos of Hugh Nutter with his wife and adopted daughter
Fig. 103. Hugh Nutter late in life in Galesburg, Illinois
Fig. 104. Rare photos of William H. Nutter at work at Clarke Bros. Florists
Fig. 105. Various photos of Sarah (Phillips) Nutter, including with her last husband
Fig. 106. 1927 map of southeast Portland showing where the Nutters lived
Fig. 107. House that Andy C. Nutter built in 1912 in the Brentwood area of southeast Portland
Fig. 108. Andy C. Nutter and his wife, the former Emma Koontz
Fig. 109. The five surviving children of William H. Nutter and Sarah E. Phillips
Fig. 110. The legendary Nellie Bly, for whom Nellie Nutter was named
Fig. 111. Marriage record for Nellie Bly Nutter and Clyde Van Blaricom
Fig. 112. Studio portrait of Clyde Van Blaricom and Nellie Nutter
Fig. 113. Portrait of Clyde and Nellie Van Blaricom, with their oldest children
Fig. 114. Photo of Nellie Van Blaricom and two of her children
Fig. 115. The Van Blaricom brothers and sisters and Nellie's golden wedding anniversary
Fig. 116. Cle and Sherben Van Blaricom during World War II
Fig. 117. Letter from the War Department confirming the death of Sherben
Fig. 118. Telegram sent to the family notifying them that Ervin had been wounded
Fig. 119. Nellie and the "kids"
INTRODUCTION

It was once said that the easiest way to have your family tree traced is to run for public office. Since I have no desire to do that, I did it the old fashioned way, with a lot of work. This book attempts to document the history of the Nutter family from the time of the arrival of the original immigrant ancestor (who came to America in the 1630s) until the present day. In the chapters that follow, I will attempt to trace the generations and movements of the Nutter and the numerous other related families as they slowly moved across the continent, to finally settle in Oregon just after the turn of the twentieth century.

As the compiler of this work, let me confess that I am not a professional genealogist, but rather a family historian who has made every effort to ensure that the facts as they are stated are accurate. I am an amateur genealogist who has not attempted to follow all formal protocols with regard to a professionally-prepared genealogy. Having read a great many genealogical documents in the course of my research, I can personally attest to their general "dryness" and lack of emotion. Perhaps it is not possible to instill a feeling of excitement into any historical work, let alone a family history, but I have attempted to document the historical beginnings of our family by including not just the necessary "who-begat-who" data but also important information about what was occurring at the time, how the people lived, and other relevant information about the everyday lives of our ancestors.

Many of the Nutter ancestors described in this book were among the very earliest of settlers of New England, where they struggled simply to survive in the bleak wilderness. After the Mayflower and the settlement of the Plymouth Colony, immigration in the 1620s amounted to only a few hundred arrivals. In 1630, seven hundred settlers arrived at Massachusetts Bay, but it wasn't until 1634 that the movement of English men and women reached the rate of two to three thousand per year. By the end of 1635, the estimated population of the English settlers in the colonies was five to six thousand. In his book "Ould Newbury", published in 1896, historian John J. Currier wrote of these early settlers: "Their descendants can have but a faint idea of the difficulties they encountered, and of the dangers that continually hung over their heads, threatening every moment to overwhelm them like a torrent, and sweep them, with those whom they dearly loved, to the silent tomb." This work will make an attempt to describe the conditions under which the early settler lived.

One could argue that the real history of the American colonies and the United States does not consist of Presidents, large landowners, generals, battles and treaties. The real history of this country was written by the common man, a farmer going about his everyday business of living. Our Nutter ancestors, as well as the many other direct ancestors with different surnames, were common people. We have no famous ancestors, no Supreme Court Justices or famous generals. Rather, our ancestors were primarily uneducated dirt farmers who were the real driving force in this country's history and evolvement. Looking at their history is like looking at American history through a microscope. Each family is like a single cell in the body of America. Their family story, repeated millions of times with the stories of families with other names, is America's history.

The reader will find that in this book there are historical chapters interspersed with biographical chapters. To study the genealogy of any family is to study history; it is not possible to separate the two. In order to appreciate why families made the decisions they made or moved as they did, one must have a careful understanding of the times in which they lived. The historical chapters contain primarily information about the times during which our ancestors lived and what was going on in
the country or the world around them. The biographical chapters mostly contain information about the Nutter and related families, who their children were, who they married, where they lived, what they did for a living and so forth. Please note that there will be overlap between these two types of chapters, i.e., the reader may find some historical information in a biographical chapter and vice versa.

A notation included at the bottom of each page in the following chapters will indicate the primary focus of the chapter the reader is about to experience, as indicated by a "HIST" or "BIOG" marking at the bottom of the page. This will permit those readers who are totally allergic to history to skip the appropriate chapters. Many chapters will have the notation "BIOG/HIST", indicating a combination of both types of chapters. Also as a suggestion to the reader, keep a good atlas handy while reading this book. Knowing where some of the events occurred that are described in this work may heighten the reader's enjoyment. And keep an eye on the ancestral chart while reading this book; it will help you from getting lost in the forest of people. The ancestral chart can be found at the back of the book.

Except for dates given in quoted sources, the reader will find that most dates are given in the format most commonly used in genealogy: dd-MMM-yyyy. Therefore, dates are stated as "11 Dec 1834" or "11 December 1834" instead of "December 11, 1834". The reader will also find a number of common abbreviations associated with dates used in genealogy, such as "b." (born), "bap." or "bapt." (baptized), "m." or "marr." (married), "d." (died), and "bur." (buried).

One of the largest problems for genealogists are dates that differ in two or more record sources. If the difference in two conflicting dates could not be resolved by double checking the sources, the date that seems most likely to be correct has been used in this work, or in some cases, both dates are referenced. While on the subject of dates, the reader of this work will often encounter dates such as "12 February 1692/3". This has to do with the fact that, before 1752, Britain and her colonies used the ecclesiastical Julian calendar. With this calendar, New Years Day fell on March 25th, exactly nine months before Christmas, and celebrated the conception of Jesus. Since the year began in March, it was considered the first month of the year and February the last. For the purpose of maintaining a calendar, March 1 was considered the first day of the year.

Since before 1752 the year changed on the first of March and not the first of January, a date written "12 February 1692/3" is a way of indicating the date under both the old and new calendar. With the old Julian calendar, the date would have been recognized as falling in the last month of the year 1692. Today, we would recognize the same date as being in second month of the year 1693. Britain and the colonies converted to the Gregorian calendar in 1752, setting January 1st as the first day of the year. Therefore, dates given after 1752 will not have the double-dating designation. The reader will also encounter dates like "1784-5" as an example. This type of date indicates a range of dates, and in the example given means "either the year 1784 or 1785".

The reader will also notice the use of small superscript numbers in conjunction with the names of many ancestors, especially those that have common names or where confusion with others with the same or similar name may result. The significance of this technique is the generation from the first known ancestor. Thus the reader may encounter a reference to Grafton Nutter⁹, which indicates he is a sixth generation Nutter from the immigrant ancestor for that family. Because it was very common to name sons after their fathers and grandfathers, such numbers will assist the reader in
keeping track of ancestors from each generation.

Controversies exist in genealogy as well as in almost all forms of human endeavor. Where disagreements between genealogical researchers exist, I have noted them. In some cases, the answer may never be known. In others, my own research has led me to take a side in such controversies. As with most published genealogical works, this document relies heavily upon the research of others in addition to a considerable amount of original research. In most cases, where the research done by others appeared to be of high quality and generally beyond reproach, the result of that research has been used in this work without further checking. To the extent that errors exist in these other works, then they exist in this document as well.

However, in a number of cases, I have resisted using sources that would have furthered the ancestral tree because such sources appeared poorly documented or were based solely upon family legend. Family legends or traditions are notorious for being fraught with inaccuracy. Two quotations do a good job of summarizing my personal disdain for family legends. Henry Thoreau wrote "the rarest quality in an epitaph is truth." And Mark Twain once said "when I was younger, I could remember anything, whether it happened or not." The sources for my information, organized by chapter, have been carefully cited in a bibliography at the end of the book.

In genealogy, you can trace some of your ancestors back to very early times, depending upon the number of records that are extant (i.e., have not been destroyed or lost) and the amount of work that you are willing to expend in uncovering those records. However, one eventually reaches a point where further research generally proves fruitless. Unless one's family descends from European royalty, it is uncommon for written records of any kind to exist much before about the year 1500. My research has uncovered a few ancestors born before 1600, including one born before 1300, but most of the ancestral tree will stop in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries.

In a few cases, I am quite certain that I know who a particular ancestor's parents might be, but I have only indirect or onomastic (same name) evidence with which to prove the parentage. There is not the "preponderance of evidence" necessary to accept the lineage of the suspected ancestor. In these situations, I have noted who I think the ancestor is, and will leave it to other researchers to prove or disprove the assumption. In adhering to accepted genealogical practice, however, I do not report that suspected ancestor as "fact".

Regarding evidence, in many if not most cases there is a lack of complete evidence in attempting to determine the ancestry of someone born several centuries ago. I was struck by a quote made by the noted historian Henry W. Hardon regarding the evidence of the parentage of people that he had researched. He said that the fact that such evidence "is largely circumstantial is of no moment. Persons have been hanged on circumstantial evidence. In one respect, clearly proved circumstantial evidence is superior to direct evidence, for circumstances cannot lie while witnesses can." For the record, I concur totally with this statement.

It should be noted that the compiler of a genealogy for any family may be accused of being "sexist", i.e., focusing on the males of the family rather than the females. The accusation is quite accurate, but only because old records seldom mention the female members of a family with the exception of marriage records and occasionally wills or the sale of property. Our family had a few exceptional women among its ranks and considerable effort was taken to give them their just reward.
and tell as much as is known about them.

The pioneer female, especially the frontier women who lived far from the early eastern seaboard towns, followed her man wherever he chose to go. Many a pioneer wife married a man with an itchy foot. It was the common lot of the frontier woman; better to go and share it with him. Moving the family to a place of better opportunity every few years was a life the wives of many of the pioneers grew to know well. Something beyond the mountains always whispered. The pioneer man heard of distant lands and knew that he had to go there. For the pioneer woman, it was marry your man and then follow him. Bear his children. Feed him. Watch his cattle. Lend a hand with the farm. Milk, churn, weave, sew. Mold his bullets. Load his rifles when the shooting got rapid enough to demand it. Resist the Indians yourself when necessary. Watch your husband set out again and again into the forests, where death, torture or captivity always loomed a real possibility. Child rearing aside, without the pioneer women to support their men, none of this story could be told.

The reader will need to understand the concept of primogeniture, which was an old common law system of inheritance widely practiced in Britain and colonial America whereby the eldest son inherited his father's property, excluding all other sons or daughters. A great many of our ancestors were either the benefactors or victims of primogeniture, depending upon whether they happened to be the oldest son or not. Thomas Jefferson, himself initially a victim of primogeniture and then its beneficiary upon the death of his older brother, vigorously opposed the practice and saw legislation that he had written in 1777 abolishing primogeniture passed by the Virginia House of Burgesses in 1785. Within a few years, every new state government had followed Virginia's lead, and no subsequent state ever seriously considered allowing it.

The spelling of names in very old records, when only a small portion of the population was literate, is always very interesting. In all cases, quoted records use the original spelling as it appeared in the record source; the reader should not assume that the use of a strange spelling is a mistake, but rather the correct reporting of recorded names. Likewise, when quoting historical accounts, the original text is reproduced here, complete with misspellings and bad sentence structure, except when changes were absolutely necessary for the quoted text to be even marginally readable. In other words, whenever the reader encounters text in quotation marks, he or she must assume that the presence of grammatical errors and misspellings is, in fact, accurate.

Some of the spelling that you will see in this document will probably amaze you. On the frontier, when few could read and write, marginally literate people were often thrust into jobs of creating public records, which they probably never dreamed might be read by others one or two hundred years later. Take, for example, the census worker who was obviously proud of his skill in that job when he wrote: "I am a census takers for the city of Bufflow. Our City has groan very fast in resent years & now in 1865, it has become a hard & time consuming job to count all the peephill. There are not many that con do this werk, as it is nesessarie to have an ejucashun, wich a lot of pursons still do not have. Anuther atribeart needed for this job is god spelling, for mens of the pephill to be counted can hardle speek inglish, let alon spel there names." I can think of absolutely nothing to add to his statement.

I once read about another family historian who, while researching his family, discovered that an ancestor had been publicly hanged for some offense. Very reluctant to include that fact in his written history, the person wrote: "He died during a public ceremony, when the platform upon
which he was standing collapsed beneath him." The validity of this anecdote cannot be verified, but whether it's true or not, you will find no such vanity in this work. Things will be told as they were discovered. But to put the reader at ease, no ancestor of which I am aware was ever hanged. Further, I would like to go on record as saying that I experience some degree of sadness over this fact, since it would have been great fun to write about.

My personal interest in the historical beginnings of my family began in 1985 and I have continued researching the origins of our family ancestors since then. The number of hours that have gone into the research necessary for the preparation of this book, as well as the expenses incurred in its preparation, are more numerous that I like to think about. But as anyone who has attempted a work such as this knows, it is a labor of love. I can only hope that the reader receives a fraction of the pleasure in reading this book as I had in preparing it.

August 30, 1998

Roger D. Hunt
1060 Mordred Ct.
Tillamook, OR 97141
(503) 663-7964
He that hath no fools, knaves or beggars in his family was begot by a flash of lightning.

Old Proverb
This book is about the Nutter family and its many related families. The surname Nutter is very uncommon. If you have a Nutter ancestor and you meet someone with that name, you can be quite confident that you're probably related to that person. According to the 1990 census, the Nutter surname ranks 4550 among the most common surnames encountered in this country. Only about 0.003% of the population in America today carry the name.

Our original ancestor with that name was Hatevil Nutter, who sailed to modern-day New Hampshire in the 1630s. Hatevil (pronounced "Hate-evil" and often spelled that way), combined with Nutter, made for a most unusual name, and one not likely ever to be encountered except for our ancestor. The source of the Puritan name Hatevil almost certainly is from the Bible, where for instance, Psalms 97:10 tells us that "Ye that love the Lord hate evil".

An article in the January 1993 New England Historical and Genealogical Register (NEHGR) titled "A Child by Any Other Name" mentions the name Hatevil with the comment: "Two negatives may make a positive, but 'Hate Evil' does seem an undue burden for a child to bear. What, for instance, does one use for a nickname? Hate? Evil?" The article, written to poke fun at some of the very strange names encountered in 146 years of publishing the NEHGR, draws attention to some other almost unbelievable names encountered in Puritanical New England. These names, too strange to make up, were those used by very real people:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Name</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Howlong Harris</td>
<td>Wait a While Makepeace</td>
<td>Faintnot Wise</td>
<td>Freegift Tilden</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Freegift Tilden</td>
<td>Worthy Price</td>
<td>Wealthy Miser</td>
<td>Thanks Shepard</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thankslord Shepard</td>
<td>Praisever Turner</td>
<td>Thanks Phelps</td>
<td>Hallelujah Brown</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hallelujah Brown</td>
<td>King Solomon Hall</td>
<td>Sobriety Stackpole</td>
<td>Admonition Strode</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Admonition Strode</td>
<td>Take Heed Munnings</td>
<td>Discretion Fox</td>
<td>Active Foote</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Active Foote</td>
<td>Desire More Irish</td>
<td>Toleration Harris</td>
<td>Seabred Taylor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seabred Taylor</td>
<td>Sea Delivered Gorham</td>
<td>Untimely Partridge</td>
<td>Eleven Summers</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eleven Summers</td>
<td>Yet Mercy Shoe</td>
<td>Happy Sadd</td>
<td>Wait Swift</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wait Swift</td>
<td>Christian Snowman</td>
<td>Cutting Favor</td>
<td>Silent Wild</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Silent Wild</td>
<td>Resolved Irons</td>
<td>Freelove Pope</td>
<td>Batchelor Hussey</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Batchelor Hussey</td>
<td>Low Paine</td>
<td>Salem Towne</td>
<td>Bahama Tanner</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bahama Tanner</td>
<td>Florida Shivers</td>
<td>Preserved Fish</td>
<td>Cherry Stone</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cherry Stone</td>
<td>Contain Sweet</td>
<td>Tuna White</td>
<td>Bird Rice</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bird Rice</td>
<td>Supply Ham</td>
<td>Jam Pye</td>
<td>Love Pease</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Love Pease</td>
<td>Darling Lord</td>
<td>Friendly Peck</td>
<td>Indearing Jones</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Indearing Jones</td>
<td>Reconcile Winchester</td>
<td>Love Pray</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Keep some of these strange, but amusing, names in mind as you read the following chapters. Besides Hatevil Nutter, our own ancestors had some very strange names that probably belong on the above list.

Identifying the source of the Nutter surname is more difficult. Simple texts that strive to trace early English surnames indicate that Nutter was a person who may have picked up nuts in the forest. The book The Origin of English Surnames states that Nutter is from the Old English notere, meaning a scribe or writer. But in all likelihood, these explanations of the origination of the surname Nutter fall short of accuracy. A more likely source of the name is indicated in Surnames of Lancashire by
Richard McKinley. Lancashire was an area of early England where many with the surname Nutter originated. McKinley postulates that the names Nutter and Nuthall were both derived from *de Nothogh, de Notehogh, de Notehugh, de Noteho*, etc., a name which appears in Lancashire records as early as the thirteenth century.

The prefix "*de*" means "of" or "from" and is still commonly used with French names (having the same meaning as the Dutch *Van* or German *Von*). The use of such a prefix is Norman in origin and was commonly used in England during the Middle Ages. The use of such a prefix with English surnames was lost among later generations. The "*not*" (with variants like "nut" or "naut") refers to cattle, while "*hogh*" (with variants like "haw", "halgh", "hiough" or "hough") refers to a pasture or meadow. Therefore, the derivative surname Nutter literally means "of the cow pasture". Yet another example of the truth being less than totally flattering.
In 1492, Christopher Columbus sailed from Spain to try to find a new, quicker route to the Far East. The Europeans desired trade with China, but the known ways of getting there were considered too dangerous and too expensive. Columbus thought that by sailing west, in the opposite direction and circumnavigating the globe, he could reach China. But Columbus never reached the Far East. While en route, he discovered some previously unknown islands and since Columbus was convinced he was near the Indies, he called the people living there Indians. Of course, what he had really discovered was part of the Bahamas, the islands just off the coast of what is now the United States.

News of Columbus' discovery soon spread to other nations and within just a few years, ships carrying the flags of those nations sailed west to make their claims to the New World. Soon, colonists from Spain, France, Holland, England, and other countries arrived in the New World, for many different reasons: trade, freedom of religion, political freedom, and economic reasons. The thirteen colonies these colonists founded along the eastern seaboard formed the beginning of the United States.

Between 1579 and 1585, a number of settlements were made by the English in Virginia and North Carolina, but they were not permanent. In 1585, Sir Richard Grenville landed at the island of Roanoke in Albemarle Sound. While there, he treated the Indians very badly and they returned the compliment with interest. He was finally compelled to return to England, leaving behind fifteen men. Two years later, in 1587, John White returned with reinforcements and found the colony abandoned, the men having been murdered by the Indians.

White reestablished the colony and reversed the policy of Grenville, treating the Indians kindly and cultivating their friendship. He induced Manteo, their chief, to become a Christian and baptized him. White further pleased the Indians and their chief by presenting him with the title of Lord of Roanoke, with great formality and display, followed by a feast and presents for the Indians. When White returned to England, he left behind his daughter, Eleanor Dare, wife of Lieutenant Dare, one of White's officers. On 18 August 1587, a daughter was born to Lieutenant and Mrs. Dare and named Virginia Dare, the first English child born in what is now the United States. In 1589, White again started for America but was driven back by the Spaniards; however in 1590 he returned to the colony only to find it abandoned and all traces of the colonists lost. It was not until eighty years later that the English learned that their people had been adopted by the Hatteras tribe, and had become part of the tribe.

In April 1607, a permanent settlement was made at Jamestown, Virginia, composed almost entirely of English gentlemen whose profligate lives had left them in destitute circumstances in England. They came to America in a spirit of adventure and with the hope of realizing a fortune in gold and silver, while not having to do any work to earn their wealth. The colony was a miserable failure, becoming dependent on the Indians for the barest necessities of life. Capt. John Smith later took charge of the colony and attempted to instill a spirit of energy into the men. He urged the people to farm, but at the end of two years the two hundred settlers had only forty acres under cultivation, and were it not for the Indians, the English settlers would almost certainly have starved. It was not until June 1610, with the arrival of Lord De La Warr and a different class of colonists, that a permanent and lasting settlement was established in Virginia. Eventually, the discovery of tobacco as a cash crop to be traded in Europe guaranteed that the colony would do well.
Many of the colonists came to America in an effort to find religious freedom. Catholics, as well as some Protestants, Jews and people who chose not to belong to any church had considerable difficulty living a peaceful life in England as well as many other parts of Europe. The rulers of these countries dictated that their citizens had to attend a specific church and worship in a particular fashion. Some groups of people, with differing religious beliefs than their rulers, yearned to have their own churches. The first group of 43 men and their families to come to America seeking religious freedom was the Pilgrims in 1620. They sailed across the Atlantic in the Mayflower and landed at Plymouth, Massachusetts on 22 December 1620.

Before landing at Plymouth, the Pilgrims had agreed on the type of government they wanted and drew up the Mayflower Compact which provided for two important principles: the people would vote about the government and laws; and the people would accept majority rule. Only half of the Pilgrims survived the first very harsh winter. Good leadership by William Bradford and help from friendly Indians enabled the rest of the people to learn about farming and fishing to survive.

Some colonies got their start when the King of England granted large parcels of land to certain individuals or companies. These colonies were called proprietary colonies because one person or a small group, the proprietor, owned the land. For example, Lord Baltimore was given the land that is now the state of Maryland in 1634. He wanted to make money by renting and selling the land. And as a Catholic, he also wanted Catholics to have freedom of religion. They could not enjoy such freedom in England or, for that matter, even in some of the other colonies. In 1649, Maryland proclaimed the famous Act of Toleration, providing for freedom of religion for all Christians in Maryland.

Likewise, the lack of religious freedom in the Puritan colony led Roger Williams, a minister, and some of his followers to leave Massachusetts. They founded a new colony in 1636 and called it Rhode Island, granting everyone religious freedom. Rhode Island was the first colony to provide for complete separation of church and state, a basic tenet that would, of course, become one of the principles of the American Constitution.

Other colonies were founded as more and more people came to America in search of religious and political freedom as well as a chance for an improved life. Connecticut was founded in 1636 by Thomas Hooker, a minister, and members of his church. They wanted to leave the strict conditions in Massachusetts and believed that Connecticut had better farmland. Settlers in Connecticut drew up the first written constitution in America, the Fundamental Orders of Connecticut, establishing a legislature, governorship and fair taxation.

Other people left Massachusetts for New Hampshire, after land there had been opened to settlement in 1623. They left for political, religious and economic reasons. The settlers there took advantage of the plentiful fishing and trading opportunities along the New Hampshire coast.

The Carolinas were proprietary colonies. Pioneers from Virginia settled the northern part, while newly-arriving Europeans settled the southern part, beginning in 1663. The Carolina settlers wanted self-government which the landowners, or proprietors, would not allow. North and South Carolina each became a royal colony when the proprietors gave up their charter in 1729.

The English Navy took New Netherlands away from the Dutch in 1664 and renamed it New
York. New York became an English colony but the Dutch settlers kept their rights, their land, their language, and their religion.

The colony of New Jersey also was formed in 1664, where there already existed Dutch and Swedish settlements. Additional settlers were encouraged so that the proprietors could earn money from renting the land. The land was later sold to Quaker groups so that their people could have religious freedom.

The colonists in Pennsylvania, founded in 1681 by William Penn, also believed in the separation of church and state. It was founded as a haven for the religious group Society of Friends, commonly called Quakers, but gave religious freedom to anyone who believed in God. Pennsylvania was called Penn's Holy Experiment because he wanted everyone in the colony to have freedom of speech and religion and to be equal before the law. As a result of this liberal attitude, settlers flocked to Pennsylvania, which grew and prospered.

Delaware became part of the colony of Pennsylvania in 1682, when it was given to William Penn by New York. In 1703, when the people living there decided they no longer wanted to be governed by the Pennsylvania legislature, Penn let them set up their own legislature.

Georgia, the last of the original thirteen colonies, was not founded until 1732. James Oglethorpe wanted it to be a haven for people who were in debt in England. They could each receive a second chance by going to Georgia, where the government gave them a piece of land to farm.

THE SETTLING OF NEW HAMPSHIRE

From the standpoint of studying the early history of our Nutter family, and the many families related to the Nutters, one of the thirteen colonies described above (and later their counterparts as states in the young nation) is of the most importance. That colony, and later state, is New Hampshire. Unlike the very brief description of the founding of each of the thirteen colonies provided above, the rest of this chapter will focus on the early exploration and settlement of New Hampshire and specifically, those areas where the Nutter and related families settled. Specifically, the portion of New Hampshire that will be focused upon is the small coastal area of New Hampshire near the towns of Dover and Portsmouth, located along the Piscataqua River. This region, where generations of our ancestors lived for about two hundred years, comprises an area that would fit within a circle only ten miles in diameter.

The voyages of the English, Spanish, and French explorers during much of the fifteenth and sixteenth century are well documented. Many voyagers must have passed along the New England coast during this period of increasing exploration. But the first known explorer to enter the Piscataqua River was Martin Pring, an English captain in June 1603, during the reign of the English King James I.

Pring arrived in a ship of 50 tons called the Speedwell, manned by thirty men and boys, and a 26-ton barque named the Discoverer, carrying Capt. William Brown, 13 men and a boy. This small fleet had been outfitted under the patronage of the mayor, aldermen, and merchants of Bristol, England, to "prosecute the discovery of the northern parts of Virginia," as the whole continent was
then called. They first touched one of the islands near the entrance of Penobscot Bay, then visited the mouths of the Saco, Kennebunk, and York rivers, which Pring said he found to "pierce not far into the land". They next proceeded to the Piscataqua, which Pring called the westernmost and best river, and which he explored for a distance of ten or twelve miles into the interior.

Captain Pring came here in search of sassafras in the forests that hugged the banks of the river, but there is no record of his finding any. He wrote that he saw "goodly groves and woods and sundry sorts of beasts, but no people". Pring made no attempt to establish a permanent settlement in this region. Soon after, during the summer of 1605, the coast of New England was partially explored by Samuel de Champlain who sailed from Havre, France, in March of that year. He entered the Piscataqua on 15 July 1605, discovered the Isles of Shoals and is said to have landed the next day at a place called "Cape of the Islands," which today is probably Odiorne's Point in the town of Rye, New Hampshire.

During 1614, Captain John Smith ranged the shore from Penobscot to Cape Cod, and with this route encountered the Isle of Shoals, to which he gave the name of Smith's Isles. He also found the Piscataqua River, which he found to be "a safe harbor with a rocky shore". Returning to England, he published a description of the country, with a map of the seacoast, which he presented to Prince Charles, who gave the land the name of New England.

The first attempt at permanent settlement in New Hampshire was in 1623 by a party headed by David Thompson, which landed at Little Harbor on the ship Jonathan from London. However, the Thompson settlement was of short duration. Despite starting out with a grant of six thousand acres, an island, and grandiose plans for a manor house surrounded by tenant farms in the style of the land-wealthy gentry of the mother country, Thompson stayed only a little over a year and then moved onto the island in Boston Harbor which still bears his name.

The first successful permanent settlement in New Hampshire was in a cove on the easterly side of a strip of land known as Dover Neck, where the ship Providence cast anchor also in the spring of 1623. The names of some of the voyagers were Edward Hilton, in whose name the land patent was granted; Thomas Roberts; and Leonard Pomeroy. The area that encompasses most of the present town of Newington was included in the Hilton patent. Hilton's was the seventh patent [a grant of public or unclaimed land issued by a government body] issued by the Plymouth Council under authority of King James on 12 March 1629, and also known as the Squamscot patent. Unfortunately the names of the other arrivals and the nature of the cargo, farm animals, tools, and implements required for a plantation were not recorded.

If the cargo of Martin Pring's voyage in 1603 was typical, we can assume that the Providence was "plentifully victualed for eight months and furnished with merchandise thought fit for trade with the people of the country, such as hats of divers colours, green, blue and yellow stockings and shoes, pick-axes, saws, hatchets, nails, fish hooks, bells, bugles, looking glasses, thimbles, needles and pinnes and such like."

Edward Hilton was connected with "three merchants" of Bristol, who had also been the financial backers of David Thompson. We do not know the names of Hilton's "associates," just that they were merchants of Shrewsbury, Bristol and other towns of the West of England, particularly of Devonshire County. On a map of New England dated 1634, the Hilton Point and Dover Neck
settlement is called "Bristol," probably from the fact that the Bristol men owned two-thirds of the land under the new patent.

The Squamscot Patent led Edward Hilton to engage in a lot of financial schemes to develop his property. One result was that Captain Thomas Wiggin was sent over by the financial backers in England to investigate and report on plans for sending over additional settlers to help Hilton. Wiggin, who would figure prominently in the early family history of the Nutter family, arrived in New Hampshire in 1631 and stayed a year. Wiggin learned what was being done in the settlements at Boston and Salem, and carefully examined Hilton's territory.

In his surveys, Wiggin saw what a beautiful place the hill on Dover Neck was and considered establishing a village like those he was acquainted with in England. In his History of Dover, historian John Scales writes: "He probably made a complete plan of how he would have the streets and lanes, and maybe he engaged Hilton's employees to cut a road along the shore from Pomeroy's Cove to the foot of the hill. It is not unreasonable to suppose Captain Wiggin also engaged those crews to do a lot of preliminary lumbering, in the way of felling trees, and clearing up the ground for the coming pioneer settlers, who were to establish the English village on the hill."

In 1632, Thomas Wiggin returned to England and set about the task of arranging for men to come to New Hampshire and settle on Dover Neck. According to Scales, "He was a hustler, but it took time to find the men and get them interested enough to leave their old home and come over here to plant a new settlement in the wilderness, of what was to be Dover. It required all of the year 1632, and up to June 1633, to get thirty men ready and on board the ship James, which set sail from Gravesend, England, about the 10th of that month."

On 25 March 1633, Edward Howes wrote from London to Governor Winthrop in Boston: "There are honest men about to buye out the Bristol men's plantation in Pascataqua, and do propose to plant there 500 good people before Michelmas next [actually Michaelmas, it is a church festival celebrated on September 29 in honor of the archangel Michael]. T. Wiggin is the chief agent therein." And again, on 22 June 1633, he wrote: "He (Wiggin) intends to plant himself and many gracious men here this sommer. I have, and you all have cause to bless God that you (will) have soe good a neighbour as Capt. Wiggin."

These quotations from contemporary accounts confirm that Edward Hilton had men of Bristol, Shrewsbury, and other towns in England as his associates in business in 1630 and that Captain Thomas Wiggin was their agent from England. They further indicate that these Bristol men sold their interests to two other men, Lord Say and Lord Brooke, and that these people had retained Captain Wiggin for an additional seven years to manage the business of the new settlement at Dover Neck.

The journal of Massachusetts' Governor Winthrop mentions the arrival of the additional settlers for the Dover settlement. An entry in his journal for 10 October 1633, states: "The same day, Mr. (Capt.) Grant, in the ship James, arrived at Salem, having been but eight weeks between Gravesend and Salem. It brought Capt. Wiggin and about thirty, with one Mr. Leverich, a godly minister, to Pascataquack, which Lord Say and Lord Brooke had purchased of the Bristol men, and about forty for Virginia, and about twenty for this place (Boston), and some sixty cattle."
Historian John Scales wrote the following account in 1923:

The settlement on Dover Neck began in October 1633. The colonists who struck the first blows to prepare for habitations came over from the west of England, in the ship "James," and landed at Salem, Mass., 10th of October, 1633. There were "about thirty" in the party nearly all men; they had been eight weeks on the voyage from Gravesend to Salem; "some of them were of good estates and of some account for religion," - that is, they were rich men and Puritans, of the same class and religious opinions as the men who settled in Boston, Salem and towns around in the Massachusetts Bay Colony. These colonists did not remain long in Salem but soon came along the coast by water to the Pascataqua River and up to Hilton Point, landing at Pomeroy's Cove at the west end of The Point, where the old settlers there cordially greeted them, and gave them the best accommodations their houses afforded; those who could not get a place in which to sleep, on the land, continued to abide at night on the "James," until they could build houses for themselves. In 1634 more men, with women and children, arrived from England and joined the colony, but those who arrived in October encountered and completed the hardest part of the work, as a dense forest then covered Dover Neck. To make the land ready for a village, such as the colonists came from in Old England, required much hard work, chopping down trees, cutting paths, and constructing log houses, for use during the cold weather of the winter. From reports in Massachusetts it does not appear to have been a very severe season, but comfortably mild, so the work of destruction of the forest and construction of roads and houses was carried on rapidly.

There is no record of just what these pioneers did first, but from what we know was done it seems reasonable that first they cut a path through the woods along the shore from an inlet that would become known as Pomeroy's Cove to a rise in the ground a short distance to the north. From the foot of the hill, they cut another path in a northwesterly direction to a high point of the land, where later they located their first log meeting-house. Then, having cleared away the trees, the first houses were built. The meeting-house was the center of business during the first years, as all public meetings were held there, both town meetings as well as religious services.

Through the years the village grew to the point that the settlement reached the top of the hill, above where the second meeting-house was built in 1654. That site is now marked by a wall with a bronze tablet. The original Nutter residence was a short distance above the meeting-house, on the east side of the road in 1636, as our original ancestor stated in a deposition many years later. The settlers called this road High Street, and the hill was "Nutter's Hill." They called the road on which the log meeting-house stood Low Street, and the minister and many of the prominent citizens lived on that road. Later they had other roads, called lanes, connecting with these to enable the dwellers to conveniently reach the log meeting-house, the center of all business.

Bristol apparently was the name given to the Dover Neck area by the settlers who arrived in 1633, which it retained as long as Captain Wiggin was governor. In 1637, when Burdett became governor, he changed it to Dover, which was used until Rev. Thomas Larkham became minister of the parish, who changed it in 1640 to Northam, after the town in the West of England where he had previously been minister. Soon after the settlement came under control of Massachusetts in 1642, the name Dover was again used, although Northam was still used frequently for the next twenty years.
THE NEW BUSINESS OF THE AREA

The settlements along the harbor and river were collectively referred to by the London merchant adventurers as Piscataway. Other derivatives were Piscataquack and Piscataqua, the final version; all translated roughly from the Indian word meaning "the parting of the waters". While the falls at the head of the navigable waters in the tributary rivers impeded further movement by seagoing ships, they served another and more useful purpose: waterpower for sawmills and gristmills.

The Newington peninsula was covered with white pine and there was an immediate need and a market for squared logs for the construction of homes and mills, as well as for export. Therefore, this was an ideal place for sawmills. The several streams that flowed into the bay and river soon became sites for water-powered mills. Logs were drawn from a distance of 30 or 40 miles, to the head of the tidewater in the branches of the river. They were then conveyed on rafts or aboard large gundalows, either to ships in different parts of the river or to the wharves at Portsmouth.

The Piscataqua region became the principal source for masts, spars, bowsprits and timber for the British Royal Navy. There was also a ready foreign market for pipe staves, barrel staves, and lumber in general. The river towns were among the first in New England to engage in the export trade as well as among the first to accumulate cash and foreign credit. Taxes assessed against all the New England colonies indicate that the Hilton settlement was one of the richest. Towering pines, often measuring 150 to 200 feet in height and 26 to 32 inches at the butt brought prices of over £74 (about $370) when delivered to the ships at Portsmouth.

The cutting and careful lowering of the giant trees required the skills of many cutters to clear the way for felling the tree, preparing thick mats of bows and branches to break its fall, and clearing the way for delivery to the nearest landing. As many as twenty teams of oxen were needed to haul the giant log, with almost as many oxen at the rear to provide braking power. Huge wheels 16 feet in diameter were used at each end of the log, with others in between to support its weight, all secured with heavy chains.

For one hundred years, Great Britain depended heavily on the Piscataqua River region for a source of ship's masts. More masts were shipped from Portsmouth than out of any other port in America. In fact, in 1775, with the onset of the Revolutionary War, the loss of the New Hampshire mast trade meant serious trouble for England. The English had not developed the art of constructing "made masts" and fir was no substitute for New Hampshire pine.

The Piscataqua mast pine often weighed 15 or 20 tons, and although not as strong when first cut as Norwegian pines, the American pines retained their natural juices, whereas the pine from Norway soon decayed when exposed to heat. The average New England mast lasted twenty years, or four times as long as those from Norway.

THE PEOPLE WHO FIRST CAME TO NEW HAMPSHIRE

What kind of people were these early settlers of the Piscataqua region, among them the progenitor of the Nutter family? When Edward Hilton and his followers sailed up the river and started the settlement at Dover Point, their purpose was not for a religious settlement. These people, and most of those that followed them to the Piscataqua region, were satisfied with both the existence...
and the ceremonies of the established Church of England. They had nothing in common with the Pilgrims who settled at Plymouth or with the intolerant Puritans who settled around Massachusetts Bay.

While the Puritan ministers thundered hell's fire and damnation from the pulpits of the Bay Colony, the attitude toward religion in the New Hampshire townships appears to have been much more relaxed. Historian Charles E. Clark in his "Eastern Frontier" portrays some of the early ministries as being beset with politics, intrigue, and outright scandal. Furthermore, it appears that these Dover Neck settlers were, for the most part, Puritans of the same class as those of Governor Winthrop's colony in Massachusetts Bay, but they came here strictly for business, rather than to have more religious liberty. They were religious men, as shown by the fact that they brought the Rev. William Leverich, a Puritan minister, with them, who commenced to officiate as minister of the First Parish as soon as the log meeting-house was completed in the winter of 1633.

Mr. Leverich, well recommended as the "Godly minister," was one of the first to preach at the primitive Hilton Point church, where the settlers from across the river at Bloody Point also worshipped "when the tides and the spirit moved them". In the middle 1630s Leverich moved south for lack of support. He was replaced by George Burdett, who was introduced as the "very human sort of minister," a sort with which the people of the settlement were to become all too familiar over the next few years. When some of his political ambitions and correspondence were discovered, he quickly moved to York, Maine where a court later convicted him of adultery.

After this unsavory incident, the people's contact with religion languished until the arrival in 1638 of a radical preacher with the unusual name of Hansard Knollys. His pastorate was described as a riotous one. Owing to his somewhat unorthodox beliefs, he was undermined in 1640 by Thomas Larkham, who was also a man of varied ambitions. Clark wrote: "Knollys was reinstalled when Larkham's scandalous life became known; but the reinstated champion fell from local grace almost immediately when he was discovered in bed with his maid the night after he had excommunicated Larkham - for among other things, unchastity."

Attendance at church was mandatory and was required for the privilege of voting at town meetings. The pastor anddeacons, therefore, held considerable sway over town affairs. Failure to attend the meeting on Sundays was a punishable offense, and town records reveal the names of several habitual offenders, whose wayward habits were usually linked to strong drink.

Historian John Scales asked: "Why did these people come over here? Why expatriate themselves? Why leave the comforts of their old home? Why undertake the hardships of the forests to be subdued? The answer was not given by any one of their number; they left no historical memoranda. Indeed, it is to the Plymouth and Boston historians that we look for the first contemporary record of the settlement of the Piscataqua; and it is to the Journal of Gov. John Winthrop that we are indebted for the record of the fact that they came in the ship 'James' in 1633. And it is to the stories of the historian, Hubbard, of Ipswich that we look for the few facts which he gathered forty years after, from the old men, of their coming and their work.

"The answer to the question, why they came, cannot be given in a word, or a sentence. There was a spirit of adventure prevalent among the English people of that period. It characterized the Western counties of England in a marked degree. There was a restless feeling among the people,
a desire to possess wealthy lands beyond the seas. In addition to this was the political and religious conditions that prevailed from 1620 to 1640, during which was the largest emigration to New England. This was the period in which no parliament met in England. The King had dissolved parliament after parliament, because none was submissive to his views. So little promise of security in civil rights existed, that many men were driven to the conclusion that the only way out of these difficulties was to emigrate and make new homes in the wilderness of New England; some did emigrate; others remained and fought the battle for freedom in England. Among those who remained at home were Dover's patrons, Lords Say and Brooke.

"In this period (1629-1640) of rapid emigration to New England there was little hope at home for a purer worship or for liberty of conscience. The tyrannical, bigoted, treacherous Charles was upon the throne. That very summer in which the Dover Neck emigrants set sail from England in the ship 'James,' Laud was made archbishop of Canterbury and primate of all England. It was itself the threat that the High Commission Court, of which Laud was the moving power, and under whom, says Macaulay, 'Even the devotions of private families could not escape the vigilance of his spies,' was to be still more powerful. These Dover Neck men had no idea or expectation that King Charles, twelve years hence, would have his head chopped off. So they resolved to be free men in New England, under English law, where they could rear their children in a purer faith. All of these influences combined are the answer to the question: Why did these people come over here?"

One of those who came, probably for the reasons given by historian John Scales, was Hatevil Nutter.
THE NUTTER FAMILY ARRIVES IN AMERICA

Hatevil Nutter and his family were the first of the Nutter family to arrive in America, settling in New Hampshire on the small strip of land known as Dover Neck. Today, we are not even certain how he pronounced his name, but Hatevil's name was apparently pronounced "hā-te-evil" and not "hāt-uh-vul". Today, a great many people with the Nutter surname are descended directly from him, including the family of the compiler.

Historian John Scales wrote in his History of Dover, New Hampshire: "What were the names of the men who came over in the ship 'James,' which arrived at Salem, October 10, 1633, and soon after came up here to Hilton Point and commenced cutting the forest on Dover Neck? We know for certainty only two, Captain Thomas Wiggin and Rev. William Leverich ..." Yet we know what Governor John Winthrop wrote about the arrival of the James, namely that "It brought Capt. Wiggin and about thirty, with one Mr. Leverich, a godly minister, to Piscataquack".

Was Hatevil Nutter among the thirty men who arrived in New Hampshire aboard the James? It is unlikely that anyone will ever know for sure, since the original records that listed the passengers of that ship have never been located. However, many Nutter historians and researchers have presumed that this was the case, and it has been so written many times. For example, noted New Hampshire historian Alonzo Quint wrote of Hatevil Nutter:

He was probably one of the "Company of persons of good estate and of some account for religion," who were induced to leave England with Captain Wiggins in 1633 and to help found on Dover Neck a compact town.

However, Scales wrote of Hatevil Nutter that it "seems he did not come over with the first lot of emigrants in 1633, but in 1637 he bought a lot of Captain Thomas Wiggin, which he had rebounded in 1640 as follows: 'Butting on Fore River on ye East, and upon ye West upon ye High street; on ye North upon Ye lot of Samewell Haynes, and on Ye South upon ye Lott of William Story.'" Scales notes in his Piscataqua Pioneers work in 1919 that Nutter "was one of Captain Thomas Wiggin's company that came over in the fall of 1633, and settled on Dover Neck; he may not have come on the same ship, but soon after."

Unfortunately, for years virtually nothing was known about Hatevil Nutter's family in England, or even from where in that country he originated. Genealogical researchers descended from Hatevil Nutter had attempted for over forty years to find a record in Great Britain that would identify his point of origin in that country, but until recently, had no success. Although it has often been assumed that Hatevil Nutter was among the thirty men who arrived on the James with Captain Wiggin, new information has recently surfaced that indicates he probably came to New Hampshire two years later.

THE ENGLISH ROOTS OF HATEVIL NUTTER

In December 1995, it was reported that a college student, John Plummer of Waterbury, Connecticut, had discovered an old English will probated on 23 October 1634 for an Anthony Nutter of Woodkirk Parish (today referred to as West Ardsley Parish). Woodkirk Parish was located in what is today West Yorkshire (York County), approximately 4½ miles northwest of the town of Wakefield, England. Anthony Nutter, whose will had been prepared on 19 January 1633, was rather
wealthy and left money to a considerable number of people. Among the provisions in his will is this item, reproduced here in the original difficult-to-read "Olde English" (bold emphasis added by the compiler):

*Item I give to *my* brother Edmund his wife and Children* the somme of six pounds thirteene shillings ffower pence and alsoe I give unto *hatill* his sonne for whome I was Witnes at his Baptisme the somme of Three pounds ouer and aboue his parte in the foresaid somme of six pounds thirteene shillings ffower pence.*

As shall become important in a moment, Anthony Nutter also left twenty shillings to a John Reyner, who was named co-executor of the will.

Could the person identified as "Hatill Nutter" in this will be the same Hatevil Nutter who settled in New Hampshire? There is a high probability, especially based upon the connection to the John Reyner mentioned in the will. In his history of old Dover, historian Alonzo Quint wrote that "John Reyner, sixth minister of the Church in Dover, was born in England. He came to America in 1635 and settled at Plymouth, Mass., in 1636, where he remained eighteen years" but further mentions that "in 1655 he settled in Dover."

Quint states that "Mr. Reyner was assisted in his ministry during the last few years of his life by his son John Reyner, Jr. He died in April 1669, his will being dated 19 April." An examination of John Reyner's will reveals some interesting facts. First, one of the two persons who witnessed the signing of the will was Hatevil Nutter, indicating that Hatevil and the John Reyner in Dover were well acquainted. Second, John Reyner refers in his will to "my land in Old-England, lying and being in the Countie of Yorke, in the town of Gildersome, in the Parish of Batly". Batly Parish, it turns out, is located only about two miles away from and directly adjoins the Woodkirk Parish mentioned in the will of Anthony Nutter.

Also, Quint wrote in his historical account that in 1679, Reyner's widow, Frances Reyner, petitioned the General Court to appoint several men, including "Antony Nutter" to assist her in settling the estate of her late husband. The Anthony Nutter mentioned was the son of Hatevil Nutter. Further, when Hatevil Nutter died, his will was witnessed by John Reyner (Jr.). In addition, a deed dated 5 January 1669 in which John Reyner bought a house and land was witnessed by Hatevil Nutter. All these facts indicate a close connection between the two families.

Finally, Quint noted that as the minister at Dover, John Reyner "was universally esteemed by his people. He excited, however, the dislike of the Quakers by his opposition to their doctrines and his support of the law against them." Hatevil Nutter, who was a church elder, also was extremely opposed to the Quakers, as shall be seen later, and the similarity of these two facts may be construed as something more than just a coincidence.

Jan Alpert, a noted Nutter researcher, has pointed out that many early immigrants to America made the long voyage with their ministers from England, who often acted not only as the spiritual leader, but as the political leader of the group as well. In addition, the timing of the trip to America cannot be ignored. If, as the English will of Anthony Nutter indicates, John Reyner and Hatevil Nutter were still in England when his will was probated in October of 1634, then Quint's statement that Reyner "came to America in 1635" makes good sense. And if Hatevil Nutter had just inherited some money shortly before his arrival in New Hampshire, it would explain his ability to be able to quickly purchase land in the new colony.
If Hatevil Nutter was the same person mentioned in the old English will, what do we know of his ancestry? Jan Alpert has reported the following information as a possible ancestry for Hatevil Nutter:

1. ------ NUTTER, born about 1522. Possible children:
   i. **George** (see below)
   ii. **James**, buried at Macclesfield 15 June 1574; married there 21 May 1570 to Alice Renshae.
   iii. **Roger** who married at Macclesfield, St. Michael on 25 July 1574 to Agnes Knight.

2. **George NUTTER**, married at Prestbury, Cheshire 6 Feb 1568 to Anne Keylynge, who was buried at Macclesfield 19 January 1593/4 "uxor Georgij". Macclesfield is further south in Prestbury Parish, Cheshire, actually southeast of Manchester.
   i. **John** (the oldest)
      i. **Adam**, who appears to have had two sons and a daughter by 1633.
      ii. **Anthony** of Woodkirke, Yorkshire, clerke, his will dated 19 Jan 1633.
   iii. **William**
      i. **Isaac**, who appears to have sons John, Isaac, Abraham, Edmund & Anthony and at least one daughter who was left 20 shillings.
      iv. **George**, probably the one buried at Macclesfield 11 January 1615, whose wife Elizabeth was buried there 17 November 1613. He may have married 2nd Ann Greaves on 3 November 1614 at Presbury (a marriage of George Nooter/Nuttaor to Ann Greaves in Maxfelde, Prestbury is published in the Parish Registers).
         i. **Anthony**, buried at Macclesfield on 14 Feb 1633/34. He married Anne Sumner on 28 March 1619 in Macclesfield (Prestbury Parish Records). They had children: George, Adam, Anthony and a daughter all of whom died in childhood except George, who lived to the age of 23.
   v. **Robert** (his wife was left 40 shillings and his unnamed children six pounds to split).
   vi. **Edmund**, who was alive in 1633.
      i. **Elena**, bapt. 12 Jan 1595/96 at Fillongley, Warwickshire (about six miles from Mancetter).
      ii. **Thomas**, born about 1598, married 1st about 1621 to Dorothy -----, by whom he had sons Thomas (chr. 6 Oct 1622 at Mancetter), William (chr. 18 Sep 1625) and John (chr. 24 Aug 1628 at Mancetter). He married 2nd about 1630 to Elizabeth -----, by whom he had children baptized at Mancetter from 1622 to 1631, including son James (chr. 12 Jun 1631 at Mancetter).
      iii. **Hatevil**, born about 1600.
      iv. **Elizabeth**, born about 1602, married 1st ----- Moushall. She married 2nd on 22 April 1628 at Mancetter, Warwickshire to John Newman. Her son was Peter Moushall of Atherstone, which is in Mancetter.

It is important to emphasize that the above lineage is not known for sure to tie to the Hatevil Nutter of New Hampshire. Perhaps future research will prove or disprove the hypothesis.

If Hatevil Nutter was still in England to receive his inheritance from his rich uncle Anthony when his will was probated in October 1634, then Hatevil certainly did not arrive in New Hampshire on the *James* in 1633, as many historians and researchers have supposed. Whether Hatevil Nutter
arrived in New Hampshire on the ships *James* with Captain Thomas Wiggin in 1633 or arrived two years later with John Reyner and others may never be known for sure. What is known is that he was in New Hampshire by at least 1635, when he was listed as being a resident of Dover, according to references in the *Massachusetts State Archives* [v.112, p.46] and the *New England Historical and Genealogical Register* [v.7, p.259]. Hatevil himself stated he was in New Hampshire before the year 1637, as he so testified in a legal deposition some years later concerning some disputed land titles.

**HISTORICAL NOTES ABOUT HATEVIL**

Quint wrote that Hatevil Nutter, an "Elder and occasional preacher, was born in England 1603, or thereabouts," the age based upon Hatevil's will. Nutter owned a considerable amount of land and grew to be quite wealthy. Scales wrote that Nutter "was among the noted men of the town, both in business and in church affairs. He was one of the first Elders of the First Church, and held the office for life. Though not given to much office holding, he received various valuable grants for saw mills and trees for supplying his mills for sawing into lumber. He had a ship yard on [the] Fore River, and was largely engaged in ship building; his ships sailed all along the coast and to the West Indies, with which islands Dover had much trade."

Hatevil was an Elder of the First Church of Dover, which he helped organize in 1638. A Ruling Elder of the Puritan Church had the duty to assist the Pastor in the government of the church, particularly to watch over the members, to prepare and bring forward all cases of discipline, and to visit and pray with the sick. In the event of the absence of the Pastor, the Elder would pray with the congregation and expound the Scriptures. In fact, Ruling Elders were ordained with no less solemnity than Pastors.

Hatevil Nutter's lot at Dover, which he acquired in 1636, was bounded on the east by the Fore River and on the west by High Street. In 1642, he received Lot No. 20, consisting of twenty acres, on the west side of the Back River. On 18 March 1648, he was granted Lot No. 11, consisting of six acres, at Cochecho Marsh. Nutter received other grants later, including 200 acres for a farm in 1658 and some land in Welchman's Cove, in the part of Dover which later became the parish of Newington. He became a man of considerable financial means. In the earliest known tax assessment of 1648, he was assessed for £78, 6 shillings, at which time he appears to be the second wealthiest man in Dover.

Scales notes in his *History of Dover* that "Nutter's residence was a short distance above the meeting-house, on the east side of the road." Scales noted that, at the time his book was published in 1923, an old pear tree still stood in the hollow where Hatevil Nutter's cellar was, noting that it was about fifteen rods [approximately 250 feet] from the nearest corner of the second meeting-house lot. Scales wrote later in the same work that "there were at least two lanes that crossed Low Street, leading from High Street to Back River; one was just above the meeting-house and was the much travelled path to the historic Hall's Spring, for a supply of pure water, and to Hall's slip, the landing place at Back Cove; the spring and the slip had their names from Deacon John Hall [and also one of our direct ancestors], one of the noted men of the town and the first deacon of the church.

John Scales further mentions that "Nutter's lane was from High Street to Nutter's slip, on Back River; Hall's slip and Nutter's slip were the only good landing places on that side of the river; the channel was then, and is now, very crooked, hence most of the shipping was done on Fore River."
This lane was the southern boundary of "the calves pasture," whose northern boundary was a line from Pinkham's Spring (near the garrison) to Back River; the length of the pasture on Low Street was 36 rods. Nutter's lane received its name from Elder Hatevil Nutter, who lived near the second meeting-house.

The "calves pasture" mentioned in connection with Nutter's Lane is also mentioned in a number of land records. It should be noted that the farmers also maintained an "ox pasture" and a "sheep pasture"; the latter was on the hill north of "Mr. Courser's house" and was also used for a training ground during times of Indian problems.

Scales, later in the same work, makes considerable mention of Hatevil Nutter:

*Elder Nutter was a very respectable man. He received various lots of land, and was largely engaged in running saw mills, the lumber business and shipping. His ship yard was on Fore River at the foot of the hill in the rear of his residence, a beautiful location. Besides being so largely engaged in private business he found time to perform the duties pertaining to offices he held in the town, the church and the colony. He was one of the wealthy men of the town and colony.*

*Being a stanch supporter of his pastor, Rev. John Reyner, he was active in the defense of the minister when the Quaker women missionaries beset him in times of public worship and in his private residence. Sewell, the Quaker historian, says: "and all this (whipping) was in the presence of one Hate Evil Nutwell (Nutter), a Ruling Elder who stirred up the Constabelles to this wicked action and so proved that he bore a wrong name."

*Being an able and influential man he stood up boldly and conscientiously for the Church, and the teaching of the sound doctrine as he understood it. He believed the Quakers were wrong and their teachings pernicious, as set forth by those women missionaries who were whipped in front of the second meeting-house. The Quakers had liberty to go elsewhere; as they did not exercise that liberty Elder Nutter believed it was right to force them to go; and they went, but they came back. No doubt both parties were wrong, but the worthy Elder should be judged by the standards that prevailed everywhere then; it would not be just to judge his acts by the standards of the present day.*

Quint, in his history, adds that "Elder Hatevil Nutter was another of the Elders. He lived on Dover Neck, pretty near the meeting house, just on the hill above it. He hated evil (as his name indicates) and disliked Quakers as zealously as Parson Rayner himself ..."

**HATEVIL AND THE QUAKERS**

One must study the times in which these people lived in order to understand their problems with the Quakers. Hatevil Nutter had helped organize the first church on Dover Neck in November 1638 and remained a zealous and generous supporter of the church his entire life. When the Quaker Missionaries created a disturbance there in 1662, he vigorously opposed them, contending they had no right to come to Dover and make such a disturbance.

A very old account of the arrival of the Quakers to Dover can be found in "New England Judged by the Spirit of the Lord" written by George Bishop, the first part of which was published in 1661.
and the second in 1667. The entire book was republished in 1702-03. The reader must remember
that the narrative was written by a man who was far too deeply interested in the events to be an
impartial historian.

Bishop wrote: "In the year 1662, Mary Tomkins and Alice Ambrose, who came from Old
England, and George Preston and Edward Wharton, of Salem aforesaid, came to Pascataqua River,
and passed up, landed at the town aforesaid (Dover) ... " The Quakers, who were at some point
joined by a third Quaker woman, Anna Coleman, held widely differing religious views than the
Church of England followers of Dover, led by John Reyner. The Quakers quickly got into a
theological discussion with Reyner and other Dover residents, which became very heated.

Bishop wrote that "a flood of persecution arose by the instigation of the Priest [Reyner], who
caused them to be apprehended by Virtue of your Cart-Law, and order was to be made to whip and pass
them away as followeth:
To the constable of Dover, Hampton, Salisbury, Newbury, Rowley, Ipswich, Wenham,
Linn, Boston, Roxbury, Dedham, and until these vagabond Quakers are out of this
jurisdiction. You and every one of you are required in the King's Majesty's name to take
these vagabond Quakers Anna Coleman, Mary Tomkins, and Alice Ambrose, and make them
fast to the cart's tail, and drawing the cart through your several towns, to whip them upon
their naked backs, not exceeding ten stripes apiece on each of them in each town; and so to
convey them from Constable to Constable till they are out of this jurisdiction, as you will
answer it at your peril; and this shall be your warrant. Per me, Richard Walderne, at Dover,
dated Dec. 22, 1662."

Bishop wrote: "So, on a very cold day, your Deputy Walden caused these women to be stripped
naked from the middle upwards, and tied to a cart, and after awhile cruelly whipped them, whilst
the priest stood and looked and laughed at it, which some of the Friends seeing, testified against, for
which Walden put two of them (Eliakim Wardell, of Hampton, and William Faurbish, of Dover) in
the stocks. Having dispatched them in this town, and made way to carry them over the waters and
through woods to another, the women denied to go unless they had a copy of their warrant; so your
executioner sought to set them on horseback, but they slid off, then they endeavored to tie each to
a man on horseback; that would not do neither, nor any course they took till the copy was given,
insomuch that the constable professed that he was almost wearied with them.

"But the copy being given them, they went with the executioner to Hampton, and through dirt
and snow at Salisbury half-way the leg deep, the constable forced them after the cart's tail, at which
he whipped them, under which cruelty and sore usage the tender women traversing their way
through all, was a hard spectacle to those who had in them anything of tenderness; but the presence
of the Lord was so with them (in the extremity of their sufferings) that they sung in the midst of
them to the astonishment of their enemies.

"The constable of Dover's name was Thomas Roberts, who looking pitifully the same night
through his extreme toil to bring the servants of the Lord thither to be whipped as they had been at
Dover, they were so far above his cruelty that they made some good things for his refreshment,
which he took. This disgraceful sentence was executed no farther than Salisbury. But these gentle
dealings did not reclaim the wanderers.
"After their release they passed a short time at Maj. Shapleigh's, in Kittery, but ... they returned again to Dover, the place of their late barbarous execution, and there visited their friends who had both received and suffered with them; where being met together on the next First Day of the week after their coming together, whilst they were in prayer, the constables, Thomas Roberts, aforesaid, and his brother John, like sons of Belial, having put on their old clothes with their aprons, on purpose to carry on their drudgery (taking Alice Ambrose), the one by the one arm and the other by the other arm, they unmercifully dragged her out of doors, with her face towards the snow, which was knee deep, over stumps and old trees near a mile; in the way of which, when they had wearied themselves, they commanded two others to help them, and so laid her up Prisoner in a very, wicked man's house (Thomas Canny's), which when they had done, they made haste with the rest that were with them to fetch Mary Tomkins, whom, as they were dragging along with her face towards the snow, the poor Father of these two wicked constables followed after, lamenting and crying, 'Wo, that ever he was the Father of such wicked children.'

"So thither they hauled Mary Tomkins also, and kept them both all night in the same house, and in the morning, it being exceedingly cold, they got into a certain Boat or Canoe, or kind of Trawl hewed out of the body of a tree, which the Indians use on the water, and in it they determined to have the three women down to the harbor's mouth; and they put them in threatening that they would now so do with them that they would be troubled with them no more.

"Whither to go the three women were not willing. They forced them down a very steep place, in deep snow, and furiously they took Mary Tomkins by the arms and dragged her on her back over the stumps of trees, down a very steep hill to the water side, so that she was very much bruised and after was dying away; and Alice Ambrose they plucked violently into the water and kept swimming by the Canoe, being in danger of drowning, or to be frozen to death."

Bishop goes on to describe the arrival of a fourth Quaker woman, Elizabeth Hooten. Bishop said: "Then at Dover for asking Priest Rayner aforesaid a Question, she was put in the stocks and kept in prison four days in the cold weather, being an ancient woman which might have cost her her life, but the Lord preserved her. Edward Weymouth was the wicked one that dragged her. Hate-Evil Nutter, a ruling elder, was present stirring up the constables to do this thing, for which no warrant had they as ever could be known, or did appear for procuring none they turned them out at Midnight, as is related."

In an attempt to balance the scales of the inflammatory and arguably accurate account previously given, Scales describes the conditions of the day that lead to the purported cruel treatment of the Quaker women:

In order that the readers of the Quaker historian's story may not entertain an erroneous idea regarding the people on Dover Neck, and the officials of this town, it may be well to state that they were not any more wicked, to say the least, than the people of Boston and those in England, from whence they had emigrated a few years before. Dover was then a town in Norfolk County, Massachusetts Bay Colony. It was subject to the laws of that colony, and had to submit to the enforcement of those laws, good or bad. The characterization of the Rev. John Reyner as "a wicked and arbitrary priest" is grossly unjust, as appears from other evidence.

Calling former Governor Thomas Roberts "a poor man" is absurd, for he was one of
Dover's well-to-do citizens. As regards "that wicked man, Thomas Canney," he was not "wicked" in any true sense of that word; he was simply helping enforce a law of the colony. He was one of the respectable citizens of the town. Perhaps the constables, John and Thomas Roberts, were a little too frisky in giving the missionaries a free ride in an Indian canoe on Fore River that cold night, but they were servants of the colony, sworn to enforce the law whenever ordered to do so.

The first Quakers who arrived in Boston, or New England, were Mary Fisher and Mrs. Ann Austin; that was on July 11, 1656. They had a hundred or more books on Quaker doctrines among their baggage. As soon as the ship landed them in Boston the authorities inspected their holdings and confiscated the books; these they burned as soon as fire could consume them. The women were searched and closely questioned for signs of witchcraft by the experts in knowledge of demonology; this was done in court, an institution of great dignity. The court could not find any evidence that they were witches, only Quaker missionaries, so they were ordered to be confined in prison until a ship could be found to take them back to England, whence they had come; they, condemned as "hereticks," were ordered to be exported by the court. They were imprisoned five weeks before a ship could be obtained to take them on board, for England. During the same year eight other Quaker missionaries came over to Boston, were tried in court and condemned as "hereticks" and dangerous persons to have in the community. They were deported to England.

In 1657 and 1658 the General Court of Massachusetts passed laws against Quakers attempting to land in Boston; before that they were simply "hereticks"; the authorities had come to regard Quakers as worse than this class of religious disturbers. The General Court decreed that on the first conviction of anyone preaching Quakerism one ear should be cut off; on the second conviction the other ear should be cut off; on the third conviction the tongue should be bored with a hot iron. Fines were decreed for those who entertained Quakers at their houses, or were present at any of their meetings. Could any law be more frightful?

These awful threats of bodily punishment did not frighten the apostles of George Fox; on the contrary, they rushed to Massachusetts all the more. Then the General Court changed the law and made the penalty that they should be tied to a carttail and whipped on their bare backs; then be banished from the colony; if they returned they should be hanged. Under that law three men and one woman were hanged on Boston Common. Other Quaker missionaries were not frightened by this horrible severity of punishment; they came in greater numbers and preached and proselyted with all the greater enthusiasm, manifesting more zeal than ever before.

They were persecuted in Old England just as badly, or worse, as in New England: for speaking in churches and interrupting the ministers while speaking; for travelling on the Sabbath; for breach of the peace by preaching on the streets or in the market places; for refusing to pay tythes; for refusing to take off their hats in the presence of officials; for refusing to swear in courts of justice, always affirming, as many persons now do. Such was the state of public sentiment when the Quaker women came to Dover and commenced to shed the rays of that "Inner Light" which they claimed was the inspiration of their souls. They had been persecuted, whipped and imprisoned in England before they came to New
England. In fact, the severity of the treatment of the followers of George Fox, the founder of Quakerism, was more severe in England than in New England.

The Quaker poet, John Greenleaf Whittier, in his poem, "How They Drove the Quaker Women from Dover," begins his story with the following lines:

The tossing spray of Cochecho’s falls
Hardened to ice on its icy walls,
As through Dover town, in the chill gray dawn,
Three women passed, at the cart tail drawn,
Bared to the waist, for the north wind's grip
And keener sting of the constable's whip,
The blood that followed each hissing blow
Froze as it sprinkled the winter snow.
Priest and ruler, boy and maid,
Followed the dismal cavalcade;
And from door and window, open thrown,
Looked and wondered, gaffer and crone."

Historian Scales offers that the poet "represents the scene as taking place at Cochecho, that is, in what is now the central part of the city. That is not correct; the stage of action was in front of the church on High Street, Dover Neck, as that was the center of business. There is no mention of the women attempting to preach in this section of the town, where Major Richard Walderne was boss of business; their missionary work was confined to Dover Neck, so far as this town was concerned. The oxen and cart were stationed in front of the meeting-house, which locality is now marked by the bronze tablet on the face wall. It does not appear that the constable struck very hard blows with his whip, or drew any blood; the probability is that he simply went through with the motions, as required by law."

The seventh stanza of Whittier's poem even had the whip placed in Hatevil's hand:

"Smite, Goodman Hate-evil! -- harder still!"
The magistrate cried, "lay on with a will!
Drive out of their bodies the Father of Lies
Who through them preaches and prophesies!

In closing this story, Scales noted "in time the laws against Quakers ceased to be enforced. Here in Dover the Quakers, eventually, became a third of the entire population, and always industrious, thrifty and of high standing in the community. Their first house of worship stood on Dover Neck, on High Street, near where the cemetery is on the west side of the street. After many years the building was taken down and removed across the river to Kittery, now Eliot, where a society of Friends had existed from the time of Major Shapleigh. The second Quaker meeting-house was built before 1720, at Cochecho, on the southwest corner of Silver and Locust streets. The present house of worship, on Central Avenue, was built in 1768, and is the oldest house of the kind in this city."

OTHER RECORDS ABOUT HATEVIL
Besides his apparent disregard for the well-being of the Quakers, a small number of other things are known about Hatevil Nutter, mostly based upon notations in the town records of the period. The oldest extant record of any public town meeting in Dover is a parchment covered book entitled "No. 7 old Book of Records", which indicates that several earlier volumes have since disappeared. In that book, the earliest record of a town meeting was one held on 20 April 1644. There is no mention of a Moderator [the leader of the meeting] until 1659, and that Moderator was "Elder Hatevil Nutter".

Another record that mentions Nutter was dated the "27th of 10th mo." of 1647, when the town records indicate that it was ordered that the town "treat with Mr. Hate Evil Nutter and Company of Elders, concerning the erecting and setting up of a sawmill at Campron River and as the aforesaid parties shall agree it shall be the Act of ye Towne." The rest of the order specified the terms upon which "Elder Nutter and Company" could build their sawmill and the privileges granted them to cut the nearby trees.

Several weeks later, another record appearing in the town records states: "Wee the inhabitants and Townsmen in the order above specified have according to the order given us by the Towne agreed with Elder Nutter and Elder Starbuck And have given and granted unto them Acomodious and fitt place at the upper or lower fall for the erecting and setting up of a Saw Mill and what timber wood shall be necessary for the said use and purpose and to fall either Oak or Pine for sawying by the said mill and that there shall be allowed and payd for Everie Tree for falling the same the sum of six pence unto the Towne for their use and this money to be payd either in bords or planck ..."

Historian Quint states that it was customary to grant men the mill privilege and the right to cut trees on a certain number of acres of land, in return for which the men paid rent to the town. The payment was made either in the form of a fixed sum each year or a small amount for each tree, as in the case of the agreement with Hatevil Nutter. The rents were put into a fund which was a part of the minister's salary, and appropriated for many years. The wood cut under these agreements appear to have been made into pipe staves and clapboards. These were a "merchantable commodity" and a legal tender for the minister.

There are a number of other places that mention Hatevil in the Dover Town Records, but most of them are trivial lists of selected committee men, jurors, tax lists, etc. From them, for example, we learn that Hatevil served as Deputy to the General Assembly at Portsmouth in 1650. On 18 May 1653, Nutter was one of the Dover men who petitioned the Massachusetts colonial government to fortify the river at Dover. He is regularly listed in the Rate (tax) Lists, beginning with the first extant list of 1648. The last listing of Hatevil Nutter in the old town records was a list of persons taxed in the year 1675 for Dover Neck and Cochecho. "Mr. Nutter" is the first person mentioned in that list of 116 persons. This was the last town record entry that mentions Hatevil because he died later that year.

Hatevil Nutter prepared his will on 28 December 1674 at the age of 71 years. It was proved 29 June 1675, which indicates that he probably died a few months before that date. The will read (in the typically poorly punctuated and spelled English so characteristic of colonial documents):

I Hatevill Nutter of Dover in New England Aged about seventy one yeares at p’sent weake in body but havinge in some good meashure (by gods blessinge) the use of my understandinge and memory, Do make this my last will and testament in maner and forme
as followeth, hereby abrogating all former and other wills by me made, whatsoever

Com'endinge my soule to my blessed god & saviour, my body to the Dust by christian buriall in hopes of a glorious resurection, I appoint and will my outward estate to be had and held as followeth viz: To my p'sent wife Anne I will & bequeath (after my Debts payed and funerall expenses defrayed) the use and improvement of my p'sent Dwellinge house barne orchard & land thereunto adjoininge, with all com'ons pastures priviledges and appurtenances thereunto belonginge, as also the use & benefit of that marsh which belongs to me in the great Bay, at Harwoods cove, the other halfe whereof I have formerly given to my son Anthony, this also descendinge to him at his mothers Decease, To her also I bequeath the use of two other marshes, the one of them lyinge on the easterne, the other on the western side of the back river, which both fall from her to my Daughter mary Winget To her also my said wife I bequeath the use of my houshold stuff cattle Debtes goodes & all other movables whatsoever; that is to say the above bequeathed partes of my estate I bequeath to her use Duringe her widdowhood, but if she shall see meet to marry I appoint that at or before tier Marriage, halfe the movables be equally Devided amongst my three children now livinge viz: Anthony, Mary & Abigaile their heires executors administrators or assignes and that then my Daughter Mary receive the marsh on the eastern side of the back river. The other halfe of the movables, and the house & land & other marshes to continue in her handes and use duringe her life, and at her Decease to descend as followeth-

To my sonne Anthony Nutter his heires and assignes I Bequeath (besides what I have formerly made over to him) my mill-graunt at Lamprill River with all dues and Demands priviledges and appurtenances thereunto belonginge to be had and held by him or them forever after my Decease. To him also I bequeath one third part of my movables as they fall from his mother at her marriage or Decease as abovesaid. To him I also bequeath my p'sent dwelling house barne orchard and land on dover neck with my right in the ox pasture calve pasture sheep pasture on the said neck as also one quarter part of my land graunted to be in the woodes above Cucheeca, with the priviledges and appurtenances belonginge to any and every of them, to be had and held by him or them his said heires or assignes forever after the Decease of his mother. To my Daughter Abigail Roberts I Bequeath one halfe of my two hundred acres of Land granted to be in the woodes above cucheeca to be had & held by her her heires and assignes for ever after my Decease. Also to her I give one third part of my movables to be received as abovesaid when they fall from her mother at marriage or Decease. To my Daughter Mary Winget her heires or assignes I bequeath the other quarter of the abovesaid Land graunted to be above cucheeca to be had & held by her or them for ever after my Decease. To her also I Give my marsh on the eastern side of the back river to be had & held by her her heires or assignes forever after the marriage, or Decease of her mother. To her also I give the other third part of the movables as they fall from her mother by mariadge or decease as abovesaid. Lastly I Do by these p'sents Constitute and appoint, my wife Anne abovesaid and my said sonne Anthony, joint executor and executrix of this my will, duringe their lives, and the longer liver of them solely after the Decease of either of them. In wittnes of the p'mises I doe hereunto set my hand & seale this 28th day of Decemb' Anno. D. 1674

Hatevill Nutter [seal]

The wording "to my present wife Anne", to whom Hatevil gave the use of his house, barn,
orchard, etc., all of which were to go to his son Anthony after her decease, has made many researchers believe that Anne was not his first wife. However, there is no evidence to support that belief. On the contrary, Hatevil's will refers to his wife Anne in several places as the "mother" of his children, suggesting a life-long marriage. Further, the use of the phrase "present wife" is not uncommon in old New England wills, even when the wife is known to have been the only spouse of the testator. The term "present dwelling" was also used twice in Hatevil's will in referring to his house.

The name of Hatevil Nutter's wife is known only from his will. Her name appears no other place, and we know her only as "Anne". She has been frequently identified as Anne Ayers (or Ayres), the source of that information appearing originally in the book The History of the Treman Family, published by Ebenezer Treman in 1901. The author of that work, which included a brief history of the Ayers and Nutter families, offered no sources for his information, and no confirming sources have since been discovered. The name Anne Ayers, given by this one source as the wife of Hatevil Nutter, has been replicated by a large number of historians and published genealogies over the years.

We know, based upon the will of Hatevil Nutter and other records that Hatevil and his wife Anne had at least the following children (probably all born in England):

- 1. Anthony Nutter  
  b. about 1630  
  m. Sarah Langstaff  
  d. 19 Feb 1685/6
- 2. Abigail Nutter  
  m. John Roberts
- 3. Mary Nutter  
  m. John Wingate
- 4. Elizabeth Nutter  
  m. Thomas Leighton

The order in which the children were born is unknown. The order given is an estimate based upon the approximate ages of the men the daughters married. Some researchers have reported a fifth child John, but the compiler has been unable to document such a person. However, other children were undoubtedly born and died early. Please note that beginning with the family grouping above, superscript numbers will identify the generation relative to the progenitor of the family, Hatevil Nutter, who first came to America.
THE NEXT FIVE GENERATIONS OF NUTTERS

Our Nutter family lived in New Hampshire for nearly two hundred years. It wasn't until the seventh generation that a member of our branch of the family left New Hampshire and moved west. In this chapter, the story will be told of the remaining generations of Nutters who lived in New Hampshire all those years.

As mentioned in the last chapter, we know that Hatevil Nutter¹ and his wife Anne had the following children (order uncertain and all probably born in England):

1. Anthony Nutter²
   - b. about 1630
   - m. Sarah Langstaff
   - d. 19 Feb 1686

2. Abigail Nutter²
   - m. John Roberts

3. Mary Nutter²
   - m. John Wingate

4. Elizabeth Nutter²
   - m. Thomas Leighton

A careful examination of the ancestral chart for the compiler of this work shows more than one occurrence of Hatevil Nutter¹. In fact, quite a number of the "end points" in the family tree can be found in more than one position in that tree. The reason is that the small community of Dover, New Hampshire provided a rather limited selection of potential spouses from which young marrying-age people could choose. Therefore, the Dover families intermarried to the extent that two people often married who shared common ancestors from, say, five or six generations before.

As a result, we are descended from Hatevil three times, twice through his son Anthony and once through his daughter Elizabeth. By way of an example, Nellie Bly Nutter⁹, the compiler's grandmother, was descended from the Leighton family, where Elizabeth (Nutter) Leighton was Nellie's great⁶-grandmother. Besides the direct descendance from Anthony Nutter², who was Nellie's great⁵-grandfather on the Nutter side of the family, she was also descended from him through the Coleman family, where Anthony was also her great⁶-grandfather. If this is confusing, try examining the ancestral chart in the back of the book.

SECOND-GENERATION NUTTERS
Of Hatevil Nutter's children, relatively little is known about his three daughters:

Abigail Nutter\(^2\) was probably the oldest of the three and possibly was older than Anthony. She married John Roberts, the oldest son of Thomas Roberts, who served as the Governor of the Dover Colony from 1640 until it came under the rule of the Massachusetts Bay Colony in 1642/43. John Roberts, who once stated in a deposition that he was born in 1629, served as Constable of Dover in his early years. In 1679, he was Marshal of the Province of New Hampshire. He was called "Sergeant" and filled various town offices, before dying on 21 January 1694/95. John and Abigail Roberts had the following children: John, Thomas, Hatevil, Joseph, Abigail, Mary and Sarah.

Mary Nutter\(^2\) married John Wingate (often written Winget in early accounts), who was born about 1639, based upon a deposition he made later in life. Wingate acquired a twenty acre lot in Dover on 11 January 1658/59, which was described later as "the lot given him by his master Thomas Layton". He was listed as a "new partner" in a logging contract in 1663. He received another ten acre grant in 1669. The next year, John Wingate was deeded some land on Dover Neck from his father-in-law, Hatevil Nutter\(^1\). His wife Mary\(^2\) was alive when her father wrote his will in 1674. She died within the next ten years, since John Wingate had remarried to Sarah (Taylor) Canney by the time he made out his will dated 12 March 1683/84. John Wingate had at least the following children: Ann, John, Caleb, Moses, Mary, Joshua and Abigail, although only the first four were probably by his wife Mary\(^2\).

Elizabeth Nutter\(^2\), who died before her father, and thus is not named in his will, married Thomas Leighton (often Layton). Our family tree also includes four generations of the Leighton family, which will be described in a later chapter. Elizabeth\(^2\), who was alive on 13 February 1670/71 when her father deeded some land to her and Thomas, died before 28 December 1674, when Hatevil\(^1\) wrote his will. Thomas remarried but died a few years later, in 1677. Thomas and Elizabeth Leighton had at least the following children: Thomas, John and Elizabeth.

Much more is known about our direct ancestor, Anthony Nutter\(^2\), simply because he was male and, therefore, received far more acknowledgment in the colonial records. Anthony Nutter\(^2\) was born in England about 1630 and, a few years later, came to Dover, New Hampshire as a young boy with his parents. He married at Dover, probably about 1662, Sarah Langstaff, the daughter of Henry Langstaff (often Langstaffe or Langstar), who lived in the Bloody Point section of Dover.

Anthony's father-in-law, Henry Langstaff, was born in England about 1605-1610, possibly in Yorkshire, as some have reported. He arrived in New Hampshire between 1630 and 1635 with the group of people sent by Captain John Mason. In later depositions, Langstaff stated that he lived "two years prior to 1633" with Walter Neale at Little Harbor, then called Rendezvous. In other depositions, he testified that he "arrived at the port of Piscataqua about the year 1635".

On 18 March 1648, Henry Langstaff received a six-acre grant of Lot No. 13 at Cochecho Marsh at Dover. On 6 December 1652, he and three others received permission to set up a sawmill on Fresh Creek. On the same date, he and four others received a grant of the "whole neck of land" from St. Albans Cove (later Style's Cove) to the head of Fresh Creek "and so to Cochecho Point". On 5 April 1658, he received a grant of 200 acres at Dover. Presumably, based upon these early land records, Henry Langstaff made his living by logging and sawmill work.
Henry Langstaff was a signer (with his mark) of the Dover Combination on 22 October 1640, setting up a civil government there. He was a Selectman of Dover at least eight times from 1651 to 1672, and served on the grand jury many times. He was one of the signers of a petition by New Hampshire settlers to the Massachusetts Bay Colony on 20 February 1689, requesting military protection from hostile Indians.

Most researchers report that no record of Henry Langstaff’s wife has been found, although one account reports his wife as "Sarah". Besides his daughter Sarah, who married into the Nutter family, Henry Langstaff had three other known children: Henry (born about 1645), John (born 1647) and Mary (born about 1650). His son John left New Hampshire and moved to the Piscataway area of New Jersey about 1666-1668. Mary Langstaff remained unmarried most of her life, until 1713, when at the age of 63, she married 23-year old Eleazor Coleman (from whom we are also directly descended via another marriage). It was reported of Coleman: "at 23, fortified by a trust deed, he married a maiden thrice his age, Mary Langstaff of Newington, who soon died without issue".

Henry Langstaff’s death was recorded in the journal of Reverend John Pike, a minister of Dover: "July 18, 1705, Mr. Henry Langstaffe of Bloody Point deceased after ten days sickness, occasioned by a fall into his leanto, four stairs high, whereby being grievously bruised, it brought an inflammation upon him. He was about one hundred years old, hail, strong hearty man and might have lived many years longer."

Anthony Nutter and Sarah (Langstaff) Nutter lived for a time on Dover Neck, then later moved to Welchman's Cove, on Bloody Point, across from Dover. He lived on the land that he received from his father in a conveyance dated 10 April 1669. Later, in 1713, the area where he lived would become the parish of Newington, New Hampshire. He was made a freeman [a full citizen of the town] on 22 May 1662.

Like his father, Anthony Nutter was a man of note, but in a totally different way. He was a military man, while his father was a church elder. In 1667, he was a Corporal in the local militia. In 1675, as "Sergeant Antony Nutter", he was one of three men chosen to meet with the Selectmen of Portsmouth and of the Isles of Shoals about raising money for the relief of those who had suffered in the present Indian War. On 25 March 1680, he received his military commission. In 1683, he is mentioned as "Lieutenant" and he carried that title until his death.

Anthony built the Nutter Garrison at the Welchman's Cove site, of which he was commander-in-chief. The garrison was used during the problems the settlers had with the Indians beginning in 1675 and lasting for several years. The site of the garrison "was still visible on the Frink farm", according to Cox's account written in 1939.

Anthony Nutter was a juror at least ten times from 1655 to 1673, a selectman of Dover in 1666, 1667, and from 1671 to 1677, and was a Deputy to the General Court of Massachusetts at least six times. On 17 February 1664/65, he purchased "a house and land" at Dover from Peter and Abigail Coffin. On 20 March 1666/67, Anthony and his wife received from his parents the house and land at Welchman's Cove and also property at Harrod's Cove. Anthony Nutter also owned the land that he received in his father's will and some property known as "Nutter's Islands" in Newington.

In 1677, Anthony Nutter was appointed as a guardian for the eldest son of "Thomas Layton late
of Dover deceased, now in said Nutter's care". This was the son of Anthony's sister, Elizabeth. Anthony² was one of the petitioners of Dover on 22 October 1677 who favored being under the jurisdiction of Massachusetts. On 7 July 1679 he was on Sir William Warren's list as a "Councillor" of New Hampshire.

Anthony² is noted for having taken "a conspicuous part" in the controversy with a Robert Mason, who was the grandson of John Mason, the original Proprietor of the Province. In 1677, the younger Mason petitioned the King of England for a "restoration" of the property which he claimed under the original land patents. Based upon these patents, Mason claimed he owned all of the land that the early New Hampshire settlers occupied and attempted to collect rents from them. The controversy, which became riotous at times, resulted in a series of lawsuits that "lasted nearly a century".

In Volume I of the Provincial Papers of New Hampshire, there is an account that demonstrates the contempt that Anthony Nutter² had for the Mason claim. The account describes that in December 1684, Captain Thomas Wiggin, son of the Captain Wiggin who brought the first settlers to Dover Neck some years before, and Anthony Nutter went to Newcastle. There they went to the home of Deputy Governor Walter Barefoot to talk to Mason about the claims he was making to the land. Nutter was Constable, then one of the most important offices in the Province. The men talked in the kitchen of Barefoot's house, where there was a large old fashioned fireplace.

After discussing the issue at some length, Wiggin refused in very emphatic language to pay a cent for rents, whereupon Mason ordered him to leave the house. Wiggin refused to go, claiming that Mason had no right to order him out of Barefoot's house. Mason then took Wiggin by the collar and attempted to push him out the door. A terrible fight ensued, during which Wiggin threw Mason into the fireplace and proceeded to choke him. Deputy Governor Barefoot and his servants managed to pull Wiggin off of Mason, whereupon Wiggin proceeded to thrash Barefoot, throwing him into the fire also and choking him severely. Mason was furious and ordered a servant to bring him his sword. The sword was brought in, but when Mason attempted to use it, he was prevented from doing so by Constable Nutter, who took the sword from Mason and restored order. Wiggin and Nutter then left the house.

In the fight, Barefoot had two ribs broken and a tooth knocked out. Mason got his wig burned and his teeth knocked out. The servants later testified that "a tall big man, called Antony Nutter, was walking about the room in a laughing manner" during the fracas, and that when they appealed to him to pull Wiggin from Mason and stop the fight, as an officer of the King was bound to do, he would not do anything except "walk around in a laughing manner". A warrant dated 25 January 1685 was issued for Anthony Nutter's arrest, stating his offense as "aiding and abetting Thomas Wiggin in assaulting and wounding Walter Barefoot, Esq., Dep. Gov., and Robert Mason, Esq., proprietor of said Province". However, probably because the sentiment against Mason was so high, no officer could be found who was willing to serve the warrant.

Anthony Nutter² died shortly after this incident "of the small pox before it came out" on 19 February 1685/86, only surviving his father by about ten years. His widow, the former Sarah Langstaff, was still living on 14 July 1712. Anthony² died intestate and his estate was inventoried at £467, 19 shillings. Despite considerable resources, Anthony Nutter² left behind quite a mess when he died. It took 35 years for his estate to be finally settled, probably because of the lack of a
will and the fact that he apparently didn't always record his business ventures properly.

As examples of that fact are a couple of deeds recorded with regard to the settlement of the Anthony Nutter\(^2\) estate. On 17 May 1705, Anthony's widow Sarah and her three sons accepted a one third and one sixteenth part, respectively, of a sloop "formerly sold said Anthony in his lifetime by Rodger Roase now of Portsmouth" in return for conveying to Mr. Roase 128 acres of land "at Lamperell River and Oyster River Falls". On 14 July 1712, it is noted in a deed that Anthony Nutter "late of welchmans cove in Dover deceased did in his lifetime dispose of to Major William Vaughan all his rights in Lamperell River higher and lower falls, this not being confirmed by a deed". For "a valuable sum of money to us in hand", Sarah Nutter, "the relict and administratrix of the said Anthony" and John Nutter, his son, "do confirm the same to the said Vaughan".

Anthony\(^2\) and Sarah (Langstaff) Nutter had eight known children (the order of birth estimated and probably all born at Newington):

1. Sarah Nutter\(^3\)
b. Abt 1660
m. Capt. Nathaniel Hill
d. Jan 1740

+ 2. John Nutter\(^3\)
b. 27 Dec 1663
m. (1st) Abigail ----
m. (2nd) Rosamond Johnson
d. Bef 1719

3. Mary Nutter\(^3\)
m. Bef 1685 Col. Shadrach Walton
d. Aft 1737

4. Elizabeth Nutter\(^3\)
m. Bef 1685 Jacob Lavers
d. Aft 1745

5. Hatevil Nutter\(^3\)
b. 1670
m. (1st) Sarah ----
m. 16 May 1716 (2nd) Leah (Nute) Furber
d. 1745 @ Newington

6. Abigail Nutter\(^3\)
m. 03 Jul 1702 Capt. Stephen Jones
d. Bef 1733

7. Ann Nutter\(^3\)
m. Lt. Joseph Jones
d. Abt 1762

+ 8. Henry Nutter\(^3\)
b. Abt 1680
m. 26 Jul 1703 (1st) Mary Shackford
m. (2nd) Mary Hoyt
d. Bef 1740 @ Newington

Of the eight children of Anthony and Sarah Nutter, the compiler's family is a direct descendant of two of them, John Nutter\(^3\) and Henry Nutter\(^3\). The rest of this chapter will deal with the descendance from Henry Nutter\(^3\). But first, a brief summary of the other children of Anthony Nutter\(^2\) will be provided. A more complete description of the family of John Nutter\(^3\), as well as the ancestry of his wife's family, will be given in a future chapter. Note in the following accounts the number of military men that the daughters of Anthony Nutter\(^2\) married, reflecting his military background.

**THIRD-GENERATION NUTTERS**

Sarah Nutter\(^3\) married Captain Nathaniel Hill, the son of Valentine and Mary (Eaton) Hill.
Valentine Hill was a Boston merchant. Captain Hill and Sarah\(^3\) lived on a 500-acre farm at Oyster River. Both Nathaniel and Sarah\(^3\) Hill stated in a 1738 deposition that they were 78 years old, setting their birth dates at about 1660. It was reported that, in his old age, Nathaniel Hill "lost his reason and spent his last six months with [his] son-in-law Captain Mathews". Nathaniel and Sarah\(^3\) (Nutter) Hill had the following children: Valentine, Samuel, Sarah, Abigail and Mary.

John Nutter\(^3\) married Rosamond Johnson, the daughter of John Johnson. Like his father, John Nutter\(^3\) served as the Constable of Dover for a time. He died by 1719, and with his wife Rosamond, left the following children: Ann, Mary, John, Matthias, James, Hatevil, Rosamond and Sarah. The compiler's family descends directly from John Nutter\(^3\), but as mentioned, that subject will be treated at greater length later in the book.

Elizabeth Nutter\(^3\) married, before 1698, Jacob Lavers, who was a cordwainer [a shoemaker] in Portsmouth. It appears from the skimpy colonial records that Jacob Lavers was a fairly colorful individual. In 1684, when the constable was taking a prisoner to the fort, Lavers hit the constable "in the rear with the butt end of a musket". There is no report of what happened to Lavers after this social miscue. In 1692, he was reported as being "drunk in evil company", the said company consisting of two females by the names of Elizabeth Dam and Mary Moss. The report did not indicate the source of their evilness. Jacob and Elizabeth\(^3\) (Nutter) Lavers had at least the following children: George, Jacob and Eleanor.

Hatevil Nutter\(^3\) had a first wife whose name was Sarah, last name unknown. He married a second time on 16 May 1716 to the widow, Leah (Nute) Furber, the daughter of James Nute and the widow of Jethro Furber. As an interesting note, and as will be detailed in a future chapter, the compiler's family is also descended from both the Nute and Furber families as well. Hatevil Nutter\(^3\) died in 1745, leaving a will in which he named his children. His children by his first wife were: Hatevil, Anthony, Eleanor and Sarah. By the former Leah Nute, Hatevil Nutter\(^3\) had the following additional children: Abigail, Elizabeth [died young], John, Elizabeth, Joshua and Olive.

Abigail Nutter\(^3\) married Captain Stephen Jones, whose father (also named Stephen) was once arrested in connection with the death of a man named Edmund Green. Stephen Jones was born about 1667. In 1694, Stephen Jones successfully defended his garrison, "the refuge of many", against attack from Indians. Abigail\(^3\) died before 1733. Stephen Jones lived another ten years, and his 1743 will names four children: Stephen, Ebenezer, Mary and Abigail.

Ann Nutter\(^3\) married Lieutenant Joseph Jones, the brother of Stephen Jones just mentioned. Joseph Jones was born about 1674. In 1733, he and Ann\(^3\) joined other Nutter heirs in a lawsuit over land. They produced the following children, all baptized on 13 May 1722: Joseph, Benjamin, John, Anthony, Elizabeth, Samuel and Richard.

Mary Nutter\(^3\) married Colonel Shadrach Walton, who was born about 1658. Walton was a Captain at Fort William and Mary before 1694, a Major at Port Royal in 1707 and Colonel of the New Hampshire forces there when it fell to the British in 1710. Port Royal was the last attempt by the colonists to control what is today Nova Scotia. Walton was Commander of New England forces in eastern Maine from 1720 until his resignation in January 1722/23 after a heated controversy in the Massachusetts House. Walton also served as a judge, including as Judge of the Supreme Court in New Hampshire from 1698 to 1699. Shadrach Walton died on 3 October 1741, while Mary\(^3\) lived
for at least nine more years. The children of Colonel and Mary (Nutter) Walton were (order unknown): Shadrach, George, Elizabeth, Abigail, Sarah, Mary and Benjamin.

Our direct Nutter ancestor was Henry Nutter$$^3$$, who was born at Newington, New Hampshire about 1680, the son of Anthony Nutter$$^2$$ and grandson of Hatevil Nutter$$^1$$. Henry$$^3$$, in all likelihood, was named for his maternal grandfather, Henry Langstaff. Henry Nutter$$^3$$ married Mary Shackford on 26 July 1703, and after her death, remarried to a Mary Hoyt. Before continuing with Henry Nutter$$^3$$, let us digress with a description of his wife's ancestry. Henry Nutter's wife, Mary Shackford, was the daughter of William Shackford and Deborah Trickey, who had married by 1671 and had four children.

William Shackford's wife, Deborah Trickey, was the daughter of Thomas Trickey, who came to the Dover area by 1640. Thomas Trickey was born about 1614-1616, probably in Devonshire, England. Trickey "was one of the earliest settlers at Bloody Point" [now Newington, New Hampshire] and "operated a ferry to Dover Neck and Kittery from about 1640 until he died in 1676." The ferry carried passengers across the Piscataqua River to Kittery, Maine and to Hilton Point. The operation of the ferry was carried on by his son, Zachariah, who sold the ferry, tavern and family farm to John Knight, whose license was approved by the General Assembly on 11 December 1702. Thomas Trickey lived in a house adjacent to the ferry landing. He was also a shipwright and in 1650 built a 40-ton vessel for George Dodd of Boston, who sued Trickey over the building of the ship. Thomas Trickey married someone named Elizabeth, last name unknown, and by her, had the following seven children:

1. Deborah Trickey
   b. Abt 1645
   m. William Shackford
   d. Aft 1720

2. Lydia Trickey
   b. Abt 1650
   m. Richard Webber
   d. 30 Apr 1721

3. Sarah Trickey
   m. Bef 1682 Joshua Crockett

4. Zachariah Trickey
   b. Abt 1651
   m. Elizabeth Wittum
   d. Oct 1715 @ Kittery

5. Isaac Trickey
   m. Lydia ----
   d. 1712

6. Ephraim Trickey
   m. Mary Nason
   d. 1701

7. Joseph Trickey
   m. Rebecca Rogers
   d. 1713

William Shackford was a housewright [house builder] who was born about 1640. Two traditions have it that William Shackford came from either Ireland or Bristol, England, with no evidence that either is correct. He first shows up in the tax lists of the Dover area in 1662, but in January 1709/10, at the approximate age of 70, William Shackford stated in a deposition that he had been in this country for 58 years. He also deposed in April 1718, at the age of about 78, that he had worked with Henry Langstaff at Oyster River and that he had built a house for Langstaff 20 years prior. William and Deborah Shackford had the following children:

1. Samuel Shackford
   b. Abt 1674
   m. Jun 1695 (1st) Abigail Richards
   m. 10 May 1716 (2nd) Frances (Hoyt) Peabody
2. John Shackford  
   b. Abt 1677  
   m. Abt 1699 Sarah Hudson  
   d. 03 Oct 1738

+ 3. Mary Shackford  
   b. Abt 1683  
   m. 26 Jul 1703 Henry Nutter  
   d. 1745 @ Newington

4. Joshua Shackford  
   m. (1st) Mary ----  
   m. 04 Dec 1707 (2nd) Elizabeth Barnes  
   d. Bef 1760

It has been written that there was a fifth child, Jane, who married Alexander Hodgdon, but there is no evidence that this Jane was a Shackford.

Returning to Henry Nutter³, who married Mary Shackford, the daughter of William Shackford and the granddaughter of Thomas Trickey, we know only that he was a yeoman [a farmer] and lived at Newington, where his father had settled. We know precious little else about him and Henry³ shows up in only a couple of early colonial records. In 1732, he deeded to his son, Samuel, land that had been purchased from his grandfather, Henry Langstaff. In 1738/9, Henry³ sued for 1/9 of his father's real estate, probably resulting from the fact that his father, Anthony Nutter², had not left a will.

His will was dated 24 December 1739 and he died very soon after, since it was probated only 26 days later, on 19 January 1739/40. His second wife, Mary Hoyt, outlived him. In his will, Henry³ left the bulk of his estate to his wife, Mary, "to her Use Benifit & Behoof duering her Natural Life". Fortunately for us, Henry³ mentions all of his children in his will. As had been the tradition for centuries, he left almost his entire estate "after my Beloved wifes decease" to his oldest son, Samuel⁴. This included the land at Newington, the house, all the household goods, the barn and the cattle.

To his son "Vollintine Nutter" [Valentine⁴], he left "fifty pounds to be paid him by my Executor after my Wife's Decease". To his son "Joseph Nutter" he bequeathed "all my Lands in the Township of Rochester he to take possession of them Immediately after my Decease". He gave to his daughters, "Elizabeth Croket" and "Mary Nutter", each £10 to be paid after the death of his wife.

Therefore, it appears that Henry Nutter³ and his wife, Mary Shackford, had at least the following children:

1. Samuel Nutter⁴  
   b. Abt 1704 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. 18 May 1725 Sarah Hoyt  
   d. 10 Jul 1771 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH

+ 2. Valentine Nutter⁴  
   b. Abt 1705 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. Mary Goode  
   d. 1757 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH

3. Joseph Nutter⁴  
   b. @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. Bef 1735 Bridget Barker (Enoch)  
   d. 1761–1771 @ Newark, Essex, NJ

4. Elizabeth Nutter⁴  
   b. @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. 25 Dec 1733 Joshua Crockett @ Greenland, NH

5. Mary Nutter⁴  
   b. Abt 1715 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. 28 Aug 1740 John Pickering @ Newington, NH
d. 16 Jan 1811

There is some question as to the existence of two other children. The Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire notes the possibility of another son, Havel Nutter\(^4\). The reference reports that, in the New Hampshire Probate Minutes for 3 Mar 1724/5, there is the notation "Hate: Nutter's will brot & proved". However, the will was not filed or recorded, nor are there any other papers. The reference states that "if the entry was not erroneous, there seems no place for this man except as an oldest son (barely 21 years) of Henry Nutter". The compiler considers this claim somewhat dubious.

Further, the works of historians Cox and Haron both identify a son named Henry\(^4\), despite the fact that no such son is mentioned in the will of Henry Nutter\(^3\). This son is not mentioned in the Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire, normally a consistently accurate source. But Haron goes on to identify that this Henry Nutter married Margaret March and had nine children, the youngest being a son named Charles Nutter. This Charles Nutter was the great-grandfather of Robert E. Peary, the famed Arctic explorer who is credited with discovering the North Pole. In a genealogy given for Robert Peary, the father and grandfather of Charles Nutter are both identified as "Henry Nutter", lending credibility to the claims of Cox and Haron.

Further evidence supporting the claim that this Henry Nutter was the son of our direct ancestor, Henry Nutter\(^3\), is the fact that the New Hampshire Genealogical Record notes the baptism of a Henry Nutter on 2 September 1736, the "son of Henry and Mary Nutter". Therefore, the son Henry would have been only a little over three years old at the time of his father's death. Genealogist Frederick Boyle claims that this fourth-generation Henry Nutter is probably a different "Capt. Henry Nutter" who lived in Portsmouth and is not descended from our ancestor. But the compiler considers it more likely that this Henry was the young son of our ancestor, Henry Nutter\(^3\), by his second wife Mary Hoyt. The fact that Henry\(^3\) did not name this minor son in his will is not without precedent in older wills, and could explain the fact that he bequeathed the use of the land and house to his wife for the rest of her life, rather than give it to his oldest son as was more traditional.

However, professional genealogist Frederick Boyle claims that this Henry Nutter was the grandson of Henry Nutter\(^3\), through his son Valentine\(^4\), our direct ancestor, and will be so reported in this work.

FOURTH-GENERATION NUTTERS

Very little additional information is known about the two daughters of Henry Nutter\(^3\). But one interesting note is that his daughter, Mary Nutter\(^4\), married John Pickering, whose father also married a Mary Nutter, in fact the daughter of Henry Nutter's brother John\(^3\). Therefore, Henry's daughter Mary\(^4\) married the son of her first cousin.

Henry's son, Samuel Nutter\(^4\), apparently lived his entire life at Newington, on the land that he inherited from his father. He married Sarah Hoyt, the daughter of William and Elizabeth (Haley) (Nelson) Hoyt, and had eleven children, all born at Newington. Henry's other son, Joseph Nutter\(^4\), was a shipwright, and lived for a number of years at Durham, New Hampshire. He married Bridget Barker, the daughter of Enoch and Bridget (Cate) Barker of nearby Greenland, and had at least four children. Joseph\(^4\) and his wife owned and traded several parcels of land, including the land in
Rochester which Joseph received in his father's inheritance. Joseph Nutter eventually moved to Newark, New Jersey, where he died between 1761 (when he signed his will) and 1771 (when it was probated).

Our direct descendant from Henry Nutter is his son, Valentine Nutter, whose name is sometimes spelled Valentine. Scant additional information is known about him compared to his siblings. He was born about 1705 at Newington, New Hampshire, and became a carpenter and shipwright by trade. He moved to Portsmouth, then the hub of most the shipbuilding in New Hampshire. He first appears in the records of Portsmouth on 11 September 1729 when he purchased land and buildings in the Islington section of town, which is in the southeast portion of Portsmouth. He bought the property from the widows of William and Benjamin Rackliff, father and son. Early records show that, in 1733, Valentine was appointed an appraiser of the estate of Edward Cater of Portsmouth.

Valentine Nutter probably lived the rest of his years in Portsmouth, although it appears that he moved at least once in that time. On 19 May 1746, he purchased property in Portsmouth from Sarah Hart, who was administratrix of the estate of Samuel Cutt, also of Portsmouth. With the purchase of this property, Valentine Nutter probably moved his family to another part of the town, since after that time he appears to have attended the First Parish Church of Portsmouth, also known as the North Church. Prior to that time he undoubtedly attended another church in a different part of Portsmouth. Valentine was first identified with the First Parish Church on 27 November 1747, when a daughter was baptized there. Unfortunately, since we do not know the church he previously attended, that is the only baptism record for any of his children that has been found.

A year later, on 12 September 1748, Valentine Nutter purchased a pew in the North Church, indicating that he liked this church and planned to become a regular parishioner there. Throughout New England, it was common for people to buy a pew in the church they attended, which was usually more like a box seat or walled-in cubicle area. They would then have the comfort and familiarity of always sitting in the same spot each Sunday and could leave robes and personal effects in their "pew".

On 16 November 1756, apparently as he was approaching death, Valentine Nutter sold his church pew for £50 to William Earl Treadwell, transferring all rights to the pew to Treadwell, except "reserving liberty to my wife Mary Nutter to set there herself when she pleases". Valentine apparently died soon after, since on 26 June 1757, his widow Mary entered into a bond on Valentine's estate, with Stephen Jones of Durham and Samuel Nutter of Newington as sureties. Treadwell, to whom Valentine sold his pew, would figure prominently in the affairs of the Nutter family after Valentine's death. He became the administrator of the widow Mary Nutter's estate on 30 April 1761, following her death, and later assumed guardianship over Valentine and Mary's two youngest sons. The inventory of Mary Nutter's estate, prepared on 2 May 1761, had a value of over £2938, significant for the day.

The identity of Valentine Nutter's wife remains a mystery. A record of the marriage has never been found. Historian Henry Hardon, in his work Newington, New Hampshire Families in the Eighteenth Century, indicates that Valentine married Mary Goode, a name that has been replicated innumerable times by genealogists researching the Nutter family. However, that name has caused considerable suspicion among researchers, including the compiler, because the surname Goode is
virtually nonexistent in colonial New Hampshire records. As his source, Hardon cites an "elaborate
genealogy" manuscript on the Shackford Family that he had "examined", but which the compiler has
not found.

Frederick Boyle, a professional genealogist who prepared an extensive genealogy on the Nutter
family in 1997, states that "there is no evidence to support" the name Goode, citing that the "family
name is uncommon in New Hampshire provincial records". So far, so good (pun intended). Instead,
he claims the wife of Valentine Nutter was Mary Cotton, and provides his reasoning for such a
claim. However, in the opinion of the compiler, his evidence for such a claim is highly dubious at
best. For those reasons, and until more conclusive evidence is discovered to refute or confirm the
identity of Mary Goode as the wife of Valentine, this work will stay with that identity.

Valentine Nutter and his wife, Mary Goode, had the following nine children, all identified from
Valentine's will (all children probably born at Portsmouth):

1. William Nutter b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. Sarah Gilmore
d. Bef 1760 @ New York City, NY
2. Mary Nutter b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. Benjamin Wills
3. Anthony Nutter b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
d. 1773 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
4. Agnes Nutter b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. Bef 1758 Richard Greeley
+ 5. Grafton Nutter b. Abt 1738 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. 26 Feb 1762 Mary Crethorn @ Portsmouth, NH
d. Bef 1790 Probably at Tuftonborough, NH
6. Henry Nutter b. Abt 1740 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. Bef 1765 (1) Margaret ----
m. Aug 1789 (2) Hannah Cutts @ Greenland, NH
d. 11 Oct 1813 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
7. Valentine Nutter b. Abt 1746 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
d. Oct 1786 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
8. Sarah Nutter b. 27 Nov 1747 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. 29 Aug 1770 Benjamin Cole @ Portsmouth, NH
9. Jacob Nutter b. Abt 1750 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. Rebecca ----
d. 13 Apr 1814 @ Eliot, York, ME

The daughter Sarah is the only for whom a baptism record has been found, and therefore, the
only one for whom we have a definite date of birth. In the final settlement of her mother's estate in
1769, Sarah is mentioned as "an orphan," even though she would have been over 21 years of age
by that time.

FIFTH-GENERATION NUTTERS

Considerably more information is known about the fifth generation of our Nutter family, the
children of Valentine Nutter, including our direct ancestor, Grafton Nutter. When they reached
adulthood, several of these children moved away from Portsmouth, New Hampshire, to other parts
of New England. This reflects the growing maturity of the transportation available in the colonies,
during a time that was approaching troubles with England and the Revolutionary War.

The oldest son of Valentine Nutter\(^4\), William Nutter\(^5\), was a carpenter like his father, and moved from Portsmouth to New York City by at least 1755, when he appears on that city's tax rolls. By 1760, he had moved to Harlem, an old Dutch village on the upper part of Manhattan Island, where he apparently died soon after. On 5 April 1760, a man named Lawrence Kortright, who owned land in Harlem, left a will giving his land to Sarah Gilmore, the wife of William Nutter\(^5\). But in a second will written the same year, Kortright claimed that Sarah Nutter had obtained his land "from me by fraud and circumvention and without consideration". Kortright's heirs, his sisters and a brother, contested the will, and the legal right of Sarah Nutter to the land left her by Kortright in the first will.

The ownership of this land was contested in the courts for many years. In 1771, after Sarah Nutter had died, her "only child and son" Valentine Nutter\(^6\), obviously named after his grandfather, filed a suit demanding the eviction of the Kortright heirs. However, it was not until 1799 that he received final access to the Kortright farm. Today, the land would occupy the property from 109\(^{th}\) to 114\(^{th}\) Streets in the Harlem section of New York City.

William's son, Valentine Nutter\(^6\), was an interesting individual who bears some attention. As a young man he was apprenticed to a bookbinder in New York City, but sued in court to be freed from his obligation because he claimed that his master had not provided him with "sufficient wearing apparel, meat, drink, lodging and washing". He owned a book and stationary shop at the corner of Wall and Market Streets in New York City, and became quite successful financially. Valentine\(^6\) became the owner of a runaway slave in 1779. He also became an ensign in the New York militia in 1776 as the storm clouds of war broke out in the Revolution. He eventually rose to the rank of Captain in the 17th New York Dragoons, as well as becoming a Justice of the Peace.

However, Valentine\(^6\) eventually sided with the British in the conflict and became a Tory. As such, after the Revolutionary War ended, he was forced to leave the country with the other Tories and fled to Canada with his family of four plus four servants, having been granted land by the British in Shelburne, Nova Scotia. While in Shelburne, he continued to be a successful merchant, running a store that sold general merchandise. But he eventually returned to New York City, where he was by 1790, and resumed his stationary business. He died on 13 August 1836, at the age of 95.

Mary Nutter\(^5\) married Benjamin Wills of Portsmouth, who like his father-in-law, was a ship carpenter by trade. It is not known what happened to them, other than it is possible that they were living in Sutton, New Hampshire by 1790.

Anthony Nutter\(^5\) stayed in Portsmouth and was also a shipwright. Like his younger brothers, Henry\(^5\) and Jacob\(^5\), Anthony\(^5\) did not acquire land on his own or leave any probate records, so the records of him are a bit skimpy. He filed a claim against the estate of Richard Greeley on 8 June 1769 for the "upkeep and maintenance" of a child that he had taken care of for two and a half years, the child belonging to his sister, Agnes\(^5\). He requested compensation of £39 from the estate but was granted just less than £21 by the court. He was a tax payer in Portsmouth from at least 1758 until 1773, when he died in Portsmouth. We do not know the name of his wife, but he was likely the father of at least two children, named Anthony\(^6\) and Valentine\(^6\), who later lived in Pownalborough, Maine.
Agnes Nutter married the Richard Greeley mentioned above before 1758. Richard Greeley was a hatter [a person who made hats]. Greeley drowned at Exeter, New Hampshire on 8 July 1766, which is why Agnes' brother, Anthony Nutter, assumed the care of her child.

Henry Nutter was undoubtedly named for his grandfather and our third-generation ancestor. This is the Henry Nutter that was reported by historian Henry Hardon to be the son of Henry Nutter, however, more likely was his grandson. "Capt." Henry Nutter was born about 1740, and was a mariner. He married Margaret or Margery, last name unknown, who died on 4 March 1788 at the age of 45. He then married Hannah Cutts at Greenland, New Hampshire in August of 1789. Henry Nutter had nine children by his first wife, and possibly another two by his second wife Hannah.

Two months after his marriage to Hannah Cutts, Henry Nutter and his new wife filed a lawsuit against her brother, a cooper named John Cutts from Portsmouth, to force him to pay Hannah £140 she felt she was owed. Hannah claimed the money because she had worked for her father as a "maid servant for two years" and as a "housekeeper for thirteen years", which probably indicates that Hannah was a spinster who was no longer a young marital-age woman. Henry and Hannah were only awarded £15 by the court. Henry Nutter died on 11 October 1813 at Portsmouth.

Jacob Nutter was born about 1750, and moved across the river from Portsmouth to Kittery, Maine in the period 1771-1774. Jacob had an interesting war record, having first served as a quartermaster in Captain J. Shapleigh's company in the Massachusetts State Troops as the Revolutionary War problems began to brew. He later enlisted in Captain R. Follett's artillery company at Kittery Point on 5 November 1775, being discharged less than two months later, on December 31. He then enlisted in Captain Tobias Salter's company in the New Hampshire State Troops on 17 February 1776.

He later was a member of the crew of the privateer brig Dalton which was captured on 24 December 1776, and along with the other members of the crew, were taken prisoner by the British. Jacob Nutter was put aboard the sloop Charming Polly and taken to Plymouth, England where he was imprisoned at the Old Mill Prison until he was part of a prisoner exchange on 15 March 1779 at Nantes, France. At Nantes, Jacob again enlisted in the service and served aboard the new American frigate Alliance when she participated in the battle with the British frigate Serapis on 23 September 1779.

While off the east coast of England near Flamborough Head on the afternoon of 23 September 1779, Jones' small squadron spotted what they had been searching for, a 41-ship British convoy escorted by two warships, the HMS Serapis and the HMS Countess of Scarborough. A fierce battle commenced, with the Bon Homme Richard pulling alongside and lashing itself to the Serapis, head to stern, while the Pallas locked up with the Countess of Scarborough. The sea battle continued for hours, well into the bright moonlit night.
The Bon Homme Richard carried 28 12-pound cannons on her gun deck, six or eight 9-pounders on the forecastle and quarterdeck, and six 18-pounders between decks. But the British ship so severely raked the Bon Homme Richard with its fast firing 18-pounders that, after only an hour of combat, only three American 9-pounders on the quarterdeck were still firing. The rest of the ship was a shambles and filling fast, described later as "an open alley of smoldering, bloody debris". At about 9:45 that evening, the captain of the British ship hailed to Jones and wanted to know if he was willing to strike his colors and surrender. John Paul Jones hollered back with his now-famous answer: "I have not yet begun to fight!"

The fighting went on. Meanwhile, Capt. Landais held the Alliance away from the battle, except for twice when he approached the two other ships locked in battle and deliberately raked the Bon Homme Richard with grape and cross-bar fire, despite hails from the crew of the American vessel. American marines in the topmasts poured musketry fire onto the decks of the British vessel, extracting heavy causalities on the British vessel. Finally, the lucky placement of a hand grenade which bounced through a hatchway to the gun deck of the Serapis, touching off the powder charges lying next to the guns, killed twenty British bluejackets, with another 30 badly wounded. The British captain finally surrendered his ship.

By Jones' own report, he lost an estimated 150 killed and wounded out of a total crew of 380 men. The Bon Homme Richard was so severely damaged that she sank within 36 hours. Jones and his crew transferred to the Serapis, which they sailed to the Netherlands. Jones then preferred charges against Landais, the captain of the Alliance, and relieved him of command.

Jacob Nutter survived his service aboard the Alliance, and after the war, returned to Kittery, Maine. We know very little else about him other than he had earlier married a woman named Rebecca, last name unknown, before 1771. Jacob and Rebecca had seven children. Jacob Nutter died on 13 April 1813, at Eliot, Maine, which had formed from the town of Kittery.

Valentine Nutter was born about 1746 and named for his father. He died of gout at Portsmouth in October 1786 at the age of 40. Nothing else is known of him.

Sarah Nutter was baptized in Portsmouth on 27 November 1747. She probably married Benjamin Cole at Portsmouth on 29 August 1770. No other record of them is known.

Grafton Nutter, our direct ancestor, was the middle child in the family, with four older brothers and sisters, and four younger. The origin of his unusual name, Grafton, is itself a bit of a mystery. There are only ten counties in the small state of New Hampshire, one of which is Grafton County, which according to a New Hampshire gazetteer, was named in honor of Augustus Henry Fitzroy, the Duke of Grafton. However, there were no counties at all in New Hampshire until 1769, after Grafton Nutter was born, so that source for his name is quite questionable. England has a number of townships and parishes named Grafton, but the Nutters had been in America for over a hundred years by the time Grafton was born, so that source of his name seems unlikely as well.

A more likely source of Grafton is the last name of a friend of the family or a prominent person admired by the parents. A search of colonial tax and census records by the compiler shows there were a few people with the surname Grafton living in Massachusetts and Maine, although it appears there were none in New Hampshire. It is interesting to note that people with the surname Grafton...
lived in Salem, Massachusetts, a town to which many of Grafton Nutter's grandchildren would move some years later. However, the origin of the first name Grafton will probably remain a mystery.

Grafton Nutter\textsuperscript{5} was born at Portsmouth, New Hampshire, probably about 1735-1740. He married, on 26 February 1762, Mary Crethorn, about whom nothing else is known, although one source not cited has her date and place of birth as 16 May 1741 in Portsmouth. Despite enormous effort, the compiler has never found any other person in New Hampshire at that time with the name Crethorn, and it is entirely possible that the name was reported incorrectly. Going even further, professional genealogist Frederick Boyle states that "no evidence has been found to support the name 'Crethorn' given to Mary".

That claim is quite incorrect, however, since the 5 March 1762 edition of the New Hampshire Gazette, the only newspaper printed in New Hampshire at the time, had the following entry under Portsmouth announcements: "Last Friday Evening was Married here, Mr. Grafton Nutter to Mrs Mary Crethorn, a very agreeable young Couple." Most genealogists, including Boyle, give the date of the marriage incorrectly as well. The date of the newspaper, printed every Friday, was 5 March 1762. It is not possible that the newspaper could have reported an event that happened the evening that the newspaper was printed, given the technology of newspaper printing in 1762. In addition, the announcement clearly refers to "Last Friday Evening", indicating the marriage occurred one week prior to the date the newspaper was printed.

Grafton\textsuperscript{5} apparently stayed in Portsmouth for several years, since his first four children were baptized in the North Church in Portsmouth. But, about 1769-1776, Grafton Nutter\textsuperscript{5} left Portsmouth and moved about 50 miles northwest to the area near Lake Winnipesaukee in central New Hampshire. Lake Winnipesaukee is the largest lake in New Hampshire, covering an area of about 70 square miles. Eight New Hampshire townships formed around the shores of the lake, including those of Moultonborough, Wolfeborough and Tuftonborough. Today this lake region is a hugely popular recreational area in New Hampshire.

Exactly when Grafton Nutter\textsuperscript{5} moved is not clear. In the History of the Town of Wolfeborough, New Hampshire, historian Benjamin Parker stated that: "In 1769, Jacob Scrogg, Aaron Frost, John Flagg, Grafton Nutter and Ichiel Clifford became residents of the town." However, if Grafton\textsuperscript{5} had become a "resident" of Wolfeborough in 1769, he may not have moved his family to the area yet, since his fourth child was baptized in Portsmouth in 1770. Grafton's seventh and last known child was baptized at Wolfeborough in 1776, indicating that he was definitely living there by that year. Historian Parker states that "Grafton Nutter was one of the three persons who assisted in cutting the Pequaket Road. He settled on the hill where afterwards dwelt Alpheus Swett, and where was located the town farm, north of the Miles Road."

Land records in the Strafford County courthouse show that, on 23 March 1775, "Graffam Nutter" received a quit claim deed from Mark H. Wentworth for 80 acres at Wolfeborough. The clear title to the land was granted on "part of Lot No. 2" because the terms and conditions had been met that "the said Graffam shall clear or cause to be cleared six acres of said land & build a house thereon fit for a family to live in & reside on said land himself for under him seven years." It was noted that "Graffam complies with the above conditions." It was stated that the property was bounded by two beech trees, a large hemlock and a large white pine, all marked with "GN" to signify the corners of his property.
It appears that Grafton Nutter 5 did not stay long in the township of Wolfeborough. The area further west near Tuftonborough had begun to open up, since, as described in the History of Carroll County, "only the Indian, the hunter, the wandering prospector, or perhaps a surveyor and his party had trod these trackless forests until after the Revolutionary war". On 3 March 1775, a "Graffam Nutter of Wolfeboro" acquired part of Lot No. 2 in Tuftonborough, with the understanding that, like at Wolfeborough, he "shall clear six acres of land thereon, fit for a family to live on". On 17 February 1780, Grafton Nutter 5 "of Wolfborough" sold his 80 acres there to Moses Ham of Dover for £2000, which he stated was "land that was given me for settling by Mark H. Wentworth Esq." Both Grafton and Mary, his wife, signed the deed with their marks.

In another deed dated 17 September 1784, Grafton 5 received additional land on "Tuftonboro Neck" from Woodbury Langdon, since he had felled about "twelve acres of land in two years". Thus it appears that Grafton Nutter 5 may have received land in exchange for clearing the timber from it for Woodbury Langdon, a prominent land owner in the early Tuftonborough area. Tuftonborough Neck is a finger of land that projects onto Lake Winnipesaukee, located just south of the tiny present-day town of Mirror Lake, New Hampshire.

In the "inventory" taken for Tuftonborough in 1788, the oldest known record of the residents of the township were listed. Only 13 names appear on the list: "Phineas Graves, Benjamin Bean, Edward Moody, Obadiah Brown, William C. Warren, Hanson Libbey, Jonathan Brown, James Whitehouse, William Melling, Elisha Abott, Samuel Abott, Benjamin Young, and Grafton Nutter." The "Elisha Abott" listed was Grafton's son-in-law.

Grafton Nutter 5 participated in the Revolutionary War, though like most of the soldiers that fought in that war, he was not a professional soldier and was not in Washington's Continental Army. Rather, he enlisted twice in the New Hampshire militia for short periods of time when hostilities required that he serve. The first time he enlisted was on 25 November 1775, just seven months after the Minutemen clashed with the British at Lexington and Concord. On that date, he enlisted in the company of Captain David Copp and would see limited action outside of Boston near Bunker Hill, but long after that battle was fought.

The second time, on 20 July 1777, he enrolled as a private in Captain Jeremiah Gilman's company in the New Hampshire Militia when the British were threatening New England. This company was attached to the regiment of Colonel Thomas Stickney and the brigade of General John Stark, and Grafton Nutter 5 would see considerable action at the Battle of Bennington. His regiment then marched on into New York to reinforce the Northern Continental Army there.

At the time, the New Hampshire militia had just been reorganized and placed under the command of John Stark, a veteran of the French and Indian War. Stark had already fought at Bunker Hill, in Canada, at Trenton and at Princeton. In April 1777, when the Continental Congress began making a flock of new generals, Stark was passed over. Angry about this, he went back to his farm in New Hampshire. But when the news of the invasion by the British General John Burgoyne into New England from the north reached New Hampshire, Stark was asked to lead a new militia brigade that was being assembled. Stark agreed, on one condition, that this would be entirely a New Hampshire organization, with no responsibility to the Continental Congress or its new army.

Stark, with 1500 men eager to follow him, each carrying his own firearm and powder, marched
west through the southern part of New Hampshire and crossed into Vermont at Brattleboro. Once in Vermont, they proceeded on to Bennington, near the border with New York. There, they met a large party of Burgoyne's men who were foraging for horses, wagons and cattle to supply the tattered British force, stalled near Stillwater, New York. Desperate for horses and supplies, Burgoyne had received reports that the colonials had great stores of supplies at Bennington and had sent a large force there to seize it. His reports also had told him that only 300 to 400 American militia were in that vicinity. The surprise arrival of John Stark's regiment changed those odds considerably.

The men in Stark's militia fought Burgoyne's forces for two days in a drenching rain on 14-15 August 1777 without a decisive outcome. The morning of 16 August 1777 dawned bright, sunny and hot. Stark divided his force, and at three in the afternoon, attacked the enemy on every side. After an intense two-hour fight, the ammunition of the British force gave out after their sole remaining ammunition cart exploded. Some in the British force attempted to break through the line of the New Hampshire men with bayonets and sabres. A desperate fight ensued and continued until sunset, when the British force retreated, leaving their artillery and nearly all of their wounded behind. The remainder were soon captured.

The British contingent had lost 207 men, with 700 more made prisoners. Stark's losses amounted to less than 20 killed and 40 wounded. It was a staggering defeat for the British. The Continental Congress, who had just chided New Hampshire for Stark's refusal to align himself with the rest of the army, realized their previous oversight and promptly granted him a commission of Brigadier General in the Continental Army.

Grafton Nutter went with his regiment on into New York and participated in what became known as the Battle of Freeman's Farm near the small town of Stillwater, near Saratoga. This battle, fought on 19 September 1777, was the first of two battles fought at Saratoga. We can assume that he probably did not participate in the second battle there, known as the Battle of Bemis Heights, in which Burgoyne's entire army surrendered. That battle was fought over several days beginning 7 October 1777, but the Revolutionary War records show that the entire company in which Grafton was enlisted had already been discharged on 30 September.

The records also show that the 45 men in the Captain Gilman's company marched from Stillwater, New York back to New Hampshire as part of their service since they received pay for the eleven days it took to travel back to New Hampshire from Stillwater. Grafton and the other men served for 2 months and 11 days and were due £14 and four shillings for their service. But they only received £4 and ten shillings from the cash-strapped colonial government. It is not clear if they ever received the remainder of the money due them.

Today, in southern Vermont just west of the town of Bennington, a stately 306-foot monument commemorates the Revolutionary War battle. An elevator whisks visitors to the top to view the peaceful panorama of the town and of the fields where the battle was fought.

Grafton Nutter died in the period 1788-1790 at Tuftonborough, without leaving a will. The first census, taken in 1790, shows his widow, listed as "Murry Nutter", with two males over 16 and two females in the household. Grafton's estate was finally administered on 23 August 1793, several years after his death, probably delayed because of the lack of a will. His widow, Mary Nutter, was the administratrix of the estate, and Nathan Hoit and Joseph Richardson, both of Moultonborough,
Grafton and Mary (Crethorn) Nutter had the following children (the first four baptized at Portsmouth and their dates of birth are actually baptism dates):

1. Jotham Nutter
   b. 30 Jan 1763 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH

2. Mary Nutter
   b. 16 Jun 1765 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. 02 May 1787 (1st) Elisha Abbott
   m. Besf 1828 (2nd) Moses Hanson
   d. Aft 1832 Probably at Ossipee, NH

3. Grafton Nutter
   b. 16 Aug 1767 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. 09 May 1791 (1st) Elizabeth Fullerton
   m. 17 Nov 1803 (2nd) Elizabeth Richardson
   d. Aft 1833

4. Ann Nutter
   b. 04 Mar 1770 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. 27 Mar 1788 Benjamin Pierce (of Moultonboro)

5. (?) Betsy Nutter
   m. 17 Jan 1796 Andrew Wiggin @ Moultonboro

6. Jacob Nutter
   b. 27 Jan 1775 @ Wolfeborough, Strafford, NH
   m. 14 Apr 1803 Elizabeth Clifford
   d. 10 Nov 1861 @ Cambridge, MA

THE SIXTH-GENERATION NUTTERS

Jotham Nutter was baptized 30 Jan 1763 in Portsmouth, New Hampshire, the oldest child of Grafton and Mary (Crethorn) Nutter. No further records of him have been found. He either died young or, possibly, was one of the persons living in 1790 in the household of his widowed mother in Tuftonborough.

Mary Nutter was baptized 16 June 1765 in Portsmouth. She married Elisha Abbott at Portsmouth on 2 May 1787, the two of them moving north with her family to Wolfeborough and Tuftonborough. The family of "Elisha Abbott" is listed as one of the thirteen families living in Tuftonborough in the oldest existing inventory, taken in 1788, the year after he married Mary Nutter. Elisha Abbott died at Tuftonborough in 1822 (he signed his will on 13 June and it was probated on 13 July of that year). Mary then married Moses Hanson of Tuftonborough, later moving to Ossipee, New Hampshire, a few miles to the east. Mary (Nutter) (Abbott) Hanson died sometime after 22 June 1832, when she signed a deed.

Ann Nutter, who was baptized in Portsmouth on 4 March 1770, married Benjamin Pierce in 1788. They also moved north with her family, settling in nearby Moultonborough. Betsy Nutter, who is probably a younger daughter of Grafton and Mary Nutter, married Andrew Wiggin in Moultonborough on 17 January 1796.

Jacob Nutter was born at Wolfeborough on 27 January 1775 (the date based upon his death record), showing how early the Nutters were living in the lakes region of New Hampshire. He was baptized there on 27 October 1776, the "son of Grafton and Mary Nutter, both born Portsmouth, NH". On 14 April 1803, Jacob Nutter married Elizabeth "Betsy" Clifford at Wolfeborough, where they started a family. By the 1830s, Jacob had moved his family slightly south to New Durham, New Hampshire, before moving further south to Dover in 1833. Jacob and Elizabeth Nutter eventually moved to the Boston area, where he died at Cambridge, Massachusetts on 10 November.
1861, his wife dying at the same place on 3 July 1864. They had two known sons, who both lived at Cambridge, one of whom was a teamster who died after being "crushed by railroad cars".

Our direct ancestor, Grafton Nutter⁶, named for his father, was baptized at Portsmouth, New Hampshire on 16 August 1767. He moved at a young age with his parents to Wolfeborough, where he married Elizabeth Fullerton on 9 May 1791. Elizabeth died about 1802-1803, after providing Grafton⁶ with five, and possibly six, children. Grafton then married, on 17 November 1803 at Moultonborough, Elizabeth "Betsy" Richardson, the descendant of an old New England family. In the next chapter, we will introduce the Richardson family of Massachusetts and New Hampshire, before continuing the story of Grafton Nutter⁶ and his family in a later chapter.
THE RICHARDSON FAMILY

The immigrant ancestor of the branch of the Richardson family that ties into our Nutter family was William Richardson\(^1\) of Newbury, Massachusetts. He was born in England about 1620 and came to America about 1640 or soon after, possibly with a brother, Edward, who also settled in Newbury about the same time. William Richardson\(^1\) owned a house and four acres of land in Newbury, in what is now West Newbury. No record has been found of his parents or even from where in England he originated.

William\(^1\) must have been a man of some material wealth since, on 20 May 1642, his servant, Thomas Jones, was "freed from service". Upon first arriving in the colonies, most men had only the clothes on their backs, not servants. William Richardson\(^1\) married Elizabeth Wiseman on 23 August 1654 at Newbury; no record of her parents or origins have been found either. William\(^1\) died on 25 March 1657, less than three years after he married and probably well before his fortieth birthday.

William\(^1\) and Elizabeth (Wiseman) Richardson had three children in their short marriage, aided by the fact that twins were born to them only twelve days before William\(^1\) died:

1. Joseph Richardson\(^2\)  
   b. 18 May 1655 @ Newbury, Essex, MA  
   m. 12 Jul 1681 Margaret Godfrey @ Newbury  
   d. 4 May 1724 @ Newbury, Essex, MA

2. Benjamin Richardson\(^2\)  
   b. 13 Mar 1657 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
Nothing else is known about the twins other than the fact that Benjamin Richardson served as a witness in a witchcraft case against a woman named Elizabeth Morse of Newbury.

Joseph Richardson, the first of four direct ancestors in a row with that name, was born at Newbury, Massachusetts on 18 May 1655. He took the oath of allegiance to the Colony in 1678, when he was 23 years old. By trade, he was a *cordwainer* [a shoemaker or someone who worked with leather] and lived his entire life in what today would be West Newbury. He was also referred to as a "planter", with a farm in West Newbury, and called "Sergt. Joseph Richardson" of a Newbury militia company about 1700. On 12 July 1681, he married Margaret Godfrey of Newbury. Margaret Godfrey was the daughter of Peter and Mary (Brown) Godfrey and the granddaughter of Thomas and Mary Brown.

Thomas Brown was born about 1607 in England. He came from Christian Malford parish in Wiltshire County in England, and was a weaver in the employ of a Thomas Antram. Thomas sailed from Southampton, England in 1635 on the *James*, reaching Boston on 3 June of that year. He was accompanied by his wife Mary, who died at Newbury on 2 June 1654. Thomas Brown lived much longer, dying 8 January 1687 as a result of a fall. Thomas and Mary Brown had three known children (there were many Browns in Newbury and Thomas may also have been the father of Richard, George and James Brown of Newbury):

1. Francis Brown  
   b. Abt 1632  
   m. 21 Nov 1653 Mary Johnson  
   d. 1691
2. Mary Brown  
   b. 1635 @ Newbury, Essex, MA  
   m. 13 May 1656 Peter Godfrey @ Newbury  
   d. 1716 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
3. Isaac Brown  
   m. 22 Aug 1661 Rebecca Bailey  
   d. 13 May 1674 @ Newbury, Essex, MA

In early colonial records for Thomas and his descendants, the family's last name is often spelled Browne.

Mary Brown, who was born in 1635 at Newbury, Massachusetts, was reported by historian James Savage in his *Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England* as being the first English child born in the town. She married, on 13 May 1656, Peter Godfrey at Newbury, Massachusetts. Nothing is known of Peter's ancestry, although it is possible that he was the son of John Godfrey, who came in the *Mary and John* in 1638 and lived in Newbury. Peter Godfrey, who was born about 1631, lived at Newbury all of his life. In the town records for Newbury for 1688, it states that Peter Godfrey owned a house, plow lands, a meadow, a pasture, 3 cows, 6 sheep and 1 "hogg". Peter died 5 October 1697, and his wife on 16 April 1716, both at Newbury. Peter and Mary (Brown) Godfrey had the following children, all born at Newbury:
1. Andrew Godfrey  
   b. 3 Mar 1657 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
2. Mary Godfrey  
   b. 21 Oct 1659 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   d. two weeks later
3. Mary Godfrey  
   b. 23 Jan 1661 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
+ 4. Margaret Godfrey  
   b. 9 Oct 1663 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   m. 12 Jul 1681 Joseph Richardson1 @ Newbury
5. Elizabeth Godfrey  
   b. 2 Feb 1667 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
6. Peter Godfrey  
   b. 14 Nov 1669 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
7. Joanna Godfrey  
   b. 16 Nov 1672 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
8. James Godfrey  
   b. 9 Mar 1677 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   m. 10 Feb 1700 Hannah Kimbal @ Newbury
9. Sarah Godfrey  
   b. 7 Apr 1680 @ Newbury, Essex, MA

Joseph Richardson2, who married Margaret Godfrey on 12 July 1681 at Newbury, died on 4 May 1724 at Newbury, Massachusetts. They had the following children (all born at Newbury, Massachusetts):

1. Mary Richardson3  
   b. 16 Apr 1682 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   m. 21 Jan 1703/4 Andrew Riggs @ Newbury
2. William Richardson3  
   b. 22 Mar 1684 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   d. 7 May 1743 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
+ 3. Joseph Richardson3  
   b. 31 Dec 1686 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   m. 24 Feb 1711/12 Ann Riggs @ Gloucester
   d. 17 Mar 1767 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
4. Elizabeth Richardson3  
   b. 28 Feb 1688/9 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   m. 16 Mar 1712/13 Thomas Roberts
5. Daniel Richardson3  
   b. 4 Apr 1692 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
6. Sarah Richardson3  
   b. 19 Jun 1694 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
7. Thomas Richardson3  
   b. 15 Feb 1696/7 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
8. Margaret Richardson3  
   b. 27 Sep 1699 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   d. 1724 unmarried
9. Caleb Richardson3  
   b. 29 Jun 1704 @ Newbury, Essex, MA

Joseph Richardson3, our direct ancestor and the second Joseph in a line of four, was born at Newbury, Massachusetts on New Years Eve of 1686. He married, on 24 February 1712, Ann Riggs of Gloucester, Massachusetts. She had a long heritage in this country. We will now turn our attention to the ancestry of Ann Riggs before continuing with the discussion of Joseph Richardson3.
John Greenway (also Greenoway, Greeneaway, Grenaway, Grinaway, Gringway, Grinnoway, etc.) was born in England and came to America in 1630, probably on the Mary and John, which landed at the present site of Hull, Massachusetts on 30 May 1630. He settled at Dorchester, Massachusetts, near Boston, and was a "wheelright of much esteem", although in his will he was described as a "milwright". He was one of twenty men chosen by the town in 1637 to "arrange the affairs of the plantation." We do not know when he was born or where he originated in England, but he was described as "old" in 1652 in the record of a division of land. From some of his children's ages, we can estimate that John Greenway was born about 1570 or before. He died 8 June 1659, while his wife Mary died on 23 January 1658/9, both at Dorchester. John and Mary Greenway had the following known children (all daughters and all born in England, and all may have been married there prior to coming to America):

1. Ann Greenway
   b. Abt 1601
   m. Bef 1635 Robert Pierce
   d. 31 Dec 1695 tombstone says at age 104

2. Ursula Greenway
   b. Abt 1603
   m. Hugh Batten
   d. 19 Dec 1682

+ 3. Mary Greenway
   b. Abt 1606
   m. Bef 1633 Thomas Millett
   d. 27 Sep 1682 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA

4. Elizabeth Greenway
   m. John Allen

5. Susannah Greenway
   m. Nathaniel Wales

6. Katharine Greenway
   m. William Daniels

It appears that most of the daughters of John and Mary Greenway came to America after their parents, and with their husbands and children. The sisters Mary, Ursula and Susannah all sailed in 1635 for Massachusetts, although not all on the same ship. It appears that Ann and her husband did not come until 1639 or after. Today, one can only wonder what would have inspired grandparents the ages of John and Mary Greenway to leave the relative comfort and familiarity of England and sail for the unknown wilderness of the Massachusetts Colony.

Thomas Millett married Mary Greenway in England and came to America on the Elizabeth in 1635, with his wife and two year old son Thomas. He was 30 years old at the time, while his wife was 29. They joined her father in settling at Dorchester, Massachusetts, where he had come five years before. Millett is an old French surname that can be found from at least 800 A.D. in the Normandy region of France. The name Millett can also be found in England as early as the fifteenth century. Thomas Millett was born in England about 1605. According to one source, he was born in Chertsey, Surry, England, the son of Henry and Joice (Chapman) Mylett. This may be accurate; however, evidence to sustain that claim was not provided.

Thomas Millett joined the church at Dorchester in 1636, the year after he arrived in America, and was made a freeman on 17 May 1637. He received a grant of "two acres, three quarters and four rods" on Dorchester Neck on 18 March 1637 and soon acquired other land as well. Thomas Millett remained in Dorchester, just outside Boston, for about twenty years; the exact date of his departure unclear. One record indicates that his house burned in 1657 and a portion of the town records of Dorchester kept there were destroyed. Another record indicates that, in 1655, he and his family moved to Gloucester, Massachusetts, where Thomas succeeded William Perkins as a preacher in the

CHAPTER 4 44 BIOG
church there. Millett bought all of his property in Gloucester from Perkins as well. Although there is no record that he received any formal training as an ordained minister, he nonetheless performed such work and records show that he received compensation for his work. Since he was referred to as "Mister Millett", a title typically given only to ministers or people of unusual social position, it appears that he was well accepted as a minister.

In 1668, Millett bought a house and land in Gloucester from a James Travis. A few years later, he moved to Brookfield, Massachusetts, to the west of Boston in central Massachusetts, where he succeeded a minister named Younglove at Brookfield in 1674. Thomas Millett received a grant of a home-lot of "20 acres, and 10 acres of meadow". References to "Millett's meadow" could be seen in a number of later deeds for Brookfield. He was alive in Brookfield on 5 June 1675, when he gave his consent to his son Nathaniel to sell his land "on Town Neck" in Gloucester. He died in the early part of 1676, since his will was probated on 28 September 1676. Descendant George Francis Millett, in his account of Thomas Millett, claims that Thomas was killed by Indians at Brookfield in that year. His will shows that he still owned several parcels of land in Gloucester at the time of his death. His wife Mary appears to have returned to Gloucester, for she died there 27 September 1682.

Thomas and Mary (Greenway) Millett had the following children (the first two born in England, the rest born at Dorchester, Massachusetts):

1. John Millett b. 6 May 1630 @ St. Saviors, Surrey, England
d. died in infancy
2. Thomas Millett b. 16 Aug 1632-3 @ St. Saviors, Surrey, England
m. 2 May 1655 (1) Mary Eveleth
m. 2 Dec 1688 (2) Mrs. Abigail (Coit) Eveleth
d. 18 Jun 1707 @ Manchester, MA
3. John Millett b. 8 Jul 1635 @ Dorchester, Suffolk, MA
m. 3 Jul 1663 Sarah (Leach) Elwell
d. 3 Nov 1678 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA
4. Jonathan Millett b. 27 May 1638 @ Dorchester, Suffolk, MA
d. 16 Jun 1639 @ Dorchester, Suffolk, MA
+ 5. Mary Millett b. 21 Aug 1639 @ Dorchester, Suffolk, MA
m. 7 Jun 1658 Thomas Rigg @ Gloucester
d. 23 Jan 1695 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA
6. Mehitable Millett b. 14 Mar 1641/2 @ Dorchester, Suffolk, MA
m. Isaac Elwell
d. 28 Sep 1699
7. Bethia Millett b. Feb 1643
m. 3 Aug 1666 Moses Ayres
d. 15 Apr 1669
8. Nathaniel Millett b. Dec 1647 @ Dorchester, Suffolk, MA
m. 3 May 1670 Ann Lester
d. 7 Nov 1719 @ Kettle Cove, MA

Thomas Riggs¹ married Mary Millett on 7 June 1658 at Gloucester, Massachusetts, where he had settled. Thomas¹ was born in England about 1632, and was possibly from London, although his English origins have not been found. He settled on the coast of Massachusetts, at Gloucester, where he first appears in the records at the time of his marriage. Some accounts have given the date of his arrival in the colonies as 1635, when Thomas¹ would have been three years old. It is much more
likely that he came to Massachusetts not long before his marriage in 1658. The same year, Thomas Riggs\textsuperscript{1} received a grant of six acres of "upland" on the Little River. On 7 October 1661, he purchased two houses, with their gardens and home-lots, on the south side of Goose Cove. By both grants and purchases, Thomas Riggs\textsuperscript{1} acquired other parcels of land, and became one of the largest land owners in the Gloucester area.

By tradition, he was said to have been a well educated man and a scrivener by profession (a scrivener would be similar to a notary today). Given the type of positions that he held, this tradition is most likely accurate. Thomas Riggs\textsuperscript{1} was a man of influence and contributed greatly to the early growth and prosperity of the town Gloucester. He was the town clerk for Gloucester from 1665 to 1716, a period of 51 years, as well as a selectman [a town officer] for 36 years and a representative to the general court in 1706. He helped build saw mills and grist mills in the town, and inaugurated a system of schools for which he also served as schoolmaster for many years.

When James II became the King of England, the colonies of New England were united as a single province for a time, with Edmund Andros selected by the king to be the governor. The new united governorship, and Andros personally, were very unpopular with the colonists. In neighboring Connecticut, for instance, the colonists refused to surrender its charter to Andros when he appeared in Hartford demanding it. Instead, the colonists there hid it in a oak tree, known thereafter as the Charter Oak. In Massachusetts, historical accounts tell us that Thomas Riggs\textsuperscript{1} stood with Thomas Millet (his father-in-law) and several others in defense of the rights and liberties of the people against Governor Andros, despite the fact that they were subjected to penalties for their actions.

The wife of Thomas Riggs\textsuperscript{1}, the former Mary Millett, died on 23 January 1695, after 37 years of marriage. He then married a second time, on 30 October of the same year, to Elizabeth Fress. Thomas\textsuperscript{1} lived for another 27 years, dying on 26 February 1722, at the age of ninety. Thomas\textsuperscript{1} and Mary (Millet) Riggs had the following children:

1. Mary Riggs\textsuperscript{2}  
   b. 6 Mar 1658/9 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA  
   m. 21 Nov 1677 Benjamin Haskell  
   d. 29 Jan 1698

2. Thomas Riggs\textsuperscript{2}  
   b. 23 Jan 1660 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA  
   d. 1 Feb 1660 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA

3. Sarah Riggs\textsuperscript{2}  
   b. 16 Feb 1661/2 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA  
   m. 9 May 1681 John Tucker

4. Anne Riggs\textsuperscript{2}  
   b. 27 Apr 1664 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA  
   m. Nathaniel Whariff  
   d. 17 Dec 1701

+ 5. Thomas Riggs\textsuperscript{2}  
   b. 7 Dec 1666 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA  
   m. 22 Nov 1687 (1st) Anne Wheeler  
   m. 10 Feb 1724 (2nd) Mrs. Elizabeth Wood  
   m. 1727 (3rd) Ruth Dodge  
   d. 1756

6. John Riggs\textsuperscript{2}  
   b. 25 Feb 1669/70 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA  
   m. (1st) Ruth Wheeler  
   m. (2nd) Dorothy ----  
   d. 18 Jan 1748

7. Elizabeth Riggs\textsuperscript{2}  
   b. 22 Apr 1672 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA  
   m. 28 Apr 1692 Ezekiel Collins

8. Abigail Riggs\textsuperscript{2}  
   b. 29 Dec 1678 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA
9. Andrew Riggs\textsuperscript{2}  
\textit{b.} 8 Jan 1682  @ Gloucester, Essex, MA  
m. 24 Jan 1703/4 Mary Richardson  @ Newbury

**Thomas Riggs\textsuperscript{2}** (Jr.) married, on 22 November 1687, Anne Wheeler, the great granddaughter of Dominick Wheeler and Richard Goodale. We will now turn to the record of the Wheeler, Goodale and Allen families that were Anne Wheeler's ancestors.

**Dominick Wheeler\textsuperscript{1},** whose name also appears as \textit{Dominy} Wheeler, lived in New Salem, Wiltshire county, England. He married, on 3 June 1588 at St. Edmunds Church, Salisbury, England, **Mercy Jelly.** No other information is known about her or her parents. Dominick Wheeler\textsuperscript{1} died either late in the year 1615 or early 1616, leaving a will dated 12 December 1615 and proved 16 February 1616. The will mentions his wife Mercy and his son John, as well as the wife and two sons of John.

Lieut. **John Wheeler\textsuperscript{2},** son of Dominick and Mercy (Jelly) Wheeler, was born at Salisbury, Wiltshire county, England, probably about 1590. On 1 December 1611, "John Wheyler" married **Agnes Yeoman** at the same church in which his parents were married, St. Edmunds in Salisbury, England. The names Ann or Annie are often seen in the records referring to Agnes. John\textsuperscript{2} and Agnes Wheeler lived at Salisbury, England and had ten children there. On 24 March 1633/34, Wheeler and his family sailed with others on the \textit{Mary and John} from England for the American colonies, taking six of their ten children with them, four remaining behind in England.

By trade, John Wheeler\textsuperscript{2} was a \textit{barber}, a profession that at that time involved a lot more than just cutting hair or providing shaves. Barbers also performed light surgery, pulled teeth, and performed \textit{cupping} and \textit{leaching}. Cupping was a process in which cups, partially evacuated by heating, were applied to the skin in order to draw blood toward and through the skin. Leeching was the application of leeches to the body for the purpose of blood-letting, a practice thought to cure everything from headaches to gout.

John Wheeler\textsuperscript{2} and his family settled first at Agawam (now Ipswich), Massachusetts for about a year, but went to Hampton, New Hampshire soon after that town was settled. In 1641, he received a grant of land in Salisbury, Massachusetts, a town obviously named after their home in England, and moved there. John\textsuperscript{2} finally moved to Newbury, Massachusetts before 1650, where he lived the rest of his life, although he still owned land in Salisbury in 1652. Only about 10-12 miles separates all of these towns.

John Wheeler\textsuperscript{2} left a will dated 28 March 1668, which was proved 11 October 1670. Agnes died before him, on 15 August 1662. Both died at Newbury, Massachusetts. The children of John\textsuperscript{2} and Agnes (Yeoman) Wheeler are as follows (all probably born in England and order only approximate):

1. **John Wheeler\textsuperscript{3}**,  
   \textit{b.} @ Salisbury, England
2. **Adam Wheeler\textsuperscript{3}**,  
   \textit{b.} @ Salisbury, England
3. **Ann Wheeler\textsuperscript{3}**,  
   \textit{b.} @ Salisbury, England  
   m. 1672 (1st) Aquila Chase  
   d. 1687/89  
4. **David Wheeler\textsuperscript{3}**,  
   \textit{b.} 1625 @ Salisbury, England  
   m. 11 May 1650 Sarah Wise
5. **William Wheeler\textsuperscript{3}**,  
   \textit{b.} @ Salisbury, England
6. Roger Wheeler³  b. Abt 1630  @ Salisbury, England  
m. 7 Dec 1653 (1st) Mary Wilson  
m.                                           (2nd) Mrs. Mary Stone  
d. 1661  
m. Abt 1659 Abigail Allen  
d. Abt 1696  
8. Elizabeth Wheeler³  b. @ Salisbury, England  
m. 1665 (1st) Thomas Duston  
m.                                           (2nd) Mathias Button  
9. Mercy Wheeler³  b. @ Salisbury, England  
m. Silvanus Martin?  
10. George Wheeler³  b. 30 Apr 1660  @ Salisbury, England  
m. Susanna Stowers  

In the will of John Wheeler², he mentions "sons John and Adam of Salisbury, England", indicating that they did not come to America. He also mentions "son William (if he come over into this country)", indicating that William³ probably did not come to America either. These three sons, along with David³, were the four left behind in England when the rest of the family sailed for the colonies. David Wheeler³ did come to America later, joining his parents when he was about 13 years old, sailing on the Confidence from Southampton, England in April 1638. He probably had been left in the care of friends in England, possibly as a servant, until they joined the Wheelers in Massachusetts. Historian David W. Hoyt also mentions two additional sons, Edward and Joseph, not recognized here.

Our direct ancestor is the son, Henry Wheeler³, who married Abigail Allen of Salisbury, Massachusetts. Abigail was the daughter of William Allen and Ann Goodale, and the granddaughter of Richard Goodale and his wife Dorothy (Goodale was often recorded as Goodal).

The first Goodale ancestor we know of is Thomas Goodale, who was a tallow chandler [one who manufactures candles] in England in the early to middle 1500s. He lived at Downham Market, Norfolkshire, near King's Lynn, England. He had a son named John Goodale², who was probably born at Downham Market about 1563. Like his father, he was a chandler. On 21 September 1588, John² married Bridget Portler, who was born at Stradsett, Norfolkshire about 1567. After having seven children, Bridget died and was buried at Downham Market on 24 November 1607. John Goodale² then married, before 1610, Elizabeth (Partlett) Taylor, a young widow with two children.

John Goodale² lived at Downham Market until 1613, when he moved about fifty miles east to Great Yarmouth, England. John² became quite wealthy as evidenced by his will, in which he left a great deal of money to his numerous children, several servants and to the poor of both Great Yarmouth and Downham Market. By his first wife, Bridget Portler, John Goodale² had the following children, all baptized at Downham Market, England (all birth dates listed are actually baptism dates):

1. Frances Goodale³  b. 28 Jan 1589  @ Downham Market, England  
m. William Marston  @ Martham, Norfolk  
2. Ellen Goodale³  b. 28 Apr 1591  @ Downham Market, England  
3. John Goodale³  b. 10 Mar 1592/3  @ Downham Market, England  
d. 31 May 1593  (burial date)  @ Downham Market

CHAPTER 4  48  BIOG
4. Richard Goodale³  
b. 29 Jul 1594 @ Downham Market, England  
m. Dorothy Witrents  
d. 1666 @ Salisbury, MA

5. Thomas Goodale³  
b. 25 Nov 1596 @ Downham Market, England  
d. 10 Dec 1596 (burial date) @ Downham Market

6. Rebecca Goodale³  
b. 2 Jul 1598 @ Downham Market, England  
m. 21 Jun 1626 Walter Moordefleete

7. Elizabeth Goodale³  
d. 2 Jan 1602/3 (burial date) @ Downham Market

By his second wife, Elizabeth Parlett, John Goodale² had the following nine children (the first two baptized at Downham Market, the others at Great Yarmouth):

8. John Goodale³  
b. 11 Nov 1610 @ Downham Market, England  
d. 1625

9. Christopher Goodale³  
b. 17 Dec 1611 @ Downham Market, England

10. Elizabeth Goodale³  
b. 5 Jun 1614 @ Great Yarmouth, England  
m. John Lowle @ Newbury, MA  
d. Abt 1650 @ Newbury, MA

11. Thomas Goodale³  
b. 29 Mar 1616 @ Great Yarmouth, England

12. Joseph Goodale³  
b. 15 Apr 1618 @ Great Yarmouth, England

13. Hester Goodale³  
b. 15 Apr 1618 @ Great Yarmouth, England

14. Benjamin Goodale³  
b. 11 Oct 1620 @ Great Yarmouth, England

15. Mordechaus Goodale³  
b. 11 Oct 1620 @ Great Yarmouth, England

16. Mary Goodale³  
b. 12 Feb 1622/3 @ Great Yarmouth, England  
d. 20 Aug 1625 (burial date) @ Great Yarmouth

John Goodale² and his second wife had two consecutive sets of twins born two and a half years apart. In addition, John's second wife brought with her two children, Peter and Susan Taylor, from a previous marriage, and for whom John² provided for in his will. John Goodale² died in 1625, his will proved on 24 September of that year. His widow Elizabeth came to America with some of her children and step-children, dying at Newbury, Massachusetts on 8 April 1647.

Richard Goodale³ is our direct ancestor. He is mentioned in his father's will as "my eldest son by my first wife, if now living". His father left him six pounds a year for life plus an additional ten pounds when Richard³ reached "35 years of age". The will, carefully prepared and meticulous in naming all of the children and grandchildren, only refers to "Richard Goodale my son's two children". This seems to indicate that Richard Goodale³ did not live in Great Yarmouth, or possibly even in England, at the time of his father's death in 1625, since his father did not know if Richard³ was dead or alive and did not know the names of Richard's children. Given that he later had an Irish servant when he was in America, it is possible that Richard³ lived at the time in Ireland. But since Richard³ married a Great Yarmouth girl who was "of London", it is also possible that he was there in 1625. But in either case, Richard Goodale³ was back in Great Yarmouth, England by 1637, when he and his stepmother were named in a lawsuit.

Richard Goodale³ married, in England, Dorothy Witrents of St. Leonard parish, London. She was born in 1595 at Great Yarmouth. Richard³ came to America in 1638, presumably with his stepmother Elizabeth, and first settled in Newbury, Massachusetts. Accompanying him was his wife Dorothy and two children, presumably the two unnamed children named in his father's will and, thus, born before 1625. Richard³ was granted planting ground in Newbury on 19 June 1638, and again in April 1639, when he received a four-acre planting lot on the "neck of the point".
However, Richard Goodale\(^3\) soon moved across the Merrimack River and joined other settlers in establishing a new town, first called Colchester, and which later became Salisbury, Massachusetts. He received land grants in 1639, 1643 and 1654 at Salisbury. Richard Goodale\(^3\) was a "planter and turner", which means that he farmed and also operated a wood lathe, selling the products that he produced on it. He had an Irish servant named Cornelius Conner, to whom he sold ten acres of land in 1663. Although he never held an important office, it appears that Richard Goodale\(^3\) was comfortable financially, leaving an estate of 250 pounds.

His wife, the former Dorothy Witrents, died at Salisbury on 27 January 1664/5. Richard\(^3\) lived with his son-in-law, William Allen, for over four months before his death and died in the fall of 1666, his will dated 7 June 1666 and proved October 9\(^{th}\) of that year. He requested in his will that his estate be "divided between my son Richard and daughter Ann Allen, all lands, cattle, etc. except one cow Primrose which I bequeath unto my grand-daughter Hubbard." He left his former servant, Cornelius Conner, all his wearing apparel, "both linen and woolen". Richard only had two children, Richard\(^4\) "of Boston" and Ann\(^4\), who married William Allen, with whom he lived before he died.

**William Allen** was born in England about 1610 and emigrated to America before 1638, where he also became one of the founders of Salisbury, Massachusetts. William was a "house carpenter" and shipowner. His wife Ann died "abt ye last of May" 1678 and William then married Mrs. Alice Roper, the widow of John Roper. William Allen died 18 June 1686, with his will proven on 22 July of that year. His will, probated in Boston, mentions his "Daughter Abigail Wheeler". William and Ann (Goodale) Allen had eleven children, all born at Salisbury:

+ 1. Abigail Allen  b. 4 Jan 1639/40 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts  
m. Abt 1659 Henry Wheeler

2. Hannah Allen  b. 17 Jun 1642 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts  
m. 1 Nov 1659 Peter Ayers

3. Mary Allen  b. 29 Jul 1644 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts  
m. Bef 1678 George Hewes

4. Martha Allen  b. 1646 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts  
m. Aft 1666 Richard Hubbard

5. John Allen  b. 9 Oct 1648 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts  
m. 30 Aug 1674 Mary (Pike) Andross  
d. 27 Feb 1696/7 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts

6. William Allen  b. 2 Oct 1650 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts  
m. 5 Jul 1674 Mary Harris  
d. 10 May 1700 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts

7. Benjamin Allen  b. 1652 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts  
m. 3 Sep 1686 (1st) Mrs. Rachel Wheeler  
m. 13 Nov 1695 (2nd) Hopestill Leonard  
d. 3 Sep 1723 @ Rehoboth, Massachusetts

8. Joseph Allen  b. 13 Oct 1653 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts  
m. (1st) Rachel Griggs  
m. (2nd) Rose Howard

9. Richard Allen  b. 8 Nov 1655 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts  
m. Elizabeth ----  
d. 8 Jun 1678 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts

10. Ruth Allen  b. 19 Feb 1657/8 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts  
d. died young

11. Jeremiah Allen  b. 17 Feb 1658/9 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts  
m. Aft 1686 (1st) Ann Bradbury
Henry Wheeler³ married Abigail Allen about 1659, although no record of the marriage has been found. Henry was "of Hampton" (New Hampshire) soon after the settlement of that town, although it appears that he later settled in Salisbury, Massachusetts. Abigail Wheeler was listed as a member of the Salisbury church in 1687. In that same year, Henry Wheeler³ deeded land to Richard Hubbard of Boston, who had married Abigail's sister Martha. About the only other record that we have of Henry Wheeler³ and his wife is one showing they were admitted as members of the South Church in Salisbury on 16 August 1694. Henry Wheeler³ died in or before 1696, when Abigail was shown as "a widow of Boston". Henry³ and Abigail (Allen) Wheeler had the following children:

1. Henry Wheeler⁴  b. 13 Apr 1659  @ Salisbury, Massachusetts  m.  Rachel ---- (widow of Boston)
2. Abigail Wheeler⁴  b. 7 Mar 1659/60 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts
3. William Wheeler⁴  b. 6 Sep 1663 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts
4. Moses Wheeler⁴  b. 24 Jun 1665 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts
+ 5. Ann Wheeler⁴  b. 27 May 1667 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts  m. 22 Nov 1687 Thomas Riggs  d. 28 Sep 1723
5a. James Wheeler⁴  b. 27 May 1667 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts  m.  (1) Grisel Squier (Philip)  d. 2 Oct 1738 (2) Elizabeth Brintnal  d. 1753
6. Josiah Wheeler⁴  b. 23 Apr 1669 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts  m.  Elizabeth ----
7. Ruth Wheeler⁴  b. 15 Jul 1671 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts
8. Nathaniel Wheeler⁴  b. 28 Mar 1675 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts
9. Jeremiah Wheeler⁴  b. 17 Jul 1677 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts
10. Benjamin Wheeler⁴  b. 15 Jan 1681/2 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts
11. Mary Wheeler⁴  b. 5 Jun 1685 @ Salisbury, Massachusetts  m. 14 Oct 1702 Thomas Harris @ Salisbury

Our ancestor, Ann Wheeler⁴, was a twin of James. It has not been conclusively proven that she married Thomas Riggs². A will record for her father, Henry Wheeler³, has not been found that mentions her married name. But two published genealogies mention their marriage; a Wheeler genealogy states that Ann, daughter of Henry, "probably married Thomas Riggs of Gloucester" as does the book Old Families of Salisbury and Amesbury. A Riggs genealogy states that Thomas Riggs² married first "Anne Wheeler of Salisbury", married 22 November 1687 by Thomas Wells, a minister of Amesbury. However, no parents of Ann are listed. However, all other aspects of these two genealogies are known to be accurate, so there is no reason to doubt this marriage.

Returning now to Thomas Riggs², who married the Ann Wheeler⁴ just mentioned, he settled on the west side of the Annisquam River, near Gloucester, Massachusetts, and lived there all of his life. Unlike his father, it does not appear that he took a very prominent part in the affairs of the town. He was, however, the owner of several parcels of land, receiving some of them by land grant in the division of town lands and obtaining others by purchase.

Thomas Riggs² married three times. His first wife, Ann Wheeler⁴, died on 28 September 1723, after providing Thomas² eleven children. He remarried, on 10 February 1724, to Mrs. Elizabeth
Wood of Beverly, Massachusetts. However, she died a little over three years later, on 19 May 1727, and Thomas Riggs² then married a third time in 1727 to Ruth Dodge of Wenham, Massachusetts, who was mentioned in his will.

The will of Thomas Riggs², proven on 18 October 1756, provided that his wife Ruth should have "the room in the dwelling house which she pleased to live in", and that his sons Aaron and Joshua should provide her, every year that she remained his widow, "ten bushels of good Indian corn, two bushels of good malt, and firewood at the door; also to keep for her use a good cow and six sheep." His will also provided for thirty pounds to be bequeathed to each of his daughters, including "Ann Richardson".

The children of Thomas² and Ann (Wheeler) Riggs are as follows (all born near Gloucester, Massachusetts):

1. Mary Riggs³  
   b. 15 Sep 1688 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA  
   m. 5 Nov 1734 William Honeybuss

2. Thomas Riggs³  
   b. 16 Jan 1690 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA  
   m. 17 Dec 1713 (1st) Sarah Lane  
   m. (2nd) Sarah Hunt

3. Abigail Riggs³  
   b. 26 Feb 1691 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA  
   m. 28 Nov 1714 Joshua Elwell

+ 4. Ann Riggs³  
   b. 30 Dec 1693 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA  
   m. 24 Feb 1712 Joseph Richardson @ Gloucester  
   d. 7 Jan 1749 @ Newbury, Essex, MA

5. Hannah Riggs³  
   b. 7 Jan 1696 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA  
   m. 13 Nov 1721 Nehemiah Adams

6. Moses Riggs³  
   b. 31 Mar 1698 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA  
   m. 19 Mar 1727 Mercy Gowen

7. Aaron Riggs³  
   b. 18 Jan 1700 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA  
   m. 18 Jul 1724 Thomasine Wentworth of Dover, NH  
   d. Abt 1790

8. Anna Riggs³  
   b. 19 Jan 1703 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA  
   d. 15 Apr 1723

9. Sarah Riggs³  
   b. 6 Aug 1705 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA  
   m. 29 Apr 1728 James Marsh

10. Joshua Riggs³  
    b. 26 Feb 1707 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA  
    m. 1735 Experience Stanwood  
    d. Abt 1790

11. Lydia Riggs³  
    b. 4 Jul 1710 @ Gloucester, Essex, MA  
    m. 7 Nov 1726 (1st) Thomas Canneby  
    m. (2nd) Solomon Davis

Our direct ancestor, Ann Riggs³, married Joseph Richardson³, and we will now return to the discussion of the third-generation Richardson family.

Joseph Richardson³, of Newbury, Massachusetts, married Ann Riggs³ at Gloucester, Massachusetts on 24 February 1712. They settled near his birthplace, living near what is now West Newbury, Massachusetts, on the road from Newburyport to Bradford, about a quarter of a mile from Brown's Springs. Deed records indicate he was a weaver by occupation. Although Joseph³ and his wife lived at Newbury all of their lives, he bought land in Chester, New Hampshire as early as 1724. The township of Chester, located about 20-25 miles northwest of Newbury, was granted a charter in May 1722 and began being settled the next year. It seems that most of the land in Chester was
purchased on a speculative basis, since few of the grantees ever lived there, including Joseph Richardson³.

Over a hundred men bought land at Chester, most of whom were residents of Portsmouth and Hampton, New Hampshire. But there were some who lived at Haverhill, Bradford and Newbury. Besides Joseph Richardson³, several other men of Newbury, Massachusetts purchased land at Chester, although it does not appear that any of them resided there. Most of the men sold their lots after a short period, but Joseph Richardson³ kept some of his lots, one of 100 acres in size and another of 80 acres. He sold other lots in 1760 and 1764. It also appears that he did not always realize a profit on some of his land investments. Joseph Richardson³ bought Lot 114 in the "New Town called Chester" on 9 January 1724 from Moses Blake for £40. He sold the same lot on 18 October 1729 to Benaiah Colby for £12.

Joseph Richardson³ died on 17 March 1767 at Newbury, Massachusetts at the age of 81. In his will, dated 24 April 1764 and proved 1 April 1767, Joseph Richardson³ bequeathed his lots in New Hampshire to his sons, four of whom later lived at Chester. He left one half of the 80-acre lot to his son Joseph and the other half to his son Thomas. His son Moses received one half of the 100-acre lot, his daughter "Anna Carr" one fourth of it, the remainder split among the other children. Joseph³ and Ann (Riggs) Richardson had the following children:

1. Ann Richardson⁴ b. 2 Dec 1712 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   m. Bradbury Carr

2. Joseph Richardson⁴ b. 16 Jul 1714 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   m. (1) Elizabeth ----
   m. (2) -- unknown --
   m. 8 Aug 1785 (3) Sarah Moulton @ Moultonboro
   d. Aft 1790 @ Moultonborough, Strafford, NH

3. Thomas Richardson⁴ b. 31 Oct 1716 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   m. 17 Nov 1737 Priscilla Pearson @ Newbury
   d. 1795 @ Chester, Rockingham, NH

4. Moses Richardson⁴ b. 28 Jul 1718 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   m. 1746 Mary Goodhue
   d. 13 Oct 1809 @ Chester, Rockingham, NH

5. William Richardson⁴ b. 19 Dec 1719 @ Newbury, Essex, MA

6. Daniel Richardson⁴ b. 28 Mar 1722 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   m. 21 Nov 1751 Lydia Davis
   d. 23 Mar 1799 @ Chester, Rockingham, NH

7. Mary Richardson⁴ b. 13 Sep 1725 @ Newbury, Essex, MA

8. Caleb Richardson⁴ b. 9 May 1731 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   m. 29 Sep 1753 Catherine Allen
   d. 13 Jan 1815

9. Betty Richardson⁴ b. 7 Jul 1738 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   m. Joseph Tateman

There was, in all likelihood, a tenth child that probably died at birth since the death of an unnamed son of "Joseph and Anne Richardson" is recorded in the Newbury town records on 25 January 1727.

We are descended from Joseph Richardson⁴, but there has been considerable confusion in published genealogies with regard to him. Both John Adams Vinton's Richardson Memorial and Helen Kluegel's Descendants of William Richardson, works that the compiler has relied upon heavily for the material in this chapter, state that Joseph Richardson⁴ married Hannah Nelson of
Rowley, Massachusetts. This is clearly a mistake and not the Joseph Richardson⁴ identified above, born in 1714. There are numerous reasons for this statement, but the fact that the Joseph Richardson who married Hannah Nelson did so on 3 November 1714, when our Joseph Richardson⁴ was only three months old, should suffice. They are quite clearly two different Joseph Richardsons.

Our Joseph Richardson⁴, born 16 July 1714 at Newbury, Massachusetts, supposedly married three times, but only records for the third marriage have been found. He married first an Elizabeth, last name unknown, about 1735; a handwritten note found in a Richardson family file in the Moultonborough library, made by an unknown researcher and without citing a source, claims that the wife was Elizabeth Nock. The town records of Somersworth, New Hampshire (recorded "ye 5th of October 1764") show the birth of three children to "Joseph & Elizabeth Richardson", including Bradbury Richardson⁵. It is likely that Bradbury⁵ was named after Joseph's brother-in-law Bradbury Carr. This child with the uncommon given name is the key to tracing his father, Joseph Richardson⁴, and his brother, Joseph⁵, from whom we are descended but for whom there are almost no existing records.

A copy of the unpublished typewritten History of Col. Bradbury Richardson, written in 1874 by an unnamed descendant of the Richardson family, can be found today in the Moultonborough, New Hampshire library. That history, about the son of Joseph Richardson⁴, is nearly all that we have to go on with regard to information about the father. It states that Joseph Richardson⁴, "in his old age moved to Moultonboro, married a third wife in that vicinity, lived some years and died there; his occupation was to turn out wooden ware with a lathe."

The fact that only three of Joseph Richardson's children were recorded as being born at Somersworth during the years 1736-1739 could mean that Joseph⁴ later moved to Chester to live on the land that his father had purchased, or that his wife Elizabeth died. On 31 March 1747, Joseph Richardson⁴ "of Newbury" gave, as a gift to his son Joseph Richardson⁴ "of Chester", 25 acres of land that was one half of Lot 113 in Chester, New Hampshire. The land record further indicates that the occupation of Joseph Richardson⁴ of Chester was a joiner, which in colonial times was a carpenter who did interior finish work. This is consistent with the description that appears in the History of Col. Bradbury Richardson.

Entries in the Chester town records describe roads built in the years 1743, 1744 and 1748 that mention the "Joseph Richardson place", which confirms that Joseph Richardson⁴ lived during those years at Chester, New Hampshire. It was possibly during this time period that he married a second time, but that record has not been found and the identity of Joseph's second wife, if there was one, remains unknown.

On 25 October 1783, Joseph Richardson⁴ "of Moultonborough, joiner," purchased 55 acres from Jonathan Moulton for £100. It is clear from the land record that this was the older Joseph, and the father of Bradbury⁵ and Joseph⁵ who had earlier settled at Moultonborough. The Strafford County deed describes the 55-acre parcel as situated in the two 100-acre lots in the Third Range, First Division and "to contain all that part of said two lots not before conveyed by said Moulton to Col. Bradbury Richardson and Joseph Richardson Jr., sons of the aforesaid Joseph...".

The town records of Moultonborough, New Hampshire show a marriage of a Joseph Richardson to "Sarah Moulton, widow" on 8 August 1785. This coincides with the brief account given in the
History of Col. Bradbury Richardson, since Joseph4 would have been 71 years old in that year. No record has been located of when Joseph Richardson4 died or where he was buried. However, he was still alive when the first census was taken in 1790 and on 17 February 1796, when "Joseph Richardson of Moultonborough, joiner," sold his 55 acres of land at Moultonborough to sons Bradbury5 and Joseph5 for $333.34. He is probably buried at Moultonborough, although the location of his grave has not been located. Joseph Richardson4 had at least the following four children:

1. Samuel Richardson5
   b. 3 Mar 1736 @ Somersworth, Strafford, NH
   m. Dec 1761 Mary Hoit @ Sandown, NH

2. Bradbury Richardson5
   b. 30 Oct 1737 @ Somersworth, Strafford, NH
   m.              (1) Judith Blake
   m.              (2) Abigail Ladd
   d. 6 Oct 1814 @ Moultonborough, Strafford, NH

3. Ann Richardson5
   b. 10 Nov 1739 @ Somersworth, Strafford, NH
   + 4. Joseph Richardson5
   b. 5 Apr 1744 @ Chester, Rockingham, NH
   m.              (1) -- unknown --
   m. 26 Feb 1784 (2) Abigail Drake @ North Hampton
   d. 21 May 1838 @ Moultonborough, Strafford, NH

The first three children are known, of course, from the direct evidence of birth records extant from the Somersworth town records. There were likely other children, possibly all by a second wife, but their identities remain unknown. The son, Joseph Richardson5, is known to us through the land records just described and other circumstantial evidence, evidence which is extremely strong. As mentioned before, the link is Bradbury Richardson5, who came by the title Colonel.

In the History of Col. Bradbury Richardson, we receive the following family tradition: "Col. Bradbury Richardson was the oldest of four sons. I think there were no daughters. He went to live with Gen. Moulton when he was seven years of age, who was a native of Old Hampton and he wore leather breeches. The first morning the boy was there, the Gen. called him up, told him to build a fire, warm his breeches, and then go and feed his horse. He built the fire, hung the breeches acrop the andirons to warm, and went to feed the horse. When he came in he found to his dismay that the breeches were not only warm but much reduced in size, in fact they were much too small for him to occupy; but he did not punish him. He often had a good laugh over them. This was Col. Bradbury's first experience when starting out for himself in life."

As with many family traditions, there are known inaccuracies in this account. Bradbury Richardson5 was not the oldest of the sons (Samuel was) and there was at least one daughter, Ann. But the rest of the account is interesting. The fact that Bradbury5 was forced to go live with another family at the age of seven indicates that his mother might have died about 1744, perhaps even from complications in giving birth to Joseph5, who was born that year. The death of the mother in a colonial family often required that the father "farm out" the children to different homes. The man that Bradbury Richardson5 went to live with was Col. Jonathan Moulton, who would later become a "General" in the Revolutionary War, a title he would carry for the remainder of his life.

In 1763, Jonathan Moulton was the leader of a group of men who received a land grant of six square miles in the interior of New Hampshire. Moulton led a "small group of men and a large fierce dog" on an initial scouting expedition from Dover to Lake Winnipesaukee. They crossed the lake on crude rafts and "after numerous adventures" came ashore near the place now known as Clark's Landing. There they encountered a party of six Indians, five of whom they killed. One of
the band escaped across the ice of the lake, but could not outrun Moulton's dog. The dog caught the Indian, dragged him down on the ice and killed him before Moulton's party could reach the pair.

Probably as a result of his expeditions into central New Hampshire, Jonathan Moulton received grants for 80,000 acres of land near Lake Winnipesaukee. He founded the present-day New Hampshire towns of New Hampton, Centre Harbor and Moultonborough, the latter named in his honor. Many curious traditions exist regarding General Moulton, such as the story that he traded his soul to Satan for a boot full of gold and then cheated the Devil by removing the bottom of the boot so it could not be filled. After his death, the ghosts of he and his wife were thought to revisit the old mansion by night, he thumping with his heavy gold-headed cane and his wife moving along in her rustling silk gown. Formal exorcism ceremonies were held to remove the ghosts in the old house. The poem *The New Wife and the Old* by John Greenleaf Whittier was based upon General Moulton.

Accompanying Col. Moulton on his early expeditions was Bradbury Richardson, who was described as "the foster son of Col. Moulton". Their exploration led the group toward Ossipee Mountain; but before reaching the mountain, they found what Richardson would later describe as "a fine green valley with a beautiful mountain view". Bradbury Richardson purchased 730 acres of this valley and built a house there "in 1770". One of Bradbury's granddaughters married Samuel Severance and the house passed into the possession of that family, where it remains today. The house remains standing today, known as the Severance Farm, and has been personally visited by the compiler.

Colonel Bradbury Richardson married twice, the first time to Judith Blake from Hampton, and the second time to Abigail Ladd of Moultonborough. He lived the rest of his life in the area and is buried in the Richardson Cemetery, just off Clark's Landing Road in Moultonborough, New Hampshire. He died on 6 October 1814 at the age of 77. He raised twelve children by his two wives, listed below despite the fact that we are not descended from Bradbury because it may assist others in sorting out the many other Richarsons who lived at Moultonborough. The first four children are by the first wife and the last eight by the second wife:

1. Bradbury M. Richardson
   - b. 13 Apr 1765 @ Hampton, Rockingham, NH
   - d. 16 Jun 1768 drowned at age 3
2. Jonathan Richardson
   - b. 15 Apr 1767 @ Hampton, Rockingham, NH
   - m. 21 Mar 1790 Sally Freese
   - d. 1840
3. Abigail Richardson
   - b. 1770 @ Hampton, Rockingham, NH
   - m. John Wallace
   - d. 27 Sep 1853
4. Bradbury M. Richardson
   - b. 1772 @ Moultonboro, Strafford, NH
   - m. 6 Feb 1796 Sarah Lee
   - d. 18 Sep 1848
5. Anna Richardson
   - b. 25 Sep 1775 @ Moultonboro, Strafford, NH
   - m. Jacob Hodgdon
   - d. Feb 1859
6. Josiah Richardson
   - b. 12 Oct 1777 @ Moultonboro, Strafford, NH
   - m. 24 Dec 1812 Mary Burbank
   - d. Apr 1842
7. Judith Richardson
   - b. 20 May 1780 @ Moultonboro, Strafford, NH
   - m. John W. Clark
Today, the area where Bradbury Richardson 5 lived is located in the Moultonborough, New Hampshire township, named after the man who first explored this area. There is little doubt that more than one Richardson followed Moulton into the area and settled there. The *History of Carroll County* states that the "Richardson family had much to do with the original settlement. Colonel Bradbury Richardson and a brother settled in the southeast part, and a school district bore the name 'Richardson district'."

Historian John Adams Vinton states in his *Richardson Memorial* that, with regard to Joseph Richardson 4 and his descendants, "the record is now confused, and I have not time or means to clear it up. But it is pretty certain that Col. Bradbury Richardson, born in Bradford, October, 1737, was the son of Joseph Richardson, and that he had a brother Joseph."

The brother mentioned, Joseph Richardson 5, was our direct ancestor and the fourth person in a row to receive that name. Although very little is known about Joseph 5 compared to his much more noted brother, Bradbury 5, we can piece together a few things about him, which we will do next.
JOSEPH RICHARDSON AND GRAFTON NUTTER

JOSEPH RICHARDSON OF MOULTONBOROUGH

Joseph Richardson⁵ was born at Chester, New Hampshire on 5 April 1744. Where he lived in his younger years, or even with whom he lived, is unknown. It is possible that, like his brother, he also lived with the family of Jonathan Moulton. He married twice, but unfortunately, we do not know the name of his first wife, from whom we are directly descended. Joseph Richardson⁵ was probably married before moving to Moultonborough with his brother, Bradbury⁵, by the year 1770. It is likely that his first wife died at Moultonborough about 1782-3.

Volume XXIX of the New Hampshire State Papers provides a list of the early settlers in Moultonborough, with a record of the land they owned and cleared. On 9 January 1770 is listed the following entry ("cld" means cleared): "Lott No 2 & 3, 3d Range 2 Acres Cld 6 Acres fell done by Joseph Richardson, wife lives in the Town." On the next day, the following two entries are also listed: "Bradbury Richardson Lott No. 3 & 4, 3 Range 12 Acres Cld 4 Acres Trees fell. House 29 & 36. 30 foot Barn. Wife and 2 children. 4 Oxen 4 Cows 4 young Cattle 1 apprentice" and "Sam'l Richardson Lott 5, 2d R none cleard Logg House, wife 4 children."

These records seem to indicate that all three brothers, Samuel⁵, Bradbury⁵ and Joseph⁵ Richardson, moved with General Moulton to the Moultonborough area before 1770. The record also indicates that Joseph Richardson⁵ had a wife in early 1770, when he was 25 years old, but does not list any children, probably meaning that he was newly married. Backing up the list of early settlers at Moultonborough is the deed found in the New Hampshire provincial records dated 22 June 1769, which indicates the purchase of 190 acres of land by "Joseph Richardson of Moultonborough, yeoman," from Jonathan Moulton of Hampton for £20. Further, the deed states that part of the land was from the easterly ends of Lots 3 and 4, "the remainder belonging to Bradbury Richardson."

Joseph⁵ married second to Abigail Drake, the daughter of Nathaniel and Abial (Marston) Drake on 26 February 1784 at North Hampton, New Hampshire. Joseph Richardson⁵ was listed "of Moultonborough" and Abigail Drake "of N. Hampton". Hampton was the area where Joseph's brother, Bradbury⁵, grew up in the household of General Moulton, and the fact that Joseph⁵ returned there to find a new wife after his first wife died indicates that he might also have been from this area, strengthening the possibility that he also grew up in the home of General Jonathan Moulton.

The reminisces in the History of Col. Bradbury Richardson state that "Col. Bradbury and his brother, Joseph, were in the war of the Revolution and served until its close. I think [they] were there about nine months." Early town records of Moultonborough confirm that Bradbury⁵ and
Joseph served in the Revolutionary War, in Colonel Joseph Badger's Tenth Regiment of the New Hampshire Militia. Bradbury Richardson was a field officer, listed as a Second Major under Colonel Badger. Joseph Richardson was an Ensign in Captain Henry Elkins' Sixth Company "in Moultonborough". In colonial times, an ensign was a commissioned officer of lowest ranking who carried the company's flag.

Fortunately for us, Joseph Richardson lived to be a very old man, and therefore lived long enough to apply for a pension from his Revolutionary War service. The Continental Congress of the American colonies passed several resolutions that provided for continued pay to officers and enlisted men who would serve in the rebel forces. The early pension legislation was primarily designed to encourage enlistment and to prevent desertion and resignation.

After the war ended, the new United States Congress passed a series of pension acts that awarded pensions based upon the degree of participation in conflict. Ever more generous acts were passed in 1789, 1792, 1806, 1818, 1820, 1823 and 1828. The last and most liberal of the service pension acts was passed on 7 June 1832, over fifty years after Revolutionary War hostilities ended. For the first time, the act provided that men who had served as little as six months in the Revolutionary War could receive a pension of less than full pay. The act also provided that "money due from the last payment until the date of death of a pensioner" could be collected by his widow or children.

Joseph Richardson applied for such a pension. On 12 September 1832, at the age of 88, he stated in a deposition that in October or November of 1775: "I marched to Portsmouth, N.H., with about ten others as volunteers to defend the town against the British fleet which was expected, was there about two months and was attached to Capt. Elkins' Company of Hampton; from there we went to Winter Hill and were reviewed by General's Lee and Putnam; was in the service over six months. I returned home with an intention of enlisting a company, but the situation of my family forbade it; but I enlisted a number of men during the war and furnished one with a gun, worth $12.00, and other articles; also hired one man, John Garland, to serve during the war. He went and died in the service after serving about two years. I never received any compensation. During the war I held my commission as Ensign, and when in the service I did duty generally as a Sergeant. I actually did duty over six months, besides my time in recruiting."

There is nothing to indicate that Joseph Richardson ever saw much action in the Revolutionary War. The "British fleet" apparently did not land at Portsmouth and by the time the New Hampshire Militia got to Massachusetts, to be stationed at Winter Hill in a waiting game with the British, there was little action there either.

Following the Battle of Bunker Hill (which was actually fought on Breed's Hill on Charlestown neck, just outside of Boston), the colonists withdrew to Winter Hill and Prospect Hill on the road to Cambridge. There, they fortified their position, fully expecting the British to follow. However, the "almost exhausted" British did not pursue the colonists. Of the 2,400 British troops who took part in the battle, 1,054 had been shot, including 92 British officers. The British general in command of the troops at Bunker Hill, William Howe, had twelve officers in the field that day. All twelve were shot. With such substantial losses, the British forces were content to just hold the ground they had so much difficulty taking.

According to historian Christopher Ward who wrote the two-volume *The War of The Revolution*,
"the Bunker's Hill battle had convinced the British command of the folly of a major attempt against the fortified positions of the Americans, which stretched from Roxbury on the southeast around to Winter Hill and Prospect Hill on the northwest, and which were constantly being strengthened. The British generals knew that even a successful attack would bring no worthwhile results. The two forces were therefore in an equilibrium which neither cared to disturb, and a long cessation of major hostile operations on both sides followed Bunker's Hill."

At any rate, Joseph Richardson's claim was allowed and he received a pension of $60.00 per year. However, it appears that the claim was reviewed at some point and on 9 November 1835, at the age of 91, Joseph was required to testify further regarding his Revolutionary War service. In that testimony, we receive some additional information regarding his involvement in the war. Joseph testified that in the spring of 1775, he received a commission as an Ensign in the New Hampshire Militia under Captain Nathaniel Ambrose and Lieutenant John Adams, and enlisted twelve men.

Joseph Richardson testified: "At the time of enlisting them my Captain would do nothing; was every way opposed to the war, stating generally that the British would prevail etc." When Joseph arrived at Portsmouth in the fall of 1775, with the twelve men he enlisted, he was attached to Captain Elkins' company, "relinquishing my rank as Ensign, being a supernumerary, and doing that of a Sergeant and drill officer, and part of the time in all grades from the Captain; the good of the service being my only aim."

Joseph further testified that, in "the year 1823, my dwelling house was burnt and my papers, which left me poor; and now after serving my country in the war and State Legislature I have to depend on my daughter, forty-two years of age, who was never married, for support." Thirteen of Joseph Richardson's fellow townspeople certified "that from general information during the Revolutionary War there could be no man of more patriotism; no one in his situation have done more for his country's good. His statement of service etc. we believe is entitled to great credit, he being considered by all of the highest integrity."

Despite these testimonials, the government ruled that Joseph Richardson did not serve as an Ensign during the war. They further ruled that the amount of pension that he should receive should correspond with the rank in which he served, and a new Certificate was issued with the rank of Sergeant.

Two land records recorded at the Strafford County courthouse in 1823 also give us a little more information about Joseph Richardson and his family. His son, "Joseph Richardson of Sandwich, husbandman," leased a farm in Moultonborough containing 50 acres "adjoining Samuel Richardson's house farm, it being the same farm the said Joseph's father lived on when he was burnt out". The lease was granted to Rebecca Richardson and Polly Richardson of Moultonborough, single women, "for and during the natural life of the said Rebecca's and Polly's Father and Mother".

In the second land record, on 24 February 1823, "Joseph Richardson of Sandwich, husbandman," made a $1000 bond to "Rebecca Richardson and Polly Richardson of Moultonborough, single women" granting them clear title to the land on which they lived on the condition that they care for their parents for life. The record states that with "the condition of the obligation is such that the said Rebecca and Polly have agreed with the said Joseph to support their father and mother during their
natural lives free from all expense to the said Joseph except his voluntary subscriptions and whereas the said Joseph has agreed with the said Rebecca and Polly that upon the death of their father and mother provided they are supported free of expense to the said Joseph that he will make out to the said Rebecca and Polly a good warrantee deed of fifty acres of land ...".

On 12 September 1838, at the age of 88, Abigail Richardson "of Moultonborough, New Hampshire" stated in a deposition that "she is the widow of Joseph Richardson, Revolutionary Pensioner, to whom she was married February 26, 1784." She further deposed that "her husband died May 21, 1838." Abigail lived for several years after her husband's death. She was listed in the 1840 census, at the age of 90, living in Moultonborough with Samuel Richardson. On 21 July 1843, at the age of 93, Abigail Richardson of nearby Sandwich, New Hampshire applied for a renewal of her pension. There is no further record of her.

Despite the fact that Joseph Richardson 5 took Abigail Drake as his second wife when he was nearly forty, he was married to her for over 54 years. And despite no records to confirm the name of his first wife, that he was married before Abigail is unquestionable, since Moultonborough town records show Joseph Richardson 5 living there in 1770, with a wife, fourteen years before he married Abigail. It is nearly certain that he had children by both wives but some of them are unknown to us. From an assortment of records, it is probable that Joseph Richardson 5 had at least the following children (order unknown):

1. Joseph Richardson 6  
   b. Abt 1770 @ Moultonborough, NH  
   m. 4 Feb 1795 Lois Lee @ Moultonborough, NH  
   d. 10 Jun 1831 @ Sandwich, NH

+ 2. Elizabeth Richardson 6  
   b. Abt 1779 @ Moultonborough, NH  
   m. 17 Nov 1803 Grafton Nutter "of Tuftonboro"  
   d. 15 Oct 1844 @ Bunker Hill, Macoupin, IL

3. Samuel Richardson 6  
   b. @ Moultonborough, NH

4. Molly Richardson 6  
   b. @ Moultonborough, NH  
   d. 2 Jul 1788 @ Moultonborough, NH

5. Rebecca Richardson 6  
   b. Abt 1793 @ Moultonborough, NH

6. Polly Richardson 6  
   b. @ Moultonborough, NH

The Joseph 6 is certainly the son of Joseph 5 from marriage records of Moultonborough which show a "Joseph Richardson 3rd" who married Lois Lee in 1795 and from the land records which calls Joseph 5 "father". Skipping our direct ancestor, Elizabeth 6, for a moment, Samuel 6 is assumed to be one of the children of Joseph 5 only because his widow was living with a Samuel Richardson in the 1840 census. "Molly Richardson" is listed in the Moultonborough town records as having died on 2 July 1788, the "daughter of Joseph Richardson". Finally, Joseph Richardson 5 stated in his pension testimony that he was living with and dependent upon an unmarried daughter who was 42 years old in 1835. Again from the land records, we know of the single daughters Rebecca and Polly. It is assumed that Rebecca was the older, and the one that her father referred to, since she is one who signed the lease and obligation bond.

Elizabeth "Betsy" Richardson 6 "of Moultonboro" is listed in the marriage records of Rev. Jeremiah Shaw of Moultonborough, New Hampshire, as having married Grafton Nutter "of Tuftonboro" on 17 November 1803, at Moultonborough. Their marriage is also listed in the Moultonborough town records, although her name is incorrectly given as Betsey Richard. That she is one of the children of Joseph Richardson 5 is nearly certain, based both upon the process of
elimination and also upon the names she and Grafton gave their children, two of whom were named Joseph Richardson Nutter and Abigail Drake Nutter, after her father and stepmother.

This completes the information on the Richardson family of Massachusetts and New Hampshire, which merged with the Nutter family with the marriage of Elizabeth "Betsy" Richardson to Grafton Nutter. We now turn our attention back to the Nutter family and our direct ancestor, Grafton Nutter, who moved to the central lakes region of New Hampshire about 1769-1775 as a small child.

GRAFTON NUTTER

Grafton Nutter, the great-grandson of Hatevil Nutter and named for his father, was baptized at Portsmouth, New Hampshire on 16 August 1767. He moved at a young age with his parents to Wolfeborough, New Hampshire, near the shores of Lake Winnipesaukee. Here he later married Elizabeth Fullerton on 9 May 1791. Elizabeth was born 18 March 1764, also in Portsmouth, New Hampshire, the daughter of William and Abigail (Moulton) Fullerton, who had also moved to Moultonborough. Elizabeth apparently died about 1802-1803, after providing Grafton with five, and possibly six, children. Grafton then married, on 17 November 1803 at Moultonborough, Elizabeth "Betsy" Richardson, as just described.

Grafton Nutter lived on a piece of land known as Tuftonborough Neck near the tiny, present-day town of Mirror Lake, New Hampshire. On 29 September 1794, Grafton Nutter "of Tuftonborough" paid £30 to Woodbury Langdon of Portsmouth for the southerly 60 acres of the 100-acre Lot No. 3 at Tuftonborough. In the deed recorded in the Strafford County courthouse, it is indicated that this was the land "where the said Nutter now lives". Langdon was a prominent land owner who originally owned much of the Tuftonborough area.

On 28 February 1798, Grafton paid $500 to Woodbury Langdon for another 100-acre parcel, Lot No. 7, on Tuftonborough Neck. It appears that he purchased this land for speculative purposes, since just over three months later, on 8 June 1798, he sold Lot No. 7 to Solomon Ricker and Simeon Sweat of Alfred, Massachusetts for $580, netting a nice profit. Perhaps one of the men from Massachusetts didn't like Tuftonborough, since on 13 January 1803, Grafton Nutter bought half of the 100-acre parcel back from Solomon Ricker. On 4 June 1804, Grafton Nutter sold "part of Lot No. 7" on Tuftonborough Neck containing 23.75 acres to Moses Sweat Jr. for $178. On 4 September 1807, he sold another 23.75 acres (probably the other half of the parcel he had purchased back from Ricker) for $150 to Nicolas Harford of Tuftonborough.

On 1 July 1807, Grafton Nutter took a $500 mortgage from two merchants in Portsmouth on "a certain piece of land containing 70 acres" further described as the "farm on which I now live". The 70-acre parcel was referred to in the deed as "Lot No. 3 in Tuftonborough" and was bounded on the west by "Winnipissoke Pond", on the east by "Andrew Wiggins land" and on the north by "land of Benj. Pierce". These two men, Andrew Wiggin and Benjamin Pierce, were Grafton's brothers-in-law, having married his sisters Betsy and Ann, respectively. The deed states that this was a parcel that "I bought of Woodbury Langdon Esq. & Ebenezer Mc Intire". The latter was Grafton's neighbor to the south, and the money was used for the purchase of the additional 10 acres of his land, to be added to the 60 acres he bought from Langdon.

Grafton Nutter continued to dabble in speculative land sales, apparently none too successfully.
On 28 December 1810, Grafton Nutter⁶ and John Sweat jointly purchased 100 acres of Lot No. 1 "in second range first division" on "Winnepossiokee pond" from John Pierce of Portsmouth for $400. The next summer, on 24 August 1811, the two sold the land "being same that John Sweat and I said Nutter bought of John Pierce esquire of Portsmouth" to Samuel Sweat of Tuftonborough for $200, half what they paid.

Grafton⁶ appears in a number of land deals in the years that followed. With the metes and bounds system of land measurement in the deeds, with its reference to natural landmarks like trees and streams, it is unclear which parcels of land Grafton Nutter⁶ bought and sold, but one gets the impression that Grafton⁶ might have been selling much of his land to get money on which to live. Perhaps Grafton Nutter⁶ kept selling his land until he didn't have any left. If so, that would explain why, on 28 December 1820, "William Nutter of Salem in the County of Essex and Commonwealth of Massachusetts" purchased "about one hundred acres more or less" on Tuftonborough Neck from Jonathan Copp of Wolfeborough for $1000. The 100-acre parcel purchased by William Nutter was described in the deed as "the farm his father Grafton Nutter now lives on situated on Tuftonborough neck in the town of Tuftonborough and state of New Hampshire".

The man who purchased the farm that Grafton Nutter⁶ lived on was his oldest son, William Nutter⁷, who earlier had left New Hampshire and moved south to the area around Salem and Beverly, Massachusetts. His father's farm remained in William's name for the next 13 years, although it is nearly certain that William⁷ never lived there. Rather, it appears that William⁷ owned the land so that his father and step-mother, and their children, would have a place to live. On 5 December 1833, William Nutter⁷ sold "the farm on which my Father Grafton Nutter now lives situated in Tuftonborough Neck" to Israel Stockbridge for $801.

That Grafton Nutter⁶ continued to live on Tuftonborough Neck until at least the end of 1833 seems relatively certain. He appears in the 1830 census, for example, living in Tuftonborough and aged 60-70 (he would have been 63), the head-of-household of a family that also contains a wife 50-60, two males 15-20, a female 10-15, and a female 5-10 years old. The ages of the four younger people match perfectly with the four youngest children of Grafton and Elizabeth (Richardson) Nutter. What happened to Grafton and where he died is unknown. He probably died in either Tuftonborough or in Essex County, Massachusetts, near his oldest son, William, following the sale of the farm on which Grafton⁶ lived. However, no record exists to prove either assumption. Elizabeth (Richardson) Nutter died in Illinois at the home of her son in Bunker Hill. That will be discussed more in a future chapter.

What is known is that several of the older, unmarried children of Grafton Nutter⁶ left New Hampshire before 1830 and moved to Beverly, Massachusetts, where they lived with their older brother, William Nutter⁷. The 1830 census for Essex County, Massachusetts shows William Nutter living in Beverly, with a total of nine people in the household, some of whom may have been boarders that assisted on the farm. But it is quite likely that several of these younger people were William's younger siblings.

Grafton Nutter⁶ had thirteen, and possibly fourteen, children by his two wives, Elizabeth Fullerton and Elizabeth "Betsy" Richardson⁶. The last eight were by the second wife, who outlived Grafton⁶:

1. Mary Nutter⁷  b. 15 Aug 1791 @ Wolfeborough, Strafford, NH
2. William Nutter⁷  
b. 1793 @ Wolfeborough, Strafford, NH  
m. 25 Nov 1820 Hannah Bray @ Salem, Essex, MA  
d. 23 Aug 1862 @ Beverly, Essex, MA  

3. Sarah Nutter⁷  
b. 1795 @ Tuftonborough, Strafford, NH  
m. 19 Jul 1832 John Moulton Shaw @ Moultonborough  

4. Jacob Nutter⁷  
b. Abt 1797-98 @ Tuftonborough, Strafford, NH  
d. within six months  

5. Elizabeth F. Nutter⁷  
b. 1800 @ Tuftonborough, Strafford, NH  
m. 20 Oct 1828 Samuel A. Chamberlain @ Salem, MA  

6. ? Margaret Nutter⁷  
b. @ Tuftonborough, Strafford, NH  
m. Dec 1822 Joseph Killum @ Tuftonborough  

7. John Nutter⁷  
b. Abt 1804 @ Tuftonborough, Strafford, NH  

8. Joseph R. Nutter⁷  
b. 6 Mar 1806 @ Tuftonborough, Strafford, NH  
m. 7 Aug 1833 Rosamond F. Furber @ Boston, MA  
d. 20 Nov 1892 @ Bunker Hill, Macoupin, IL  

9. Rebecca E. Nutter⁷  
b. 1808 @ Tuftonborough, Strafford, NH  
m. 9 May 1836 Joseph S. King @ Alton, IL  

10. Louisa Nutter⁷  
b. 1808 @ Tuftonborough, Strafford, NH  

11. Josiah S. Nutter⁷  
b. 3 Jan 1812 @ Tuftonborough, Strafford, NH  
m. 13 Mar 1842 Wealthy Delaplaine @ Alton, IL  
d. 8 Mar 1890 @ Wayne, Republic, IL  

12. Grafton Nutter⁷  
b. Abt 1813 @ Tuftonborough, Strafford, NH  
m. 17 Apr 1836 Elizabeth Sheldon @ Beverly, MA  
d. 1864 @ Mound City, Linn, KS  

13. Abigail D. Nutter⁷  
b. 22 Sep 1817 @ Tuftonborough, Strafford, NH  
m. 3 May 1838 Calvin Lord @ Beverly, MA  
d. 7 Apr 1900 @ Peabody, Essex, MA  

14. Anna Nutter⁷  
b. 31 Jul 1821 @ Tuftonborough, Strafford, NH  
m. 23 Jul 1843 Nathaniel Porter @ Beverly, MA  

Notable among the names of some of the children of Grafton⁶ and Elizabeth⁶ (Richardson) Nutter are Joseph R. Nutter⁷ and Abigail D. Nutter⁷. Middle names were becoming vogue about this time and the middle names of these two children are key to determining the ancestry of Elizabeth "Betsy" Richardson⁶. From federal land grant records in Illinois, where he settled, Joseph's name was written "Joseph Richardson Nutter", indicating he was named after his maternal grandfather, Joseph Richardson⁵. Likewise, we learn from A History of the Descendants of Nathan Lord that Abigail's full name was Abigail Drake Nutter, she having been named after her maternal grandmother.

SEVENTH-GENERATION NUTTERS

Mary Nutter⁷, possibly the oldest child of Grafton Nutter⁶, was born 15 August 1791 at Wolfeborough, New Hampshire. Records indicate that her father and mother, the former Elizabeth Fullerton, were married on 9 May 1791, only three months before Mary's birth, making the date of birth for Mary⁷ either questionable in accuracy or a hot topic of gossip at the time. Nothing else is known about Mary⁷, except that she may have been the Mary Nutter "of Wolfeboro" who married John Moulton Lee at Moultonborough on 12 March 1812, or the Mary Nutter "of Wolfeboro" who married Jacob Rand of Wolfeborough on 18 April 1813.

William Nutter⁷ was probably born at Wolfeborough, New Hampshire, possibly in 1793 as indicated by some, although his death record indicates that he was 71 years, 3 months old when he
died at Beverly, Massachusetts on 23 August 1862. Based on this information, his date of birth would have been May 1791, the month and year his parents married, so that date is unlikely. William Nutter\(^7\) married Hannah Bray at Salem, Massachusetts on 25 November 1820, where he and Hannah lived for several years. William Nutter\(^7\) later moved to nearby Beverly, Massachusetts, where he lived the rest of his life. As mentioned earlier, several of his step-siblings apparently lived with William Nutter\(^7\) at Beverly, including the three youngest of William's stepbrothers and stepsisters who were married at Beverly during the years 1836-1843. This, together with the fact that William\(^7\) purchased the farm that his father lived on in New Hampshire while living at Beverly, demonstrates the leadership role that William Nutter\(^7\) seemed to assume in the family.

Sarah Nutter\(^7\), also known as Sally, was born in 1795 at Tuftonborough, New Hampshire. She married on 19 July 1832, as his second wife, John Moulton Shaw, who was the son of the Reverend Jeremiah Shaw at Moultonborough. Jacob Nutter\(^7\), probably born about 1797-1798, died at approximately six months of age.

Elizabeth F. Nutter\(^7\) was born at Tuftonborough in 1800 and married Samuel Adams Chamberlain at Salem, Massachusetts on 20 October 1828. Samuel was from nearby Reading, Massachusetts. It appears that Samuel and Elizabeth\(^7\) (Nutter) Chamberlain were the first to move west to Illinois in 1832, and were the impetus for the subsequent migration to Illinois of several of her stepbrothers and stepsisters. Samuel and Elizabeth\(^7\) settled in Madison County, Illinois, near Alton, buying 160 acres there jointly with Samuel P. Statton on 30 May 1832.

The five children of Grafton Nutter\(^6\) mentioned to this point were all by his first wife, the former Elizabeth Fullerton. Margaret Nutter\(^7\), who was "of Tuftonboro" when she married Joseph Killum in December 1822, was another possible daughter by the same wife. Grafton Nutter\(^6\) remarried following the death of his first wife about 1801-1803, marrying Elizabeth "Betsy" Richardson on 17 November 1803 at Moultonborough, where the Richardson family lived. Grafton and his new wife returned to his farm on Tuftonborough Neck, where they would eventually have eight more children, all born at Tuftonborough.

John Nutter\(^7\) was born about 1804, and there is no further record of him. Skipping for the moment, our direct ancestor, Joseph R. Nutter, the next child was Rebecca E. Nutter\(^7\), born in 1808. She followed Joseph and some of her other brothers and sisters west to Illinois, where she married Joseph S. King at Alton, Illinois on 9 May 1836. Rebecca\(^7\) and her husband settled in Pike County, Illinois, near the town of Perry. Louisa Nutter\(^7\) supposedly was born in 1808 also, and therefore, may have been a twin to Rebecca. There is no further record of her.

Josiah Shepard Nutter\(^7\) was born 3 January 1812, and like several of his siblings, came west to Illinois with his older brother Joseph\(^7\) in 1833. On 7 November 1837, Josiah\(^7\) was involved in the Lovejoy riot at Alton, Illinois and was subsequently indicted and tried for rioting, but acquitted by a jury. Elijah Parish Lovejoy was a native of Maine who emigrated to St. Louis in 1827 and, for a time, worked on the staff of the St. Louis Times. Lovejoy became a Presbyterian minister, and in 1833, assumed editorial control of the St. Louis Observer, a religious newspaper. Lovejoy was a strong abolitionist and penned numerous anti-slavery editorials, which were not well received in the pro-slavery state of Missouri. After considerable turmoil, Lovejoy announced in June of 1836 his intention of moving the paper across the Mississippi River to neighboring Alton, Illinois.
This was done and thus began a weird series of events. The "pro-slavery element" of Alton threw his printing press into the river on the night that it was shipped to Alton, but at a town meeting, the citizens of Alton denied involvement and raised money to buy Lovejoy a new press. On 8 September 1836, Lovejoy printed his first paper in Alton. As the months went by, some of the people of Alton began to take as great offense to the strong anti-slavery message of the newspaper as did the citizens of St. Louis. On the night of 21 August 1837, a mob of about a dozen individuals broke into Lovejoy's office and destroyed his press. A third press was purchased by Lovejoy, which arrived 21 September 1837 and was placed in a warehouse for the night. Another mob formed that night, broke into the warehouse, rolled the press out into the street, broke it into pieces, and threw them into the Mississippi to join the other presses.

Not to be daunted, Lovejoy ordered a fourth press. When this became known, a public meeting was called for 2 November 1837, where many speeches clearly indicated the feeling of most citizens was decidedly against Lovejoy. At the town meeting, Lovejoy gave an eloquent and impassioned speech in defense of a free press and free speech, saying: "I have, Mr. Chairman, not desired nor asked any compromise. I have asked for nothing but to be protected in my rights as a citizen, rights which God has given me, and which are guaranteed to me by the Constitution of my country. Have I, sir, been guilty of any infraction of the laws? What, I ask, has been my offense? Put your finger upon it, define it, and I stand ready to answer for it."

Lovejoy's brave and impassioned appeal continued for several minutes and ended with this statement: "I have concluded, after consultation with my friends, and earnestly seeking counsel of God, to remain at Alton, and here to insist on protection in the exercise of my rights. If the civil authorities refuse to protect me, I must look to God; and if I die, I have determined to make my grave in Alton."

Lovejoy's statement turned out to be quite prophetic. The fourth printing press arrived at Alton on 6 November 1837 and was stored in another warehouse. Fearing another attack, a guard of 60 volunteers was posted around the warehouse that night and the next day. Everything was quiet, and by the next evening only 19 volunteer guards remained at the warehouse. However, a large mob began to gather around the warehouse and demanded the surrender of the press. When the demand was refused, the mob attacked the building, attempting to batter down the front door. A shot rang out and one of the attackers, Lyman Bishop, fell dead. This enraged the mob even more and a man was sent to the roof of the three-story building to set fire to the roof. Lovejoy and two others, who had been in the warehouse, stepped outside and fired at the man who was using a ladder to climb to the roof.

The gunfire was immediately returned by two or three men from the mob. Lovejoy, who was hit by five buckshot, ran back into the building and died. Although a number of men were indicted for rioting, including those who defended the press as well as those that were attacking, no one was ever convicted of any charge, rioting or murder. It was later claimed that those responsible for the death of Lovejoy were two men named Jennings and Beall. It is said that Jennings later died after being cut to pieces in a barroom fight in Vicksburg, Mississippi, and that Beall was later attached to a scouting party of Texas Rangers when he was captured by the Comanche Indians and burned alive.

Five years after being acquitted of rioting at Alton, on 13 March 1842, Josiah S. Nutter married
a lady with a most unusual name, Wealthy Rouwamia (Ruwama) Delaplaine, the daughter of Samuel Delaplaine and Jane McFadden of Alton. Josiah continued to live in Alton, Illinois until after the Civil War ended, when he and Wealthy moved to Shelby County, Illinois, near the small town of Moweaqua. They later lived in Moultrie County, Illinois, before moving to Kansas in 1882, settling near the town of Wayne in Republic County. Josiah S. Nutter died in Republic County, Kansas on 8 March 1890 and is buried in the Wayne Cemetery. Wealthy (Delaplaine) Nutter lived another thirty years, dying on 10 October 1920 at Park City, Montana after falling and breaking her hip at the home of her daughter Elizabeth. She was 97 years old when she died and was returned to Wayne, Kansas to be buried next to Josiah. The couple had thirteen children, most of whom also moved to Kansas.

The next child, Grafton Nutter, the third person in a row to bear that name, was born in Tuftonborough, New Hampshire in either 1813 or 1815. Grafton either did not go west to Illinois with his brothers and sisters in 1833 and stayed behind in Beverly, Massachusetts with his older step-brother William, or returned to Massachusetts later. In either case, he married Elizabeth Sheldon in Beverly on 17 April 1836, then went west and settled in Pike County, Illinois, near the small town of Perry.

It is not known exactly when Grafton and his new wife went to Illinois. According to a newspaper account in 1912 regarding his oldest son, Grafton and Elizabeth Nutter went west "in 1847". However, this must be incorrect since Grafton Nutter appears in the 1840 census for Pike County with his wife and two young children. More likely, Grafton Nutter went west soon after his marriage in 1836. Grafton later moved to Linn County, Kansas, near the town of Mound City. He died there in 1864. Grafton and Elizabeth (Sheldon) Nutter had six children who survived to adulthood, including the oldest, Grafton, who eventually lived in Roswell, New Mexico.

Abigail Drake Nutter was born at Tuftonborough, New Hampshire on 22 September 1817, named for her mother's stepmother. Abigail also moved to Beverly, Massachusetts to live with her much older step-brother, William. It was in Beverly that she married Calvin Lord on 3 May 1838. She and Calvin eventually moved to nearby Peabody, Massachusetts, where her husband died on 26 February 1875 and Abigail on 7 April 1900.

Anna Nutter, the last of the children to be born to Grafton Nutter and his second wife, the former Elizabeth Richardson, was born in Tuftonborough on 29 July 1820, according to her marriage record. Like most of her brothers and sisters, she also moved to Beverly, Massachusetts, where she married a widower named Nathaniel Porter, a housewright seven years older than her, on 23 July 1843. Anna and Nathaniel were still living in Beverly, Massachusetts at the time of the 1850 census.

That leaves only one of the fourteen children of Grafton Nutter unmentioned, our direct descendant, Joseph R. Nutter. It was Joseph who seems to have been the leader of the group that went west to Illinois in 1833. Of the fourteen brothers and sisters, at least five of them went west and settled near one another in Illinois, although their movement west was at different times.

Joseph Richardson Nutter was born on 6 March 1806 at Tuftonborough, New Hampshire, the eighth child of Grafton Nutter and the second child of the former Elizabeth Richardson of nearby Moultonborough. In almost all records, his name was recorded as either "Joseph R. Nutter" or "J.R.
However, in several places in the original hand-written Federal land sales records for the state of Illinois, his name is recorded "Joseph Richardson Nutter". Therefore, it is clear that he was named for his maternal grandfather, Joseph Richardson.

Joseph R. Nutter probably left New Hampshire and moved to Beverly, Massachusetts with most of his brothers and sisters in the late 1820s, and where he is almost certainly one of the four males 20-30 years old living in the household of his oldest stepbrother William Nutter in the 1830 census. Unlike some of his brothers and sisters, Joseph did not marry in the Salem/Beverly area, but oddly, got married in Boston.

The connection to Boston has never been determined, since his bride was also from New Hampshire, and as far as we know, neither had any close relatives in Boston. One obvious possibility is that the two of them were denied permission to marry by their families and simply eloped. More likely, however, is that the pair simply viewed being married in Boston as romantic or adventuresome. It is also possible that Boston was simply a stop on the way west to Illinois, since we know that this journey began very soon after their marriage.

Whatever the circumstances, Joseph R. Nutter married Rosamond F. Furber in Boston, Massachusetts on 7 August 1833. The date of their marriage has often been incorrectly reported as 14 August 1833, because that was the date that the twice-weekly Boston newspaper *Columbian Centinel* was published reporting the marriage on the previous Wednesday. A check of the marriage registers for Boston (Suffolk County) reveal that the marriage occurred on 7 August, the pair having been married by a Reverend Paul Dean.

The known ancestry of Rosamond F. Furber is very large, with nearly 140 direct ancestors identified, and will be the topic of the next several chapters. The subject of Joseph R. Nutter, his wife Rosamond, their trip west to Illinois, and their descendants will be picked up in a later chapter.
THE FURBER FAMILY

Another family that brings a rich heritage of history with it to our family tree is that of the Furber family. Joseph Richardson Nutter, a seventh-generation descendant of Hatevil Nutter, the original immigrant with that surname, married Rosamond F. Furber in 1833. By coincidence, Rosamond was also a seventh-generation descendant of the progenitor of the Furber family.

That first immigrant ancestor was William Furber, who arrived on this continent at about the same time that Hatevil Nutter did and settled in New Hampshire, where he was a contemporary and neighbor of Hatevil Nutter. William Furber would be the first of four ancestors in a row to bear that name. Unlike with Hatevil, whose exact arrival date is unknown but who we think came to New Hampshire about 1635, we know exactly when William Furber arrived in America. He sailed from Bristol, England on the bark *Angel Gabriel* on 4 June 1635. The ship's destination was the small colonial settlement at Pemaquid, now the present site of Bristol, Maine, about fifty miles east of Portland. The *Angel Gabriel* was a supply ship owned by two Bristol (England) men named Aldsworth and Elbridge, who were the patent holders to the Pemaquid settlement.

The 240-ton ship, which was equipped with 16 heavy guns, was supposedly built for Sir Walter Raleigh, the man who attempted to establish the first English colony in America on Roanoke Island, in present-day North Carolina in 1585. The *Angel Gabriel* was the namesake of another bark, *The Gabriel*, that had been one of the three ships used by Martin Frobisher in 1576 when he commanded the first English expedition to find the fabled Northwest Passage. One of the three ships sank in a storm and the second deserted soon after, but Frobisher continued, and it was from the deck of *The Gabriel* that he discovered Frobisher Bay on Baffin Island, mistaking it for the entrance to the Northwest Passage.

Onboard the *Angel Gabriel* were 24 persons, including Captain Robert Andrews, the master of the ship. The most prominent of the "company of many Godly Christians" was John Cogswell, a wealthy London merchant, along with his wife, eight children and several servants. Accompanying the *Angel Gabriel* in its voyage to America was the much larger *James*, which also sailed from Bristol, England the same day with 100 passengers. Interestingly enough, the *James*, mentioned in Chapter 2, was the same ship that brought Captain Thomas Wiggin and the first settlers to the Dover, New Hampshire area two years earlier. The *Angel Gabriel* reached Pemaquid, at the time the northernmost English settlement in the New World, on 14 August 1635, following a voyage of 71 days.

It was at Pemaquid on the following day that disaster struck. Early in the morning of 15 August
1635, while much of the cargo was still aboard, a hurricane-force storm struck the coast of Maine. As recorded at the time, a "sudden dismal storm of wind and rain came as had never been known before by white man or Indian". Traces of the storm would remain in the area for years. Although most of the passengers and crew got off the ship, the ship was battered against the rocky coast and sank. Although not reported at the time, it is suspected that the storm hit so suddenly and so soon after landfall that the crew and passengers got very little, if anything, off the vessel before it sank.

The Rev. Richard Mather, aboard the *James*, described the sinking of the *Angel Gabriel* in his journal: "And ye Angel Gabriel being yet at anchor at Pemmaquid, was burst in pieces and cast away in ye storme and most of the cattell and other goodes, with one seaman and 3 or 4 passengers did also perish therein, besides two of ye passengers that dies by ye way, the rest having their lives given them for a prey. But ye James and wee that were therein, with our cattell and goods, were all preserved alive."

The *James*, which was continuing on to its destination of Massachusetts, encountered the same storm while under sail off the coast near the present-day border of Maine and New Hampshire. The *James* sets its anchor at the Isles of Shoals to wait out the storm, but lost three anchors while attempting to maintain their position, and set sail again. No canvas or ropes would hold in the hurricane, and the ship was driven "within a cable's length" of the rocks on the Piscataqua River, when the wind suddenly changed direction and moved the ship back towards the Isles of Shoals. Waiting for the right moment, the crew let out a piece of their mainsail and they managed once again to miss the rocks. Having weathered the ferocious storm, they landed at "Charlestown Harbor" (Boston) two days later.

Several interesting sidebars arise out of the sinking of the less fortunate *Angel Gabriel*. For one, the captain apparently never commanded another vessel. He and his three nephews, who had sailed with him, settled at Chebacco, in Massachusetts Bay. The records show that on 3 September 1635, "Robt Andrews licensed to keep ordinarye [an inn] in the Plantacon where he lives during the pleasure of ye court." He was allowed to sell wine retail "if he do not wittingly sell to such as abuse it by drunkenness." Perhaps losing one ship in a hurricane was enough for him.

One especially poignant story was discovered about one of the men aboard the *Angel Gabriel*. His name was John Jacob Bailey, a weaver from Chippenham, England, who came to America with his son John Jr. and daughter Joanna. He had sailed to America, leaving his wife and several other children behind in England to follow him when he had established a new home. Although the man survived the shipwreck, his account of the event, written to his wife back in England, so frightened her that she refused to follow him on such a perilous journey and forever remained in England. Bailey, unable to face the journey back to England, never returned. The two never saw each other again.

Over the years, many ships were impaled on the rocks of Pemaquid. Finally, during the administration of our sixth president, John Quincy Adams, a lighthouse was built on Pemaquid Point in 1827, at a cost of $2800. But faulty construction caused the tower to begin deteriorating almost immediately, and it was rebuilt in 1835 with double walls. The structure remains in place today and has been turned into a park, with the lightkeeper's house now a museum.

One final story about Pemaquid and the *Angel Gabriel*: marine historian and archaeologist
Warren Riess has been looking for the remains of the ship since 1978. His teams have made 13 diving expeditions trying to find the ship and were featured recently on Quest, a program aired by Maine Public Television. They aren't the only ones looking for the Angel Gabriel; British Army divers have also attempted to find the location of the wreck. The reason for all of the interest is that an English sailing ship of that age has never been found, one that was built within 10-12 years of when the Mayflower was built. Furthermore, we know approximately where the ship is, it is close to land in relatively shallow water, and perhaps most importantly, was nearly fully loaded with its cargo of what, today, would be priceless artifacts. The search still continues as this book is being written.

Other than William Furber was a passenger aboard the Angel Gabriel, we know very little else about his early history. He was born in London about 1614. No trace of his parents has been found. It has been reported by others that William had an older sister named Temperance who married John Bickford at Dover, New Hampshire. The compiler considers this claim to be quite dubious. Why William Furber came to America or what he had planned to do after his arrival here will forever remain a mystery. It is possible that he was one of the servants for the John Cogswell family, and that was his reason for being aboard the ill-fated ship.

At any rate, he stated in a deposition many years later that he came on the Angel Gabriel "along with Mr. John Cogswell" and that in "November after the wreck" he "hired himself for one year" to the Cogswell family at Ipswich, Massachusetts, where Cogswell settled. William further stated that he had to sleep "on the same bed with Deacon Samuel Haines". Haines was one of the 24 persons listed on the Angel Gabriel passenger list, and was either one of the servants to the Cogswells, or like William Furber, had to find work. It has been written that William Furber lost most of his possessions in the shipwreck at Pemaquid, which is highly likely, and that he was forced to work for a year to start over.

Perhaps because he didn't care for the sleeping arrangements, William Furber didn't stay longer in Massachusetts than the one year he agreed to work for Cogswell, instead settling in New Hampshire, at Dover in 1637. Apparently William Furber was a hard worker and highly respected, because by 1640 he had acquired two house lots on the east side of High street in the Dover settlement. These lots were described as "containing six acres, on the east side of ye neck of Dover, butting on ye" fore side of the river".

In 1640, William Furber was one of 42 signers to The Combination of 1640, the oldest formal document in existence in New Hampshire. Prior to 1640, there was no formal government in New Hampshire, just a land agent for the English company which had been granted the patent to the area. In the absence of any formal government, the growing colony found it necessary to organize one. The document was so called because "wee whose names are underwritten being Inhabitants upon the River Pascataquack have voluntarily agreed to combine ourselves into a body politique ... ". Interestingly enough, of the 42 signers, five were our direct ancestors (for reasons not understood to this day, Hatevil Nutter¹ was not a signer).

William Furber appears in quite a number of early town records for Dover. On 20 April 1640, it was ordered by the town "that Edward Starbuck, Richard Walderne and William Furber be Wearsmen for Cotchecho Falls and river, during their lives, or so long as they continue inhabitants in the town." Wearsmen is an obsolete term which refers to professional fishermen, a job that some
men today would seek with considerable envy. The town further stated that "the said wearsmen are bound to use all diligence in catching fish" and "are to have six thousand of fish (alewives), each of them for their ground." The last reference is to the fact that the fish were ground up as fertilizer for their corn.

On 30 June 1643, William Furber received a grant of 20 acres of land "abutting upon a certain place called ye Gulfe". He sold this land to Thomas Nock on 2 July 1657. A few months later, on 30 October 1643, William received a grant of six acres of marsh "upon y° Great Bay, upon y° southwest side". On 5 October 1652, mill privileges on Fresh Creek were granted by the town to William Furber and three other men (one of whom was Henry Langstaff, our direct ancestor). In 1654, William was appointed steward to collect all rents due the town. On 15 July 1675, William Furber, Anthony Nutter and John Woodman (all three were our direct ancestors) were chosen "to treat and discourse with the selectmen of Portsmouth and of the Isles of Shoals" about "raising money for the relief of those who have suffered either by their estates or services in the present war with the Indians." This conflict was described by New Hampshire Alonzo Quint as "the first general war with the Indians," which commenced in 1675. As will be reported at some length in the remainder of this book, the white inhabitants of the Dover area would have troubles with the Indians for a number of years.

Other Dover town records indicate that William Furber was elected one of the town selectmen in 1651 and several times after that. He also served as Commissioner several years, lot layer, moderator of town meetings, and frequently on committees to settle boundary disputes. His name appears on the earliest tax list which survives (from 1648) until 1674, when he gave his farm to his son William. At that time, he was one of the largest taxpayers. His experience with the militia, formed to protect the citizens of the township against Indian attack, is unknown, but he was referred to as "Sgt. William Furber" in early records.

In 1652, William Furber received a grant of 52 acres of land at Welshman's Cove on Bloody Point, on the east side of Little Bay, across the river from the main Dover colony, and which today is Newington, New Hampshire. In 1657, he received another grant of 30 acres, adjoining his first grant and, in that year, moved his family from his house lots in Dover to the Newington site. It was here that William Furber, the progenitor of the Furber family in America lived for the remainder of his life. The Furber name remained on this property until 1953, when the family farm was finally taken over for the construction of an Air Force base (today it is Pease International Airport).

Within a few years after settling in Dover, William Furber married a young woman by the name of Elizabeth, whose last name has generated considerable controversy. Since no record of the marriage survives, most historians have not provided a surname. However, the Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire (GDMNH) states that William Furber married, before 1647, Elizabeth Clark, the daughter of Lt. William Clark of London, by his first wife, the former Elizabeth Quick. The GDMNH further states that this William Clark immigrated to America and lived at Watertown, Ipswich and Salem, all in Massachusetts. If the source of this information were Quint, for example, whose accounts are occasionally found to be in error, then it might be regarded as suspect. However, the Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire is a highly regarded work and anything they report must be considered highly accountable.

However, in more recent work, The Great Migration Begins, Immigrants to New England, 1620-
1633, author Robert Anderson states that the William Clark who lived at Watertown and Ipswich was a different William Clark from the one who lived at Salem, the former one probably having returned to London. He further argues that there is no evidence that any William Clark married Elizabeth Quick in England. Further research may resolve this issue, but without more concrete evidence to refute the claims of the Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire, the compiler will abide by their account.

Accounts of when William Furber died vary. It has often been stated that he died in 1692, but "William Furber, Sr." was alive on 1 Dec 1696 when he conveyed six acres of marsh land to his son Moses. However, he was dead before 30 December 1699 when the following document was filed with the probate court. (A word of warning, the reader will be highly challenged by old colonial English. Also note that the use of "ffurber" in this and subsequent colonial documents is not an error or misspelling. The use of a double "ff" was used for many years as a capital "F").:

```
to ye honrabl william partridg Esqr Judg of ye probat of wills & granting Administreation & settling of intestants Estats; within the province of Newhampsh may it ples your honor: for as much as william ffurber of welch Cove deseced dyed intesteted as is reported, Leveing A considerabl Estat behind him which sd Estat Lyes in the hands of his son will furber who keeps the sam Contrary to Law from his sisters & will not Render there porshons to them though often there to desiered.

wee the subscribers y husbands of sd furber sisters in their behallf being informed that by Law the whol settlemen of intested Estats Lys in youer honers hands doe therfore pray that our sd brother may be Compeled to deliver unto each of his sisters their portion in sd Estat & that all such meshurs as the Law directs too may be useed for those ends so prays youer hon" most humbl Addresors.
```

The document, which indicated that William Furber had died intestate [without a will], was signed by John Dam, John Bickford and Thomas Bickford, all of whom married daughters of William Furber.

William Furber¹ and Elizabeth (Clark?) had at least eight children who survived to adulthood, all born at Dover or Newington, New Hampshire (order only approximate and based upon other records):

1. Elizabeth Furber²  b. Abt 1643 @ Dover, Strafford, NH  
m. 9 Nov 1664 John Dam, Jr.
+ 2. William Furber²  b. Abt 1646 @ Dover, Strafford, NH  
m. (1st) Esther -----  
m. 13 Aug 1694 (2nd) Elizabeth (Heard) Nute  
m. 3 Apr 1706 (3rd) Elizabeth (Martyn) Kennard  
d. 14 Sep 1707 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
3. Jethro Furber²  b. @ Dover, Strafford, NH  
m. Amy Cowell  
d. Abt 1686
4. Hannah Furber²  b. Abt 1650 @ Dover, Strafford, NH  
m. 19 Sep 1671 Roger Plaisted, Jr.
5. Bethia Furber²  b. @ Dover, Strafford, NH  
6. Moses Furber²  b. @ Dover, Strafford, NH  
d. Aft 1696
7. Bridget Furber²  b. Abt 1660 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
m. Thomas Bickford
8. Susanna Furber²  b. 5 May 1664 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
SECOND-GENERATION FURBERS

We will briefly recap what is known about each of the children born to William Furber\(^1\), and then turn our attention to our direct ancestor, his son and namesake, William Furber\(^2\).

Elizabeth Furber\(^2\), who was probably the oldest of the children of William Furber\(^1\), married on 9 November 1664 Sgt. John Dam, the son of Deacon John Dam. John Dam, who is one of the people who signed the court document above on the behalf of his wife, had been married before, but his first wife died after giving birth to a daughter Abigail. John Dam died 8 January 1705/6. He and Elizabeth\(^2\) had the following children (besides Abigail, who survived): John (d.y.), John, Alice, Moses, Bethia and Jonathan.

Jethro Furber\(^2\) moved to Portsmouth, New Hampshire, became a mariner and spent part of his life at sea. He married Amy Cowell, daughter of Edward and Agnes Cowell of Portsmouth, and the widow of Joseph Sherburne. Jethro's father-in-law was a ship captain, sailing the *Dolphin* out of Portsmouth, which undoubtedly had an impact on Jethro's choice of professions. Jethro Furber\(^2\) was still alive on 2 May 1682, when he was named the administrator of the Cowell estate, but was dead by 29 June 1686, when an inventory of his estate appears in the court records. In 1692, his widow Amy married Nathaniel Ayers, a Portsmouth blacksmith. She was still alive in 1740, living in Boston. Jethro\(^2\) and Amy only had one son, also named Jethro, who became a "master and mariner" out of Portsmouth.

On 14 February 1677, a year and a half before Jethro married, his father, William Furber\(^1\), "in consideration of ye natural love and tender affection to his dutiful and well-beloved son Jethro," conveyed some of his land to his son. The land was described as "a neck of land containing 100 acres or thereabouts within ye mouth of ye Great Bay, in ye township of Dover" and was bordered by land owned by "Wm. Furber Jr.," John Bickford, Thomas Leighton and Anthony Nutter. Anthony Nutter was the son of Hatevil. Jethro Furber's son, Jethro\(^3\) "of Portsmouth", conveyed the 100 acres of land to John Bickford on 1 August 1706.

Hannah Furber\(^2\) married Roger Plaisted, the eldest son of Lt. Roger and Olive (Coleman) Plaisted, on 19 September 1671. Roger and Hannah had two daughters, Frances and Abigail, before Roger was killed by Indians on 17 October 1675. On the previous day, the area around Salmon Falls had been attacked by Indians and four men were killed. With twenty more men, Roger's father, Lt. Roger Plaisted and his son ventured out of their garrison the next day to gather the dead for burial.

With a cart pulled by yoked oxen, the party ventured to the farthest point before again being attacked by the waiting Indians. Both Roger Plaisted and his father were killed, along with another man. Roger's brother, wounded in the fighting, lingered for a few weeks before dying also. After the tragedy, Hannah's mother-in-law, Olive Plaisted agreed in court to maintain her son Roger's wife and children until the widow "changed her condition". However, another agreement with her surviving children, dated 16 September 1682, was disallowed by the court because "equitable provision" was not made for Hannah and her family.
Bethia Furber\(^2\), whose name has often been listed incorrectly as Bertha, is not known to have married. She lived with the family of John Cutt, who was fairly wealthy and the President of the Council of the Province of New Hampshire. Cutt left Bethia 50 shillings in his will.

Moses Furber\(^2\) died as a young man, and died before his father. William Furber\(^1\) conveyed to his "3d son" on 1 December 1696 the six acres of marsh on the "S.W. side of y\(6\) great bay in Piscataqua river, within y\(6\) township of Dover" and "30 acres of upland adjoining said marsh, and of the same breadth, running up into the woods till 30 acres be completed". After Moses Furber\(^2\) died, the "high sheriff of New Hampshire" levied a portion of his estate for debt and sold the land to Joshua Weeks, an adjoining landowner. We have no record of a marriage for Moses Furber\(^2\), but it is possible that he had a wife named Amy, who married second Lt. Samuel Winslow. In November 1698, she was a widow living in Boston, when she granted a lease on the property that had been given to Moses\(^2\).

Bridget Furber\(^2\) married Thomas Bickford, the son of John and Temperance (Hull) Bickford. Thomas' father was the same John Bickford who, according to some, married the sister of William Furber\(^1\), which the compiler considers very unlikely. Thomas and Bridget lived at Durham Point, where his garrison home successfully withstood an attack by Indians in 1694. Thomas Bickford's will, dated 13 October 1706, was probated 4 March 1707. Thomas and Bridget had the following children: Joanna, John, Eleazar, Joseph and Thomas.

Susanna Furber\(^2\) (the name also recorded as Susannah) was born 5 May 1664 at Newington, New Hampshire, and is the only one of the children of William Furber\(^1\) for whom we know an exact date of birth. She was also probably the youngest of the children. She married Sgt. John Bickford, the brother of Thomas Bickford mentioned above. John and Susanna\(^2\) lived at Long Point in Newington, New Hampshire. He died in 1715, while she lived until 1732. John and Susanna\(^2\) had the following children: Bridget, Jethro, John, Mary, Joseph, Anna, Pierce, Lemuel & Eliakim (twins) and Dodovah.

Besides the children named above, William Furber\(^1\) may have had a daughter Abigail\(^2\), who is named as one of his daughters in the *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire*. She was living with the family of Richard Martyn in 1677. She married Ebenezer Orton in Charlestown, Massachusetts on 28 October 1687 and died of smallpox on 27 March 1691. Ebenezer Orton drowned 7 August 1694. Most other historians do not consider that she was the daughter of William Furber\(^1\). Likewise, other historians have stated that William Furber\(^1\) had a daughter named "Ester" or Esther\(^2\). However, the compiler considers it more likely that this person was a descendant of William Furber\(^2\).

William Furber\(^2\), the oldest son of William\(^1\) and Elizabeth (Clark?) Furber, is our direct ancestor. He was called "Lt. William Furber" for his role in the militia in the defense against the Indians. He was born about 1646 (based on the fact that he stated in a 1676 deposition that he was 30 years old) in Dover, before his father moved across the river to Welshman's (or Welch) Cove, in what today would be Newington, New Hampshire. William\(^2\) lived with his father on the Furber homestead until his father died in 1699. As the oldest son, the homestead passed to William Furber\(^2\) even before his father's death.

His father never made a will, but elected to pass all of his properties, in the form of gift deeds,
to his three sons well before his death. On 17 June 1674, his father stated in a deed: "I, William ffurber, Sen'r, for ye entire affection I bear to my son Will: ffurber, my first-born son, do by these p'sents give to him & his heirs forev all my now dwelling house, both ye and new one, wth my barn and all out housing, wth all my Land from Piscataq Rock to the north End of Anthony Nutter his land to ye north to this line," etc. As a sidebar, and to emphasize the frailty of the old "metes and bounds" system of land measurement, even the large rock known as Piscataqua Rock mentioned in the deed is now gone. It was a large slate-like rock near the shore that over the years was gradually broken up by the frost and ice, and eventually carried away by the strong tides. The large rock is no longer visible.

For years, the residents of New Hampshire suffered from numerous struggles with the local Indians, who had grown to distrust and resent the incursions of the white man. From their viewpoint, it was the white man who continually displaced the Indians from their traditional tribal hunting and fishing grounds. The local Indian tribes, however, weren't the only problem the New Hampshire colonists had. Virtually unknown today, King William's War was the first of four North American wars fought between England and France, in their increasing struggle for control of the continent. From 1689 to 1697, the French and their Indian allies raided English frontier settlements, which included the total destruction of Schenectady (New York), Salmon Falls (New Hampshire) and Fort Loyal, Maine. The English did much the same to French settlements. The colonist families were caught in the middle.

In colonial New Hampshire, militia laws required that every town organize a company of militia. The law required that every able-bodied male between the ages of 16 and 60, even indentured servants and slaves, equip himself with a flintlock musket, powder and ball. Troopers were to be mounted on a horse of good condition. Any man who did not prepare himself as required by the law would incur a fine of forty shillings. Each company was required to train and drill at least six times a year and in an emergency, the Governor was empowered to call on several towns to form a regiment under one command. The officers of each local militia elected their own officers (captains, lieutenants and ensigns), while officers at the regimental level were appointed by the Governor.

For the protection of their families, many of the colonists built garrisons around or near their houses. One of five garrisons known to have existed in the present-day Newington area is Furber's Garrison. This garrison stood near what is still known as Furber's Point and must have been built before 1689, in which year William Furber was appointed an ensign by the Massachusetts government. He was promoted to lieutenant on 20 September 1692. Captain Tuttle of Dover posted three soldiers at Furber's Garrison in 1696, but Lt. William Furber stated he was "destitute of all manner of provisions" and "released and acquitted" the three men from service on 27 July 1696.

His actions brought swift reprisal from the Provincial government. William Furber was court-martialed that same year on charges of dismissing his soldiers, despite his claims of lack of supplies. He was found guilty and fined 20 pounds by Governor John Usher, and forbidden to hold office. Despite this, however, William Furber was elected a representative to the General Assembly from 1692 until his death in 1707, and was one of the men appointed to lay out the boundaries of the five townships in the Province.

Two of the other four garrisons that existed in the Newington area were Langstaff's Garrison and Nutter's Garrison, built by Henry Langstaff and Anthony Nutter respectively. Both men were our
direct ancestors and were mentioned in an earlier chapter. Langstaff's Garrison was mentioned in the journal of the Rev. John Pike as having stood on Bloody Point itself and having been attacked by Indians in 1689. By tradition, many people who were massacred by the Indians lie buried there. Today, the site of Nutter's Garrison can be still be seen on a ridge a little south of a pond that is still called Garrison Pond.

William Furber\textsuperscript{2} also operated a ferry to move people and cargo back and forth across Little Bay. Furber's Ferry was licensed to operate by the General Assembly beginning on 11 December 1694, although there is evidence that the ferry was in operation before May of that year. The General Assembly ordered:

"that William Furber keep a ferry from his house at Welshman's Cove, to transport travellers over to Oyster River; and to receive of passengers, viz: for a man three pence and for a man and horse 8 pence to land at Mathews his neck; and for such as shall land at Durgins of the west side of Mathews his neck, shall pay six pence for a man, and twelve pence for a horse and man; and so to pay the same for returning back; and that the said William Furber keep attendance and a sufficient boat or gundaloe, so to continue still further orders."

Now an obsolete term, a \textit{gundalow} was a scow-like freight barge used exclusively in New England, primarily on the rivers. It had a rounded bow and stern, flaring topsides, and a very short mast with a large triangular sail, similar to a lateen sail. The word was a variation and malapropism of "gondola".

Historian John Frink Rowe states that "Furber's Ferry may have been a forerunner of the gundalows that later plied the Piscataqua and its tributaries for over two centuries. It may have been a square-ended version, rigged with a square sail to take advantage of the more frequent winds in the open waters of Little Bay. Helped along with a favorable ebb tide, the ferry could have made the mouth of the Oyster River in less than an hour. To anyone familiar with the swift tidal currents of the Piscataqua at Bloody Point and Fox Point, the method of moving a fairly heavy and sizable craft across the currents at those points remains a mystery. Uncertain winds in the confined waters in those areas would seem to rule out sail as a means of propulsion. Rowing with the length of sweeps that even three feet of freeboard would require would tax the strength of four strong men."

Many of the older landmark names in the Dover area, including Furber's Bridge and Furber's Ferry, have since passed into obscurity. However, the names Furber's Point and Furber's Straits can still be found on modern day maps. Furber's Point is on the Newington shore, at the narrows between Great and Little Bays. These narrows are still identified as Furber's Straits, and is the area of water across which Furber's Ferry once ran.

William Furber\textsuperscript{2} married three times. His first wife, and the mother of all of his children, is believed to have been named Esther, possibly the daughter of Edward Starbuck. This assumption is based upon the fact that his father, William Furber\textsuperscript{1}, referred to Esther Starbuck as "daughter" in a 1676 document. The problem with this contention is that it has not been determined if Edward Starbuck had a daughter of that name. On 13 August 1694, William Furber took as his second wife Elizabeth Nute, the daughter of John and Elizabeth (Hull) Heard, and the widow of James Nute (the compiler is also directly descended from the Heard, Hull and Nute families and all three will be described later). Elizabeth died 9 November 1705. William\textsuperscript{2} then married, in 1706, Elizabeth Kennard, the daughter of Richard and Sarah (Tuttle) Martyn, and the widow of Edward Kennard. His third wife outlived William\textsuperscript{2} and later took, as her third husband on 27 December 1708,
Benjamin Nason of Kittery, Maine.

William Furber died at his home at Newington on 14 September 1707. The Rev. John Pike, in his journal, reported that "Lieut. William Furber of Welch Cove died after three days sickness with feaver, and a kind of num malaise in his jaws. He was taken Fryday morning and died sabbath night following." William Furber made out a will dated 3 April 1706, which contained some rather strange provisions. On this date, he had not yet married the widow Elizabeth Kennard, and it appears that perhaps William was trying to use his estate as leverage to entice the widow Kennard to become his wife (assuming she had knowledge of the contents of his will).

The original will reads (again the reader will be highly challenged by the use of colonial English):

"Know all men by these Presents that I william ffurber of Welch Cove ... Doe Acknolidge my selfe to be Justly Indepted unto Elizabeth Kenard of the Towne of Portsmo ... the full and Just sume of Two Hundred pounds Current Muney of New England to Be paid upon Demand; ...

The Condition of the Obligation is such that where as there is a Contract of Maredge Concluded to be Betwen y' above said willia m ffurber and y' said Elizabeth Konard that forth with after the Day of Maridge is sellibrated if she doe out live me y' s'd william ffurber that then I doe Give ... y' s'd Elizabeth Kenard ... the hole and sole use ... of all ... the Houses, Barnes, Orchards, and Lands where on I now Dwell;"

In other words, 61-year-old William Furber was saying that he would give £200 to Elizabeth Kennard if she would marry him, and she would have the use of his homestead following his demise.

In a later section of his will, William Furber further clarifies what he is offering to the widow Kennard:

"all which abovesaid Houses and Lands Meadows and Broock to be to y' above said Elizabeth Kenard (that now is) Provided she Doe becom my wife ...",

and finally:

"I Do allso further Give and Bequeath unto Her y' said Elizabeth above Mentioned the one halfe of all my Mufable Goods and Estate after my deceace with in dores and with out as household Goods stock of Cattell and what other Mufeables I shall have; to be to her and att her disposall to whome she shall see Cause to bestow it on;"

It is very clear that the "now is" Elizabeth Kennard is not yet his wife, and that the homestead of William Furber would only be hers if she married him. William further provided for her, after his death, to have one half of his movables ("mufable" in the will), a legal term pertaining to movable property, such as furniture, horses or cattle ("Cattell" in the will). What's more, William agreed that the widow Kennard would be free to dispose of her inheritance in any way she saw fit.

The carrot that William Furber dangled in front of Elizabeth Kennard apparently worked. She married him on 3 April 1706 in Portsmouth, the same day he wrote his will. William Furber died 17 months later.

However, despite William's apparent infatuation with the widow Kennard, he did not completely forget his sons. His will also provided for them, noting that the land to be bequeathed to Elizabeth Kennard was "Excepting what I have Given to my two suns: Wm and Jethro ffurber by eache of them one Dead of Gift Baring Equall Date with these Presents". With a "deed of gift," William Furber gave his sons, William and Jethro, a portion of his land, divided between the two.
The will did not provide for a third son of William Furber\(^2\), Joshua\(^3\), who was a mariner who regularly sailed out of Portsmouth. The administration of William Furber's will was finally granted to his eldest son, William\(^3\), on 6 March 1712/13. A dispute arose about the division of the land between the sons William\(^3\) and Jethro\(^3\), which was eventually settled by arbitrators. Such disputes were very common with the old "metes and bounds" land descriptions, which in the case of the Furber land, involved "that Elm Tree", "a great white oake" and "a white Ash stump". The reader can probably see how such problems could arise.

William Furber\(^2\) and his first wife, the former Esther Starbuck(?), had only three known children, all sons:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Birth Year</th>
<th>Birth Location</th>
<th>Mother</th>
<th>Death Year</th>
<th>Death Location</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>William Furber(^3)</td>
<td>Abt 1673</td>
<td>@ Newington, Rockingham, NH</td>
<td>Sarah Nute</td>
<td>20 Mar 1757</td>
<td>@ Newington, Rockingham, NH</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Jethro Furber(^3)</td>
<td></td>
<td>@ Newington, Rockingham, NH</td>
<td>Leah Nute</td>
<td>Abt 1715</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Joshua Furber(^3)</td>
<td></td>
<td>@ Newington, Rockingham, NH</td>
<td>Elizabeth Kennard (2nd)</td>
<td>Abt 1712</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

THIRD-GENERATION FURBERS

It appears that neither Jethro\(^3\) or Joshua\(^3\) Furber lived on the land at Newington for very long following the death of their father, William Furber\(^2\). The choice land undoubtedly went to the eldest son, as had been common-law tradition since the times of earliest England, and it was William\(^3\) who stayed at Welch Cove in Newington. However, it is clear that both of the other sons received land even though Joshua Furber\(^3\) is not mentioned in his father's will.

Jethro Furber\(^3\) received 60 acres of land left to him in the will of his father. However, he became a master mariner [ship's captain] and probably spent a fair portion of his life at sea. He married Leah Nute\(^3\), the daughter of James\(^2\) and Elizabeth (Heard) Nute. On 2 March 1704, Jethro\(^3\) received 25 acres of land "at or near Great Bay in Portsmouth" from his cousin Jethro Furber, of Portsmouth, who was the son of his uncle, Jethro Furber\(^2\). The cousin of the same name who conveyed the land to Jethro Furber\(^3\) stated that his father "had intended to give it to Jethro, son of William". Despite the location of "Portsmouth" mentioned, this was part of the land at Welch Cove that William Furber\(^1\) was granted.

Jethro\(^3\) died sometime after 22 July 1715 when the following news item appeared at "Pascataqua": "Jethro Furber is arrived here from Jamaica, but last from Turks-Island Loaden with Salt," and before 2 Mar 1715/16, when his estate was administered to his widow Leah. Leah remarried only two and a half months later, on 16 May 1716 to Hatevil Nutter\(^3\), the son of Anthony Nutter\(^2\) and the grandson of the Nutter family progenitor. The fact that Leah Furber remarried so soon after the administration of her dead husband's estate was a bit unusual for the time.

One interesting historical tidbit involving Jethro Furber\(^3\) is worth mentioning. On 5 August 1706, Col. William Partridge of Portsmouth swore in a notarized statement that "Capt. Charles Stuckley, commander of Her Majesty's Ship Depford carried away by force Jethro Furber, master of the Pinck William and Richard, and thereby caused delay in the sailing of said Pinck and damage..."
There is no other information about this incident and one, of course, is left wondering what really happened. From the scanty information, it seems that Jethro Furber1 was arrested on land, probably at Portsmouth, and detained long enough for a perishable cargo to spoil. Why the arrest was undertaken by a commander in the Royal Navy and not a local constable is most interesting. Perhaps Jethro3 was involved in some sort of smuggling operation that resulted in the wrath of the British Crown.

Joshua Furber3 was not mentioned in his father's will, which has caused many genealogists to misidentify him. Historian Henry W. Hardon erred when he claimed that Joshua3 was the son of William3, when he was actually his brother. The will of Joshua Furber3, dated 19 May 1708, states that "Joshua ffurber of Portsmouth, mariner, now bound to sea, upon a voyage to the West Indies, and not knowing how the Lord may dispose of me," gave "his dwelling-house at Welch cove, and all his lands" to his "dear and loving wife Elizabeth". To this point, the information is inconclusive. However, his will further describes the property he is giving to Elizabeth as "being the house and land which my father William ffurber, deceased, gave me by his deed of Sept. 13, 1707."

Joshua3 indicates that his father was named William Furber and that he had died between 13 September 1707, when his father signed a deed, and 19 May 1708, when Joshua3 made out his will. This clearly rules out both the first- and third-generation William Furber. William Furber2 died on 14 September 1707, the day after the deed was signed giving land to Joshua3. It appears that William Furber2 had neglected his son Joshua in his will, perhaps over a disagreement or some unhappiness with him, but that he had a "death-bed" change of heart and left him part of his land at Welch Cove.

Joshua Furber3 married Elizabeth Kennard, the daughter of Edward and Elizabeth (Martyn) Kennard. Therefore, she was the daughter of the widow of the same name that his father married. The younger Elizabeth Kennard had an illegitimate daughter in 1706/7, before she married Joshua Furber3, which could explain William Furber's displeasure with his son, and his subsequent elimination from his will. Joshua3 was apparently correct in portending his demise at sea, since he died in a shipwreck "25 miles from home", probably in the fall of 1712. His will was administered 6 December 1712.

Records indicate that his wife, Elizabeth, was left with two sons, Joshua, who was 5½ at the time of his father's death, and Edward, who was one year old. There is no record of what happened to the illegitimate daughter. One explanation is that the records were incorrect, and that the illegitimate child was the son Joshua, whose age would be correct to explain that. On 26 May 1715, Elizabeth remarried to Francis Ditty, also a mariner from Portsmouth. He also died, and she married a third time to Capt. Richard Waterhouse, a Portsmouth sea captain who owned the brigantine Dove. He also died, and she married a fourth time to Moses Dam.

William Furber3, our direct ancestor, was born about 1673 at Newington, New Hampshire, the grandson of the progenitor of the Furber family and the third person in a row to carry that name. He married Sarah Nute, the daughter of James Nute and his wife, the former Elizabeth Heard. By this marriage, William Furber3 became intertwined with the Hull, Heard and Nute families, introduced next. We will resume the discussion of William Furber3 and his family in the chapter following.
THE HULL, HEARD AND NUTE FAMILIES

THE HULL FAMILY

The earliest member of the Hull family from whom we can trace our descendence is Richard Hull of Crewkerne, England, dating back to the middle 1500s. Crewkerne is located in Somerset County in the southwestern part of England. There were many people with the Hull surname who lived in England prior to this date, including Walter de Hulle, the Vicar of Crewkerne, during the period 1325-1343. But no connection to any of them has been established. It should also be pointed out that prior to this time extant written records become increasingly scarce.

Crewkerne's origins can be traced back to Saxon times. Its name is derived from the Old English words of cruc, meaning a hill, and aern, meaning a house or storehouse. Crewkerne is mentioned in the Domesday book of 1086 for its market, then the second most valuable in Somerset County. During the Middle Ages, the town prospered as an agricultural and market center, being famous both for its goldsmiths and its wool. A boom in the wool trade during the late fifteenth century led to the town's parish church being rebuilt on a magnificent scale. St. Bartholomew's Church is still the main historical attraction in the town and one of the finest of the many famous medieval churches in Somerset.

Crewkerne's prosperous textile industry in the eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries led to the rebuilding of much of the town during that period. The textile industry was particularly based on the manufacture of sailcloth and supplied sails to Admiral Nelson's navy. Throughout the eighteenth century, industry continued to expand and diversify, with the first clothing factory established in 1872. However, decline set in towards the end of the eighteenth century for two reasons: the demand for sailcloth declined as steam replaced sail, and the growth of the Lancashire clothing industry using imported cotton and power from the Lancashire and Yorkshire coal fields. Despite this, the textile industry still continues in Crewkerne. As a notable example, the parachute straps for the brake chute of the space shuttle Columbia were manufactured in Crewkerne in a 200 year old factory.
For the adventuresome reader, this description of Crewkerne from a survey of the manor written 26 April 1599 may probably prove interesting:

"The Lordshyppe of Crokerne is a stately Lordshyppe and a greate markett Towne and standeth in the highe way betweene London and Exetter fftyve myles from Taunton and sixe myles from Evell ... Within the Towne of Crokerne is a Markett every Satterday well served and furnished with all kyndes of wares and victuals oute of all parts of the Countrye and myche accessse thether by reason of the sayd markett. And on Bartholomew day yerely a great fayre the Toll stalling and profitts as well of the fayre, and of the markett appertayneth to the Lords and is worth fforty pounds yerely ..."

As is still true today, the governing body was more concerned about the town's aggregate tax revenue that other things.

Richard Hull1 was probably born about 1515. He was a husbandman [farmer] and a miller. In the earliest record found for him, in 1548, it is stated: "Richard Hull holds by copy, half a mill there called Court mill, and renders per annum - 3s. 6d." The Court Mill is located at Misterton, about 1¼ miles from Crewkerne. The record appears in a survey of Somerset chantries [chapels attached to churches, used for minor services]. The survey was made following the dissolution of the Catholic monasteries by King Henry VIII, and after the property of the chantries had been seized by the Crown and given to the country's nobles in return for their support.

In his will, Richard Hull1 refers to his "ghostly father, Sir William Sherewell". This might indicate that Richard1 had been baptized a Roman Catholic and that Sherwell was his godfather. King Henry VIII dissolved the Roman Catholic church in 1534, after he wanted to divorce his first wife and marry the beautiful Anne Boleyn, and the church refused. Afterward, the English people were required to affirm under oath that the Church of England was the only church recognized and that Henry was its leader. This lack of religious freedom was largely responsible for the early Puritans fleeing to America, including a couple of the grandsons of Richard Hull1.

Richard1 apparently had two wives, although almost nothing is known about his first wife other than she was probably the mother to three or four of his children. He married a second time in about 1550 to someone named Alice. The will of Richard Hull1 was dated 10 February 1558/9 and was proved 10 June 1559, indicating that he died earlier that year. The will of his wife, Alice, was dated 12 October 1577 and proved 25 November 1587, having outlived her husband by 28 years. Both were buried in the churchyard of St. Bartholomew's Parish Church at Crewkerne.

Original wills for Somerset County prior to 1858 were burned when 40 acres of the city of Exeter were reduced to rubble by extensive bombing from the German Luftwaffe in 1942. Fortunately, modern English transcripts of the will abstracts were made prior to that, permitting us to know some of their contents. "Richard Hull of Crokehorne, husbandman" bequeathed his possessions as follows: "To my parish church a wether [a castrated male sheep]. To Sir William Hull my son a fether bed and many household goods enumerated. To Thomas Hull my son the elder a furnes pan and 2 witches. To Raynold Hull my son a hand mill with such timber as is in my barton. To my three sons James Hull, Thomas Hull and John Hull 2 silver spoons a piece. To my wife Alice Hull and to my daughter Elynor Hull a silver spoon each. To my wife Alice Hull 4 axe, my weave my sole my dragge, my ithe my iron ropes. Residue to my wife Alice and Elnor Hull my daughter executrices. To Sir William Sherewell my ghostly father 8d."
The antiquity of the will alone makes it fascinating. But it is interesting for other reasons. It refers to Thomas "the elder" and Thomas, both referred to by Richard Hull as his sons. This is confirmed by St. Bartholomew's parish records, which also use the term "Thomas, the elder". Alice's will does not refer to "Thomas, the elder," Elinor or Raynold, indicating that these were not her children, but does mention her sons Thomas and John. This, together with the burial records at Crewkerne, clearly indicate that there were two Thomas Hulls born to Richard Hull, one by each of his wives.

Richard Hull had the following children (order estimated and at least the last three children by his wife Alice):

1. Sir William Hull
   - b. @ Crewkerne, Somerset, Eng.
2. Elinor Hull
   - b. @ Crewkerne, Somerset, Eng.
   - m. 24 Nov 1560 John Harvie @ Crewkerne
3. Thomas Hull
   - b. @ Crewkerne, Somerset, Eng.
   - m. Agnes -----
   - d. 28 Jun 1612 @ Crewkerne (burial date)
4. Raynold Hull
   - b. @ Crewkerne, Somerset, Eng.
   - m. Elinor -----
5. James Hull
   - b. @ Crewkerne, Somerset, Eng.
   - d. 27 Jul 1567 @ Crewkerne, Somerset, Eng.
6. Thomas Hull
   - b. Abt 1552 @ Crewkerne, Somerset, Eng.
   - m. 11 Jan 1572/3 Joanne Pesisge @ Crewkerne
   - d. 29 Dec 1636 @ Crewkerne (burial date)
7. John Hull
   - b. @ Crewkerne, Somerset, Eng.
   - m. (1st) Elizabeth -----
   - m. 6 Sep 1585 (2nd) Maude Cossens @ Crewkerne
   - d. 3 Nov 1588 @ Crewkerne (burial date)

Thomas Hull, the younger of two boys in his family that carried the same name (does this remind anyone of George Foreman?) was born about 1552, at Crewkerne, England. Thomas later lived both at Crewkerne and at Winsham, a small hamlet located about five miles southwest of Crewkerne. Thomas left a will dated 17 December 1636 and proved 10 February 1636/7. He was buried at Crewkerne on 29 December 1636 at the age of 84. Sadly, it appears that not only his wife but all of his nine children who remained in England had preceded him in death. In the modern English abstract of his will, Thomas Hull left "All my goods and chattells to my daughter-in-law Edith Hull's four children, to be divided between them as shall be most needed by the discretion of John Ball, schoolmaster ... Edith Hull my daughter in law to be executor in trust for her four children."

Thomas Hull married, on 11 January 1572/3, Joanne Pesisge (also Pysing, Peson, etc.) at Crewkerne. Joanne was the daughter of Richard and Margery Pesisge, who were from the small town of Abbotsbury, in nearby Dorset County, less than twenty miles southeast of Crewkerne. Richard Pesisge was buried at Abbotsbury in 1588, his will proven on 25 June of that year. Richard was the son of John Pesisge and Elizabeth Samways (also Salmon), who lived in Abbotsbury. "Margery Pesisge" was listed in the 1599 survey of "Crokherne Mannor" as a "wyddowe" living in "one Cottage of the sayde tenem' annexed with seventeene Acres of lande ...". Little more is known of the Pesisge/Peson/Pysing family. Joanne (Pesisge) Hull was buried 30 October 1629 in the churchyard at Crewkerne.
Thomas\(^2\) and Joanne (Pesinge) Hull had eleven children, the first two baptized at Winsham, the others at Crewkerne, England (all birth dates listed are actually dates of baptism):

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>#</th>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Birth Date</th>
<th>Birth Place</th>
<th>Baptism Date</th>
<th>Baptism Place</th>
<th>Death Date</th>
<th>Death Place</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.</td>
<td>Rev. William Hull(^3)</td>
<td>6 Nov 1574</td>
<td>Winsham, Somerset, Eng.</td>
<td>6 Nov 1574</td>
<td>Winsham, Somerset, Eng.</td>
<td>1 Jun 1627</td>
<td>Colyton, Eng. (bur. date)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.</td>
<td>Mary Hull(^3)</td>
<td>26 Sep 1576</td>
<td>Winsham, Somerset, Eng.</td>
<td>6 Sep 1584</td>
<td>Crewkerne (burial date)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.</td>
<td>Agnes Hull(^3)</td>
<td>11 Feb 1578/9</td>
<td>Crewkerne, Somerset, Eng.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.</td>
<td>Richard Hull(^3)</td>
<td>21 Nov 1579</td>
<td>Crewkerne, Somerset, Eng.</td>
<td>27 Mar 1587</td>
<td>Crewkerne (burial date)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.</td>
<td>Robert Hull(^3)</td>
<td>8 Nov 1584</td>
<td>Crewkerne, Somerset, Eng.</td>
<td>5 Apr 1597</td>
<td>Crewkerne (burial date)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.</td>
<td>John Hull(^3)</td>
<td>14 Feb 1586/7</td>
<td>Crewkerne, Somerset, Eng.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8.</td>
<td>George Hull(^3)</td>
<td>Abt 1590</td>
<td>Crewkerne, Somerset, Eng.</td>
<td>27 Aug 1614</td>
<td>(1) Thamzen Michell @ Crewkerne</td>
<td>10 Oct 1627</td>
<td>Crewkerne (burial date)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.</td>
<td>Joseph Hull(^3)</td>
<td>30 Mar 1594</td>
<td>Crewkerne, Somerset, Eng.</td>
<td>15 Apr 1595</td>
<td>Crewkerne (burial date)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The only exact baptism date not known for these children is the one for George Hull\(^3\). Unfortunately, even when very old baptism registers still exist as they do for St. Bartholomew's Church at Crewkerne, there can still be problems. The parish records for this church has a page missing for April through October 1590, the period when George\(^3\) was born.

When Thomas Hull\(^2\) made out his will in December of 1636, only his sons George and Joseph were apparently still alive, and the two of them had sailed for America. His son John Hull\(^3\) had died in 1627, leaving behind a wife and four children, and it was to these four grandchildren that Thomas\(^2\) left his estate. John Ball, the schoolmaster who was to divide the inheritance between the four grandchildren at his discretion, was the headmaster of Crewkerne Free Grammar School from 1613 to 1636.

Of the eleven children of Thomas Hull\(^2\), the most is known about the two, George\(^3\) and Joseph\(^3\), who emigrated to America. One who stayed behind in England was the oldest son, **Reverend William Hull\(^3\)**, who was the vicar of the Colyton parish in Devon County, west of Crewkerne. In the Church of England, the vicar was the priest of a parish who received a salary but who did not receive the tithes of the parish. William Hull\(^3\) graduated from St. Mary's Hall at Oxford with a degree in theology and was installed as the vicar of Colyton Parish in 1611. He succeeded the Rev. John Eedes, who was one of the translators of the King James Bible and who had married Alice Hull, the daughter of Henry Hull of Exeter. Though probably related to our Hulls, the connection to this man has not been established. There is no record of Rev. William Hull\(^3\) ever marrying and
he died without children in 1627. He left a will in which he named his brothers and sisters.

George Hull³ was undoubtedly born at Crewkerne, England, despite the fact that a missing page in the church records there deny us such proof. At Crewkerne on 27 August 1614, he married Thamzen Michell, probably the daughter of Robert Michell of Stockland. Her name, written as recorded in the parish registers, was probably Thomasine. George³ was the first to sail to America, when he emigrated to the Massachusetts Bay Colony about 1632. The first record of him in America is on 4 March 1632/3, when he was made a freeman [a voting citizen] in the Massachusetts colony.

There has been speculation for years that George Hull³ sailed on the Mary and John, a ship which sailed from Plymouth, England in 1630 to the Massachusetts colony. The Mary and John ranks second only to the Mayflower in popularity among genealogists who attempt to prove descendance from a specific shipload of immigrants. The likelihood is that George Hull³ sailed on a later ship, for this is no record of him being in Massachusetts before 1632. In either case, he settled at Dorchester, Massachusetts and, it seems, quickly became a fairly prominent person. He was a representative from Dorchester to the first General Court held in the colony, at Boston, on 14 May 1634. This was a notable assembly in that it marked the first time that an attempt was made to establish representative government and lawmaking in the Massachusetts colony.

In 1637, George Hull³ moved to Windsor, Connecticut and is said to have assisted in laying out the towns of Windsor and Hartford, indicating that he apparently had some surveying skills. Windsor, upon the "invitation of the local Indians," was the first English settlement in what is now Connecticut. For the next nine years, he was Deputy to the General Court from Windsor. In 1647, he sold his house in Windsor to Governor John Haynes and moved to Fairfield, Connecticut. Haynes was the man who banished Roger Williams from the Massachusetts Bay Colony, resulting in Williams founding the colony of Rhode Island.

Sometime prior to 1654, his wife Thamzen died, for about that year, George Hull³ remarried to Sarah, the widow of David Phippen of Boston. George Hull³ died at Fairfield before 25 August 1659, when the inventory of his estate was taken. He would have been about 70 years old. The inventory of Sarah was taken at the same time, indicating that they died very close to the same date.

Joseph Hull³ was our direct ancestor and one of the most interesting individuals in our ancestry. He apparently was intelligent and well educated, but also quarrelsome and antagonistic. Joseph³ was baptized at Crewkerne, England on 25 Apr 1596, the youngest of the eleven children born to Thomas and Joanne (Pesinge) Hull. On 22 May 1612, just after turning 16, he was admitted to St. Mary's Hall at Oxford University and received his B.A. degree on 14 November 1614. He then studied theology for the next five years, while also serving as a teacher and curate [a cleric who assists the rector or vicar] under his older brother William³ at the Colyton Parish.

On 14 April 1621, after having been ordained as a clergyman of the Church of England, he became the rector [a cleric who has charge of a parish and who collects the tithes from it] of the Northleigh Parish, a few miles west of Colyton. He remained in this position for eleven years, but in 1632, following disagreements with the "ecclesiastical authority", resigned his position at Northleigh. He moved his family back to Crewkerne and began gathering people together to sail to America. On 20 March 1635, in the accompaniment of 103 followers, he set sail from Weymouth, England.
For 235 years, the names of the individuals who sailed with the Rev. Joseph Hull\(^3\) remained unknown, including the members of his own family. But, in 1870, someone at the Public Records Office in London discovered the old passenger list among a bundle of miscellaneous manuscripts. Included in the list of 104 names was:

- Joseph Hull, of Somerset, a minister, aged 40 years
- Agnes Hull, his wife, aged 25 years
- Joane Hull, his daughter, aged 15 years
- Joseph Hull, his sonne, aged 13 years
- Tristan Hull, his sonne, aged 11 years
- Temperance Hull, his daughter, aged 9 years
- Elizabeth Hull, his daughter, aged 7 years
- Grissel Hull, his daughter, aged 5 years
- Dorothy Hull, his daughter, aged 3 years
- Judith French, his servant, aged 20 years
- John Wood, his servant, aged 20 years
- Robert Dobyn, his servant, aged 28 years

Oddly enough, the name of the vessel on which they sailed was not given.

It is obvious that Agnes, who last name has not been found, was not the mother of his children. At age 25, and a daughter 15 years old, she was certainly the second wife of the Rev. Joseph Hull\(^3\). Many historians have stated that the name of the first wife was Joanne, and some have claimed that it was Joanne Coffin. Neither claim can be substantiated. In his excellent book, *The Ancestors and Descendants of George Hull*, Robert E. Hull quotes researcher Phyllis J. Hughes: "The immigrant, Rev. Joseph, was given a first wife named Joanna, for which there is absolutely no evidence or proof, even though the Rev. Joseph Hull did, indeed, have a first wife. This error in the name of his wife was finally traced back to Orra E. Monnette and his publications, which also gave this wife the Coffin surname - again a major error and based only on Mr. Monnette's vague theories, but with no basis in fact. Yet this name has been immortalized in various publications which followed and continues today (1993) to be promulgated in numerous genealogies. The name of the first wife of the Rev. Joseph Hull is not known even after extensive research in the English records by John Coddington and other eminent genealogists."

The ship carrying Joseph Hull\(^3\) and his group reached Boston on 6 May 1635. On 8 July of that year, Governor Winthrop made an entry in his journal: "At this court Wessaguscus was made a plantation and Mr. Hull, a minister of England, and twenty-one families with him allowed to sit down there." The arrival of Joseph\(^3\) and his group at Wessaguscus doubled its population, and it soon became a town, which was renamed Weymouth, in honor of the city in England from which they had sailed. Today, Weymouth is a suburb of Boston, located approximately 12 miles to the south. It was here, on 12 June 1636, that the Rev. Joseph Hull\(^3\) received a grant of land.

It did not take long for the Rev. Joseph Hull\(^3\), the new minister of Weymouth, to get into trouble, a problem which would dog him for the remainder of his life. To understand these problems, one must realize that the Pilgrims came to America in 1620 and established their religious beliefs in the Plymouth Colony. The Puritans arrived in 1630, settling around Boston, and established their own religious beliefs in what would become the Massachusetts Bay Colony. Both groups were dissenters who had broken away from the Church of England. Although each group came to the New World seeking religious freedom, neither group extended religious freedom to those who dissented from
their faith. In other words, and ironic as it may seem, religious freedom extended only to those who
believed as they did.

Joseph Hull\textsuperscript{3} was an Anglican minister, who preached the word of the Church of England. His
religious beliefs weren't welcome in either colony. After antagonizing the Puritan officials, he
moved in 1637 to Nantasket, then a part of Hingham, where his preaching continued to irritate the
Puritan authorities. Today, the town where he lived is named Hull, Massachusetts (although there
is evidence that it was known by that name prior to the arrival of Joseph Hull\textsuperscript{3}). On 5 May 1639,
having completely worn out his welcome in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, he "gave his farewell
sermon" at Hingham and moved to the Plymouth Colony, to a place the Indians called Mattakeese.
Here he and his followers founded the present-day town of Barnstable. However, he continued to
have problems with colonial officials. In 1910, historian Charles H. Weygant described the rock at
Barnstable which "still stands in the middle of the highway, from which he preached, surrounded
by his armed parishioners".

Weygant further described: "Plymouth Colony was, however, not much more congenial for a
man of his political and religious sentiments than the Massachusetts Bay Colony." In 1641, he
moved to Yarmouth, but was excommunicated for "breaking communion with Barnstable Church
and joining himself with a company at Yarmouth to be their pastor, contrary to the advice and
council" of the church of Barnstable. Gov. Winthrop wrote in his journal of the Yarmouth township:
"They had entertained one Hull, an excommunicated person and very contentious, for their
minister". On 7 March 1642, the General Court of the colony, concerned that Hull was still
preaching after having been excommunicated, ordered that "a warrant shall be directed to the
Constable of Yarmouth to apprehend Mr. Joseph Hull (if he do either exercise his ministry amongst
them or administer the Seals), to bring him before the next magistrate ...". In 1643, perhaps with few
options, Joseph\textsuperscript{3} returned to Barnstable, where he "acknowledged his sin" and was received back
into the church there.

Later that same year, Joseph Hull\textsuperscript{3} moved to York, Maine to an Episcopal colony there. The
Episcopal Church was the American colonial offshoot of the Church of England. At York, where
records show he was the minister by 10 May 1643, he probably thought he was finally free to preach
his beliefs. But the Province of Maine soon came under the jurisdiction of the Massachusetts Bay
Colony and the colonial officials from there sent a Puritan preacher named Brock to replace Joseph
Hull\textsuperscript{3}. About 1645, Joseph\textsuperscript{3} sailed back to England with his wife and his younger children,
apparently abandoning some of the older children.

Back in England, the Rev. Joseph Hull\textsuperscript{3} became the rector of the St. Burien Parish in Launceston,
England, near Lands End. It was here that two of his children died the year they returned. He
remained in his position as rector at Launceston for ten years, until in 1662, he was "ejected" by the
Royal Commissioners. Feeling that perhaps the political and religious climate in America had
improved, Joseph\textsuperscript{3} and his family again sailed to New England. Once there, he became the minister
at Oyster River (now Durham) New Hampshire. But trouble found the Rev. Joseph\textsuperscript{3} once again, this
time primarily with the Quakers. They greatly resented the Church of England and its teachings,
and made it a point to regularly disrupt his sermons. Joseph Hull\textsuperscript{3} did not remain at Oyster River
long and he soon resumed his old position as the minister of York, Maine.

At York, his duties also included preaching to the inhabitants of the Isles of Shoals, off the coast
of Maine and New Hampshire. It was there, on 19 November 1665, that he died, three years after returning from England. He died without leaving a will, but his estate was evaluated at over £52, £10 of which was recorded as being in the form of books. Biographer R. B. Hull summarized the life of the Rev. Joseph Hull as follows: "Reviewing all, it is concluded that in England Mr. Hull was a conformist, and remained within the pale of the church obedient to authority, that in New England he still endeavored to hold to a middle course, as a latitudinarian or low churchman, but that failing in this, after repeated attempts, he finally withdrew to a province where he was free to practice and profess as best suited his conscience. No whisper has reached us that he was unorthodox or weak in his theology, and of his moral nature we catch glimpses of but three traits; that in habit he was scholarly, in temperament religious, and in spirit contentious."

The Rev. Joseph Hull had eighteen children, the first seven that sailed with him to Massachusetts apparently by his first wife and another ten by his second wife, Agnes:

1. Joanna Hull
   b. Abt 1620 @ England
   m. 28 Nov 1639 (1) Cap. John Bursley @ Sandwich
   m. (2) Dolor Davis
   d. Aft 1683

2. Joseph Hull
   b. Abt 1622 @ Northleigh, Devon, Eng.

3. Tristram Hull
   b. Abt 1624 @ Northleigh, Devon, Eng.
   m. Abt 1643 Blanche ----- 
   d. 22 Feb 1666/7

4. Temperance Hull
   b. 20 Mar 1625/6 @ Northleigh, Devon, Eng.
   m. Abt 1649 John Bickford

5. Elizabeth Hull
   b. Abt 1628 @ Northleigh, Devon, Eng.
   m. Abt 1643 Capt. John Heard @ York, ME
   d. 30 Nov 1706 @ Dover, Strafford, NH

6. Griselda Hull
   b. Abt 1630 @ Northleigh, Devon, Eng.

7. Dorothy Hull
   b. Abt 1632 @ England
   m. (1) Oliver Kent 
   m. (2) Capt. Benjamin Matthews

8. Hopewell Hull
   b. Abt 1635 @ Weymouth, Norfolk, MA
   m. Abt 1668 Mary Martin
   d. 3 Apr 1693 @ Piscataway, Middlesex, NJ

9. Benjamin Hull
   b. 22 Mar 1638/9 @ Hingham, Plymouth, MA
   m. Abt 1668 Rachel York
   d. Abt 1713 @ Piscataway, Middlesex, NJ

10. Naomi Hull
    b. 22 Mar 1639/40 @ Barnstable, Barnstable, MA
    m. Aft 1667 David Daniels
    d. Aft 1685

11. Ruth Hull
    b. 9 May 1641 @ Yarmouth, Barnstable, MA

12. Dodavah Hull
    b. Abt 1643 @ York, York, ME
    m. Mary Seward
    d. 1682 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH

13. Samuel Hull
    b. Abt 1645 @ York, York, ME?
    m. 16 Oct 1677 (1) Mary Manning
    m. Bef 1702 (2) Margaret ----- 
    d. Bef 1706 @ Piscataway, Middlesex, NJ

14. Phineas Hull
    b. Abt 1647 @ Launceston, Cornwall, Eng.?
    m. (1) Jerusha Hitchcock
    m. Abt 1689 (2) Mary (Rishworth) Sayward
    d. 25 Jan 1691/2 @ York, York, ME
Our family is descended from Elizabeth Hull, who married into the Heard family, to be described next. First, however, a brief account will be provided about each of the eighteen children of the Rev. Joseph Hull³, and as customary, Elizabeth will be treated last.

**Joanna Hull⁴**, the oldest of the children, was 15 when she sailed to America in 1635. She married John Bursley of Barnstable, Massachusetts "about" 28 November 1639. "Capt. John Bursley" was one of the "Old Planters" who were on this continent even before the Puritans. He most likely arrived here in 1623 with Capt. Robert Gorges. His name is on the oldest tax list on record in this country, that levied against the "plantations" to defray the expenses of the "campaign" against Morton of Merry Mount in 1628. This event, almost lost in history, was rather interesting.

In 1628, a Thomas Morton, who was the head of a settlement called "Merry Mount" was selling firearms, ammunition and rum to the Indians, with predictable negative results. Gov. Bradford of the Plymouth Colony ordered Morton to stop this activity, but Morton would not. Bradford then sent Capt. Miles Standish (yes, the Miles Standish) and a company of militia to arrest Morton. They did so, and Morton was shipped back to England for trial (remember there were no courts in the colonies this early). The expense of this action was 12 pounds and 7 shillings, which was apportioned among the various settlements within the colony.

John Bursley died at Barnstable in 1660, leaving a large estate, as he was one of the wealthy men of this period. His widow, Joanna⁴, "intermarried with Dolor Davis, a man of good repute in the colony, but had no children by him." Davis died in 1673, and she was still alive as late as 1683, living at the old Bursley homestead. Joanna⁴ had at least six children by John Bursley.

**Joseph Hull⁴**, the oldest son of the Rev. Joseph Hull³, was 13 when he came to America with his father. By English primogeniture law, he should have been the one who received the bulk of his father's estate. However, he seems not to have. Gov. Winthrop made an entry in his journal in the "12 Mo. 1644" which showed that "Joseph Hull" was with his father that year at Accomenticus (now York, Maine). However, Joseph⁴ was apparently the son "in disgrace" at York in February 1644/5 and was no longer mentioned in records.

**Tristram Hull⁴** was eleven when he sailed with the family to Massachusetts. In 1643, he was at Yarmouth when he was enrolled and mustered into the militia group maintained by "Captain-General" Miles Standish. The same year, he married a woman named Blanche, last name unknown. By 1648, he had moved to Barnstable. Tristram Hull⁴ became a mariner and owned a ship named The Catch and was part owner of the bark Hopewell. He made long voyages at sea, often to the West Indies.

When in port, Tristram Hull⁴ took considerable interest in town affairs. He frequently served
on juries, took part in purchasing town lands from the Indians, served one year as constable, and was a town selectman for six years. However, Tristram\textsuperscript{4} was sympathetic towards the Quakers, who suffered from cruel persecution from the colonial authorities. As a result of this, he was subjected to heavy fines, which do not seem to have had any effect on his opinion. Perhaps because of his tolerance towards these people, several of his children became Quakers, and some of his descendants became prominent Quaker leaders.

Tristram Hull\textsuperscript{4} died at Barnstable on 22 February 1666/7. In his will, he left a very large estate to his wife and children. The estate included 36 head of cattle, lands, the ships mentioned previously, and £105 in cash. He specified that his widow Blanche could have the use of a new portion of his house and £150. He left each of his three daughters £100. A short time after his death, his widow married a Capt. Hedge, who was reported to be old enough to have been her father, and from whom she soon separated.

Temperance Hull\textsuperscript{4} was 9 when the family sailed to America. She married John Bickford, who lived at Oyster River, New Hampshire. Two of their sons married the daughters of William Furber\textsuperscript{1}.

Griselda Hull\textsuperscript{4} was five when her family came to Massachusetts. Her name is often recorded as Grissel or Grissell in early records, as it was on the passenger list. One genealogy of the Hull family states that she married James Warren of Unity (now South Berwick), Maine. However, there are no records to indicate that he had a wife by that name. James Warren, who was probably a Scottish prisoner shipped to America, had a wife named Margaret, who was called a native of "Ireland". In 1670, his wife Margaret "and other Scots" were admonished by the court for using profane speech. But it is possible that Margaret was the second wife of James Warren, and that Griselda Hull\textsuperscript{4} was his first wife. Supporting this hypothesis is the fact that Warren's youngest child was a daughter with the intriguing name of Grizzel, born 6 August 1662, before the mention of the wife Margaret.

The daughter, Grizzel Warren, suffered an interesting fate and deserves mention here. She married Richard Otis, a blacksmith, as his third wife. On the night of 28 June 1689, his garrison was attacked by Indians, "admitted by treachery", and Otis was murdered. Some of his family shared his fate, but his wife, daughters and at least three grandchildren were taken captive. Three older daughters were retaken at Conway within a few days, but "Grizzel Otis" and the little children were carried to Canada. There, she embraced the Catholic faith, was baptized Marie Madeleine, and married Philippe Robitaille of Montreal on 15 October 1693. She had five more children by him and died in Canada on 26 October 1750.

Dorothy Hull\textsuperscript{4} was only three when her father brought her to New England, and was probably the last of the children by his first wife. She married Oliver Kent of Oyster River, who died about 1670. She then married Capt. Benjamin Matthews of the same town. Dorothy\textsuperscript{4} was last known to be alive in July 1685.

Hopewell Hull\textsuperscript{4} was born at Weymouth, Massachusetts, the first of the children of the Rev. Joseph Hull\textsuperscript{3} to be born in America. He was born about 1635 or 1636, soon after his family arrived at Weymouth. In 1666, he accompanied Robert Martin to New Jersey and joined him and two others in the purchase of a township plot of wilderness located in Middlesex County. They named the town Piscataqua, after the New Hampshire region from which they had migrated. Today the town is
Piscataway, New Jersey, with a population of over 42,000. About 1668, he married Mary Martin, daughter of John and Esther (Roberts) Martin. Esther Roberts was the daughter of Thomas Roberts, who was Governor of the Province of New Hampshire in 1641.

It is probable that Hopewell Hull\textsuperscript{4} had converted to the Quaker faith and was married as such. Probably for that reason, the ceremony did not suit the authorities of the New Jersey colony and, on 29 December 1669, an order was issued directing that Hopewell\textsuperscript{4} and Mary remarry. They promptly complied with the order. Hopewell Hull\textsuperscript{4} represented the town of Piscataqua in the General Assembly of New Jersey, and took an active part in public affairs. His name is frequently listed in the purchase and sale of land. His will was dated 26 March 1693 and it appears that he died soon after. His youngest son, Benjamin, was born 19 July 1693, "several months" after his father's death. His widow Mary remarried on 9 April 1696 to Justinian Hall.

**Benjamin Hull**\textsuperscript{4} was baptized at Hingham, Massachusetts on 22 March 1639. In 1659, he was granted 100 acres of land "beginning at a marked tree in the town bounds by the Indian graves that are there" on the southwest side of Lamphrey Falls near Oyster River. During the Indian problems, Benjamin Hull\textsuperscript{4} became a member of "Capt. Robert Mason's troop of horse" and subsequently was commissioned a Captain. He moved to Dover, New Hampshire about 1668-1669. Capt. Benjamin Hull\textsuperscript{4} married, about 1668, Rachel York, the daughter of Richard York of Dover.

On 22 March 1678, he sold his land to John Rand and moved to Piscataqua, New Jersey, where he had signed the agreement on 11 May 1668 and previously purchased 498 acres of land. In 1678, he was licensed to keep a tavern [an inn or hotel] in New Piscataqua (today, Piscataway, New Jersey). It is said that his descendants stayed in the hotel business, which carried the Hull name, for nearly two hundred years. Five of his eleven children were born in New Jersey and all married there.

**Naomi Hull**\textsuperscript{4} appears to have been the black sheep of the family. She was baptized 23 March 1639/40 at Barnstable, Massachusetts but was left behind at about age 5 when her parents sailed back to England about 1645. Naomi\textsuperscript{4} was possibly left with the family of Samuel Symonds of Ipswich, Massachusetts, where she later worked as a servant. Years later, John Bickford and John Simmins (Symonds) stated in a deposition that "about four and twenty years agoe or there about naomy hulls father and mother they went for England and left theyer Children to the wid wilderness; and Left them very young and wear not tutred [tutored] as they ought to have been."

Naomi Hull\textsuperscript{4} was called before the court in 1667 for a misdemeanor, although she was misidentified as Amy Hull. By this time, she had given birth to a child out of wedlock and was an embarrassment to the town. Historian Mary P. Thompson said "the pathetic story of Naomi Hull and her child is akin to that of Hawthorne's 'Scarlet Letter'". Naomi\textsuperscript{4} later lived, without the benefit of marriage, with William Williams, who had previously been a neighbor of the Rev. Joseph Hull\textsuperscript{3} when the family lived at Oyster River a few years before. Thompson states that Naomi\textsuperscript{4} may "have taken refuge with one of her father's old flock" with "the hope of concealing her misfortune". On 17 July 1668, it was ordered in the Dover town meeting that the "Constable take of William Williams sinyer [Senior] by way of distress the som of nineteen shillings for a fine for a breach of a Town order for entertaining Naomie Hull."

It was possibly the "entertaining" of Naomi Hull\textsuperscript{4} that led to her having a child out of wedlock.
in the first place. Dover town records show that John Church of Dover was granted 60 acres of land on 3 October 1667, with the promise to make it 70 acres if he would take "Neamys child and keep her till she be twenty years old". John Church was captured by Indians on 28 June 1689 during the "Dover massacre", but managed to escape. However, on 7 May 1696 he was killed and scalped by Indians. The fate of the out-of-wedlock child of Naomi Hull remains unknown.

Naomi Hull later married Davy Daniel (or Daniels), who was apparently Scottish. This, however, did not keep her out of trouble. On 4 July 1642, the constable of Oyster River was ordered to "apprehend the body of Naomi Daniel of Oyster River and to bring her before ye Counsel now sitting in Portsmouth to answer for her reproachful & slanderous speeches against Benjamin Mathews & others." Joseph Grafton, a witness in the case, testified that "he being at the house of Naomi Daniel 29 of May 1682 or there abouts I to her did say that I heard that she had lost a cow. Yea, she said, the Wishes and Divells have bewished my cow ..." Asked by the witness who the witches and devils were, she replied that it was her sister and brother-in-law Benjamin Mathews. When asked why she spoke so against her sister and brother-in-law, she told the witness that they could "hang them wishes & wizards".

Another witness, Remembrance Rand, testified that she was in "the company of Naomi Daniel" when she heard her say that "hir sister Mathews was a wizard [and] that hir husband was noe better". Naomi was further accused of having stated that Matthews had told her that it was them that "did bewich your child". It is not known what was the outcome of this case. Naomi (Hull) Daniel was still alive in 1685 when she was a widow.

Ruth Hull was born and baptized on the same day, 9 May 1642. Nothing more is known of her.

Dodavah Hull, whose name comes from the Bible (Chronicles 2, 20:37) probably grew up in Ipswich near his sister Naomi. He received a grant of 15 acres of land "on y e new mill creek" in York, Maine on 12 September 1667. Dodavah married Mary Seward of Portsmouth, the daughter of Richard Seward, and lived there most of his life. On 5 June 1682, the administration of the estate of Dodavah Hull was granted to his widow Mary. She married, second, Dr. Samuel Blagdon, a Portsmouth surgeon, before 1688. Dodavah Hull had only one daughter, Mary.

Samuel Hull also went to Piscataway, New Jersey where he owned property adjacent to John Martin by 1682. On 16 October 1677, he married Mary Manning, the daughter of Jeffery and Hephshibah (Andrews) Manning. Sometime before 1702, Samuel married again to a widow with the name of Margaret. He had six children by his first wife and two by the second. He was dead by 1706.

Phineas Hull was born about 1647, probably in England following the return of his parents to that country. At age 23, he was working as a carpenter in Berwick, Maine. He received a grant of land at Kittery but sold it in June 1679. He then moved to Saco (now Winter Harbor), Maine where he stayed for at least six years, and where he was granted 60 acres of land on the east side of Little River "near his mill". He served as the town constable for a year. In 1684, he was fined for using "saucy and abusive language" to one Mr. Milburn, the town minister. He eventually retired back to York.

Phineas married, between 1673 and 1679, Jerusha Hitchcock who apparently died soon after
giving birth to their one child, a daughter named Dorcas. He married second, after 1689, Mary (Rishworth) (White) Sayward, the daughter of Edward Rishworth and the widow of John Sayward. On 22 August 1690, Mary was taken by the Indians, while Phineas⁴ was able to escape. After a peace treaty was signed with the Indians at Sagadahoc, the Indians released her because she had written their letters in the negotiations. Phineas⁵ was not listed again in the records, indicating that he may have died in the York massacre. Mary took, as her fourth husband, James Plaisted.

Reuben Hull⁴ was baptized 23 January 1648/9 at Launceston, England, but undoubtedly returned to New England with his parents in 1662. He moved to Portsmouth, New Hampshire by 1672, where he was a mariner and merchant, and was known as "Capt. Reuben Hull". About 1672, he married Hannah Ferniside, the daughter of John and Elizabeth (Starr) Ferniside. Reuben's father-in-law, John Ferniside, was a Boston accountant who drowned in a millpond on 13 November 1693.

Reuben⁴ was associated with John Cutt, who was the President of the New Hampshire Provincial Council. In one document, Reuben Hull⁴ was referred to as "Reuben, Mr. John Cutt's man". He was also distantly related to Cutt, since Cutt had married the sister of Reuben's mother-in-law. On 24 December 1674, John Cutt deeded to "kinsman Reuben Hull and Hannah his wife" land in Portsmouth on which he had already dug a well, as well as a wharf and "privilege" on the river. When John Cutt died 27 March 1681, Reuben Hall⁴ was named as one of the overseers of his will and was made guardian of Cutt's oldest son, who was a minor.

The witnesses of the will of Reuben Hull⁴ swore that they heard him declare what was written as his will, but that he died before he had a chance to sign it. His will shows a picture of a man who had obtained considerable wealth. He left his house, land, wharf and warehouse to his oldest son. He also directed that his island, house, stages, boats and "concernes" at the Isles of Shoals be sold. Among the other items mentioned in his will are a brewhouse, half ownership in the ketch Adventure, one "gundelowe", several canoes, one Negro man, one Negro "old woman", a quantity of silver, and a servant named William Gubbo "of Jersey".

After Reuben Hull⁴ died, his widow Hannah married George Snell. Snell died in 1708, and his will refers to an obligation he gave his wife on marriage which provided for each of her children to receive £100 upon his death.

Almost nothing is known of the last three children of the Rev. Joseph Hull³. Along with Reuben⁴, Ephraim Hull⁴, Isaac Hull⁴ and Priscilla Hull⁴ were born in England and were baptized at the St. Burien Parish in Launceston, where their father was rector. In the parish register for Launceston, Priscilla's baptism is recorded as having occurred on "32 March 1652", an impossible date. Nothing else is known of Ephraim⁴, and it is possible that he died young. The other two children, Isaac⁴ and Priscilla⁴, definitely did, for their burials are both recorded in the St. Burien registers on the same day, 9 June 1652. It is likely that a disease sweeping through the area claimed the lives of both these small children.

That leaves only the fifth child of the Rev. Joseph Hull³, Elizabeth Hull⁴, who was our direct ancestor. Elizabeth⁴ was born in the little hamlet of Northleigh, England and was seven years old when she sailed to New England with her family in 1635. About 1643, when she was still a teenager, she married John Heard. There is much more to be told about Elizabeth⁴, after introducing the Heard family.
THE HEARD FAMILY

John Heard was a master carpenter, and despite what has been erroneously written by others, was neither a Captain nor a mariner of any kind. There were two people with the same name who lived in Maine early, and the two have been hopelessly confused in numerous accounts. Easily half of what you read about our John Heard is incorrect. It is not known from where in England John Heard originated; nor do we know anything of his ancestry or his date of birth.

John married Elizabeth Hull about 1643, probably at York, Maine, where they both lived at the time. The first record of John Heard appears in 1647, when he was fined by the court for calling Edward Godfrey a knave. Godfrey was one of the earliest settlers in York and a prominent man who, two years later, would serve as Governor to the Province of Maine. John might have been accurate in calling Godfrey a knave, by which he meant that we was unprincipled. Godfrey was a controversial individual, who eventually returned to England and died in debtors' prison. In June 1648, John Heard sold his house at York to another carpenter named John Parker.

On 30 June 1647, John Heard was also fined for criticizing Capt. Francis Champernowne, who owned an island off the cost of Maine by the same name. It is nearly certain that these two incidents were related, but the circumstances involved are not clear. John Heard had been living on Champernowne Island as early as 1650, and possibly much earlier. Historians Noyes, Libby and Davis state that "neither Capt. Champernowne nor perhaps any other lived on the Island before John Heard." As a carpenter, Heard had built a house on the island, and it was over this house that he got into more trouble.

In October 1650, Heard was sued by an attorney (apparently acting on behalf of Champernowne) for burning a house on Champernowne Island. The judgment was that John Heard had to rebuild the house that he had burned with one "as good and as large". On 20 November 1653, John (listed as an unnamed creditor) sued Champernowne for payment of a dozen debts and a "new house", appraised at £15. The debts were to be offset "by 3 years rent of ½ of the island". It appears that John Heard had lived on the island for some time, perhaps to build one or more houses for the affluent Capt. Champernowne. When he got into a disagreement with his landlord over some matter (it has been suggested because of non-payment), John burnt one of the houses that he had built.

By 1654, John Heard settled at Dover, New Hampshire. On 18 March 1648, he received a grant of six acres at Cochecho Marsh, described as "Lot No. 8". In 1652, he received a grant of 50 acres of upland "under the Great Hill at Cochecho". Cochecho was name of an early settlement on the river of the same name, where today stands the town of Dover, New Hampshire. The settlement of "Dover", so often mentioned to this point, was actually located about five miles south of the present-day town of Dover, on the neck of land known as Dover Neck. It was at Cochecho that John Heard built a home where he would live the rest of his life. He died there on 17 January 1688/9 "after a short sickness" according to Pike's journal.

It is impossible to account for the inhabitants of early Cochecho without telling about the Indian problems these people endured. The story is especially important because of the near legend involving Elizabeth (Hull) Heard, the widow of John Heard.

By 1675, the residents of Dover were able to defend themselves with comparative ease. There
was quite a large number of colonists living in this area and since they resided on a narrow neck of
land, they could watch the water in all directions and be forewarned of an impending attack. But
at Cochecho, about five miles to the north, the situation was quite different. About 40 families lived
in what, at the time, was a frontier settlement, most near the first (or lower) falls on the Cochecho
River. From Cochecho north, the forests stretched clear to Canada, alive with Indians who were
intimately familiar with every path.

It was not that long after the first landing of the white man in New Hampshire that the
relationship between them and the Indians began to deteriorate. But until 1675, there had been no
wholesale outbreak of hostilities. Historian Quint described the feelings of the Indians: "The
cordiality which had welcomed the settlers ended long previous; increasing encroachment on Indian
hunting grounds to supply an increasing population excited their alarm; the contempt openly
expressed for the Indians grated harshly upon their sensitive feelings; the over-reaching habits of
traders who acted upon the principle that it was a praise-worthy deed to cheat an Indian, exasperated
their sense of justice." About 1675, the problems with the Indians increased to the point that several
of the settlers at Cochecho built stockades or garrisons around their homes. One of the men who did
this was John Heard.

The first bloodshed occurred at Oyster River in September 1675, when Indians burned two
houses of two families named Chesley and killed two men in a canoe. They also captured two
hostages, who were later able to escape. A man named Goodman Robinson was killed along the
road between Exeter and Hampton, and a Charles Ranlet was captured, but was also able to escape.
Soon afterward, five or six more houses at Oyster River were burned and two more people killed.
The settlers were nearly helpless to retaliate since the Indian parties always disappeared into the
forest. The whole area became aroused and the construction of garrison walls around existing
houses began.

On 16 October 1675, Salmon Falls was attacked, and Roger Plaisted and his son died, as
previously described. The Indians continued their random attacks all through the Piscataqua River
area, reaching clear to Portsmouth. There, they were finally dispersed by the firing of a cannon and
forced to retreat upstream. The assaults continued but it was more the severity of the coming winter
rather than an armed reprisal from the colonists that ended the conflict.

The Massachusetts government, by then in control of Maine and New Hampshire, had appointed
Richard Waldron (often Walderne) a major in the local militia, and gave him the responsibility of
protecting the New Hampshire colonists. Since the severe winter had caused considerable famine
among the Indians, they made a request to Major Waldron for his mediation in the hostilities. A
peace accord was finally reached at Cochecho on 3 July 1676. But the peace would be short lived.

Meanwhile, Massachusetts had its own problems with the "southern" Indians, and many of them
had fled north to the Piscataqua region to escape the hostilities further south. Massachusetts ordered
two militia companies under the command of Capt. Joseph Syll and Capt. William Hathorne to
pursue these Indians. They arrived at Cochecho on 6 September 1676, near where 400 Indians were
camped, half of whom were refugees from Massachusetts. All of them were on terms of peace with
Major Waldron. But the Massachusetts government had ordered the seizure of all southern Indians
wherever they may might be found. On these orders, Syll and Hathorne told Major Waldron that
they must seize these Indians by force.
Fearing the bloodshed that would result from such an attempt, Major Waldron suggested another idea. They proposed to the Indians what came to be known as the "sham fight". The proposal was that the next day the Indians and the militia have a bloodless encounter to see who would win. Always the proud people, the Indians agreed. But, predictably, in the midst of their "fight", the two militia companies surrounded and disarmed the Indians and made them prisoners before the Indians were aware of the deception. The local Indians were released, but the southern Indians were returned to Boston where five or six were hanged for past offenses. The remainder were sold into slavery to other rival Indian tribes.

During the "sham fight", one of the younger braves was able to move unnoticed to the Heard house, where Elizabeth (Hull) Heard hid the Indian. Afterward, he was able to escape. This act of kindness would not be forgotten and would be repaid some years later.

Historians have debated the devious actions of Major Waldron for decades. It has been stated, probably with some validity, that "he was opposed to the affair, both on the ground of policy and of honor; but the orders of his government were imperative, and he would not set the example of insubordination; he well knew that he was exposing himself to the hatred of a people who never forgave an injury, but he never feared an enemy." However, he should have feared the Indians, for they eventually got even.

The Indians, angry over the treachery of the white man, took up their hostilities once again. But in the spring of 1678, another peace accord was reached, and peace again returned to the area. Among other concessions made to the Indians, it was agreed that one peck of corn would be paid for each family as an acknowledgment to the Indians of their possession of the lands.

The peace lasted for thirteen years, and the past practices of trade between the settlers and the Indians resumed. Whites and Indians mingled freely throughout the area. Despite the cessation of hostilities, the settlers remained vigilant and the garrison houses remained, where neighboring families gathered each night. By this time, there were seven garrisons at Cochecho, one each for the families of Major Waldron, Heard, Otis, Paine, Gerrish and two for Coffin, father and son.

In June 1689, the people of Cochecho began to notice increasing numbers of Indians in the area, including unfamiliar faces. They appealed to Major Waldron, but he could not be convinced of the danger. "Go plant your pumpkins," he said to them, "I will tell you when the Indians will break out." Despite the confidence of Waldron in the continued peace, the Indians had not forgotten his actions eleven years prior.

On the evening of 27 June 1689, according to a carefully prepared plan, two squaws applied at each of the garrisons for the right to sleep there that night. Such circumstances were not that unusual in times of peace, and each pair of Indian women were admitted at the garrisons of Waldron, Heard, Otis and the elder Coffin. In each case, the squaws even requested to be shown how to open the garrison gates in case they might want to leave during the night. Incredibly, in each case, the request was granted. No watch was kept and each of the families retired for the night.

Late in the night, each of the pairs of squaws opened the gates to admit those who had waited eleven years for their revenge. At Waldron's garrison, the Major was awakened by the noise and despite being 80 years old, sprang from his bed, grabbed a sword and drove the advancing Indians
back through two or three rooms of his house. He returned for other arms and the Indians attacked him from behind and stunned him with a hatchet. They restrained Waldron in a chair and forced members of his family to prepare them supper.

When they had finished eating, each of the Indians took a turn in slashing Waldron across the chest with a knife, each stroke accompanied with the statement "I cross out my account." They then cut off his nose and ears, stuffing them into his mouth. Still alive, Waldron was made to stand. The Indians positioned his sword beneath him and Waldron, growing very weak from the loss of blood, fell upon it and his suffering was ended. The rest of his family was removed from the house and it was burned.

Otis’ garrison was taken in similar fashion. Richard Otis, mentioned earlier, was killed as was his son Stephen. A two year old child, Hannah, died when her head was dashed against the stairs. The wife of Richard Otis and three children were taken captive and carried to Canada. Three daughters of Richard Otis were also taken away as captives but were recaptured at Conway as mentioned previously.

The elder Coffin's garrison was similarly captured, but the Indians had no particular enmity towards him and they were content to simply plunder his house. Finding a bag of money in his house, the Indians amused themselves by forcing Coffin to scatter the money by the handful while they scrambled for it. The Indians then escorted Coffin to the nearby garrison of his son, where squaws had not been admitted for the night. They threatened to kill his father before his eyes if he did not open his garrison and surrender, which he did. The pair was placed in an empty dwelling within the garrison, but in the confusion were able to escape. Gerrish's garrison escaped attack while contemporary accounts fail to tell us the fate of Paine's garrison.

John Heard had died the previous January and his widow, the former Elizabeth Hull4, was not at home.ots. As coincidence would have it, she had gone to Portsmouth for the night. However, as was customary, neighboring families were asleep within the stockade that night. William Wentworth, who was one of those asleep inside the Heard garrison, was awakened by the barking of a dog and went to investigate. The squaws had opened the gate of the garrison but Wentworth, arriving at just the right moment, was able to get the gate closed again before any Indians could enter. Falling on his back, Wentworth held the gate closed against their advances until others could come to his aid. Two bullets fired through the gate door by the Indians luckily missed Wentworth. There was a considerable skirmish but the stockade walls held and the Heard garrison was saved.

Elizabeth Heard left Portsmouth early the next morning, transported home by boat in the company of two sons, a daughter and her son-in-law, John Ham. As they neared the settlement of Cochecho, they heard the commotion of the Indians shouting and shooting as they looted and burned the houses there. They quietly rowed past the town unnoticed by the Indians and set ashore near the Waldron garrison, seeking the safety of its walls. Reaching the garrison, they saw lights coming from several of the windows and thought that the settlers had lit lamps to assist others in finding their way to the garrison in the dark.

After pounding and shouting at the gate for entrance, and receiving no response, they became suspicious. One of the men scaled the wall enough to get a look inside and saw one of the Indians. The group fled, but Mrs. Heard, faint with despair, could not continue. The rest of them could not
carry her and she pleaded with them to leave her and save themselves, which they reluctantly did. Recovering slightly, Elizabeth was able to hide in some bushes "thirty rods" from the garrison. But it was not long before an Indian emerged from the garrison and found her.

He approached Mrs. Heard with a pistol in his hand and stared at her, and she at him. He stepped away and then approached a second time, again staring at her. She spoke to him, asking him what he was going to do, whereupon the Indian went away. She remained in the bushes, praying, as the Indians continued to plunder the garrison and soon burned it. After the Indians left, Mrs. Heard was able to make her way to the Gerrish garrison, where she was taken in to safety. Only afterwards did she realize that the Indian who had approached her while she was in the bushes must have been the same man who she had hidden following the "sham fight" eleven years before. As historian Quint wrote in 1853, "the memory of a kindness an Indian seldom forgets."

In addition to the attacks on the garrisons, five or six other houses were burnt. In all, 23 settlers were killed and 29 more carried away by the Indians. Soon reinforcements poured into the area, but by this time, the Indians had vanished. Some pursuit of the enemy was attempted, but only the recovery of the three daughters of Richard Otis was successful. Eventually peace once again returned to the Piscataqua region, but it was several years before the Cochecho settlement returned to its previous prosperity.

The widow, Elizabeth Heard, lived eight more years. Despite being urged to seek safety in the more densely populated town of Portsmouth following the Indian massacres, she declined. Instead, she continued to live in her garrison home. She died there 30 November 1706. The Rev. Pike, in his journal, wrote "old widow Heard (commonly called Dame Heard) deceased after a short illness with fever. She was a grave and pious woman, even the mother of virtue and piety."

As mentioned previously, John Heard died on 17 January 1688/9, just five months before the Indian attack. He left a will dividing his land among his many children and leaving half of his "plantation" to his "beloved wiff Elizabeth". He also left one cow to an apprentice named John Waldron "iff hee doe faithfully serve his time according to his Indenture". There is a story that this person was supposedly kidnapped from the streets of England and brought to America, where he was apprenticed to John Heard. It is doubtful that there is any credence to this legend, since the Waldron family were neighbors and a family of some prominence.

Twelve years after John Heard died, there was also a fight over his will that went on for at least four years. His son Tristram, "being the only son living," apparently wanted more of the action. He stated that he believed that his father had died intestate. The Lieutenant Governor replied that there was, in fact, a will but that it had never been legally proved because all of the witnesses had been "suddenly cutt off by the Indians". Tristram requested to be appointed the administrator of the will, but the administration was not granted. This decision was apparently the result of the testimony of Sarah Fost, the remarried widow of one of Tristram's brothers, who stated that the estate of John Heard had been properly divided according to his will.

John and Elizabeth (Hull) Heard had a large family, due in part because she married at such a young age. An account written by the famous Cotton Mather probably soon after the Indian massacres, while Elizabeth "is yet Living", described her as "a Widow of good Estate, a Mother of many Children ...". In a time when having 10-12 children was the norm, that would seem to imply
that Elizabeth had more than a dozen offspring. Most accounts identify the twelve children given in the *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire*, but there may have been as many as fifteen, as identified in the Otis family genealogy published in 1851. In addition to the thirteen listed here, there may have been a daughter Experience and a son James (order only approximate):

1. Benjamin Heard  
   - b. 20 Feb 1643/4 @ Maine  
   - m. Bef 1673 (1st) Elizabeth Roberts  
   - m. 23 May 1690 (2nd) Ruth Eastman  
   - d. 22 Jan 1709/10 @ Salisbury, Essex, MA

2. William Heard  
   - b. Abt 1645 @ Maine  
   - d. 1 Nov 1675

3. Katherine Heard  
   - b. Abt 1647 @ Maine  
   - d. died young

4. Mary Heard  
   - b. 26 Jan 1649/50 @ Maine  
   - m. 6 May 1668 John Ham  
   - d. 7 Dec 1706

5. Abigail Heard  
   - b. 2 Aug 1651 @ Maine or NH  
   - m. Jenkin Jones

+ 6. Elizabeth Heard  
   - b. 15 Sep 1653 @ Maine or NH  
   - m. (1st) James Nute  
   - m. 13 Aug 1694 (2nd) William Furber  
   - d. 9 Nov 1705

7. Hannah Heard  
   - b. 25 Nov 1655 @ Dover, Strafford, NH  
   - m. 6 Nov 1674 John Nason

8. John Heard  
   - b. 24 Feb 1658/9 @ Dover, Strafford, NH  
   - m. Elsie Allen

9. Joseph Heard  
   - b. 4 Jan 1660/1 @ Dover, Strafford, NH

10. Samuel Heard  
    - b. 4 Aug 1663 @ Dover, Strafford, NH  
    - m. Abt 1686 Experience Otis  
    - d. 10 Feb 1696/7 @ Dover, Strafford, NH

11. Tristram Heard  
    - b. 4 Mar 1666/7 @ Dover, Strafford, NH  
    - m. Abigail ------  
    - d. 1734 @ NH

12. Nathaniel Heard  
    - b. 22 Sep 1668 @ Dover, Strafford, NH  
    - m. Sarah Ferniside  
    - d. 3 Apr 1700 @ Dover, Strafford, NH

13. Dorcas Heard  
    - b. @ Dover, Strafford, NH  
    - m. 2 Mar 1692 Jabez Garland

**Benjamin Heard** was born 20 February 1643/4 in Maine, possibly at York. He was a cordwainer [shoemaker] and lived at Dover until at least 1696, on the 40-acre parcel of land left to him in his father's will. There, in the year 1690, he built a house which was sold by his grandson in 1767 to a James Guppy. The house became known as the *Guppy House* and still stands today in Dover, New Hampshire, one of the oldest houses in the entire area.

Benjamin first married Elizabeth Roberts, the daughter of Thomas Roberts, who had been President of the New Hampshire Provincial Council for a year. After Elizabeth died, Benjamin Heard married Ruth Eastman of Salisbury, Massachusetts on 23 May 1690. She was the daughter of Roger Eastman, the progenitor ancestor of that name in America (he arrived in America in 1638 aboard the *Confidence*). Benjamin Heard had twelve children by his first wife. He moved to Salisbury, Massachusetts and died there 22 January 1709/10.
William Heard, not listed by all genealogists, was born about 1645. He died 1 November 1675, leaving a widow but no children. It is possible that he died in the first outbreak of Indian violence that year, but like many, his name is not listed. Katherine Heard (or Catherine) was born about 1647 but died young. Like William, she is not listed by all genealogists.

Mary Heard was born 26 January 1649/50 and married John Ham on 6 May 1668. John Ham may have been the son of William Ham, also one of our direct ancestors. John Ham lived first at "Tolend" near the second falls on the Cochecho River and later on Garrison Hill, near where the Heard garrison was located. He was a surveyor and a town clerk, until leaving that position in March 1693/4. John was one of the people who returned from Portsmouth with his mother-in-law during the 27 June 1689 Indian massacre. Mary Heard died 7 December 1706.

Abigail Heard was born 2 August 1651 and married Jenkin Jones, by whom she had at least three children. Hannah Heard was born 25 November 1655, possibly the first Heard child to be born at Cochecho, New Hampshire. She married John Nason on 6 November 1674. Hannah probably died relatively young, for we know of only child for her.

John Heard (Jr.) was born 24 February 1658/9 but is not mentioned in his father's 1687 will. It is possible, of course, that he had died before that date. But the younger John Heard went to Piscataway, New Jersey, where he married Elsie Allen. Nothing else is known of him. Joseph Heard was born 4 January 1660/1 at Dover (Cochecho). Nothing else is known of him and it is likely that he died young.

Samuel Heard was born at Cochecho on 4 August 1663. About 1686, he married Experience Otis, the daughter of Richard and Rose (Stoughton) Otis. Richard Otis was the one killed in his garrison during the 27 June 1689 massacre. Samuel and Experience survived the massacre, but neither would live long lives. On 26 July 1696, Experience was returning from "public worship" with two others when they were attacked by Indians. Experience was scalped but recovered. Less than seven months later, on 10 February 1696/7, Samuel Heard died of "malignant fever". His widow married second to Rowland Jenkins and lived long enough to have one child by him. But she died 8 February 1698/9 "chiefly of her wounds bleeding".

Tristram Heard was born at Cochecho on 4 March 1666/7 and married someone named Abigail about 1690. She supposedly was in the Heard garrison the night of the 1689 massacre, so she probably lived close by. Known as "Lieut. Tristram Heard", he probably was active in the militia and is said to have inherited the family garrison. Tristram Heard had a couple of scrapes with the Indians. On 28 May 1704, four Indians laid in ambush between the houses of Tristram Heard and a neighbor on the north side of Garrison Hill. Luckily, they were spotted and everyone escaped unharmed. On a Sunday in 1711, when people were returning from worship, a group of settlers were again ambushed by Indians. One man was wounded and a man named Humphrey Foss was taken captive, "but by the determined bravery of Tristram Heard, Foss was recovered out of the hands of the enemy". Despite these close encounters, Tristram Heard lived until 1734 and died of natural causes.

Nathaniel Heard was born 20 September 1668. He was named the executor of his father's will, but died before the probate was completed. He married Sarah Ferniside. Nathaniel died 3 April
1700 and was buried in the graveyard of St. John's church in Dover, New Hampshire. His tombstone still stands and is the oldest marked grave in Dover. His widow married second William Fost on 26 March 1703.

**Dorcas Heard**, probably born after 1670, married Jabez Garland of Dover on 2 March 1692. Jabez was the son of George Garland, who had a most interesting past and considerable marital difficulties. George had to make a court appearance on 2 July 1662 for frequenting the house of one Sarah Mills while suspected of having a wife in England. In November 1665, both were back in court, indicted for living together, as well as again in September 1668, when they were ordered to marry within a month. What is odd is that both were Quakers, although George was often absent from meeting. The marriage between the two apparently occurred since Sarah Garland, "a known vagabond Quaker coming from Black Point", was ordered by the courts to be "whipped from town to town, Boston to Scarborough" in August 1668.

A few years later, George Garland announced his intention to marry the widow Lucretia Hitchcock, but the marriage was forbidden by the courts on 10 September 1672 since he was still married to Sarah at the time. So he just lived with Lucretia. Despite several court proceedings and being flogged, George Garland continued to live with Lucretia until her death. Jabez Garland was her child. Jabez, who did not appear to take up his father's philandering ways, was shot dead by Indians in the summer of 1710, while he was returning from worship.

**Elizabeth Heard**, probably the sixth child of John and Elizabeth (Hull) Heard, was born 15 September 1653. By 1675, she had married James Nute Jr., whose family we introduce next.

**THE NUTE FAMILY**

The family name *Nute* is also written *Newte, Newt, Newtte* and *Newtt* in early colonial records. James Nute, the first ancestor with that name to come to this country, wrote his name *Newte*. This spelling corresponds with the English surname of a family of some distinction that lived in Tiverton, England during the reign of Queen Elizabeth I. The members of this English family were zealous loyalists during the civil wars in that country. Many of them also were clergymen within the Church of England well into the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries. In America, the form of the name changed until by the third generation, it was universally written *Nute* and that will be the spelling used here.

**James Nute** was among a group of men and women who came to New England in the early 1630s, possibly as early as 1631, the same group which also included Henry Langstaff, mentioned in a previous chapter. The group were "planters" sent over to settle the Laconia patent that had been granted to Capt. John Mason, one of the founders of New Hampshire. James Nute was born in England and it is likely that he was from the Tiverton family. We do not know his age as it never appears in early colonial records. This group settled near the mouth of the Piscataqua River.

James Nute was married to someone named Sarah, but we do not know her last name. We also do not know whether she came with him from England or whether he married her here. James Nute was one of the signers of the Dover Combination in 1640. He was in Dover early and was granted land and taxed there. Like many of the early settlers at Dover, he lived on Dover Neck on what became known as Low Street, west or northwest of the Meeting House. He bought a 20-acre parcel
on the Back River and on 18 March 1648, James Nute received a grant of six acres of land at Cochecho Marsh. In 1656, James was granted a 40-acre parcel on the west side of the Back River next to the 20 acres he already owned.

In 1652, William Storer appeared in court for calling the wife of James Nute "a base jade". Both terms are now rather obsolete, but base means unrefined, of low morals, mean-spirited, even of illegitimate birth, while a jade is a worthless, vicious or disreputable woman. Therefore, we are probably safe in assuming that Mr. Storer was not a fan of Sarah Nute for some reason. For his own part, James Nute was among those fined for being absent from worship services and for attending Quaker worship, and perhaps even worse, for entertaining Quakers. There is nothing, however, to indicate that James Nute was himself a Quaker.

On 15 February 1671, in consideration of "natural love and affection," he gave his son James "three score acres of land" on the west side of the Back River, the same 60 acres previously mentioned. At the same time James Nute gave his son Abraham twelve acres on Dover Neck, both deeds to take effect after the deaths of he and Sarah. The Back River Farm was still in the possession of the Nute family well into the twentieth century. His gravestone in the family graveyard was inscribed "Mr. J Nute ae 78". The known children of James1 and Sarah Nute were (all born at Dover):

1. Sarah Nute2 m. James Bunker
   + 2. James Nute2 b. Abt 1643 @ Dover, Strafford, NH m. Bef 1675 Elizabeth Heard d. Abt 1691 @ Dover, Strafford, NH
3. Abraham Nute2 b. Abt 1644 @ Dover, Strafford, NH m. 2 Sep 1704 (1st) ? m. 2 Sep 1704 (2nd) Joanna Stanton
4. Martha Nute2 m. William Dam d. 15 May 1718 @ Dover, Strafford, NH
5. Leah Nute2 m. (1st) John Knight m. (2nd) Benedictus Tarr

Sarah Nute2 married James Bunker, who was in Dover by at least 1647. He had a garrison around his house, which was attacked by Indians in 1694. The garrison successfully withstood the attack. He died about 1697 or 1698, his will naming four children.

Abraham Nute2 married Joanna Stanton on 2 September 1704. She was probably his second wife since he was about 60 at the time, but no record of a first wife or any children by her has been found. He had at least one child, Abraham3, by Joanna, so she must have been somewhat younger than him.

Martha Nute2 married William Dam, the son of the Deacon John Dam. Both William Dam and Martha2 (Nute) Dam died in 1718, he on 20 March and she on 15 May. Both were buried on the Nute Farm west of the Back River. Martha2 had six children by her husband.

Leah Nute2 married twice. Her first husband, John Knight, left a nuncupative will [one spoken to witnesses, not written] on 11 November 1694. In that will, he left £5 to each of three apprentices, "cousin" Leah Nute, and the Quaker Church. The remainder of the estate, involving 60 acres of land and two houses, went to his wife Leah and his sister Joan Knight. John and Leah3 had no children,
so Leah became fairly wealthy as the result of her husband dying. Leah married second to Benedictus Tarr on 17 July 1704. He was "late of Old England", so he had not been in America long. Tarr rebuilt the garrison of James Nute, indicating that he lived on his wife's homestead. Both Leah and Benedictus were alive in 1732. They never had any children either, which probably indicates that Leah was unable to bear children. Tarr left his estate to a nephew from England.

James Nute is our direct ancestor. He was born about 1643 in Dover and married, by about 1675, Elizabeth Heard, the daughter of John and Elizabeth (Hull) Heard. James and Elizabeth lived at Dover, on the 60-acre parcel of land on the west side of the Back River deeded to him by his father. Little else is known about him. He died in 1691, before reaching the age of 50, when his widow Elizabeth filed an inventory of his estate on 24 October of that year. Since James Nute died without leaving a will, it is possible that he died suddenly from an accident or quick illness.

Elizabeth, the widow of James Nute, was about 38 when her husband died. She remarried on 13 August 1694 to William Furber, mentioned previously. She died 9 November 1705. James and Elizabeth (Heard) Nute had four known children, all born at Dover, New Hampshire (order estimated):

1. Sarah Nute
   b. Abt 1676/7 @ Dover, Strafford, NH
   m. William Furber
   d. 28 Apr 1762 @ Dover, Strafford, NH

2. Leah Nute
   b. @ Dover, Strafford, NH
   m. (1st) Jethro Furber
   m. 16 May 1716 (2nd) Hatevil Nutter

3. James Nute
   b. 27 Jul 1687 @ Dover, Strafford, NH
   m. Prudence ------
   d. Abt 1759

4. Samuel Nute
   b. Abt 1690 @ Dover, Strafford, NH
   m. 18 Mar 1718/9 Elizabeth Pinkham
   d. Abt 1765

Leah Nute married Jethro Furber, the son of her step-father. Jethro Furber was a mariner and died in either late 1715 or early 1716. Leah remarried on 16 May 1716, only 2½ months after administering Jethro's estate, to Hatevil Nutter, the son of Anthony Nutter. Both of her husbands have been mentioned in previous chapters. Leah (Nute) (Furber) Nutter was still alive in 1748. She had six children by each of her husbands.

James Nute, according to his own record, was born 27 July 1687. He was listed as being 13 in 1699, when he chose John Leighton to be his guardian. He lived on the homestead of his father, the court having decreed that he should have "two thirds of all the house and lands and one cow, two steers of three-year old, when he comes of age." James married someone named Prudence and had at least four children, who were mentioned in his will. He died in 1759, his will having been proved on 31 October of that year.

Samuel Nute was born about 1690 and, therefore, was probably the youngest of the children. He was listed as being 18 in 1707/8 when he selected Jethro Furber to be his guardian. He married Elizabeth Pinkham on 18 March 1718/9, who was the daughter of John and Rose (Otis) Pinkham. Samuel died about 1765. His will was admitted to probate on 26 June of that year. Samuel Nute had five children listed, one of whom served in the Revolutionary War.
Sarah Nute\textsuperscript{3}, our direct ancestor, was the oldest of the children. Like her sister Leah, Sarah married one of the sons of her step-father, in her case, William Furber\textsuperscript{3}. It was with William Furber\textsuperscript{3} that we closed the last chapter. We will resume the story of William\textsuperscript{3} and his family next.
NEHEMIAH FURBER AND THE LEIGHTON FAMILY

We will now resume the discussion of William Furber\textsuperscript{3}, who married Sarah Nute\textsuperscript{3}. The focus will be on their son, Nehemiah Furber, who is our direct ancestor and who married into the Leighton family. Information about that family will also be presented in this chapter.

Much less is known about William Furber\textsuperscript{3} than his father and grandfather of the same name. William\textsuperscript{3} was born about 1673 at Newington, New Hampshire, and lived there all his life. We do not even know when he married Sarah Nute\textsuperscript{3}, whose family was introduced in the previous chapter. His name only appears on two early colonial petitions, which indicates that William Furber\textsuperscript{3} probably did not get too involved in the town politics.

One of the lists on which the name of William Furber\textsuperscript{3} appears was a petition to the Governor of the Massachusetts Bay Colony dated 20 February 1689/90. The petitioners "who were formerly under yo' Government having been for some time distitute of power ..." requested a return to the "Government and Protection as formerly ...". In 1686, New Hampshire had split from Massachusetts and for the prior three years, New Hampshire had acted as an independent colony. But having just endured extremely frightful attacks by the Indians a few months before, the New Hampshire colonists had realized they weren't quite ready to make a go of it by themselves.

The other petition signed by William Furber\textsuperscript{3} was one to the New Hampshire Provincial Council dated 15 July 1713, which requested the establishment of the separate Parish of Newington. Prior to this date, William Furber\textsuperscript{3} and his neighbors were officially part of Dover, located about eight miles away and across the Piscataqua River. The leading motive for the creation of a separate parish was the establishment of a convenient religious service, with its own meeting house and minister.

One must remember that at this time there was no separation of church and state in colonial America. That would not come until the Constitution was signed some years later. The granting of separate parish and town privileges required the establishment of a church and a settled minister. No settler could vote without being accepted as a member of the local church. Note that, at this time, what was being created was a new \textit{parish} and not a new \textit{town}. Although the \textit{parish} generally covered only the functions of the church, sometimes its power extended far beyond that. By degrees in New England, the term \textit{parish} generally faded and the term \textit{town} took its place. At Newington,
the word *town* did not appear in its records until 1726. It slowly replaced the word *parish* until that term no longer appeared in the Newington records at all by the end of the eighteenth century.

Even before the petition was written and signed, the inhabitants of Bloody Point, the part of Dover that would become Newington, had already built a meeting house. It was built in 1712 from taxes levied on the polls and estates of the inhabitants. William Furber agreed to pay 16 shillings. Six months before the petition was completed, the meeting house was listed as having "already been erected, though it was not finished." One indication of the near identical nature of *town* and *parish* is the fact that the old meeting house is still in the ownership of the town of Newington, New Hampshire, and is known as the Newington Town Church.

The petition stated that the inhabitants of Bloody Point lived "so remote from the established places of worship that they are under great inconvenience to attend." The July 1904 *New England Historical and Genealogical Register* explained that "two factors united to create the desire of the people about Bloody Point for a nearby place of worship. One was the distance of the Dover Church, eight miles, making necessary a tedious ride over a dreary country, hot in the summer and bleak and almost unbearable in the winter. The second difficulty lay in the Piscataqua river, a tide water river of great velocity which it is not always easy or safe to cross."

The New Hampshire Provincial Council understood the needs of these colonists, for it was ordered that the petition be granted the day after it appeared before that body. The Parish of Newington was established, set off from both the Parishes of Dover and Portsmouth. The petition had also stated that the inhabitants had "of late erected a meeting-house and obtained a tract of sixty acres of land for the accommodation of a minister ...". A bigger problem now arose, that of attracting such a minister.

A meeting was held on 6 August 1713 in the new parish, at which "*the main thing was to consult together what offer to make Mr. Fisk in order to be settled in said Parish.*" They voted to offer the Rev. Fisk £80 per year. He declined the offer, so they paid him for the "fifteen Sabbaths he had officiated as minister". They then offered the same amount to the Rev. John Emerson. He declined it too, though he "preached three Sabbaths and a Thanksgiving". The colonists at Newington raised the ante and "proceeded then to hire another and obtained the Rev. Joseph Adams." On 16 December 1714, after their meeting house had sat unused for worship services for a year and a half, it was agreed that they would offer Adams £86 per year plus another £60 "toward his settlement". Adams accepted the offer.

As a sidebar, the Rev. Joseph Adams had both impressive credentials and lineage. He was from Braintree, Massachusetts, where he had been a schoolmaster, and was a graduate of Harvard College's class of 1710. His mother was the daughter of John and Priscilla Alden of the Pilgrim colony at Plymouth. He was the uncle to John Adams, who became the second president of the United States, and great-uncle to John Quincy Adams, our sixth president. Like many in his famous family, the Rev. Adams lived to a very old age (his nephew and great-nephew lived to be 90 and 80 respectively). Adams continued his ministry at Newington for 68 years, dying there when he was 94 years old.

Newington's second minister was the Rev. Joseph Langdon of Portsmouth, who continued in that role until 1810. His ministry came at a time of transition, when the people were becoming
dissatisfied with the method of supporting the ministry and church by taxation. To meet this uneasiness, those who desired began to be allowed to join some other religious group. Many Newington taxpayers eventually "polled off", as this action was known in the town records, and joined other churches. These actions created such an uproar during much of Langdon's tenure that it finally led to his dismissal. But from that point forward, the support of the church became voluntary.

The Newington Town Church is still standing on its original site and is still in use today. It is noted for being the oldest congregational [self-governing] church in continuous use in the nation. Entirely reconstructed inside, it no longer has the high box pews that were so prevalent in colonial New England. The structure, 30 by 38 feet in dimension, has walls fourteen inches thick. The belfry was originally capped with a spire, but after it was twice struck by lightning, the parishioners decided to remove it. The original bell in the belfry became cracked so, in 1810, it was hauled by ox team to Boston where it was recast by a man who owned a brass foundry as well as a silversmith shop. That gentleman was none other than Paul Revere.

Outside the church, there still is a large rock which was used by the ladies in mounting saddle horses before carriages came into general use. Behind the church, sheds were eventually built for storing those carriages. Inside, a gallery used to surround three sides of the building and were used by negro slaves and indentured servants. On the main floor, pew boxes were privately owned and handed down from one generation to another. A floor plan still exists showing the position of each family's pew. It was voted that "whosoever of the Inhabitants would have the privilege of a pue should pay twelve pounds for it if one of the Largest and for the Least pues they who would have them should pay ten pounds". William Furber\(^3\) was one of the owners of these "pues". Technically they didn't actually own the pew, but really rented privilege of occupancy.

William Furber\(^3\) left a will dated 12 November 1741, which was proved 25 May 1757. He left to his two sons, Moses and Nehemiah, who were also appointed the executors of his will, "my Pew or Seat in the Meetinghouse". He left his grandson Richard Furber all of his land at Newington, plus 100 acres "part of my Second Devison" at Rochester, New Hampshire and two cows. Richard was only 16 at the time his grandfather's will was drafted, and William Furber\(^3\) appointed his sons Moses and Nehemiah to be Richard's guardians until he became 21 years of age. William\(^3\) left to his daughters Bethiah and Jerusha his "household Goods and Cattle" to be equally divided between them after he and Sarah died.

In his will, William Furber\(^3\) left almost nothing to his two surviving sons. However, Nehemiah\(^4\) and Moses\(^4\) Furber did receive land from their father, done prior to the will, in the form of a pair of land deeds in 1740 and 1741. The Richard Furber who received all of his grandfather's property at Newington was the son of Richard, who had died as a young man. The town of Rochester, where William Furber\(^3\) had purchased land, was chartered in 1722 and began to be settled about 1728. Most of the settlers of this township, located about 15 miles north of Newington, had been residents of Dover, Newington and Portsmouth. A second division of land was introduced on 20 April 1730, which extended north to the present day area of Farmington and Milton, New Hampshire. It was in this region that William Furber\(^3\) purchased the land which he left to his grandson.

William Furber\(^3\) and his wife, the former Sarah Nute\(^3\), lived at Newington all of their lives. He died there 20 March 1757 at the age of 84, while Sarah died 28 April 1762 at the age of 86. The
identification of their children has been difficult because of the lack of records. Compounding the issue is the number of Furbers with the same given name. Even prominent New Hampshire historians like Henry W. Hardon have gotten the family of William Furber incorrect. Hardon, for example, places a Joshua and a Jethro Furber as the sons of William\(^3\). Both assumptions are provably incorrect.

The *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire* states that William\(^3\) and Sarah\(^3\) (Nute) Furber had six children. As best as can be determined, they are as follows (order approximate):

1. **Moses Furber\(^4\)**
   - b. Abt 1698
   - m. 31 Jul 1727 Anna Walker
   - d. Aft 1764

2. **Richard Furber\(^4\)**
   - b. Abt 1700
   - m. 22 Nov 1722 Mary Shackford
   - d. Abt 1726

3. **Elizabeth Furber\(^4\)**
   - b. 
   - m. 18 Dec 1719 James Webber
   - d. Bef 1729

4. **Nehemiah Furber\(^4\)**
   - b. 21 Jan 1710
   - m. 5 Dec 1732 (1) Abigail Leighton
   - m. 12 Nov 1780 (2) Mary (Dennett) Hart
   - d. 10 Jun 1789

5. **Bethiah Furber\(^4\)**
   - b. 
   - d. Aft 1741

6. **Jerusha Furber\(^4\)**
   - b. 8 Mar 1719
   - m. 25 Mar 1738 George Peirce
   - d. Aft 1741

The reader with an eye for detail will notice that there are two *plus* symbols opposite the names of the children above. We are descended from two of the children of William\(^3\) and Sarah\(^3\) (Nute) Furber, whose descendants would marry generations later as distance cousins. The descendance of Richard Furber\(^4\) will be described in a later chapter. Here, we will follow the line of Nehemiah Furber\(^4\).

**Moses Furber\(^4\)** was known as "Deac. Moses Furber", indicating that he was probably an assistant to the Rev. Joseph Adams in the Newington church. Moses\(^4\) was born about 1698 and remained at Newington all of his life. He married there on 31 July 1727 to Anna Walker. She was the daughter of John and Elizabeth Walker, who later lived at Portsmouth. Although identified as "Anna" in both birth and marriage records, she later was called "Hannah" in Newington records. In published genealogies, she has often been misidentified as Anna (Bickford) Walker, the daughter of John and Susanna (Furber) Bickford and the widow of Samuel Walker. Samuel Walker was the brother of the Anna that married Moses Furber\(^4\). Moses\(^4\) and Anna Furber had twelve children, all baptized at Newington.

**Richard Furber\(^4\)** was a cordwainer [shoemaker or leather worker]. On 22 November 1722, he married Mary Shackford, the daughter of Samuel and Abigail (Richards) Shackford. Richard died soon after, leaving only two children. It was his son Richard\(^5\) that was named so prominently in his grandfather's will. The young widow of Richard Furber\(^4\) remarried to Alexander Hodgdon. More will be presented about this direct ancestor later.
Elizabeth Furber⁴ may have been the oldest child, since she married on 18 December 1719. Her husband was James Webber, also a cordwainer, and the probable son of Joseph Webber of Falmouth, Maine. In 1717, two years before he married Elizabeth⁴, James Webber bought a house at Crooked Lane, an area that later became Kittery, Maine. Besides Kittery, James also lived for a time at Yarmouth, Maine. James and Elizabeth⁴ had at least one child, William, who was baptized at Newington on 23 January 1721. Elizabeth⁴ apparently died early, since James Webber remarried on 13 February 1728/9 to Keturah Jenkins of Kittery.

Bethiah Furber⁴ was baptized at the Newington church on 1 June 1718. No record of a marriage for her has been found. In her father's will, dated 12 November 1741, she was still listed as "Bethiah Furber".

Jerusha Furber⁴ was probably the youngest of the children. She was born on 8 March 1719, according to the Newington town records, and baptized at the Newington church on 7 August 1720. On 25 March 1738, she married George Peirce of Portsmouth. George was the son of George and Elizabeth (Langdon) Peirce. Nothing else is known of Jerusha⁴.

Nehemiah Furber⁴, our direct ancestor, was born 21 January 1710 at Newington, according to the town records. He was a "husbandman", or farmer, and lived on the same land that his great-grandfather, grandfather and father, all named William, had also lived. Like his father, he left relatively few records. On 5 December 1732, he married Abigail Leighton, who was the fourth generation of a family that had been in America about as long as Hatevil Nutter¹ and William Furber¹. We will tell their story next and then resume with that of Nehemiah Furber⁴.

THE LEIGHTON FAMILY

The first Leighton ancestor to come to America was Thomas Leighton. Like almost everyone who came to New England, and especially to New Hampshire, he was from England. The Leighton name can be found frequently in early English records, and with a number of different spellings, first appears as early as the twelfth century. Sadly, we know almost nothing else of the origins of Thomas Leighton.

Historian John Scales wrote a letter in 1899 to another researcher, in which he stated: "Thomas Leighton Sr. was the son of Dr. Alexander Leighton, the distinguished theologian and Professor in the University of Edinborough, Scotland; he was one of the leaders in the fight against the English Church during the reign of Charles I and was a staunch supporter of the Protector Oliver Cromwell. He sent his son Thomas to New England with the party that came over with Captain Wiggin, having servants, in the English style of gentlemen who owned large landed estates, cattle and much property. Thomas's older brother Robert remained in England and when times changed became distinguished as the Archbishop of Glasgow."

Scales even described a coat-of-arms for this Scottish Leighton family, first used in the year 1260. As a result, numerous genealogies have described Thomas Leighton as the son of this Dr. Alexander Leighton. There is only one thing wrong with Scales' account; it isn't true. First, there is the problem with the fact that Dr. Leighton had four sons and two daughters, but no Thomas among them. The other problem that bothers more than a few people is the fact that Thomas Leighton signed all of his documents with a mark. Like many of this era, he could neither read nor
write. It seems extremely unlikely that the son of a distinguished university professor would reach adulthood without being able to read or write.

Despite the fact that he is unlikely to be our direct ancestor, there is an interesting account of the Scottish Alexander Leighton that bears telling. In 1630, Alexander Leighton published his *Zion's Plea Against Prelacy*, a vicious attack on the Church of England in which he claimed that the bishops were tools of the Antichrist. As a result, he was sentenced to be publicly whipped and branded, and to have his ears cut off. So much for a biblical 'turn the other cheek' attitude. Leighton was sixty years old and a Doctor of Divinity, and the sentence aroused great public indignation, and it is not certain if the sentence was ever carried out.

Family tradition in the Leighton family has it that Thomas was one of three brothers who came to the Piscataqua region. Supposedly Thomas came first, about 1633, while an older brother John and a younger brother William both came later. John Leighton settled near Biddeford, Maine, while William settled at Kittery, Maine. This tradition has been neither confirmed nor disproved. A John and William Leighton did exist and did settle in the places mentioned but their connection to the Thomas Leighton has not been established.

Based upon both a deposition that he made in December 1665 and his will, we can assume that Thomas Leighton was born about 1604-1605. It is not known exactly when he came to New Hampshire, but it is a good possibility that Thomas Leighton arrived on the *James*, the ship that brought Capt. Wiggin "and about thirty" to New Hampshire in 1633. We do not know if Thomas married in England prior to sailing to New England, or if he married here. We know only that his wife was named Joanna; her last name remains unknown, although it has been suggested it was Silsby. The last name of Thomas Leighton is often spelled *Layton* or *Laitton* in the early colonial records.

Like most of the early settlers at Dover, Thomas Leighton settled on Dover Neck. His house was located near where both Hatevil Nutter¹ and William Furber¹ settled, to the west of what would become known as High Street. Thomas Leighton soon acquired other land holdings and quickly became one of the largest land owners in Dover. In 1642, "as it was found Recorded by William Wallden in a pese of paper", Thomas Leighton received Lot No. 18 of the 20-acre lots that were being granted on the west side of the Back River. This property was across the Back River, west of Dover Neck, near what later became known as Royall's Cove.

Thomas Leighton was apparently, for a time, in the same business as was Hatevil Nutter, sawmilling and lumbering. On 23 October 1649, along with John Dam and William Pomfrett, Thomas Leighton was granted sawmilling rights at the head of the tide water at a place called Bellamy Falls. Thomas later was in partnership with three other men in this same sawmill, but sold his one fourth ownership in the mill on 8 April 1653.

In the ensuing years, Thomas Leighton acquired two more of the 20-acre lots west of the Back River, those originally granted to Richard Rogers and Henry Tibbets. In addition, on 6 December 1656, Thomas was granted 100 acres on the west side of the Back River, "adjoining a 20-acre lot he bought of Ambrose Gibbons", which had been the original Roger's grant. Thus, Thomas Leighton acquired 160 acres of land in the area of Royall's Cove, across the Back River from Dover Neck. It does not seem that Thomas Leighton, the original settler at Dover, ever lived on this
property, although it is certain that his son did.

The Leighton house there was built on a hill that became known as Leighton's Hill, but later known as Atkinson's Hill for a later resident of the area. The famous statesman and orator, Daniel Webster, who was a New Hampshire native, knew the hill well. He had to cross it every time he travelled to Portsmouth, where he often appeared in court. Webster became one of the most influential men in the country; he served in the House of Representatives, the Senate and was Secretary of State under three presidents. He called the view from Leighton's Hill "unsurpassed by any other in New England."

Thomas Leighton also owned land south of Dover, on Bloody Point, or what later became Newington, New Hampshire. On 15 June 1646, he received a grant of ten acres "of marsh in the Great Bay" next to the land of William Pomfrett. Pomfrett's land was sold to Anthony Nutter in 1651. In 1652, Thomas Leighton received another 40 acres of land at "Welsman's cove" at Newington. On 10 January 1655, he was granted 100 acres on the west shore of Great Bay, and the next year, another 30 acres of "upland" near Laighton's Cove. This cove is on the Newington shore between Long's Point and Fabyan's Point.

In an excellent genealogy of Thomas Leighton compiled by descendant Perley M. Leighton, it is stated: "Land was usually laid out to settlers according to their ability to develop it. Thomas Leighton's land acquisitions suggest that he immigrated bringing the money and tools he would need to establish himself in the new world. Settlers had to cut down trees to clear ground for crops, although the salt marshes might provide hay for their stock. Besides farming, they engaged in fur-trading, fishing, making pipestaves and clapboards, and rendering potash from wood ashes. Dover settlers developed a lively trade with the West Indies, especially the Barbados, in dried salt fish and barrel staves; it is probable that Thomas Leighton invested cargo in such ventures."

Thomas Leighton's name appears numerous times in the Dover colonial records. He was repeatedly chosen as a selectman, grand juror and constable by the town. He also signed with his mark (a "T" and not an "X") a number of petitions, including one to Massachusetts complaining of their control over the Dover colonists. He also signed the Dover Combination, described earlier, a petition against Patentees in 1654, and on 10 October 1655, a declaration of continued allegiance to Massachusetts.

On 26 June 1661, Thomas Leighton was released from his obligation for military training, probably because of his advancing age. He made out his will on 21 September 1671 and died four months later, on 22 January 1671/2. The will was unusual in that Thomas left "my whole Estate both personall and Reall" to his widow Joanna, rather than directly to the oldest son, with the caveat that it would revert to his "onely son and heire" in the event that Joanna either died or remarried. Thomas Leighton also specified that upon the death of Joanna, his son was to set "John my Indian Servant" free and pay him £5.

Thomas Leighton's widow, Joanna, did remarry. On 16 July 1673, she married Job Clements, who was a neighbor on Dover Neck. Clements was an expert tanner and "attracted apprentices from a distance", but was once prosecuted for practicing two professions by also employing shoemakers "to make up his leather". He died in 1682, leaving Joanna a widow again. Joanna "departed this life being full of daies" on 15 January 1703/4. Thomas and Joanna Leighton had four children who
survived to adulthood (order as listed in will of father):

1. Thomas Leighton
   b. Abt 1642 @ Dover, Strafford, NH
   m. Abt 1670 (1st) Elizabeth Nutter
   m. (2nd) Elizabeth ------
   d. 1677 @ Dover, Strafford, NH

2. Mary Leighton
   b. @ Dover, Strafford, NH
   m. Thomas Roberts Jr.

3. Elizabeth Leighton
   b. @ Dover, Strafford, NH
   m. Capt. Philip Cromwell
   d. Aft 1708

4. Sarah Leighton
   b. 1648 @ Dover, Strafford, NH

Mary Leighton married, by 1671, Thomas Roberts, the son of Thomas and Rebecca Roberts. In his *History of the Quakers*, historian Sewell claimed that Thomas Roberts and his brother John, who married one of the daughters of Hatevil Nutter, were both rebuked by their father for the cruelty they had exhibited to the Quakers (described in chapter 2). Thomas was Constable of Dover at the time of the Quaker problems involving Hatevil Nutter, and it was his job to remove the Quaker women from the town after they had protested at the Dover meeting house. Some claimed at the time that he apparently did so with some amount of zeal. Thomas and Mary (Leighton) Roberts had seven known children.

Elizabeth Leighton married, as his second wife, Philip Cromwell, the son of Giles and Alice (Weeks) Cromwell. Philip was a ship carpenter and a woodsman, who deposed that in 1660, he had kept six oxen logging "around Quamscot". He was commissioned as a captain in the militia in 1683. He died in 1708, at which time his wife Elizabeth was still alive. Philip Cromwell had eight known children, but it is likely that only three of them were by the former Elizabeth Leighton.

Sarah Leighton was born in 1648 and unmarried at the time of her father's will in 1671. She may have married Philip Chesley as claimed by one researcher, but evidence is lacking and refuted by other sources.

Thomas Leighton, our direct ancestor, was born at Dover about 1642, and was the only son according to his father's will. He did not live long, dying when he was about 35 years old. Because of this, he appears in relatively few colonial records. In one exception, Thomas Leighton "Juner" was listed in the Dover town records on 28 July 1665 as one of the men to receive some money for "keilling a wolfe". Because of their stock, wolves were a constant problem for the Dover settlers, and the town regularly paid bounties for their extermination.

On 13 February 1670/1, Thomas was deeded "the dwelling house" then in his possession, together with "eight score" acres of land, by his father. This gift was the 160 acres of land on the west bank of the Back River that his father had acquired by grant and purchase. On the same day, Thomas Leighton also received 40 acres of land from his father-in-law, Hatevil Nutter, who owned the land directly north of the 160-acre parcel. The 200 acres he received were probably given to him as a result of his recent marriage.

Thomas Leighton married twice in his short life, his first wife being Elizabeth Nutter, daughter of Hatevil. Elizabeth, who was alive on 13 February 1670/71 when their fathers deeded the land to her and Thomas, died before 28 December 1674, when her father wrote his will.
remarried to another woman also named Elizabeth, but he died a few years later, in 1677, without leaving a will. Thomas Leighton\(^2\) had two sons, Thomas and John, by the former Elizabeth Nutter\(^2\), and a daughter, Elizabeth, by his second wife:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Birth</th>
<th></th>
<th>Died</th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Thomas Leighton(^3)</td>
<td>Abt 1671</td>
<td></td>
<td>@ Dover, Strafford, NH</td>
<td>M.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>D.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>John Leighton(^3)</td>
<td>Abt 1673</td>
<td></td>
<td>@ Dover, Strafford, NH</td>
<td>M.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>M.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>D.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Elizabeth Leighton(^3)</td>
<td>Abt 1676/7</td>
<td></td>
<td>@ Dover, Strafford, NH</td>
<td>M.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>D.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**John Leighton\(^3\)**, born at Dover about 1673, married twice. His first wife, named Sarah, is mentioned by some as possibly the daughter of Philip and Elizabeth Cromwell, just mentioned. But that would have made her and John Leighton\(^3\) first cousins, so that match is unlikely. It is more likely that Sarah married Timothy Wentworth as suggested by the *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire*. His second wife was probably Eleanor Meader, the daughter of Henry and Jane (Lindes) (Wallis) Merrow, and the widow of Nathaniel Meader. Meader had been killed by the Indians on 25 April 1704 at Oyster River.

John Leighton\(^3\) appears in a number of early records. He served in the militia for 34 days under the command of Capt. John Woodman at the Oyster River garrison from December 1695 to January 1696. John Woodman was one of our direct ancestors and his account will appear later. On 16 December 1699, John Leighton\(^3\) was chosen by James Nute\(^3\), mentioned earlier, to be his guardian. On 15 March 1704, Job Clements deeded 30 acres of land on the west side of the Back River to John Leighton\(^3\). Clements was the stepson of Joanna (Leighton) Clements, John's grandmother. This conveyance of property was almost certainly related to the death of John's grandmother two months before.

John\(^3\) owned and lived on some of the property on the west side of the Back River, which had belonged to his grandfather and where his father had lived. John\(^3\) made out a will dated 24 September 1712, in which he required his son Thomas\(^4\) "to let my wife Eleanor to have hous rume and fier wood, covenant he shall hale the wood to the dor and cut itt to put into the fier as long as shee seese fit to live with him on the place, with hous rume for her creturs." He also required that his son John\(^4\) pay ten shillings to Eleanor "as long as she liveth." John Leighton\(^3\) died early in 1718. Because of problems with the wording in the will, it was not accepted by the probate court, and Thomas\(^4\) was appointed administrator of the estate. John Leighton\(^3\) had five children, all by his first wife, Sarah.

**Elizabeth Leighton\(^3\)** was born at Dover about 1676 and died there in 1756. She married Richard Pinkham, a carpenter, the son of John and Martha (Otis) Pinkham. On 18 April 1699, Richard and Elizabeth\(^3\) were given land by her brother Thomas Leighton\(^3\). Elizabeth\(^3\) was once put in stocks because Richard would not or could not pay her fine for "entertaining" Quakers and for attending Quaker worship services at Oyster River. After Elizabeth\(^3\) died, Richard Pinkham married a second time on 27 November 1757 to Mary (Hill) Welch, who was the widow of Benjamin Welch. Elizabeth\(^3\) and Richard had three sons who are known to have survived to adulthood.
Thomas Leighton\(^3\), our direct ancestor and the third in a row to carry that name, was born about 1671 at Dover. Only six when his father died, Thomas\(^3\) lived with and was placed under the guardianship of Lt. Anthony Nutter\(^2\), the son of Hatevil\(^1\). On 31 October 1677 and again on 25 June 1678, Nutter filed complaints of not receiving enough money to support the child. After Anthony Nutter\(^2\) died of smallpox early in 1686, apparently no other guardian was appointed for Thomas\(^3\).

Thomas\(^3\) lived at Newington, where Anthony Nutter\(^2\) lived, and when he reached 21, inherited the property his grandfather had purchased there. As mentioned above, he gave part of his Dover land to his "only sister Elizabeth" and her husband, Richard Pinkham. Thomas Leighton\(^3\) served as a sergeant in the Dover militia, and in 1700, carried a message to the Earl of Bellomont concerning the problems with Indian attacks at Cochecho. He was also one of the signers who, on 15 July 1713, petitioned the New Hampshire Provincial Council to establish the new parish of Newington.

On 10 April 1710, Thomas Leighton\(^3\) had 160 acres of the property on the Back River resurveyed. On 4 January 1717/8, he deeded this land to his brother John\(^1\), as well as the land that his grandfather owned on Dover Neck, the "land granted by Dover to my grandfather Thomas Layton, also land said grandfather bought of Henry Beck." Henry Beck, one of the signers of the Dover Combination in 1640, had lived on Dover Neck, close to Hatevil Nutter, but later sold out and moved to Portsmouth. It is apparent from this deed of conveyance that the grandfather, Thomas Leighton\(^1\), was the one who purchased his land.

Thomas Leighton\(^3\) didn't just simply live off of his grandfather's land. He also bought additional land at Newington, first from Clement Meserve in 1721 and second from John Fabyan in 1729. In 1722, in conjunction with his son John\(^4\), Thomas\(^3\) bought land that was just being laid out at Rochester. In 1727, Thomas\(^3\) also purchased land at Barnstead. On 2 December 1729, Thomas Leighton\(^3\) and his son John\(^4\) bought another parcel of land at Rochester, from another Newington resident. Thomas\(^3\) also purchased 150 acres of land at Barrington in conjunction with Joseph Hicks.

As he got older, Thomas Leighton\(^3\) began to give his land holdings to his descendants by deeding it to them. Sons John\(^4\) and Hatevil\(^4\) received land in Dover, while Thomas\(^3\) deeded his land in Barnstead to a grandson. On 26 Jan 1740/1, he left his homestead and "all his lands, marsh and flats" at Newington to his son Thomas\(^4\), as well as his pew in the meetinghouse. In return he received £1000 and a bond that required the son to support both of his parents for life. Finally, on 6 March 1743/4, Thomas Leighton\(^3\) sold his land at Rochester to his son Thomas\(^4\).

Thomas Leighton\(^1\) died soon after that since his widow Deborah was appointed the administrator of his will on 29 August 1744. Thomas\(^3\) did not leave a will, perhaps because he felt he had done everything already through gift deeds. Thomas\(^3\) and Deborah Leighton had the following children:

1. Elizabeth Leighton\(^4\)  b. Abt 1703 @ Dover, Strafford, NH  
m. 24 Jan 1724 Richard Dam @ Newington  
d. 10 Mar 1776 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH

2. John Leighton\(^4\)  
b. 1706 @ Dover, Strafford, NH  
m. 7 Nov 1728 Abigail Ham @ Portsmouth  
d. Nov 1756 @ Dover, Strafford, NH

+ 3. Abigail Leighton\(^4\)  
b. 14 Jan 1710 @ Dover, Strafford, NH  
m. 5 Dec 1732 Nehemiah Furber @ Newington  
d. 28 Apr 1779 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH

4. Hatevil Leighton\(^4\)  
b. Abt 1712 @ Dover, Strafford, NH
Elizabeth Leighton⁴ was born at Dover about 1703. She married Richard Dam at Newington on 24 January 1724 and had ten children by him. Richard was the son of the Deacon John and Sarah (Rowe) Dam. Elizabeth⁴ died at Newington on 10 March 1776 at the age of 73, while Richard died there on 13 May 1776 at the age of 76.

John Leighton⁴ was born at Dover in 1706 and died there at age 50. On 7 November 1728 at Portsmouth, he married Abigail Ham, the daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth (Sloper) Ham. Her father was a weaver in Portsmouth. In 1722, John Leighton⁴ joined his father in purchasing lots in the newly opened town of Rochester, New Hampshire. He sold 20 acres of land at Dover to Stephen Pinkham on 8 July 1734 and bought other land at Dover from his father on 17 July 1735. On 27 March 1751, he and his brother Hatevil sold the Barrington land that had been owned by his father. John Leighton⁷ wrote a will on 8 October 1756 and he died very soon after since the will was proved 24 November that same year. John⁴ and Abigail (Ham) Leighton had twelve children.

Hatevil Leighton⁴ was born about 1712 at Dover. At Newington on 7 December 1732, he married Sarah Trickey, the daughter of Thomas and Mary (Gambol) Trickey. Hatevil's wife was the great-granddaughter of the Thomas Trickey who emigrated to New England, and who was described in an earlier chapter. Hatevil⁴ lived at Newington in his younger years, and purchased land there from his father on 17 July 1735. On 18 July 1742, he and Sarah were admitted to the Newington Church. He was active in the military. Hatevil Leighton⁴ appears on militia rolls as early as 1740, and again in 1744 as an ensign in a company of scouts. He also served briefly in the French and Indian War in 1755.

Hatevil⁴ eventually left New Hampshire. With the end of hostilities in the French and Indian War in 1759, many New Hampshire residents thought about moving beyond the borders of the Province. But the British prohibited the colonists from moving west, so many of the men who had served in the French and Indian War campaigns into Maine and Nova Scotia looked that direction. Hatevil and his family joined others that moved north and east into Maine, near the present-day town of Castine. Hatevil Leighton⁴ was among the men who signed a petition to the Massachusetts Bay Colony on 3 October 1763.

Most of the petitioners "were Soldiers in his Majesties Service ..." and had settled at "a Place where no English inhabitants had ever before settled & at Great Peril Labour and Ex pense they Cleared & cultivated Some Small Spots of Land and have got themselves Comfortable houses,
Suffering beyond Expression the Last Winter & having grappled through those Difficulties they have been able this Summer to Raise sauce & a few necessaries to Support their families & have been in hopes to have had their Settlements confirmed to them ...".

The Massachusetts colony granted the petition requests of the settlers but they were never affirmed by the British Crown. Rather, the King and his ministers favored setting aside eastern Maine as New Ireland, to be settled by Irish emigrants who would be more respectful of British authority. Hatevil and others moved even further east, near the small coastal town of Gouldsboro. They had the same problem there, improving and building homes on land they might never be able to purchase. Neither could the colonists levy local taxes or hire teachers or ministers. Hatevil Leighton⁴ probably died at Gouldsboro about 1770. He never saw the problem with the land ownership resolved. Hatevil⁴ and his wife Sarah had 13 children, many of whom eventually returned to New Hampshire.

Deborah Leighton⁴ was born at Dover about 1714 and later lived at Portsmouth. She married, at Newington on 9 October 1735, Capt. William Collins, but he died within about three years. She then married Arthur Waterhouse, who died in 1746. It does not appear, after having been widowed twice by the age of 32, that Deborah⁴ married again. She had four children by her two husbands, all born at Portsmouth.

Olive Leighton⁴, born about 1720 at Newington, married James Colbath, the son of George and Mary (Pitman) Colbath. James and Olive⁴ first lived at Newington, where on 7 May 1746, he applied for permission to keep a public tavern. James had extensive land holdings in Newington and Barnstead, and operated a gristmill at Newington. In 1754, he received land at Portsmouth from a Joseph Colbath, which he and Olive deeded to their son Benning thirty years later. About 1785, they moved to Rochester (the part which later became Farmington) and later settled at Middleton, New Hampshire. Both James and Olive⁴ died at Middleton before 1800. They had eight children.

Thomas Leighton⁴, the fourth in a row to carry that name, was baptized at Newington on 13 May 1720. At Newington on 28 October 1742, he married Mary Smithson, the daughter of John and Deborah (Pickering) Smithson. Thomas⁴ received the Leighton homestead at Newington, after giving bond in 1742 to support his parents for the rest of their lives. On 6 March 1743/4, he was also deeded his father's 60 acres of land at Rochester. A year and a half later, he deeded 30 of the 60 acres to his brother John, indicating in the deed that he had a verbal agreement with his father to give half of that land to that brother. Following the lead of his parents, Thomas⁴ deeded his Newington homestead to his son George⁵ on the condition that the son support his parents for life. Thomas and Mary had ten children.

Keziah Leighton⁴, a daughter and the youngest of the children, was born about 1722 at Newington. She married there, on 20 September 1739, Eleazor Coleman, a fourth-generation Coleman in this country and the son of a direct ancestor of the same name. Keziah had three known children, all born at Newington. More will be presented about the Coleman family in a future chapter.

Abigail Leighton⁴, our direct ancestor, was born at Dover on 14 January 1710. She married the Furber ancestor we left off with, Nehemiah Furber⁴, and we will continue their story now.

CHAPTER 8 116 BIOG/HIST
NEHEMIAH FURBER

Nehemiah Furber⁴ was born 21 January 1710 at Newington, according to the town records. He married Abigail Leighton⁴ at Newington on 5 December 1732. They were exactly one week apart in age. Nehemiah⁴ and Abigail⁴ lived at Newington all their lives. They were admitted to the Newington Church on 21 July 1765 and all of their children were baptized in the building that still stands at Newington. Abigail⁴ died at Newington on 28 April 1779, during the height of the Revolutionary War. Nehemiah⁴ lived another ten years, long enough to see New Hampshire make the transition from a British colony to one of the original 13 states, and long enough to see George Washington elected president. Nehemiah Furber⁴ died at Newington 10 June 1789. He and Abigail⁴ had the following children:

1. Elizabeth Furber⁵  b. 26 Apr 1733  @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. 16 Jul 1753  (1st) Thomas Vincent  
   m. 26 Jul 1770  (2nd) John Pickering  

2. Mary Furber⁵  b. 5 May 1735  @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   d. 18 Apr 1736  @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  

3. Jerusha Furber⁵  b. 6 Jan 1738  @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. 10 Jul 1759  Thomas Pickering  

4. Abigail Furber⁵  b. 12 Jun 1740  @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m.  James P. Hill of Biddeford, ME  

5. Deborah Furber⁵  b. 19 Apr 1743  @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. 11 Oct 1764  (1st) Luke Mills  
   m.  (2nd) John Gee Pickering  

6. Sarah Furber⁵  b. 1 Mar 1744/5  @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. 16 Jul 1761  Timothy Roberts  

7. Nehemiah Furber⁵  b. 24 Apr 1748  @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   d. 23 Feb 1754  @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  

+ 8. Levi Furber⁵  b. 16 May 1751  @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. 4 Oct 1770  Rosamond Fabyan  @ Newington  
   d. 19 Jan 1829  @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  

Nehemiah⁴ and Abigail⁴ (Leighton) Furber had eight children. Historian Henry W. Hardon credits them with a ninth child, Fabian Furber, following Levi, but the compiler considers it doubtful that this child belongs to this family. The reasons are that no other record of this person was found, the birth timing doesn't match the typical birth spacing, and the Newington town records list the entire family together with only the eight children listed above.

The first six children were all daughters and little is known about any of them beyond what is listed above. One of them, Mary, died when she was eleven months old. The others all lived long enough to marry but, again, little else is known. There is some confusion about the name of the first husband of Deborah Furber⁴. Others have recorded the name as Luke Wells or Wills, instead of Luke Mills, but the latter name is more likely. Nehemiah Furber⁴ finally got a son with his seventh child, but the boy died before he reached his sixth birthday. The last child and the only surviving son is our direct ancestor.

Levi Furber⁵ was born at Newington on 16 May 1751. His name and date of birth appear in the original hand-written town record books, since by this time records for the town of Newington were being kept there and not at Dover. Levi⁵ would grow up to marry Rosamond Fabyan, the source of the name that would later appear within the Furber family several times. Rosamond was a fourth-
generation Fabyan. In the next chapter, that family will be introduced, along with the related Hall, Pickering, Gee, Willix, Huntress and Ham families. We will return to the Levi Furber and his family in a future chapter.
THE FABYAN AND RELATED FAMILIES

There are seven families related to the Furber family, which in turn, are related to the Nutter family. Those seven will be introduced in this chapter. The final descendant of these families married Levi Furber.

---

THE HALL FAMILY

On tax lists at Dover from 1650 to 1657, there appear three men by the name of John Hall. They are distinguished completely for the first time on the 1657 tax list, when they are known as John Hall, John Hall Jr., and Sergeant John Hall. The relationships between the three remain unknown. It has been very difficult for historians to differentiate between the three, let alone the John Jr.'s son John and nephew John, and two grandsons John. All three of the men named John Hall undoubtedly came from England, as did quite a number of others named John Hall. By 1650, there were at least fifteen other men with that name located in nearby New England towns.

We are descended from the man who became known as Sergeant John Hall, or sometimes as John Hall of Greenland. Greenland was an area within the Dover township where he eventually settled. Our John Hall was one of the earliest settlers at Dover, and like most of those, he first lived on Dover Neck. His name appears on the Dover Combination of 1640, as well as on the protest against Capt. John Underhill of 4 April 1641, on which he made his mark, indicating that he could not read or write.

Underhill was a well known military man who had been the first military commander of the
Massachusetts Bay Colony. In 1637, he had led a force of Massachusetts men against the Indians on Block Island in which a great many Indians were killed, and some burned alive. The Massachusetts authorities defended his actions by stating that "we had sufficient light from the Word of God for our proceedings." Underhill later went to Dover, New Hampshire and attempted to assist the colonists there in joining the Massachusetts Bay Colony. This led to three men from Dover going to Boston with their petition request, which was granted by the Massachusetts court. But when they returned to Dover, the agreement was not ratified by the people. For a reason unknown to us today, many people at Dover felt that Underhill was instrumental in its rejection, which lead to the protest against him that was signed by John Hall and others.

In 1642, John Hall received Lot No. 19 of the 20-acre lots that were being granted on the west side of the Back River. This property was across the Back River, west of Dover Neck, and adjoined the Lot No. 18 of Thomas Leighton. But John Hall did not keep this property. In 1649, he traded this property to Hatevil Nutter for land which belonged to Hatevil on the Bloody Point side of the river. He moved to that side of the river some time after that and lived near the dividing line between the towns of Dover and Portsmouth. Because of that, he was occasionally taxed by both towns. He complained about the double taxation on 27 June 1656 and, afterward, his taxes were divided between the two towns. John Hall continued to live there, in "Greenland in ye Township of Dover", for the rest of his life.

By at least 1649, John Hall was called Sergeant John Hall, indicating his position in the Dover militia. Early court records indicate that, in 1660, a neighbor at Greenland named Leonard Weeks, who for unknown reasons was apparently unhappy with John Hall, called him an "old dog". We have nothing to indicate whether or not Mr. Weeks' assessment of John Hall was upheld. In any event, the "old dog" died in 1677, soon after leaving a will dated 29 August of that year. In the will, John Hall mentions "my dearly beloved wife Elizabeth", the only information we have of her.

John Hall's will is probably responsible for some confusion among historians with regard to his children. Even the normally highly reliable Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire makes a mistake regarding his daughters. Sarah Hall, the only daughter of John Hall known by name, and the wife of Sergeant John Dam (or Damme) have frequently been confused as being the same person. In the will, John left his homestead at Greenland to his son Joseph, with the provision that it would be "divided between my Daught Sarah and my Grand child Abigail Dam'e" in the event that Joseph died without heirs. That Sgt. John Dam was the father of this child is well established, as is the fact that he married a daughter of John Hall. And from the statement above, many have concluded that it was Sarah Hall he married.

However, in another part of John Hall's will, he leaves his daughter Sarah 36 acres of land "lying at Harwoods Point" and six acres of marsh "more of lesse adjoyning thereto". But he then specifies that if Sarah "dyes without Heires I give it unto my Grand-child Abigail Dam'e", clearly indicating that Sarah is not the mother of Abigail. Further, John left Sarah half of his stock and the joint use of the pasture land as long as she "lives unmarried upon y'farm". Perhaps most importantly, John left Sarah the "best bed", furniture, two pair of sheets, a bolster [a long, narrow pillow or cushion], pillows, two new woolen blankets and a rug. All of these items were very important to a young lady seeking to become married in colonial New England.

John Hall's will also left his wife, Elizabeth, the use of either the old house or the new house on
his homestead at Greenland, and further specified that "she shall have my Negro while she lives". Slaves were not common in New England, but it's obvious that John Hall had one. John¹ and Elizabeth Hall had only three children known to us (order unknown):

1. ----- Hall² m. Abt 1662 Sgt. John Dam
d. Abt 1663 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
2. Joseph Hall² m. Abt 1662 Elizabeth Smith
d. 19 Dec 1685 @ Greenland, Rockingham, NH
+ 3. Sarah Hall² m. Aft 1677 John Fabyan

The Hall daughter who married Sgt. John Dam only lived about a year after marrying. Her daughter Abigail, mentioned in John Hall's will, was born 5 April 1663. Abigail's mother likely died as a result of childbirth, extremely common in this period, especially after the first child. John Dam married second, on 9 November 1664, to Elizabeth Furber², the daughter of William Furber¹.

Joseph Hall² married Elizabeth Smith, who came over from England at the urging of her uncle, Major Richard Waldron. Waldron was the man who was murdered by the Indians, after they had tortured him by cutting off his nose and ears. Joseph Hall² became a member of the North Church at Portsmouth. He died 19 December 1685 of smallpox, during the same epidemic that claimed Anthony Nutter², the son of Hatevil¹. His widow Elizabeth married second to Thomas Packer of Portsmouth on 7 August 1687. She died at Greenland on 14 August 1717, at the age of 62.

Sarah Hall², our direct ancestor, married John Fabyan sometime after her father's will was made out in 1677. It's that family we now introduce.

THE FIRST TWO GENERATIONS OF THE FABYAN FAMILY

John Fabyan¹ came from England, possibly with a brother George, who was a weaver at Portsmouth. The Fabyan name is often seen in the old records spelled Fabens, Feabens, Fabian or Fabes. John Fabyan received a grant of land at Portsmouth in 1660, an area which later became part of Newington after the founding of that township. He was a constable there in 1678 and served on a number of juries. He married Sarah Hall², daughter of Sgt. John Hall¹, and lived at Portsmouth. He died there before 1705. John¹ and Sarah² (Hall) Fabyan had at least four children (John², Joseph², Samuel² and Sarah²) who were baptized together on 26 March 1693.

John Fabyan² was born about 1681 at Portsmouth, later part of the town of Newington. He was one of the latter town's first selectmen. John² may have built the house at the entrance to Fabyan's Lane, still standing today. He was a tailor and draper [a dealer in cloth, clothing and dry goods]. John Fabyan² became a lieutenant in the militia, was a justice of the peace, and represented Newington in the Provincial General Assembly in 1744. He married, on Christmas Day 1702, Mary Pickering, whose family lineage will be described later in this chapter.

THE WILLIX AND GEE FAMILIES

All members of the Willix family had what may be the most unusual and interesting names to appear in this book, with perhaps the exception of Hatevil Nutter¹ himself. The oldest member of this family was Balthasar Willix (also seen as Willick, Willickes, Willech, Willockes, etc.).
Balthasar was the name of one of the three Wise Men, although the name does not actually originate from the Bible. The Book of Matthew describes only that the Wise Men followed the star which they had seen from the east and that this star guided them to the baby Jesus. The Bible does not give us further details about the event. Over centuries, legends were woven around this group, considered at times to be as many as twelve travelers. Later scriptures limited their number to three, based upon the number of gifts they brought, and described them as kings. In medieval times they even received names: Caspar, Melchior and Balthasar. Most biblical scholars assume they came from Persia or Babylon.

We only know of "Balthasar Willick" through the will he left dated 7 February 1598/9 in Alford Parish, Lincolnshire, England. Balthasar made his will out just in time, since he was buried at Alford six days after the date of his will, on 13 February 1598/9. In the will, we learn only the name of his wife, Anne, to whom Balthasar left everything. His children are not mentioned by name, although he left his estate to his wife "for the good and vertuous education of my children". His estate included three messuages [an old legal term for a house, buildings and adjoining land], indicating he was a man of some wealth. The will of Balthasar Willix indicates that he had possessed each of these properties for 21 years and that he had received them from Lord Willoughby, an English nobleman.

Lord Willoughby's real name was Peregrine Bertie, and his official title was the 11th Baron Willoughby d'Eresby. Lord Willoughby was a distinguished soldier during the reign of Queen Elizabeth I, and made commander of the English forces in the Netherlands, replacing the disgraced Earl of Leicester. From 1582 to 1590, he was almost constantly abroad on either diplomatic or military service, primarily in Holland and Belgium. A song titled "Lord Willoughby's Welcome Home" was written during this time and celebrated the return of the English forces and their commander from the Netherlands, and appears to been a very popular Elizabethan tune. The song is still often recorded, primarily as new-age lute music, the instrument for which it was originally written.

Historian Victor Sanborn noted in 1914 that the name Willick does not appear anywhere else in Lincolnshire at that time. He also notes that the name does not seem to be of English origin and "has a Flemish sound". Historian Frank Hackett said of the name, "It scarcely can be English." Sanborn suggests that perhaps Balthasar Willix was a protegé of Lord Willoughby who came from the Flemish areas in the Low Countries and who returned to England with him. This scenario could help explain the absence of the name in England and the leaseholds which Balthasar Willix received from him. The parish registers of Alford have entries for the baptisms of three sons of Balthasar Willix. The oldest son was named Peregrine, after Lord Willoughby, further indicating the close connection between these two men, one a distinguished nobleman and the other a commoner with no royal heritage.

Following the death of Balthasar, his widow Anne married William Bellingham on 3 July 1600, at Alford. Her new husband only lived a few years and was buried at Alford on 2 September 1606. By Bellingham, she had one daughter, Susanna, who came to America with her husband, Philemon Pormont, who became a schoolmaster at Boston. By her first marriage to Balthasar, Anne Willix had four known children:

1. Peregrine Willix² b. 22 Jul 1593 @ Alford, Lincolnshire, England
2. Balthasar Willix² b. 27 Jul 1595 @ Alford, Lincolnshire, England
Of the four children born to Balthasar Willix¹, nothing is known of any of them except Balthasar². We do not know when Susanna Willix² was born; only her death was recorded in the parish registers at Alford. We can assume that she was a young child. The other two known sons, Peregrine² and Edward², probably did not leave England.

Balthasar Willix², named for his father, emigrated to the New World and settled at Exeter, New Hampshire. His name first appears in the records there in early 1640, when he was granted one of the smaller parcels of land in that town. According to Exeter historian Bell, he was a man of "more than ordinary education" and his name appeared frequently in the records "in his own bold and handsome chirography [penmanship]." This probably proved his father's contention that the children had received a "good and virtuous education" from their mother.

Balthasar Willix² was involved in a couple of lawsuits in the early records. He won a suit in 1647 against two men named John Legate and Humphrey Wilson; there is no record of what the matter involved. But later Balthasar² lost a suit brought against him and others by the same John Legate which involved cruelty to his cattle. We know of his wife only as Anna (or Hannah) from the terrible fate she suffered. In either May or June 1648, she was on her way from Dover to Exeter when "she was waylaid, robbed and most brutally murdered, and her body flung into the river." Even Massachusetts Governor Winthrop spoke of the incident in his journal, where the victim was incorrectly noted as being "the wife of one Willip of Exeter."

Historian Bell noted: "Whether the perpetrator of the outrage was ever brought to justice is not known." But in nearby Hampton, New Hampshire the court records of 7 September 1648 indicate that Balthasar Willix² and Robert Hethersay (also Hithersay and Hethersall) sued each other for defamation. Balthasar² sued Hethersay "for raising an evil report of his deceased wife, and for breach of promise in carrying his wife to Oyster River in a canoe and not bringing her up in a canoe again." It sounds like Balthasar² claimed Hethersay took Anna Willix to Oyster River [Dover] by canoe but apparently failed to bring her back the same way as had been agreed.

Historian Sanborn notes that "Hithersay, who roved from Concord, to Lynn, Exeter and York, was apparently a wayward character, and may have been suspected of the murder." Hethersay appeared in the Exeter court in 1643 and was noted as being "many years absent from his wife". The court ordered him back to his wife in England. However, it does not appear that he obeyed the order, as he later drifted to Hampton, New Hampshire and the Maine towns of York and Wells. He was last known to be in Falmouth, Maine in 1658, after which there is no record of him.

Soon after the murder of his wife, for which the Indians for once were not blamed, Balthasar Willix² moved to Salisbury, Massachusetts, where he subsequently married Mary Hauxworth (also Hawkesworth), the widow of Thomas Hauxworth. However, Balthasar² died soon after, on 23 March 1650/1, at Salisbury. His widow Mary was granted administration of his estate in April 1651. The next year, she was sued by Robert Tuck regarding the diet of two children in her care, one about
a year old and the other only eight weeks old. Found to be "crazy and distempered", she was placed under the care of a guardian in 1664. Mary died in July 1675.

Balthasar Willix\textsuperscript{2}, by his murdered wife Anna, had three daughters, all of whom found themselves on their own, working as household servants while young unmarried women. He had no sons and therefore his surname died out in his line. The children of Balthasar Willix\textsuperscript{2} and his wife were:

+ 1. Hazelelponi Willix\textsuperscript{3}  
   b. Abt 1636 @ Exeter, Rockingham, NH  
   m. (1st) John Gee  
   m. Aft 1671 (2nd) Obadiah Wood  
   d. 27 Nov 1714 @ Ipswich, Essex, MA

2. Anna Willix\textsuperscript{3}  
   b. @ Exeter, Rockingham, NH  
   m. (1st) Robert Roscoe  
   m. (2nd) James Blount  
   m. (3rd) Seth Southel  
   m. (4th) Col. John Lear  
   d. 1694-1695 @ Nasemond Co., Virginia

3. Susannah Willix\textsuperscript{3}  
   b. @ Exeter, Rockingham, NH  
   m. Bef 1669 Francis Jones  
   d. 1713-1718 @ Exeter, Rockingham, NH

Anna Willix\textsuperscript{3} married four times. Early, she worked as a servant for the Reverend Timothy Dalton at Hampton, New Hampshire, whose widow Ruth in 1663 willed Anna\textsuperscript{3} £5. While (or soon after) Anna\textsuperscript{3} was "of Ipswich, Massachusetts", she married Robert Roscoe of Roanoke, Virginia and moved to that colony. She married second to James Blount (also Blunt), who moved his family from Virginia to the Chowan Precinct of the Colony of Carolina about 1664-1669. Chowan Precinct would later become Bertie County, North Carolina. Blount was apparently one of the first Englishmen to settle in the North Carolina colony. Historian Zella Armstrong, in her 1918 book Notable Southern Families, said the "Blount family has been pronounced the oldest in North Carolina ..." and quotes Governor Henry T. Clark, genealogist and historian, as saying "no family ... came to the Province earlier than James Blount, who settled in Chowan, North Carolina in 1664." These statements are now known to be inaccurate, but nonetheless, Blount was a very early settler in North Carolina.

Blount died in 1686, when his will was proved on 17 July, and the former Anna Willix\textsuperscript{3} married a third time to Seth Southel (also Southwell), who at one time was governor of the Albemarle colony in North Carolina. That union only lasted a couple of years, since Southel's will was proved 3 February 1693/4. Anna\textsuperscript{3} then married a fourth time to Colonel John Lear of Nasemond County, Virginia. Anna\textsuperscript{3} must have died very soon after that marriage since she was dead before 1695.

In the process of having so many husbands, Anna Willix\textsuperscript{3} accumulated a vast amount of land in North Carolina. She never had any children by any of her four husbands, so the property was inherited by her two sisters, Hazelelponi\textsuperscript{3} and Susannah\textsuperscript{3}. In a New Hampshire deed dated 4 June 1697, the two sisters sold "all the estate given to our sister Anna Lere by said Blunt and Southell in North Carolina" for £250 to Thomas Pickering of Portsmouth, "formerly our attorney". The land, "adjoining Salmon Creek, Kendrick Creek, Little River, Peatty Creek and the River Pasquatank," amounted to 12,000 acres in total. Thomas Pickering was the son-in-law of Hazelelponi Willix\textsuperscript{3} and also one of our direct ancestors, and will be described later.
Susannah Willix\(^3\) also worked as a servant in or near Hampton, New Hampshire as a young woman. In a deposition dated 8 May 1695, Thomas Nudd stated that, like "Annah Willex", he had been a servant to the Rev. Timothy Dalton at Hampton, and that "Susannah Willex lived a Servant very near us and thay allways Owned one another to be Sisters." Susannah Willix\(^3\) married, before 27 April 1669, Francis Jones of Portsmouth and had at least four children by him. He left a will dated 22 August 1713 naming his wife "Susanna" as the executor, but she died before the will was proved on 7 May 1718.

Hazelelponi Willix\(^3\), our direct ancestor, had a name at least as strange as her father Balthasar\(^2\). Her name comes from the Old Testament (1 Chronicles, 4:3) and, as one can imagine, is spelled innumerable ways in early colonial records (often Hazelponi, Haselphena and Hazelpony). Like both of her sisters, she worked as a servant before she married. She was a servant for Henry Waltham, who was a merchant involved in the fisheries business in Weymouth, Massachusetts, south of Boston. John Cooper, who also lived in the Henry Waltham household, left a will dated 21 October 1653, in which he left "tenn shillings" to "Hazillpenah Willockes, dwelling now with mr Waltham ..."

Hazelelponi\(^3\) married John Gee, of Boston, Massachusetts. Very little about him is known except that he was from London, England. The first account of him is a record stating that he and his wife "Hazpanah" had a son John born in the "Towne of Boston" on 27 May 1662. John and his family soon moved to the island of Martha's Vineyard, where he was granted a ten acre lot on 20 August 1663. He was apparently a fisherman by trade since 1665 Edgartown town records show that John Gee was "to divide the fish" caught in the town weir, with a similar record appearing two years later. In 1667, John Gee acquired more land on Martha's Vineyard in a rather unusual manner.

There lived on Martha's Vineyard a man named Francis Usselton, who was one of the first white men to establish a residence on the island. He had come from Essex County, Massachusetts, where early court records indicate that Usselton was a very litigious man, as he was either a plaintiff or defendant in a number of civil and criminal suits in 1659 and 1660. He arrived on Martha's Vineyard about 1661, where true to form, he soon shows up in the courts, suing Thomas Jones for defamation and being sued by James Pease for "belying his wife."

Usselton settled at Homes Hole Neck on Martha's Vineyard. Homes Hole is the oldest place name on the island, dating from 1646, when "the eastermost chop of homses hole" is first mentioned, only 26 years after the settlement of the Plymouth Colony. The word "hole" indicates a small inlet of water affording shelter to boats and is a common occurrence in this region. But Usselton was eventually found to be a squatter on the land that he occupied. Armed with a court order, the plaintiff delegated John Gee and four other men to go to Usselton's home and "dispossess, forcibly or otherwise," Usselton from the property. This clearly indicates that Usselton may not only have been litigious but possibly dangerous. Whether the eviction was accomplished forcibly or peaceably was never recorded, but that it was effective is a matter of record.

On 18 June 1667, as a reward for their services, the true owner of the land deeded Homes Hole Neck to John Gee and the other four men. He divided the land into six parts (reserving one-sixth for himself) "in consideration of their reall indeavour to dispossess and keep out intruders from the same land presumptuously without permission." However, none of the six shareholders remained there for settlement. All of them disposed of their rights in different ways. In the *Annals of Tisbury*,...
it is stated that the "share of John Gee became a source of subsequent litigation because of his death in 1669, and the removal of his heirs to the mainland." A man named Isaac Chase began buying these shares in 1676, and by 1699 had acquired all but the share belonging to John Gee and a fractional portion held by another man.

The *Annals of Tisbury* further state: "The sixth belonging to John Gee, as before stated, remained in abeyance for many years and requires particular examination. It appears that his widow, Hazaelletonah (a name, the like of which has never before come to the author's knowledge), removed to Boston with her three daughters, Mary, Martha, and Anne. The widow married Obadiah Woods of Ipswich, as his second wife; and according to contemporary testimony, when he brought his new wife to Ipswich from Boston it was 'the talk of the times,' whether because of her name or his second venture does not appear. Of the daughters, Mary married Thomas Pickering of Greenland, N. H., Anne married Samuel Hodgkins of Gloucester, and Martha married Thomas Cotes."

John Gee lived on Martha's Vineyard at Edgartown, in a house "about a mile Distance from the harbour". As indicated in the previous accounts, John Gee died at sea on 27 December 1669 and was marked as deceased in the town records. The young widow Hazaelletonah stayed on Martha's Vineyard for a time, as indicated in a 1670 record which states that Nicholas Butler of "Martins Vineyard" provided Indian corn to "Hazaell Gee widd. of dwelling in ye said Island". But she soon moved back to Boston, where she was baptized in the First Church on 19 November 1671.

Hazaelletonah subsequently married Obadiah Wood of Ipswich, Massachusetts, who was a baker. His first wife Margaret had died a week after giving birth to their second child on 28 June 1667. The child, a daughter named after her mother, died the same year. Historian James Savage states that by his second wife "Hazabelponah", he had a son Obadiah on 5 June 1675 as well as eight other children (James, Nathaniel, Josiah, Samuel, Elizabeth, Mary, Susanna and Margaret). Savage states that Obadiah Wood died 3 December 1694, mentioning these children and his widow "with the hard name."

The former Hazaelletonah Willix lived another twenty years, dying at Ipswich, Massachusetts on 27 November 1714. "Haselelpony Wood, widdow of Obadiah Wood" was buried at Ipswich, "aged 78 years." By her first husband, John Gee, Hazaelletonah had the following children:

1. John Gee  
   b. 27 May 1662  
   + 2. Mary Gee  
   m.  
   Thomas Pickering  
   3. Anna Gee  
   m.  
   Samuel Hodgkins  
   d. 28 Jul 1724  
   4. Martha Gee  
   m.  
   Thomas Cotes

It is assumed that the son John Gee died young, for there is no other mention of him. Anna Gee married Samuel Hodgkins of Gloucester, Massachusetts, who was a shoemaker. Samuel was the son of William and Grace (Dutch) Hodgkins of Ipswich. Samuel and Anna had 15 children. She died 28 July 1724 and he married second at Gloucester, on 3 May 1725, Mary Stockbridge. Martha Gee married Thomas Cotes (or Coates), who "in his life time was an Inhabitant of the Island of Marthas Vineyard". We have no other record of her.

Mary Gee, the eldest daughter, was our direct ancestor. Many years later, two residents of Edgartown on Martha's Vineyard testified in a deposition that they "very well Remembered John Gee
formerly of Marthas Vineyard & further we Testifie we Remembred Mary Gee his Eldest Daughter we going to school each of us with her ...". In a deposition in 1732, William Harris testified that he remembered the marriage of Obadiah Wood to Hazellepioni Gee and that "it was the talk of the times when she came to Dwell in Ipswich ...". He further stated that Hazellepioni brought with her "a maiden Daughter named Mary" who "intemmarried with one Thomas Pickerin who lived at Piscataqua ...".

It is the Pickering family into which Mary Gee married and will be described next.

THE PICKERING FAMILY

Our original ancestor in the Pickering family was John Pickering of Portsmouth, New Hampshire, who supposedly came there from Massachusetts. There were two men with that name in early Massachusetts and there has been considerable debate over the years in attempting to separate the records of the two. The debate continues to this day.

John Pickering was born in England about 1600, based upon an age of "about 60" that he gave in a 27 June 1660 deposition. Historian John Frink Rowe, in his book Newington, New Hampshire, claims that John Pickering was a descendant of Hugh Pickering, the founder of the town of Pickering, England, which dates back to the year 1273. He further claims he is descended from Sir John Pickering, who was knight marshal to King Henry VIII and a suitor for the hand of Princess (later Queen) Elizabeth. Sir John Pickering is entombed in St. Helen's Church, where Shakespeare later worshipped. These claims are all unsubstantiated.

Some historians have claimed that he was the same person as a John Pickering of Cambridge, Massachusetts, who by his wife Mary, had daughters Lydia born on 5 November 1638 and Abigail born on 22 April 1642. Although he was known to be in New Hampshire earlier than these dates, the evidence for the Cambridge connection is that he was "back and forth" between the two locations. Given the state of travel in this time period, the compiler considers this unlikely. Even the Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire, which supports the connection to Cambridge, admits that a daughter Abigail mentioned in the will of John Pickering of Portsmouth could not have been the same Abigail born at Cambridge.

There is an unverified statement that John Pickering came to Massachusetts about 1627, but no record of him exists until 1630. That record is on 28 September 1630, when "John Pickryn" and another man were ordered to sit in the stocks together for four hours at Salem for being accessories to the crimes of John Goulworth and Henry Lynn. On 6 September 1634, John made his mark on a receipt settling accounts between himself and Ambrose Gibbons for work done in enlarging Gibbons' house at Kittery during 1633-1634. This indicates that John Pickering was probably a housewright or carpenter by profession. On 25 April 1639, a tailor born at Shrewsbury named Richard Price bound himself for four years to John Pickering, but later ran away.

The name of John Pickering appears with the earliest of records at New Hampshire, beginning with the signing of a glebe [a grant of land to a minister] at Portsmouth in 1640. On 1 July 1654, Mark Hands of Boston sold to John Pickering "an Irish servant man brought over by me ... as a captive & ordered by him to me to make sale of, for the term of five years." On 27 June 1665, John Pickering sued Richard Hill for "trespass by shooting with a gun a horse & a mare of said Pickering's
which hath occasioned their death." On 7 May 1657, "Denis Mekermecke the Irish man is ordered by the Court to serve his master John Pickringe the whole five years his said master having bond against him." The court also fined George Walton £5 for stirring up "Dennis the Irish man against his master John Pickringe in giving abusive words."

On 2 February 1663/4, John was charged with not coming to meeting, but he alleged "no discontent against Mr. Moodey, the minister" or "dislike of the ordinance". Rather he stated that his "great deafness" didn't permit him to hear the sermon and the Court then requested that he "come when he can in warm weather." On 28 June 1664, John Pickering sued the town of Portsmouth "for detaining grants of land." In February 1655, the town of Portsmouth granted John Pickering 500 acres of land in what is now Newington, "the land lying between Swaden's Creek and Pincomb's creek and the great Bay ....". In 1660, he received another 50 acres in the same vicinity. These grants were probably for the trees, since John Pickering also was granted mill rights "at the South Pond" in 1658. The mill privilege was granted on the condition that John maintain a "way for foot passengers in going to meeting."

In a deed dated 17 November 1665, "John Pickering the elder of Portsmouth" deeded to his son "John Pickering the younger" his water grist mill and "all my neck of land" containing 40 acres, along with half the "dwelling house". In exchange, the elder John Pickering was to receive £15 a year for life. John Pickering made out a will on 11 January 1668/9, in which he left virtually everything to his son Thomas. He also named four daughters by first name only, leaving to "my too doghters Mary & Sarah fore ocken [oxen], sixk Cowes sixk swine to be Equally divided be tweene them."

John Pickering died one week after making out his will, on 18 January 1668/9. He was buried in the Point of Graves Cemetery in Portsmouth, which his son John deeded as a public burying ground. The court ruled that his will was "imperfect" and granted administration of the estate to his oldest son John. John Pickering1, by an unknown wife, had at least the following children:

1. Mary Pickering²
   b. Abt 1643 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. Abt 1673 John Banfield
   d. Abt 1711 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH

2. John Pickering²
   b. Abt 1645 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. 10 Jan 1665/6 Mary Stanyan
   d. 10 Apr 1721 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH

3. Sarah Pickering²
   b. Abt 1648 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH

4. Rebecca Pickering²
   b. Abt 1651 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. Samuel Rollins
   d. Aft 1744 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH

5. Abigail Pickering²
   b. Abt 1653 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. Abt 1662 William Cotton
   d. Bef 1737 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH

+ 6. Thomas Pickering²
   b. Abt 1656 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. Bef 1686 Mary Gee
   d. 1720 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH

As stated in The Great Migration Begins, "the evidence for the marriages of the children of John Pickering of Piscataqua is lamentably weak." The husbands of John Pickering's daughters are all based upon the information provided in the Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire, a work normally extremely reliable.
Mary Pickering\(^2\) married John Banfield, a Portsmouth fisherman and mariner who was born in 1642. John and Mary had eight children. He died in the Barbados about 1707.

John Pickering\(^2\) married Mary Stanyan on 10 January 1665/6, she being the daughter of Anthony Stanyan of Exeter, New Hampshire. John Pickering\(^1\) sued Anthony Stanyan in 1668 for not making good on an agreement to pay £110 to his son-in-law upon condition of a marriage between Stanyan's daughter and Pickering's son. The suit was eventually withdrawn, so Stanyan must have paid. John Pickering\(^2\) was active in the militia and achieved the rank of captain, as well as a very influential man in New Hampshire politics. He was a member of the colonial assembly of New Hampshire most years between 1680 and 1709, and acted as its presiding officer for seven of those years.

After the impeachment of Governor Andros in 1689, he marched his military company to the home of Richard Chamberlain, the colonial secretary, and took the public records by force and concealed them. Three years later, when John Pickering\(^2\) still had not divulged their whereabouts, Lieutenant-Governor Usher imprisoned him until he disclosed their place of concealment.

Sarah Pickering\(^2\) was alive and probably about 20 years old at the time her father made out his will in 1669. No further record of her is known.

Rebecca Pickering\(^2\) was underage at the time of her father's death, since she chose a guardian during the administration of her father's estate. She married Samuel Rollins (or often Rawlins, Rawlings, etc.), a Portsmouth carpenter and wheelwright who was the son of James Rollins of Dover. Samuel Rollins died 29 October 1694, while Rebecca lived to be quite old, still being alive in 1744. She had at least seven children, including a son John who drowned in the river.

Abigail Pickering\(^2\) chose the same guardian her sister did when her father died. She "apparently" married William Cotton, a Portsmouth farmer and innkeeper and the son of William and Elizabeth (Ham) Cotton. Abigail had eight children and probably died before her husband, even though she was named in his will.

Thomas Pickering\(^2\) was our direct ancestor and the man who married Mary Gee, the daughter of John and Hazelelponi (Willix) Gee, described previously. Thomas\(^2\) was born about 1656 based upon an age of 23 he claimed in 1679 and an age of 50 in 1706. Thomas was a shipwright who settled on part of the 500 acres on Great Bay given to him by his father, which was first considered in Portsmouth, but later in Newington. This parcel of land remained in the Pickering family for over 200 years.

Thomas Pickering\(^2\) became a legend in his own time for his great physical strength. A story is told about how, one day, he and his brother John\(^2\), who also was very strong, made a bet about who could carry the most sacks of grain into the mill. John\(^2\) piled up sacks until he had ten bushels on his back, which he was able to carry into the mill. Not to be outdone, Thomas\(^2\) carried eleven and a half bushels of grain on his back over the same course, winning the wager.

Another story about Thomas Pickering\(^2\) exists which describes his strength. One day, while clearing land near his home on the Great Bay, he was visited by a press gang from an English man-of-war in the harbor. The term press referred to men who were conscripted or "impressed" sailors...
in the Royal Navy. The press gang was scouring the less populated areas looking for men alone who could be carried away and "pressed" into service aboard their ship. After talking with Thomas² for a few minutes, and remarking about his "muscular development," they informed him that he was just the man His Majesty needed on board ship and commanded him to leave his work and follow them.

Thomas Pickering² declined, stating that he had a young family and was needed at home. The sailors replied "No excuse, sir, march." Thomas² then seized one of the men by the throat, threw him to the ground, and held his ax in the air, threatening to cut off all their heads, starting with the man beneath him. Arriving at the conclusion that they had met their match, the sailors beat a hasty retreat.

In a deed dated 15 July 1709, Thomas and Mary Pickering sold to William Partridge and Pelatiah Whittemore of Portsmouth "a certain estate in North and South Carolina, more particularly the estate of Seth Southel, Esq. in the Province of North Carolina adjoining Salmon Creek, Kendrick Creek, Little River, Peatty Creek and the River Pasquatank, consisting of 12000 acres excepting 4000 acres formerly sold by said Pickering to William Duckenfield." It is clear from this deed that this is the land that Thomas Pickering bought for £250 from his mother-in-law, Hazellelponi, and her sister Susanna.

Regarding the property on Martha's Vineyard that had been given to her father John Gee, the Annals of Tisbury state that "Mary Pickering, in 1730, laid the foundations for her claim to the property rights of her father in Homes Hole neck by a deposition showing her parentage, and further depositions are on record establishing the marriage of the widow Gee and her daughters. Mary (Gee) Pickering sold her rights to her kinsman, Amos Merrell of Boston, in 1730, who in turn disposed of the share to Joseph Callender of Boston. The rights possessed by the other heirs do not seem to have been asserted."

The Annals of Tisbury further state that "Joseph Callender, who had acquired the Gee interest by purchase, as above stated, entered suit against Abraham Chase, one of the heirs of Isaac, in an action of ejectment, at the November term of court, 1733, claiming one-sixth of Homes Hole neck. The jury returned a verdict in favor of Callender, and Chase appealed. The claim of Callender was finally sustained, and Chase quieted this obstacle to his complete ownership of the Neck by purchasing from Callender for £185, July 19, 1734 (Deeds, VI, 44). Mary Pickering, the surviving daughter of Gee, living at Greenland, N. H., gave a quitclaim to Chase also, and his title was finally satisfactory. As late as 1773 some of the descendants of Gee gave a surrender of their rights to the then owners of land on this neck."

Thomas² made out his will on 14 August 1719 and it was proved 20 April 1720, indicating that he probably died in early 1720. In his will, Thomas² names his wife Mary, three sons and nine daughters. Mary Gee was still listed as a widow in Newington in 1730. The children of Thomas² and Mary² (Gee) Pickering were:

1. John Pickering³
   b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   d. 1713-1717

+ 2. Mary Pickering³
   b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. 25 Dec 1702 John Fabyan
   d. Aft 1748

3. Sarah Pickering³
   b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. 26 Sep 1714 James Leach
4. Rebecca Pickering
   b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. 28 Jun 1706 (1st) Henry Jaques
   m. 24 Sep 1724 (2nd) Paul Wentworth
   d. Aft 1759

5. James Pickering
   b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. 16 Jan 1717/8 Mary Nutter
   d. 1768 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH

6. Joshua Pickering
   b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. 18 Jun 1724 (1st) Deborah Smithson
   m. 31 Jan 1759 (2nd) Mary Brackett
   d. 1768 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH

7. Abigail Pickering
   b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. 12 Jun 1718 James Seavey @ Newington

8. Hazelelponi Pickering
   b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. 4 Oct 1716 John Chamberlain @ Boston, MA

9. Hannah Pickering
   b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. 22 Dec 1729 William Blyth @ Greenland

10. Elizabeth Pickering
    b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
    m. 10 Dec 1724 (1st) Capt. John Brackett
    m. 3 Jan 1760 (2nd) Rev. Joseph Adams
    d. Feb 1762 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH

11. Thomas Pickering
    b. 28 Nov 1703 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
    m. 7 Feb 1726/7 (1st) Mary Downing
    m. 19 May 1743 (2nd) Mary Janvrin
    d. 9 Dec 1786 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH

12. Martha Pickering
    b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
    m. 6 Dec 1723 John Grow @ Greenland

13. Mehitable Pickering
    b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
    m. 19 May 1726 Samuel Weeks, Jr. @ Greenland

All of the children listed above appear in their father's will with the exception of John Pickering, the eldest son. He is listed by the Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire as having been alive in 1713 but dead by 1717, apparently without ever having married.

Sarah Pickering married James Leach, the son of James and Mary Leach of New Castle, New Hampshire. The younger James Leach was a tailor and lived at Portsmouth. Both of them were alive in 1748, but she was listed as a widow in 1761.

Rebecca Pickering was married by the Rev. Pike on 28 June 1706 to Henry Jaques, who was from Newbury, Massachusetts. Rebecca renewed her baptism covenant in the South Church at Portsmouth on 16 January 1716/7. The estate of Henry Jaques was administered by Rebecca's brother Joshua on 9 March 1721/2, which Rebecca "renounced". She remarried on 24 September 1724 to Paul Wentworth of Kittery, Maine. Six years later, his father (of the same name) deeded Paul all of his land at Dover. Despite that, however, Rebecca was listed as a "pauper" living with nephew Ephraim Pickering at Newington in 1759, when she attempted to get support from her grandsons.

Lt. James Pickering married Mary Nutter, the great granddaughter of Hatevil Nutter, on 16 January 1717/8. She was the daughter of John and Rosamond (Johnson) Nutter, also our direct
ancestors through another of their daughters who married into the Coleman family (to be described later). James$^3$ and Mary$^4$ lived at Newington and had five children. James$^3$ received most of the land that belonged to his father. He also became a proprietor of Barnstead, New Hampshire in 1727, drawing lots No. 34 in the 1$^{st}$ Division and No. 10 in the 2$^{nd}$ Division. James Pickering$^3$ died in 1768, when his will was proved 31 August.

Joshua Pickering$^3$ married the young widow Deborah Smithson, who had married John Smithson five years before and had two children by him. She was also the daughter of John Pickering$^3$, Joshua's first cousin. He married second, on 31 January 1759, to Mary Brackett, who he mentioned in his will. Like his brother, Joshua$^3$ was a proprietor at Barnstead, New Hampshire, where he received lots No. 88 in the 1$^{st}$ Division and No. 111 in the 2$^{nd}$ Division. Joshua Pickering$^3$ died in 1768, his will being proved 25 May of that year. One of Joshua's sons, John Pickering$^3$, attended Harvard and went on to be the Chief Justice of the New Hampshire Supreme Court and later a U.S. District Court judge.

Abigail Pickering$^3$, as a child in 1697, was shot by Abraham Pett. She was shot with a pistol "used for scaring away birds" but survived the wound. In December 1699, her father brought legal action against Pett and John Partridge, who was his "master", possibly indicating that the shooting was not accidental. At Newington on 12 June 1718, Abigail$^3$ married James Seavey of New Castle, New Hampshire, a town located on an island just two miles from Portsmouth. James and Abigail$^3$ lived at New Castle.

Hazelelponi Pickering$^3$, obviously saddled with the name of her grandmother, moved to Boston and married John Chamberlain there on 4 October 1716. Nothing else is known about her.

Hannah Pickering$^3$ married William Blyth (also Bly) at Greenland on 22 December 1729. He may have been the son of William Bly, a cordwainer, who lived at Portsmouth before selling his property there and moving to Ipswich, Massachusetts.


Thomas Pickering$^3$ was born 28 November 1703 at Portsmouth. Like his two brothers, Thomas$^3$ was a proprietor at Barnstead, New Hampshire, where he drew lots No. 38 in the 1$^{st}$ Division and No. 5 in the 2$^{nd}$ Division. On 7 February 1726/7, he married Mary Downing, the daughter of Col. John and Elizabeth (Harrison) Downing. After having seven children, Mary died and Thomas Pickering$^3$ married again, on 19 May 1743, to Mary Janvrin, the daughter of Capt. John and Elizabeth (Knight) Janvrin, by whom he had eight more children. The fifth of those fifteen children was named John Gee Pickering$^4$ in memory of his maternal grandfather.

Martha Pickering$^3$ married, at Greenland on 6 December 1723, John Grow. The name is also recorded as Grove. Nothing else is known of her.

Mehitable Pickering$^3$, the youngest of the children of Thomas$^2$ and Mary (Gee) Pickering, married on 19 May 1726, also at Greenland, Lt. Samuel Weeks. He was the son of Capt. Samuel and Eleanor (Haines) Weeks of Greenland. The younger Samuel Weeks was a tanner and lived at
Greenland. Samuel and Mehitable had seven children.

Mary Pickering\textsuperscript{3}, our direct ancestor and the oldest surviving child of Thomas\textsuperscript{2} and Mary (Gee) Pickering, married John Fabyan\textsuperscript{2} on Christmas Day in 1702. We now return to the Fabyan family as described earlier.

THE THIRD GENERATION FABYAN FAMILY

Lt. John Fabyan\textsuperscript{2} was a tailor and draper who lived at Newington. He served in the militia, was a justice of the peace, represented Newington in the Provincial General Assembly, and was a deacon in the Newington Church. John Fabyan left a will dated 6 August 1748, which names his wife Mary and seven children. It also names his sister Sarah Fabyan, who apparently never married but lived with John and his family. The will of John Fabyan\textsuperscript{2} orders his son Samuel\textsuperscript{3} to deliver "to his Aunt Sarah a Good Milch Cow & the bed which she Commonly now uses". He further ordered that Samuel\textsuperscript{3} provide for her support and maintenance "provided she will live with him".

John Fabyan\textsuperscript{2} left to his wife, the former Mary Pickering\textsuperscript{3}, the use of his "dwelling house & household goods during her Life." He ordered his son Samuel to provide Mary with "a Comfortable Support & Maintenance during her Life & to take all necessary & Reasonable care to make her Life Easy & Comfortable ...". John\textsuperscript{2} left "thirty pounds old Tenor bills of Public Credit" to be paid by his son Samuel Fabyan\textsuperscript{3} to each of his other six children. John Fabyan\textsuperscript{2} died on 30 March 1756, at age 75. His children, by the former Mary Pickering\textsuperscript{3}, were:

1. Capt. John Fabyan\textsuperscript{3}
   b. 1704-1705 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
   d. 3 Jun 1782 @ Scarborough, Maine

2. Joseph Fabyan\textsuperscript{3}
   b. 1 Apr 1707 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
   m. Oct 1739 Mary Brackett
   d. 15 Mar 1789 @ Scarborough, Maine

+ 3. Elizabeth Fabyan\textsuperscript{3}
   b. @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
   m. 3 Dec 1724 Benjamin Downing

+ 4. Mary Fabyan\textsuperscript{3}
   b. @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
   m. 11 Sep 1732 John Woodman

+ 5. Samuel Fabyan\textsuperscript{3}
   b. 3 Dec 1710 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
   m. 29 Nov 1733 (1st) Rosamond Nutter
   m. 12 Dec 1745 (2nd) Elizabeth Huntress
   m. 11 Mar 1777 (3rd) Mary Berry @ Greenland
   d. Abt 1790

6. Phoebe Fabyan\textsuperscript{3}
   b. 6 Sep 1713 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
   m. 17 Sep 1733 Jethro Furber

7. Mehitable Fabyan\textsuperscript{3}
   b. 29 Apr 1716 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
   m. Bef 1742 William Walker

The reader will probably notice that no less than three of the children of John\textsuperscript{2} and Mary\textsuperscript{3} (Pickering) Fabyan are direct ancestors of the compiler's family. The descendants of Samuel Fabyan\textsuperscript{3} will be followed at this time. His sisters Elizabeth\textsuperscript{3} and Mary\textsuperscript{3}, who married into the Downing and Woodman families respectively, will be described in a future chapter.

Capt. John Fabyan\textsuperscript{3} settled in Scarborough, Maine, near Portland, where he was by at least 1733. John\textsuperscript{3} never married and his gravestone states that he died 3 June 1782 at the age of 77½ years. We know nothing further about him.
Joseph Fabyan\textsuperscript{3} also settled at Scarborough, Maine, where he was as early as 1730. The fact that he and his brother moved from the area where the rest of the family lived and were not treated well in their father's will may indicate that there may have been some type of falling out between them and their parents. On the other hand, they may have simply migrated east to find land, since at this time new lands were opening up in Maine. In October 1739, Joseph Fabyan\textsuperscript{3} married Mary Brackett, the daughter of Joshua and Mary (Haines) Brackett. Joseph\textsuperscript{3} died at Scarborough on 15 March 1789, when he was nearly 82 years old. His wife Mary died on 1 May 1800. Their son Joshua Fabyan\textsuperscript{4} was an overseer of Bowdoin College. Their great grandson George Fabyan\textsuperscript{6} gave $250,000 to Harvard University to establish the chair of Comparative Pathology in the school.

Elizabeth Fabyan\textsuperscript{3} married Benjamin Downing, son of Capt. John Downing. Mary Fabyan\textsuperscript{3} married John Woodman of Oyster River. As stated above, both of these families will be examined later in greater detail.

Phoebe Fabyan\textsuperscript{3}, whose name also appears as Phebe, was baptized 6 September 1713. She married Jethro Furber\textsuperscript{4}, the son of Jethro\textsuperscript{3} and Leah\textsuperscript{3} (Nute) Furber, described previously.

Mehitable Fabyan\textsuperscript{3}, whose name is also spelled Mehitable, was baptized 29 April 1716 and grew up to marry William Walker. They lived at Kittery, Maine, where he was a shipwright. William was considerably older than Mehitable\textsuperscript{3}, since he had first married Deborah Berry, on 16 January 1723/4, when Mehitable\textsuperscript{3} was only about six or seven years old. William Walker married Mehitable\textsuperscript{3} second before 1742.

Samuel Fabyan\textsuperscript{3}, one of three third-generation Fabyans who were our direct ancestors, was born at the Fabyan homestead on 3 December 1710. As mentioned previously, he received that homestead and all of the personal property in his father's estate in exchange for payment of £30 to each of his six brothers and sisters. Samuel was also bound in the will to care for his mother and his father's sister Sarah for the rest of their lives.

On 29 November 1733, four days before his 23\textsuperscript{rd} birthday, Samuel Fabyan\textsuperscript{3} married Rosamond Nutter\textsuperscript{4}, the daughter of John\textsuperscript{3} and Rosamond (Johnson) Nutter. The wife of Samuel Fabyan\textsuperscript{3} was the great granddaughter of Hatevil Nutter\textsuperscript{1}. After she died, Samuel\textsuperscript{3} married second, on 12 December 1745, to Elizabeth Huntress, the daughter of Samuel and Abigail (Ham) Huntress. We are descended from Elizabeth and it is the Huntress and Ham families that we examine next.

THE HUNTRESS AND HAM FAMILIES

One of the families with ties to the Fabyan (and therefore Furber and therefore Nutter) family is Huntress. Our original ancestor with this name is George Huntress. There is no record of any other Huntress family in either New England or the southern colonies. The name often appears in the early colonial records as Huntrass, Huntriss, Huntrus and Huntrys, as well as occasionally just Hunt. In fact, the shortened name Hunt was taken by a number of his descendants.

Huntress is a very uncommon name and is rarely found in early English records. There have been a number of theories about its origin. One is that it is a corruption of the common early English name Hunter. Historian Henry W. Hardon suggested Hunter became Hunterson (son of Hunter), which became corrupted to Huntreson, which was eventually shortened to Huntress. Others have
suggested that Huntress is simply an old English word meaning a female hunter. It was even suggested that the name could have come into existence because of an illegitimate child. In many parts of Europe during the Middle Ages, when a child was born out of wedlock, it was given a feminized version of the mother's surname. Thus, an illegitimate child born to a woman named Hunt or Hunter might receive the name Huntress. The fact that a number of the descendants of George Huntress adopted a shortened version of the name may lend some credibility to this theory.

**George Huntress** was born in England about 1646, based upon the ages that he gave in depositions years later. The date of his arrival remains unknown. The earliest record we have of his presence in New England is an interesting one; it was for a bail bond he gave for his wife Mary on 16 May 1676. There is no record of why she had been arrested. However, George Huntress was probably in New England much earlier than this record, since from a deposition given on 1 September 1680, he stated that 13 years before (in 1667), he was living with John Locke of Hampton as his servant. In November 1706, he deposed that as a young man, he also had lived with and had been a servant to Capt. Richard Cutt, "to look after his cattle".

Another servant who worked for Richard Cutt at this time was **Mary Nott** (also Natt, Knat, or Knott). As with the name Huntress, her surname does not appear in early New Hampshire records. Thus, it appears that both George and Mary came to this country as servants and may not have had other family in New England. Sometime in the period 1670-1675, George Huntress and Mary Nott married. George is listed in the tax rolls for Portsmouth in October 1672 and it is a good possibility that he was married by then. George Huntress settled at Portsmouth, in the area that later became Greenland.

George or his wife appear in several early colonial records. In 1675, "Mary Hunt", about 27 years of age (and thus born about 1648), made a deposition regarding the theft of some cheese from "our house" by Samuel Clark. A warrant for stealing from "George Hunt" was issued for Clark, who was convicted of the offense. There was apparently some bad blood between the Clark and Huntress families, for a year later, Samuel Clark made a complaint against "Mary Huntress". The complaint was dismissed and George Huntress had his "bill of costs" allowed against Clark. Clark apparently didn't pay the bill, but there is a record stating that the wife of George Huntress "collected by breaking open Clark's cupboard and taking powder". This may have been why George had to bail his wife out of jail.

George Huntress served as a soldier in King William's War in 1696. This war was the first intercolonial war in America, so called because it occurred at the beginning of the reign of William and Mary in 1689 and lasted until 1697. It began as the War of the Grand Alliance between France and the combined powers of England, Holland, Germany, Spain, and Austria, and soon extended to the respective colonies of France and England in America. George Huntress also served as a constable and was a surveyor of Bloody Point (later Newington). George left a will dated 28 June 1715 and died soon after, as it was proved on 19 August the same year. In the will, which he signed with his mark, George Huntress named his wife Mary and his children (all born in what later became the Greenland portion of Newington, order only approximate):

1. Ann Huntress
   - b. Bef 1675 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   - m. Bef 1691 (1st) Thomas Chesley
   - m. Abt 1700 (2nd) Joseph Daniels
   - d. 1704
2. Mary Huntress
   b. Abt 1675 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. 21 Jun 1694 Henry Seward
   d. Abt 1760

3. George Huntress
   b. Abt 1680 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. 4 Aug 1701 Sarah Morrill
   d. Bef 1713

4. Samuel Huntress
   b. Abt 1687 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. 20 Dec 1711 (1st) Abigail Ham @ Portsmouth
   m. 21 Jan 1742 (2nd) Mary Coleman
   d. 28 Apr 1758 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH

5. John Huntress
   b. Abt 1690 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. Bef 1727 Mary -----
   d. 1751

6. Hannah Huntress
   b. Abt 1692 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. Bef 1713 Maturin Ricker

7. Abigail Huntress
   b. Abt 1694 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
   m. 22 Jul 1714 Moses Dam

Ann Huntress, probably the oldest of the children, married before 1691 Thomas Chesley, the son of Thomas and Elizabeth (Thomas) Chesley. Ann had six children by Thomas Chesley, who was dead by about 1700, when Ann remarried to Joseph Daniels. She had another three children by Joseph Daniels, including a daughter Ann Daniels who married her son Samuel Chesley (the marriage of a half brother and sister). Ann died in late 1704.

Mary Huntress married on 21 June 1694 to Henry Seward, a Portsmouth shipwright. Henry was the son of John and Agnes Seward of Portsmouth. Henry died about 1737, leaving a will naming his wife Mary and his five children. Mary died about 1760 according to one account.

George Huntress, the eldest son, was married on 4 August 1701 to Sarah Morrell (or Morrill), the daughter of John and Sarah (Hodsdon) Morrell. Her father was a plasterer and mason who lived at Kittery, Maine. George Huntress died less than twelve years later. He died before his father but is mentioned in his father's will as deceased. His widow Sarah married twice more, first to Nicholas Frost on 30 December 1714, whose first wife had been found guilty of adultery, and second to Thomas Darling in the spring of 1720. Before he died, George fathered five children by Sarah.

John Huntress was a farmer at Newington. By his father's will, he received half of the Huntress homestead. He married, by 1727, a woman named Mary, last name unknown. He drowned April 1751 and a coroner's jury met on 28 April 1751 to view the body and investigate the circumstances. John left a will which mentioned his wife Mary and seven children.

Hannah Huntress married, about 1712, Maturin Ricker, the son of George and Eleanor (Evans) Ricker of Dover. Maturin's father and uncle (for whom he was named) were killed by Indians in June 1706 "while running up the lane near the garrison". Maturin also had a cousin who was carried away by the Indians following that same attack and taken to Canada, baptized by the French and by family tradition became a priest. Maturin and Hannah had twelve children.

Abigail Huntress was born about 1694 and married, on 22 July 1714, the Deacon Moses Dam. He was the son of Sgt. John and Elizabeth (Furber) Dam, mentioned previously. Moses Dam was probably about 20 years older than his wife, but outlived her. He married second the former
Elizabeth Kennard, the widow of Richard Waterhouse. Moses was her fourth husband. She was the same Elizabeth Kennard who, as a young woman, had an illegitimate child, mentioned in a previous chapter. Moses and Abigail\(^2\) had nine children.

**Samuel Huntress\(^2\)**, our direct ancestor, was born about 1687. He married, on 20 December 1711, Abigail Ham. She was a fourth-generation Ham descendant in this country. We will briefly examine the Ham family and then return to Samuel Huntress\(^2\).

The first Ham ancestor of whom we know was **William Ham**. He was a fisherman who arrived at Richmond Island (near present-day Portland, Maine) aboard the *Speedwell* on 26 April 1635. But, along with five others, he “ran away” in June of that year, presumably to fish for themselves. Along with John Lander, another who left the *Speedwell*, William Ham fished near Cape Neddick for a time. William settled as early as 1646 in Exeter, New Hampshire. On 13 January 1652, he received a grant of land at Portsmouth, which would remain his home. The land was on what became known as Ham's Point, later Freeman's Point.

William Ham had a wife by the name of Honor, last name unknown. It is entirely possible, but remains unproven, that she was Honor Stephens, who married someone with the initials "W.H." at St. Andrews Parish in Plymouth, England on 22 November 1622. In 1656, William Ham, known as "Old Ham", was named as one of three "men witches" at Portsmouth. On 11 November 1667, his wife Honor sold his dwellings and fisheries plant on Malligoe Island on the Isles of Shoals, which was at the time in the possession of a William Oliver. These last two points might indicate that William was longer entirely in control of his faculties.

William Ham\(^1\) died on 26 Jan 1672/3 and left a will proved 27 June 1673. William\(^1\) and Honor Ham had only two known children, a son Matthew\(^2\) and a daughter Elizabeth\(^2\). The daughter married William Cotton, a tavern keeper who settled at "Strawberry Bank" (Portsmouth). Since the son Matthew\(^2\) died before his father, Elizabeth\(^2\) Cotton and Matthew's sons received the estate of William Ham\(^1\).

Like his father, **Matthew Ham\(^2\)** was a fisherman and had a grant of land at Portsmouth in 1654 next to that of his father. Also like his father, he also had property at the Isles of Shoals. In 1657, he traded lawsuits with Thomas Nichols regarding a fishing contract and an account due from a fishing voyage. Matthew\(^2\) married but the name of his wife never appears. His wife is listed in the 1665 Portsmouth tax records as "Widow Ham", indicating that Matthew\(^2\) was dead by this time. However, despite the fact that most accounts do not give her name, the compiler believes it was Sarah.

The evidence for this contention is based upon the fact that she remarried to Tobias Taylor, who was living with her in the Ham home at Portsmouth on 11 November 1667. Not long after, the wife of Tobias Taylor, identified as *Sarah*, drowned after being washed out of a boat while crossing the Ipswich bar. An inquest was held regarding this incident on 27 February 1667/8, and we can assume it was held almost immediately after the accident occurred. Tobias Taylor subsequently sold the former Ham house at Portsmouth to a Mr. Fryer on 7 July 1670.

Matthew Ham\(^2\), by his wife Sarah, had four sons, although their grandfather William Ham\(^1\) only named three of them in his will. They were (order only approximate):
Little is known of these sons. **Thomas Ham** became a mariner and settled in Rhode Island. On 2 August 1680, he sold the land that he had received from his grandfather. **Matthew Ham**, a cooper by profession, was ignored in his grandfather's will but was deeded land from his brother William in 1677. **John Ham** was a fisherman and proud of it, since he always signed his papers "John Ham Fisherman". He married twice, the first time to the sister of John Lydston, by whom he had six children; the second time to Judith Pitman, by whom he had another five children.

**William Ham**, our direct ancestor and probably the oldest son, was executor of his grandfather's will and received the Ham homestead at Portsmouth. He was a cooper [barrel maker] who probably made barrels for the shipment of cod fish. He married Sarah, last name unknown, but possibly the daughter of Alexander Dennett based on the fact that their oldest son referred to the Dennets as "kinsmen". After William died, Sarah remarried to John Gilden, who soon purchased a 20-acre grant from Alexander Dennett, which strengthens the contention that she was a Dennett. William and Sarah Ham had the following children:

1. **Samuel Ham**
   
   "b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH m. Bef 1710 Elizabeth Sloper d. 1731"

2. **Sarah Ham**
   
   "b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH"

3. **Elizabeth Ham**
   
   "b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH m. 4 Jun 1710 Thomas Drowne"

4. **Mary Ham**
   
   "b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH"

5. **Hannah Ham**
   
   "b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH"

6. **Abigail Ham**
   
   "b. @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH m. 20 Dec 1711 Samuel Huntress"

Little is known of these children except that **Samuel Ham** was a Portsmouth weaver and married Elizabeth Sloper, the daughter of John and Sarah Sloper of Kittery.

**Abigail Ham**, our direct ancestor, married Samuel Huntress on 20 December 1711, and we now continue the discussion of the Huntress family.

**Samuel Huntress** was born about 1687. He and his brother John received 150 acres of the homestead of their father George Huntress, to be shared between them. Part of this land fell within the boundaries of Portsmouth and part within Newington. This land was later divided between the two families by a deed in 1758. After bearing him eight children, all baptized at the Newington church, the former Abigail Ham died. Samuel remarried, on 21 January 1742, Mary Coleman. He left a will dated 29 March 1758, which he signed with his mark. According to his gravestone, he died on 28 April 1758 at the age of 71. His will mentions his widow Mary and five surviving children. Samuel and Abigail (Ham) Huntress had the following children:
William Huntress\textsuperscript{3} was baptized at Newington on 15 September 1717, as were Samuel\textsuperscript{3} and Abigail\textsuperscript{3}, although probably none except perhaps Abigail\textsuperscript{3} were infants at the time. He married Susanna Downing, the daughter of Joshua and Susanna (Dennett) Downing. William\textsuperscript{3} died about 1785. In April 1794, his widow Susanna was judged \textit{non compos mentis}, a legal term meaning that she was not of sound mind and not legally responsible. She died 5 February 1804.

Samuel Huntress\textsuperscript{3} was probably born about 1714 but baptized at Newington on 15 September 1717. He served as a soldier in the militia and was at Louisbourg in 1745, where he claimed that "he suffered among other hardships a lack of the rum ration for 60 days", proving that military duty was somewhat different in those days. He married Mary Coleman on 14 January 1741/2 at Newington, she being the daughter of Eleazor and Anne (Nutter) Coleman, who are also our direct ancestors (to be described later). Samuel Huntress\textsuperscript{3} died before his father's will was administered in 1758.

Abigail Huntress\textsuperscript{3}, like her two older brothers, was baptized at Newington on 15 September 1717. She married, on 22 April 1739, to Phineas Coleman, the brother to Anna Coleman. He was a cordwainer and lived at Newington. They had at least six children born at Newington.

George Huntress\textsuperscript{3} was baptized on 2 November 1718 at Newington and married there on 26 May 1743 to Mary Ring. Mary was the daughter of Deac. Seth and Elizabeth (Libby) Ring. There was a strong family tradition that Seth Ring was of Indian blood. This turns out to be very possible since his father was Joseph Ring, who married Mary Brackett. That family, to be described later, suffered heavily from Indian problems. In the \textit{Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire}, it is stated that "if Mary was taken at Falmouth in 1690 or was with her Brackett grandparents at Sandy Beach in 1691 when they were killed and many unnamed members of their family taken prisoner, it is not impossible that she had a child by an Indian father during her captivity." Seth's father was captured by the Indians and tortured and burned at the stake by them in 1704. Therefore, the wife of George Huntress\textsuperscript{3} was likely one fourth Indian. George\textsuperscript{3} and his wife Mary only had two daughters known to us. George\textsuperscript{3} was dead when his father's will was

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Birth Date</th>
<th>Event Date</th>
<th>Location</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>William Huntress\textsuperscript{3}</td>
<td>Abt 1713</td>
<td>15 May 1747</td>
<td>Newington, Rockingham, NH</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Susanna Downing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Samuel Huntress\textsuperscript{3}</td>
<td>Abt 1714</td>
<td>14 Jan 1741/2</td>
<td>Newington, Rockingham, NH</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Mary Coleman</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Abigail Huntress\textsuperscript{3}</td>
<td>Abt 1716</td>
<td>22 Apr 1739</td>
<td>Newington, Rockingham, NH</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Phineas Coleman</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>George Huntress\textsuperscript{3}</td>
<td>2 Nov 1718</td>
<td>26 May 1743</td>
<td>Newington, Rockingham, NH</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Mary Ring</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Solomon Huntress\textsuperscript{3}</td>
<td>11 Dec 1720</td>
<td></td>
<td>Newington, Rockingham, NH</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>+6</td>
<td>Elizabeth Huntress\textsuperscript{3}</td>
<td>7 Apr 1723</td>
<td>12 Dec 1745</td>
<td>Newington, Rockingham, NH</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Samuel Fabyan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Paul Huntress\textsuperscript{3}</td>
<td>4 Jun 1727</td>
<td></td>
<td>Newington, Rockingham, NH</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Joseph Huntress\textsuperscript{3}</td>
<td>28 Apr 1734</td>
<td></td>
<td>Newington, Rockingham, NH</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Solomon Huntress\(^3\), baptized at Newington on 11 December 1730, was a farmer at Newington. Nothing else is known of him. Paul Huntress\(^3\), baptized 4 June 1727 at Newington, was not mentioned in his father's will of 1758 and probably died unmarried prior to that. The youngest son, Joseph Huntress\(^3\), was baptized at Newington on 28 April 1734. He married Sobriety Tobey at Portsmouth on Christmas Day 1755, hers being one of the more fascinating names of the time. Solomon Huntress\(^3\) died 14 July 1804.

Elizabeth Huntress\(^3\), our direct ancestor, was baptized at Newington on 7 April 1723. She married, as his second wife, Samuel Fabyan\(^3\) of Newington, introduced earlier. We now resume the discussion of him.

SAMUEL FABYAN AND HIS FAMILY

Samuel Fabyan\(^3\) was born at Newington on 3 December 1710. He received his father's homestead in exchange for payment of £30 to each of his six brothers and sisters and for the perpetual care of his mother and aunt. On 29 November 1733, Samuel Fabyan\(^3\) married Rosamond Nutter\(^4\), the daughter of John\(^3\) and Rosamond (Johnson) Nutter and the great granddaughter of Hatevil Nutter\(^1\). She soon died and on 12 December 1745, 22-year-old Elizabeth Huntress\(^3\) married a widower 12 years older than her who had four children at home. Elizabeth\(^3\) gave Samuel four more children. Elizabeth also died and Samuel Fabyan\(^3\) married a third time, on 11 March 1777, to Mary Berry. Samuel's will, dated 21 September 1782 and proved 17 March 1790, names his wife Mary and his children. The children of Samuel Fabyan\(^3\), the first four by the former Rosamond Nutter\(^4\) and the second four by the former Elizabeth Huntress, were:

1. John Fabyan\(^4\)  
   b. 4 May 1735 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   d. Died young

2. John Fabyan\(^4\)  
   b. 6 Mar 1737 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. 25 Feb 1768 Mehitable Berry @ Greenland  
   d. 1805

3. Mary Fabyan\(^4\)  
   b. 11 Mar 1739 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. 13 Dec 1764 James Pickering  
   d. Bef 1773

4. Rosamond Fabyan\(^4\)  
   b. 14 Jun 1741 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   d. Died young

5. Elizabeth Fabyan\(^4\)  
   b. 12 Oct 1746 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. 1 Apr 1768 Dennis Hoyt  
   d. 27 Apr 1838 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH

6. Samuel Fabyan\(^4\)  
   b. 7 Aug 1748 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. 18 Aug 1778 Ann Pickering  
   d. 14 Apr 1811 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH

7. Abigail Fabyan\(^4\)  
   b. 1750 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. 26 Jan 1776 William Pickering  
   d. 3 Jul 1829

+ 8. Rosamond Fabyan\(^4\)  
   b. 14 Jun 1752 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. 4 Oct 1770 Levi Furber @ Newington  
   d. 13 Feb 1802 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH

The first John Fabyan\(^4\) died as an infant. The second John Fabyan\(^4\) grew up to marry
Mehitable Berry at Greenland on 25 February 1768. He and his wife lived at Newington, where he died in 1805. They had five known children, three of whom married Pickering. **Mary Fabyan** married James Pickering, the son of Thomas and Mary (Downing) Pickering, on 13 December 1764. They lived at Newington. After Mary died, James Pickering married second to Mercy Gowen at Newington on 16 November 1773 and later lived at Exeter. **Rosamond Fabyan**, named for her mother, died in infancy.

**Elizabeth Fabyan**, named for her father's new wife (the former Elizabeth Huntress) married Capt. Dennis Hoyt, the son of John and Lydia (Miller) Hoyt. They lived at Newington, where he died 22 April 1818 and she on 27 April 1838 at the age of 92. **Samuel Fabyan** married Ann Pickering, the daughter of Major Ephraim and Lydia (Coleman) Pickering. Samuel's father got his title from being an officer in the Revolutionary War. Samuel and Ann lived at Newington, where he died in 1811. Ann died on 26 December 1833. **Abigail Fabyan** also married a Pickering, William Pickering, the son of Thomas and Mary (Janvrin) Pickering. They lived at Greenland, where they had ten children. William died in either 1793 or 1798, while Abigail lived until 3 July 1829.

**Rosamond Fabyan** is our direct ancestor. She was born 14 June 1752, according to the Newington town records, and baptized at the church there seven days later. On 4 October 1770, while still just 18 years old, she married Levi Furber, with whom we left off in the previous chapter. We will pick up the story of Levi and his family in a future chapter.
THE FIELD FAMILY

The Field family is unique in this family history in that it can be traced further back in antiquity than any other family mentioned in this book. Even if one is fortunate enough to be able to trace one's early colonial ancestors back to England, it is uncommon to track them much before the sixteenth century, simply because extant written records become increasingly scarce. In the case of the Field family, we got a break. Early members of the family lived in the little village of Sowerby, England, which today is about four miles southwest of Halifax in the county of Yorkshire.

The Field family were among those people. In 1901, historian Frederick Clifton Pierce published his *Field Genealogy* from which all this information was extracted. Pierce, in turn, relied heavily upon the Wakefield Manor court roles for his information. Pierce writes that the surname Field is so old in England that "probably not a dozen families in England can prove so high an antiquity." The surname itself, like Hill or Wood, is derived from an area where the Field ancestors originally lived, in this case on land on which the timber had been felled, as distinguished from woodland.

In ancient times, the name was written *De la Feld, De la Felde, Del Feld*, etc. The world "field" was originally spelled "feld" in Old English, as in very early Bibles that contain phrases like "consider the lilies of the field." The French prefix in the name reflects its Norman origin. The earliest recorded ancestor with this name was Hubertus de la Feld, who went to England with William the Conqueror in the year 1066 from near Colmar in Alsace, the region near the border of France and Germany. For his military service, Hubertus de la Feld received large grants of land.
from William after the latter conquered England and became its king. In the 14th century, probably as a result of wars between France and England, the De la Fields dropped their French prefix and ever after wrote their name Field.

As an interesting sidebar, it has been written that there are no cases of hereditary surnames being used in England prior to the Norman Conquest. The use of such names was even a novelty in Normandy at the time, where the custom of using a "last name" was just then taking root. After William the Conqueror (who was from Normandy) took control of England, the use of such names soon began there. But even then the use of a surname was almost exclusive to those who had followed William the Conqueror, until the usage of a surname became more widespread about the middle of the 14th century.

The first Field ancestor from whom we can trace descent is Roger Del Feld, who was born in Sowerby about 1240. This probable descendant of Hubertus De la Feld had two known children, both born at Sowerby. (As with Roger1, the surnames will be written as they are found in original records):

1. Richard De Feld
   b. Abt 1276 @ Sowerby, Yorkshire, England
+ 2. Thomas Del Feld
   b. Abt 1278 @ Sowerby, Yorkshire, England

Thomas Del Feld2 was named in the Wakefield Manor court rolls as a juror in 1307. His name appears again in 1314 and in 1322, when he was at "Halifax Court." Like his father, he resided at Sowerby, and had the following known children:

+ 1. John Del Feld3
   b. Abt 1300 @ Sowerby, Yorkshire, England
2. Adam De Feld3
   b. @ Sowerby, Yorkshire, England

John Del Feld3, called the "son of Thomas del Feld", was named in the Wakefield Manor rolls in 1326, 1334 and 1336. By the time of the last entry, he had land at Sowerby. John4 had at least the son:

+ 1. Thomas Del Feld4
   b. 1330 @ Sowerby, Yorkshire, England
   m. Annabelle -----

Thomas Del Feld4 was born at Sowerby in 1330. He was constable of Sowerby in 1365 and greave [a court bailiff] in 1370. He and another man "hired Sowerby mill" in 1380, and Thomas4 was a special juror in 1384. In 1370, he "took a piece of land" in "Dedewyferode", but he may have later moved to Bradford. His name appears frequently in the Wakefield rolls until 1391, and it is assumed that this is the year in which Thomas Del Feld4 died. With the fourth-generation Thomas4, we know for the first time the name of a wife. Thomas4 and his wife Annabelle had at least the son:

+ 1. Thomas Del Felde5
   b. 1360 @ Sowerby or Bradford, England
   m. Isabel -----

Thomas Del Felde5 was born at either Sowerby or Bradford in 1360, but lived in the latter place as an adult. Most of what we know about Thomas5 we know from his will, which was dated 12 March 1429. In the will, he left his wife Isabel all his land and buildings "in villa and tertory of Bynglay", the remainder to go to his heirs. The will of Thomas5 also specifies that after the death of "Anabelle my mother", his son Robert is to have his lands "in villa and tertory of Bradford". He further specified that in the event that Robert should die without any children the remainder should go to "William, his brother." Thomas Del Felde5 died in 1429.

1. Robert Feld6
   b. @ Bradford, England
William Feld⁶ was probably born at Bradford, England, where he later lived. He married someone named Katherine, to whom letters of administration were granted as his widow on 21 April 1480. The children of William⁶ and Katherine Feld were:

1. William Feld⁷ 
   b. @ Bradford, England 
2. John Feld⁷ 
   b. @ Bradford, England 

William Feld⁷ was also born at Bradford, but later lived at East Ardsley, England. His children were:

1. Richard Feld⁸ 
   b. @ Bradford, England 
   m. Elizabeth ----- 
   d. Dec 1542 @ East Ardsley, England 
2. Thomas Feld⁸ 
   b. @ Bradford, England 
3. John Feld⁸ 
   b. Abt 1519 @ Bradford, England 
   d. 26 Mar 1587/8 @ London, England 

Reverend John Feld⁸, born at Bradford about 1519, was rector of St. Giles Parish, Cripplegate, London, England. He was also the author of "A Godly Exhortation by Occasion of the Late Judgment of God Showed at Paris Garden, 13 Jan. 1583", a vicious attack upon the "theatrical entertainments". John Feld⁸ died 26 March 1587/8. His children were:

1. Theophilus Field⁹ 
   b. 22 Jan 1574 @ Cripplegate, London, England 
   m. Alice ----- 
   d. 2 Jun 1636 @ Hereford, England 
2. John Field⁹ 
   b. Abt 1579 @ Cripplegate, London, England 
   m. 13 Aug 1609 Elen Hockinson @ England 
   d. @ Boston, Lincolnshire, England 
3. Nathaniel Field⁹ 
   b. 13 Jun 1581 @ Cripplegate, London, England 
   d. died young 
4. Nathaniel Field⁹ 
   b. 17 Oct 1587 @ Cripplegate, London, England 
   m. Anne ----- 
   d. 20 Feb 1632/3 London, England 

By the ninth generation, the family name had evolved to its present-day spelling. Two brothers of our ancestor rose to positions of some stature and deserve mention here. Theophilus Field⁹ became a noted clergyman, known personally to the King of England. He was educated at Pembroke Hall, Cambridge and at Oxford. After being a rector and vicar at several small parishes, the King appointed Theophilus⁹ to be one of his personal chaplains. He also served for a time as Lord Chancellor to Francis Bacon. He eventually was appointed the Bishop of Llandaff, but he complained of the "smallness of the revenue" and pestered the Duke of Buckingham with letters concerning his poverty. Pleading that he had a wife and six children to feed, he vowed to the Duke to "spend his blood for him" if the Duke could get him a better Bishop's position, such as the one at Hereford, a city about 135 miles northwest of London.

He later received a better position, which quadrupled his income, but he still seemed unhappy. The King inquired once of his status, and Theophilus Field⁹ replied that he was in "want of health and means of recovery in that desolate place, his diocese, where there is not so much as a leech to cure a sick horse." On 15 December 1635, Theophilus⁹ reached his goal when he was appointed the
Bishop of Hereford. Unfortunately for him, he did not long enjoy the position, as he died on 2 June 1636 and was buried in Hereford Chapel. Today there is a bust of him supported by two angels against the north wall of the chapel.

As an historical sidebar, one of the sons of Theophilus\textsuperscript{9} came to America very early, sailing to Virginia on the \textit{Swan} in 1624. This son, James Field\textsuperscript{10}, had a great-great-grandson named Thomas Jefferson, who was the third President of the United States.

The other brother, Nathaniel Field\textsuperscript{9}, or Nathan or Nat as he was usually known, became a noted actor. Perhaps it was for this reason that his father so violently attacked the theater and entertainment establishment. Nathaniel\textsuperscript{9} acted in many plays in England at the time, even appearing before the King a number of times. He was considered one of the best actors in all of England. Richard Flecknoe wrote in his \textit{Short Discourse of the English Stage} in 1664: "In this time were poets and actors in their greatest flourish; Johnson and Shakespeare, with Beaumont and Fletcher, their poets, and Field and Burbage, their actors." He appears to have retired from the stage about 1623 and died 20 February 1632/3 in London.

John Field\textsuperscript{9}, our direct ancestor, was much less noted than either his bishop or actor brother. Like his brothers, he was born in St. Giles Parish, in the Cripplegate section of London, England. He later moved to the town of Boston in Lincolnshire, England, where he married Elen Hockinson (or Hutchinson) on 13 August 1609. He received grants of land in America and sent his son Darby to America to look after his interests here. There is no evidence the John Field\textsuperscript{9} ever left England himself and it is likely that he died there. His children were:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Born</th>
<th>Married</th>
<th>Died</th>
<th>Location</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>+ 1.</td>
<td>Darby Field\textsuperscript{10}</td>
<td>Abt 1610</td>
<td>Agnes ------</td>
<td>Abt 1649</td>
<td>Boston, Lincolnshire, England @ Dover, Strafford, NH</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.</td>
<td>Robert Field\textsuperscript{10}</td>
<td>Abt 1613</td>
<td>Mary Stanley</td>
<td></td>
<td>England @ Boston, MA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.</td>
<td>Henry Field\textsuperscript{10}</td>
<td>Abt 1611</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>England @ England</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.</td>
<td>Richard Field\textsuperscript{10}</td>
<td>Abt 1611</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>England @ England</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

About Henry Field\textsuperscript{10} or Richard Field\textsuperscript{10} we have no additional information. Robert Field\textsuperscript{10} was a tailor by trade. He came to America on the \textit{James} that sailed from Southampton and arrived at Boston, Massachusetts on 3 June 1635, the same voyage that brought several other of our ancestors. After his arrival in New England, he settled in Providence, Rhode Island, where he was living in 1638. About 1650, he moved to Boston, Massachusetts and then moved to Maine in 1653. He later returned to Boston, where he died in 1675.

Darby Field\textsuperscript{10}, our direct ancestor, was by far the most interesting of his siblings. Governor Winthrop, in his journal, refers to Darby Field\textsuperscript{10} as an "Irishman", probably because of his Irish sounding name. But he was born at Boston in Lincolnshire, England about 1610 and came to America in 1636. For a while, he stayed with his brother Robert in Boston, Massachusetts but moved to Exeter, New Hampshire in 1638. He was, among other things, an Indian interpreter. On 4 July 1639, he and 34 other men signed the Exeter Combination drawing up a local government there. He sued a man in 1642 for setting the woods on fire and burning up his pipe staves. Darby\textsuperscript{10} was living at Oyster River in 1644, where he was licensed to sell wine. His house stood on 5-6 acres on Durham Point, facing the Piscataqua River, with Oyster River on one side and Little Bay on the
other. Darby was at Dover in 1648, when he appears on the tax list and the next year when he appears in a court case.

Historian Frederick Clifton Pierce states that "Darby Field was above the average, not only in courage and daring, but in intelligence and quickness to resent what he considered impertinence," and cites the following story to prove his assertion. A noted Puritan minister from Massachusetts visited Dover, where he was berating the citizens of that town for "departing from the good habits of the Puritans." Darby Field arose and responded to the minister's assertion by saying: "We are a different race from them. Instead of coming here for religious purposes, the object of our ancestors was to lumber, fish and trade, and instead of departing from their good example, we have improved on them."

Darby Field became famous, even in his own time, for having been the first white man to enter the White Mountains, the highest peaks in New England, and being the first to climb Mt. Washington. This occurred in 1642, probably in June, the trip requiring eighteen days. Following the ascent, he claimed to have seen "more marvelous things than ever any one has since." The event was described in The Making of New England by Samuel Adams Drake:

The whites knew that far away in the north there was a cluster of very high mountains, for they had often seen them. Moreover, much mystery attached to them. The Indians said that their god dwelt high up among those lofty peaks, and told marvellous stories about great shining stones that glittered on the cliffs through the darkness of night. Now and then they would show a piece of crystal, which they said came from the greatest mountain. So the whites at first called it the Crystal Hill. "But," said the Indians to the whites, "nobody can go to the top of Agiochook to get these glittering stones, because it is the abode of the great god of storms, famine and pestilence. Once, indeed, some foolish Indians had attempted to do so, but they never came back, for the spirit that guarded the gems from mortal hands had raised great mists, through which the hunters wandered on like blind men until the spirit led them to the edge of some dreadful gulf, into which he cast them shrieking.

There was one bold settler who was determined to go in search of the precious stones, cost what it might. His name was Darby Field. So in June, 1642, Field started to go to the Crystal Hill. When he came to the neighborhood of the present town of Fryeburg he found an Indian village there. It was the village of the Pigwackets, or as it is sometimes written, Pequawketts. Here Field took some Indian guides, who led him to within a few miles of the summit, when, for fear of the evil spirit, all but two refused to go farther. So Field went on with these two. They clambered resolutely over rocks and among scrubby ravines, no higher than a man's knee, to a sort of stony plain, where there were two ponds. Above this plain, rose the great peak of shattered rocks that overlooks New England. This too they climbed. Field has said that the sight of the great wilderness land, stretched out all around him, the mountains falling away beneath his feet into dark gulfs, was "daunting terrible." It is so today.

Field stood upon the great watershed of New England. Finding the day spent he began searching for the precious stones he had come so far to seek. He found a few crystals, which he brought away, thinking them to be diamonds. He also found a deal of "Muscovy glass," or isinglass, adhering to the rocks. Some of this he also took with him. With his treasures
Field then came down the mountains to the place where he had left the Indians, whom he found drying themselves by a fire, for while he was above the clouds, a sudden storm had swept over them. As they had given up the adventurous pale face for lost, their wonder at seeing him return safe and sound was very great. All then went back to the Indian village.

Darby Field\textsuperscript{10} revisited the mountains again later that same year in the accompaniment of others. In the years to come, many others climbed the White Mountains, specifically Mt. Washington, the highest peak, in search of the "shining stones". However, in that respect, all searchers were to be disappointed.

Today, the White Mountains are visited by about eight million visitors a year. This region of New Hampshire has the largest mountain range in New England, capped by 6,288-foot Mount Washington, which is the highest peak in New England. The summit, which can be driven to today by automobile, has vending machines and hosts a quarter million visitors per year. Mount Washington's Cog Railroad runs up a ridge on the west side of Mount Washington and is the second steepest railway track in the world. The route was completed in 1869 and runs from the Marshfield base station (named for Sylvester Marsh, the backer of the venture, and Darby Field) to the summit. The steepest section occurs at Jacob's Ladder, a 30-foot-high trestle near the tree line that has an incredible 37\% grade. The engines push one or two cars up the three mile route, which has cogs running up the center of the track. The teeth on the cog wheel pull the train up the steep tracks. On each trip up the mountain, the old steam locomotive consumes a ton of coal and a thousand gallons of water.

Mount Washington is renowned worldwide for its harsh year-round climate, which can rival that of Antarctica. The average annual temperature on the summit is only 26.5°F, and an average of 256 inches of snow falls each year (with a record of 566 inches). The average wind speed is 35.3 mph, with hurricane-force winds occurring every third day on the average. It was here, on Mt. Washington, where the world's highest wind speed was ever recorded: 231 miles per hour. Weather remains the number one killer of the many ill-prepared hikers, with 122 deaths having occurred on the mountain since people began keeping track in 1849. An improperly dressed person can die on the mountain within minutes, even in the summer. The nearby 4326-foot Mt. Field, in the same range, was named for Darby\textsuperscript{10}. And near Conway, New Hampshire one can stay at the popular Darby Field Inn, a popular 16-room mountain retreat.

Unfortunately, Darby Field\textsuperscript{10} did not live to be very old, dying in 1649 at about age 39. He became "distracted" and the court ordered that the town of Portsmouth should pay a share of the expense of his "imprisonment and keeping." From this, it is clear that Darby Field\textsuperscript{10} was insane and was kept institutionalized before he died. His wife was listed as a widow in 1650 and his estate was administered in 1651. Darby\textsuperscript{10} was married to a woman named Agnes, last name unknown. Following his death, Agnes remarried to William Williams and lived another 25 years. Darby\textsuperscript{10} and Agnes Field had the following children (all probably born at Oyster River):

1. Mary Field\textsuperscript{11}  
   b. 1631  
   m. 15 Jul 1656 Capt. John Woodman @ Newbury, MA  
   d. 6 Jul 1698 @ Dover, Strafford, NH

2. Joseph Field\textsuperscript{11}  
   b. Abt 1639  
   m. Mary (Goddard) Bennett  
   d. 1690

3. Elizabeth Field\textsuperscript{11}  
   m. 28 Jan 1663/4 Stephen Jones
4. Zachariah Field
   b. 1645
   m.  Sarah Roberts
   d. Aft 1715
5. Sarah Field
   b. Abt 1648
   m.  John Drew
   d. Bef 1720

Little is known of these children. Joseph Field lived at Oyster River, New Hampshire, where he was deeded land by his mother and stepfather in 1674. He married Mary Bennett, the daughter of John Goddard and the widow of Arthur Bennett. Elizabeth Field married Stephen Jones, a cooper who lived at Oyster River. Jones and another man were arrested in connection with the death of Edmund Green in 1668, but apparently were cleared of any charges. Zachariah Field, who married Sarah Roberts, moved to Dover after 1685 where he built a garrison house and became a Lieutenant in command of it.

Sarah Field married Sergt. John Drew of Oyster River about 1675. Drew created a tremendous scandal by maintaining a second farm and a second family by another woman named Rebecca Cook, who was considerably younger than him. The town records even listed the children that he fathered by each woman. After Sarah died, on 31 March 1720 at about 70 years of age, John Drew married his "concubine". However, he died very soon after, and following his death, she married a young man about 15 years her junior named Samuel Starbird.

Mary Field was our direct ancestor. She married, in Newbury on 15 July 1656, Captain John Woodman of Oyster River, to be introduced later in this chapter.

THE DOWNING FAMILY

Dennis Downing was the nailer of Spitalfields, near Whitechapel, in London, England. A nailer is an old name for a blacksmith. On 17 November 1634, Dennis married the widow Anne Daines at Stepney, a parish located 2½ miles east of London. We do not know when he came to America, and the first record we have of him in this country was on 25 November 1650, when he was a member of a jury. Soon after, on 18 December 1650, he purchased the house in which he was then living and which would become the Downing homestead. A man named Christian Remick deposed on 4 January 1698/9 that "he well knew Dennis Downing now Deceased Lived on the farm...which his son Joshua Downing now Posseseth and that...Dennis Downing Possessed it in year fifty one...he being a near neighbor to said Downing...". Downing's home was in Kittery (now Eliot), Maine, on
Chapter 10

The bank of Piscataqua River, a little above the island known as Franks Fort, where he continued his profession as a blacksmith. There is some evidence that his wife and children came later.

Dennis Downing and his wife Anne appeared in court on 25 June 1656 because they sued Francis Trickey and his wife Sarah for slander following a quarrel between the two wives. According to the court records, Sarah Trickey had said that "Ann Downing did stand upon her head until a cup of wine was taken off the heels of her shoes and that the King's health was drunken". Sarah Trickey was also accused of having said that "the said Ann Downing was drunken." The court decided in favor of Anne Downing, perhaps because they didn't believe that she could stand on her head. The court records also show that when Sarah Trickey "was searched for to receive sentence, she had disappeared." By the time of this lawsuit, Dennis Downing and his wife were living in Crooked Lane, another locality within the Kittery township, so he could be "nearer his customers".

On 16 January 1676/7, Dennis Downing deeded his son Joshua all of his property in exchange for the pledge to support and care for him for the remainder of his life. His wife Anne likely had already died by this time for she is last mentioned in 1670 and was not referred to in the deed to his son. Joshua Downing sold the 10-acre lot at Crooked Lane on 21 June 1679 to Joan Diamond, the widow of William Diamond. The lot was apparently land that the Diamond family had purchased in 1651 by an "imperfect deed" resulting in a situation where Joan "was obliged to repurchase their farm from the Downings."

The last mention of Dennis Downing is on 20 April 1690, when he confirmed the deed to his son Joshua, with changed conditions to it. Dennis and Anne (Daines) Downing had the following children:

1. John Downing
   - b. 1644
   - m. Bef 1673 (1st) Patience Hatch
   - m. (2nd) Rebecca (Rogers) Trickey

2. Joshua Downing
   - b. Abt 1644
   - m. Bef 1673 (1st) Patience Hatch

John Downing had to appear before the court in 1653 for disobeying his father. He left home and had a family, but we know nothing more of him. He is often mistaken for the Capt. John Downing from Newington who married Susannah Miller and lived for a time a Cape Porpoise, Maine (who was also our direct ancestor and will be described later). However, this John Downing is clearly not the son of Dennis Downing of Kittery. The rift between Dennis Downing and his son John was apparently life long, since he is not mentioned in his father's 1676/7 deed distributing his property. However, the deed did require that Joshua pay to John's daughter Joanna a cow and a calf on her wedding day, which was not done for some reason. In his deed confirmation of 1690, Dennis provided for a payment of 12 pence each to John's daughters Anne, Alice and Joanna "if they demand it."

There is often a reference to another son of Dennis Downing named Dennis (Jr.). However, in the opinion of the compiler, there was no such person. The confusion stems from the fact that Dennis Downing signed a document in 1679 as "Senior". The implication to many would be that he had a son who was "Junior". But the use Junior and Senior in colonial times was just as often used to distinguish between two individuals of the same name who might be unrelated or only loosely related. The fact that Joshua had a son named Dennis is more likely the reason that Dennis Downing signed as "Senior". Therefore, the "Junior" would have been his grandson.
Our direct ancestor, **Joshua Downing**² married **Patience Hatch**, to whose family we will digress before returning to the family of Joshua Downing².

**THE HATCH FAMILY**

The first known ancestor of the Hatch family from whom we are descended is **John Hatch**, who lived in the hamlet of Newton Ferrers, England. This small town is located in county Devonshire, about five miles southeast of the city of Plymouth. The only record we have of John Hatch is his death at Newton Ferrers on 2 July 1642. We have no record of his marriage, but his wife may have been the Anne Hatch who also died at Newton Ferrers on 4 February 1641. The known children of John Hatch¹ were:

1. Charles Hatch²  
   b. 5 Sep 1613 @ Newton Ferrers, Devon., Eng.  
   d. Abt 1654 @ York County, ME

+ 2. Philip Hatch²  
   b. 28 Dec 1615 @ Newton Ferrers, Devon., Eng.  
   m. Patience Edge  
   d. 19 Jun 1673 @ Wells, York, ME

3. Robin Hatch²  
   b. @ Newton Ferrers, Devon., Eng.  
   d. 1643

All three of the brothers were fisherman who came to America, possibly multiple times. Since the English town of Newton Ferrers was on the coast, it is likely that many of the men of that town had fished the English Channel for generations. The Hatch brothers probably became fisherman when they were boys and eventually took their trade to America. Although all the brothers worked for a ship's master, they were indirectly indebted to Robert Trelawney for their livelihood.

Trelawney was a rich merchant who lived in Plymouth, England. His father, who carried the same name, was a prominent merchant who had served as the mayor of Plymouth three times. On 1 December 1631, after inheriting his father's business, Robert Trelawney and another merchant obtained a patent for Richmond Island and a large portion of the adjacent mainland in New England. The purpose was to establish a fishing colony on Richmond Island. Today, Richmond Island lies just off Cape Elizabeth on the coast of Maine, about ten miles south of the city of Portland. Although Trelawney never came to America, his agent John Winter did, and took possession of the land on 21 July 1632. All three of the Hatch brothers came to Richmond Island and worked there in Trelawney's fishing colony.

Not only did our Hatch ancestor come to the Trelawney fishing colony on Richmond Island, but so did our ancestor William Ham, described earlier, as well as the infamous George Rogers of Kittery, the adulterous lover of Mary Bachiler (to be described later). Because all of these men came to Richmond Island off the coast of Maine, it is worthwhile to describe what went on at this little-known part of our American history. A well-researched article written by E. A. Churchill, titled *A Most Ordinary Lot of Men: The Fishermen at Richmond Island, Maine in the Early Seventeenth Century*, published in the New England Quarterly in 1984, gives us some insight into this colony.

The article, based upon a rigorous study of the **Trelawney Papers**, an extant set of letters, accounts and other documents sent by John Winter back to Robert Trelawney in England, gives a fascinating and rare glimpse into the lives of the people who lived and worked on Richmond Island in the 1630s and 1640s. The fishing colony, or *station* as it was called, was there for the purpose
of catching cod. Both the fish and the oil from their livers, called train oil then, were shipped back to Europe, usually on one vessel per year. During its peak years, the station employed at least 60 men, most of them fishermen, and six to eight women.

Workers were hired for a term of three years and received annual wages, a share of the catch, or a combination of both. The men were poorly paid, the wages averaging about £5 to £11 per year. A few of the fishermen were given the opportunity to supplement their incomes by raising corn and hogs. Almost all of the men were from the poor western portion of England and received only a third of the going wage in America. Further, once these men arrived on Richmond Island, John Winter looked for loopholes to withhold portions of their wages. Not surprising, the men complained bitterly and some deserted. Also not surprising, the local fishermen refused to work at the station. Probably because of the ongoing animosity between the station's workers and John Winter, Winter frequently described his men as "lazy and troublesome."

The article states: "The fishermen worked in crews of four, three of whom went to sea, while the fourth remained at the island curing the fish previously brought in and preparing it for shipment to Europe. The sea-going men included a master, who steered the vessel and was in charge of the voyage, and a midshipman and foreshipman responsible for handling the craft. They fished from shallops, double-ended vessels about twenty feet long and measuring three to five tons. The rigging usually consisted of either two masts with a square sail on each or one mast with a fore-and-aft mainsail and foresail. Typically, the crew took along oars to supplement the sails, a compass, a bailing bucket, and anchors, or grapples. In the vessel's bottom were stored nets, lines, hooks, lead weights, gaffs, bait, and other fishing gear. Some of the small seaworthy craft had partial decking with shelters for the crew; others were completely without a deck and offered no protection from the elements. The vessels were probably outfitted with bricked-in fireplaces and chimneys so the men could cook meals in an iron pot when at sea for more than a day.

"Fishing was a long and tiring operation. Each man, tending two lines, baited the hooks with a piece of mackerel or herring and a fist-sized mass of cod entrails ... the bait floated a few feet from the ocean floor. A successful day's catch could amount to two to three hundred fish per man ... the average catch was smaller. When the fishermen brought the cod into the vessel, they cut out the tongues and impaled them on an iron spike in order to keep count of how many fish had been caught. In winter the men made three or more daylong trips a week, except during severe weather, when they worked at the station. In summer the daily voyages were extended by several hours, and if the fishing was poor, the men would stay out for two days. Their time at sea was limited because the fish caught early would begin to spoil.

"When the fishing was good, the men worked day and night, fishing from early morning until late afternoon and dressing until early the following morning. Then, if it was late summer or autumn, they spent the rest of the night seining for bait. At times, only Saturday night provided a normal night's sleep, since Sunday was the fisherman's one free day. The men sometimes were so exhausted that they fell asleep while eating supper. Undoubtedly, when the pace became unbearable, the crews would sail out to some uninhabited island or coastal beach and take a morning off to sleep, relax, and have a leisurely meal. Then they would begin fishing in early afternoon. When they returned to the station, the men would complain of their bad luck, vowing to do better the next day.
"Meals and a little leisure time were about the only breaks the men got from their work. The pattern for serving meals, light breakfasts and lunches and a major meal at supper-time, was set to correspond with the fishing schedule. Typical meals included breakfast of cornbread, flat cakes, and beer; for lunch, biscuits, pork or cod, and wine for the fishermen, and bread, perhaps a light gruel, and drink for the shoremen. Supper often consisted of a stew or pork and peas, bread, pudding, and beer or wine.

"Alcoholic drinks, for Winter's men as for most people in the New World, England, and Europe, were staple beverages. Any man who had to drink water was felt to be truly deprived, and it was thought to be positively harmful to do so for any length of time. Beer, the basic drink, was brewed at the island from barley, wheat and other grains, locally grown hops, and imported malts. Wines and brandies had to be imported, though, and apparently each man was required to purchase his own share of these more potent beverages.

"Danger was an inherent part of these daily sea voyages ... On one cold February evening in 1634/5, three of Winter's men did not return from their morning trip. The next day the boat was found riding at anchor, full of water, the master and midshipman lying dead inside, and the foreshipman lost. They had apparently carried too much sail, so the boat had capsized and filled with water. They were unable to bail out, and the biting cold of the sea water and the frigid air pierced their drenched clothes and soon took its toll. In the summer of 1637 another of Winter's shallops capsized at sea. Again the crew had been carrying too much sail. The boat overturned and then sank, leaving the men in fifty-degree water. The master managed to cling to an oar until a nearby boat rescued him. The other two men drowned before help could arrive."

When the boats returned to the station at Richmond Island, the men would immediately begin off-loading their cargo of fish and begin "dressing" them. The shoreman, master and midshipman shared the tasks of "splitting, throating and heading" the fish. Meanwhile, the foreshipman sailed the shallop to its nearby anchorage, where he cleaned it and stowed the rigging for the night. The dressed cod were then carried to salt bins located on the landward side of the splitting table. Here the day's catch was laid out a layer at a time and a light covering of salt shoveled over each layer before another was added.

The cod were left in salt for a day and then brought out to a washing pen along the shore, where all the salt was rinsed out. Then, they were taken to small stagings and left to drain for a day (sometimes weighted with rocks to press out the water). As the cod gradually dried, the shoreman began heaping them in great piles twelve to fifteen feet in diameter and so tall that ladders were required to reach the top. After the fish were dried sufficiently, Winter's men put them in a large warehouse capable of holding fifty thousand fish.

The livers were cured in a large vat about six feet on a side and two or three feet high. Here they lay in the sun to rot, or as the fishermen said, melt. As they melted, the train oil separated from the blood and water and floated to the top. On one end of the vat there was a wicker filter through which the liquids, but not the new livers or solid wastes, could pass. On the same side there were two holes that could be unplugged, one to take oil out from the top and the other to drain blood and water from the bottom. The oil was stored in barrels to be shipped; the blood and water were discarded.
Trelawney sent a vessel to carry cured fish and rendered train oil to Europe, usually to England, Spain or France. His ship arrived in late winter or early spring laden with needed manufactures and provisions. The ship's crew spent some time fishing and then in early summer filled the holds with fish and set off across the ocean. Several vessels, including the *Hercules* and *Margery*, made a number of voyages during the 1630s."

The fisherman at Richmond Island, like many of the fisherman off the coast of New England, have been historically viewed as the exact opposite of the typical Puritan New Englander. Or as Charles M. Andrews put it in his book *The Colonial Period in American History*, they were "sturdy, coarse, hard drinking, profane, none too fond of church going, and impatient of too strict an enforcement of law and order." In his article, Churchill makes the case that "the actual situation was rather different. Work schedules, which appear to have been quite strenuous, left little free time. On Sunday, the only day that the workers regularly had idle time, they probably relaxed, drinking wines and brandies, smoking their pipes, and gambling with cards and dice for small stakes."

Churchill seems intent on making us think that these men, as the title of his article states, were just ordinary men. That is unlikely to have been the case, however. Sir Ferdinando Gorges reported in the 1620s that fishermen along New England's shores were "behaving worse than the very savages." John Jocelyn, a traveler along the Maine coast at the time, noted that fishermen were "inclined to drunkeness." Royal commissioners who visited America in the early 1660s reported that "some here are of the opinion that as many men share a woman as they do a boat, and some have done so." Even John Winter complained that his men were a "bad company with which to deal."

George Rogers, to be introduced in a future chapter, may have been a perfect example of the Richmond Island fisherman.

Returning to the three Hatch brothers who left England to fish at Richmond Island, in regard to Robin Hatch, we have no almost no information. The only record of him is that he was among the crew of the ship *Margery* when it arrived at Richmond Island in early 1643.

Charles Hatch came to Richmond Island in 1633 aboard the ship *Welcome*, where he was a fisherman under his master Clement Penwill, also of Newton Ferrers, England. It is not clear how long Charles was here, but he apparently went back to England as it is said that he "came again" on 13 February 1636/7 with his brother, leaving his wife behind in England. The Trelawney account for 27 May 1639 shows that money was paid to the wife of Charles Hatch (this occurring in England), but in 1640, Trelawney would not pay her because she had not "written an account of that already received." Charles was summoned as a witness in a court proceeding in 1641 and does not again appear in Maine records until the administration of his estate by his brother Philip on 29 June 1654. It does not appear that his wife ever came to this country.

Philip Hatch was our direct ancestor. Like his brother Charles, he was born in Newton Ferrers, England and was a fisherman. In his *History of York*, historian Charles Edward Banks states that Philip Hatch and his brother Charles were "into the service of John Winter at the Trelawney plantation in 1633" where Philip "remained for ten years." But if they were both here in 1633, Philip went back to England as it is known that he arrived at Richmond Island from England on the *Hercules* on 13 February 1636/7 with Charles. He remained on Richmond Island, fishing for his master Nicholas Ball for ten years, for the last mention of Philip Hatch in the Trelawney accounts was 27 June 1643. In the Trelawney Papers, John Winter referred to Philip Hatch as a "good steady
On 23 November 1648, he purchased George Parker's house and land at York, Maine, where he also received grants from the town in 1653 and 1659. In 1650, Philip Hatch served on a jury "of life and death" (presumably a case involving a capital crime). In 1663, he both served as town constable and had to appear in court with others for "neglect in duty in not voting." Philip mortgaged his house and land in July 1663 to Major Brian Pendleton, a wealthy land owner in Maine, a mortgage that was never retired until after Philip's death. Probably always in debt, Philip Hatch mortgaged another five acres to Francis Johnson, who had been granted a judgment against Philip and another man.

Philip Hatch last appears in the Maine records on 4 July 1671, when apparently still in debt, he acknowledged a judgment to Francis Wainwright. Philip did not live much longer since he was listed as "some few years deceased" in August 1674, when a man bought his house and land from Major Pendleton, the holder of the mortgage, and the widow of Philip Hatch.

The wife of Philip Hatch was named Patience. Early York town records were destroyed on 25 January 1691/2, when the Indians burned the house where they were stored, so there are no marriage records or wills that might prove her identity. However, there is strong evidence to support the claim that she was Patience Edge, the daughter of Robert and Florence Edge. That evidence comes from the reference to Florence Edge as "Gamar Edge" (Grandma Edge) in the family of Joshua Downing, who was "partly or wholly at the charge of" her. That Patience was the daughter of Robert and Florence Edge is almost certain as they were the only people with that surname who lived in York.

After the death of Philip Hatch, his widow Patience married again to a man named Wolcott, most likely Edward Wolcott who lived in York for a time and who was also associated with Joshua Downing in 1680. Patience was still alive on 24 October 1709, when she was living with one of her married daughters in Eliot, Maine. The children of Philip and Patience (Edge) Hatch were:

1. Francis Hatch
   b. @ York, York, ME
2. Philip Hatch
   b. Abt 1651 @ York, York, ME
   m. Abt 1676 Joshua Downing
3. Patience Hatch
   b. @ York, York, ME
   d. Feb 1689/90
4. Benjamin Hatch
   b. @ York, York, ME
5. Samuel Hatch
   b. Abt 1660 @ York, York, ME
   m. Bef 1685 (1st) Mary Littlefield
   m. Bef 1753 (2nd) Lydia ----- 
   d. 1753
6. Elizabeth Hatch
   b. @ York, York, ME
   m. Bef 1692 Baker Nason
   d. Aft 1740

Besides the children named above, Philip Hatch may likely have had a son named John Hatch, who became a mariner out of Portsmouth. This John Hatch had a daughter who married into the Downing family, indicating a possible connection between Philip Hatch and this person, but no evidence exists to prove it.
Of the known children, the records are quite skimpy. **Francis Hatch**³ served as a witness in court on 18 May 1667 and had to appear in court on 15 Sep 1668 with another man for attacking Isaac Everett on the York River. **Philip Hatch**³ (Jr.) was on the Isle of Shoals in 1673 when he was 22, apparently as the "master of Peter Twisden's shallop". The last record we have of him was as a member of a coroner's jury in 1687. In 1684, **Benjamin Hatch**³ sued John Brawn Jr. of slandering him and Elizabeth Paine. The next year, he was recorded as working "in the woods making oxbows". The inventory of his estate was taken on 21 February 1689/90, which consisted of his clothing, a gun and one cow. The next month, his estate was administered to his brother Samuel³, indicating Benjamin³ was not married.

A little more is known about **Samuel Hatch**³. He was apprenticed at the age of seven to a man who lived in Wells, Maine and Samuel³ spent the rest of his life there. He operated a mill at Wells and had a house on 200 acres on the Ogunquit River. In 1710, Samuel³ moved to the Maryland River. He married Mary Littlefield, the daughter of Francis and Meribah (Wardwell) Littlefield of Wells. After Mary's death, he married Lydia, last name unknown, who was from York. Samuel Hatch³ also outlived her, dying in 1753, at well over 90 years of age.

By 1692, **Elizabeth Hatch**³ married Baker Nason, a carpenter from Berwick, Maine. The Nason family was an interesting bunch. Baker's father was described as a "militant Quaker" (isn't that an oxymoron?) who had a long history of squabbles with the government. He finally became so troublesome to the courts, that after being convicted of a charge of blasphemy, they sentenced him to die. Later the General Court decided that he "was not so guilty that he ought to die". Baker Nason was probably named for his grandfather John Baker, who was fined in 1645 for beating Baker's father "black and blue". As for Baker Nason himself, he killed his brother Jonathan "with an oar" while they were in a canoe on the Piscataqua River in 1691. Since Baker was never charged with a crime, the incident may have been deemed an accident. Baker Nason lived until 1729, while Elizabeth³ was still alive in 1740.

**Patience Hatch**³ was our direct ancestor. Named for her mother, she married Joshua Downing². We now return to that family.

**JOSHUA DOWNING**

**Joshua Downing**² claimed in a petition that he made in 1680 that he came to Kittery about 1652 at the age of eight. If this is true, then he probably came to America at least two years after his father. As already described, he received the homestead of his father at Kittery, Maine and became a leading citizen of the town. He served on the grand jury several times, was a selectman for six years, and served as Representative in 1699.

On 24 August 1694, the garrison house of Joshua Downing² was attacked by Indians, who killed or captured five people. Unfortunately, we do not know their names. But that was not the end of his troubles with the Indians. On 4 July 1697, his son Dennis³ was killed by Indians when he and others were returning from church. This event was described by Norman Frost in the *Frost Genealogy*:

> On Sunday afternoon, 4 July 1697 the Indians ambushed Maj. Frost, his wife and two sons, John Heard and his wife, Phebe and Dennis Downing as they were returning from Sunday meeting. A mile from the garrison a party of Indians had formed an ambush near a large
rock at the side of the road. When the party approached they were fired upon. Maj. Frost and Downing were killed, and Phebe Heard was mortally wounded. John tried to put her on a horse, but she begged him to leave her and save the children at home. The rest of the party escaped. The site of this attack is now known as Ambush Rock. It's located near Eliot, Maine.

Historian Everett Stackpole, in his Old Kittery and Her Families, states that "Major Charles Frost had long been hated by the Indians ... for the part he had in their betrayal at Dover in 1675." He further writes: "The night after Frost's burial the Indians opened his grave, took out the body, carried it to the top of Frost's hill and suspended it upon a stake. His resting place was marked some years later with a flat stone." Despite the same name, the John Heard mentioned in this account was not our ancestor, but the one who lived in Kittery. Our ancestor, although in Kittery early, settled in Dover. Historians and genealogists have confused the two men and intermixed their history for years.

By 1673, Joshua Downing2 had married Patience Hatch, who may not have been his first wife. Between 1709 and 1713, he married again to Rebecca Trickey, the daughter of William and Sarah (Lynn) Rogers, and the widow of Joseph Trickey (and the son of our direct ancestor Thomas Trickey). In between her two husbands, Rebecca was accused of having an illegitimate child in June 1695. According to historian John Scales, Joshua died in 1717. Joshua Downing2 had the following children, probably all by his wife Patience Hatch, and all probably born at Kittery, Maine:

1. Dennis Downing3  
   b.  
   d. 4 Jul 1697 @ Kittery, York, ME

+ 2. Elizabeth Downing3  
   b. 22 Apr 1669 @ Kittery, York, ME
   m. Abt 1698 Jonathan Woodman
   d. 17 Apr 1729

3. Sarah Downing3  
   b. Abt 1675 @ Kittery, York, ME
   m. Bef 1702 (1st) Jonathan Mendum
   m. 7 May 1719 (2nd) Joseph Curtis
   d. 4 Dec 1757 @ Kittery, York, ME

4. Joshua Downing3  
   b. @ Kittery, York, ME
   m. 28 Apr 1709 Sarah Hatch
   d. 18 Sep 1712 @ Wells, York, ME

5. Arabella Downing3  
   b. @ Kittery, York, ME

6. Alice Downing3  
   b. @ Kittery, York, ME
   m. 24 Apr 1709 Richard Downing

Dennis Downing3 was killed by Indians on the Sunday afternoon of 4 July 1697 as described earlier. Before 1702, Sarah Downing3 married Jonathan Mendum, who was a shipwright at Kittery. When he died about 1717-18, she then married Joseph Curtis on 7 May 1719 and lived until 4 December 1757. Joshua Downing3 (Jr.) married Sarah Hatch of Portsmouth (she was the daughter of John Hatch) on 28 April 1709. He died just over three years later when he was killed by Indians at Wells, Maine on 18 September 1712. His young widow Sarah then married James Chadbourne about a year later. Arabella Downing3 was a witness with Joshua3 in 1705, but no further record. Alice Downing3 married Richard Downing on 24 April 1709. He was the son of Capt. John Downing of Newington, and therefore, probably not a close relative.

Our direct ancestor, Elizabeth Downing3, was born 22 April 1669 in Kittery. She married
Jonathan Woodman⁵, whose family is introduced next.

THE WOODMAN FAMILY

The Woodman family originated from the village of Corsham, England, which is located in Wiltshire county about 15 miles east of the city of Bristol. The origin of the family surname is obvious; they were timber men who cut trees and harvested the timber. There were quite a number of people with the name Woodman who lived at Corsham. In an article about the family published in the July 1943 New England Historical and Genealogical Register, historian G. Andrews Moriarty stated that "at the end of the sixteenth and the beginning of the seventeenth centuries the parish of Corsham was filled with Woodmans, whose number was so great as almost to constitute a tribe."

Corsham was one of the more populous parishes in Wiltshire county during the time to which Moriarty refers. The parish is situated on the Lower Avon River, and is very old. History tells us that during the reign of Ethelred the Unready (978-1016), the King stayed at his Manor House at Corsham during the hunting seasons. During the reign of Elizabeth I, daughter of Henry VIII, in the late sixteenth century, the village became a main stop on the stagecoach line between Bath and London. The town's livelihood during this period was the raising of "sheepell" and "cattel" on the fertile plains north and east of the village and the output from the many local stone quarries scattered throughout the countryside.

The history of St. Bartholomew's Church, located only a short distance from the Manor House at Corsham, dates back to about the year 1000. However, churches were not required to maintain a record of baptisms, marriages or burials until 1538, and many did not begin the practice until some years later. Many of these survive only from the 1700s due to neglect and/or damage. Fortunately for us, the parish registers of St. Bartholomew's Church in Corsham survive from 1563.

The earliest Woodman ancestor of whom we have a record is Thomas Woodman, who was born about 1550 and lived at Corsham. The inability to distinguish between two Thomas Woodmans living in Corsham in the 1570s, one the son of Nicholas and the other the son of Richard, prevent us from being able to trace the family any farther back than Thomas. Thomas Woodman married Elizabeth Pryor on 24 April 1574 at Corsham, where he lived. It is not known how many children Thomas¹ and Elizabeth (Pryor) Woodman had, but they had at least the son (baptized at Corsham on the date shown):

+ 1. Edward Woodman²  b. 9 Oct 1574  @ Corsham, Wiltshire, England
Edward Woodman², baptized 9 October 1574 at St. Bartholomew's Church in Corsham, England, married Collet Mallet (or Mallett) on 30 June 1600 at Corsham. After bearing him three children, Collet died and was buried at Corsham on 5 July 1611. Edward² then married Edith, last name unknown, by whom he had another six children. Edward Woodman² probably died in 1654, when his will was proved at Corsham on 14 July 1654. He would have been about 90 years old. His will was a spoken will, given when he was near death, and stated by his family afterwards. His children, all baptized at St. Bartholomew's Church at Corsham, were (the first three by Collet and next six by Edith):

1. Mary Woodman³ b. 24 Jan 1602 @ Corsham, Wiltshire, England
2. Elizabeth Woodman³ b. 1 Jul 1604 @ Corsham, Wiltshire, England
+ 3. Edward Woodman³ b. 27 Dec 1606 @ Corsham, Wiltshire, England
   m. Abt 1630 Joanna Salway @ England
   m. 13 Nov 1678 (1) Elizabeth ----- (2) Dorothy (Swan) Chapman
   d. 17 Oct 1702
4. Archelaus Woodman³ b. 23 Jan 1614 @ Corsham, Wiltshire, England
   m. (1) Elizabeth ----- (2) Dorothy (Swan) Chapman
5. Rebecca Woodman³ b. 15 Dec 1616 @ Corsham, Wiltshire, England
6. Walter Woodman³ b. 25 Mar 1619 @ Corsham, Wiltshire, England
7. Jonathan Woodman³ b. 12 Aug 1621 @ Corsham, Wiltshire, England
8. Anne Woodman³ b. 23 Nov 1623 @ Corsham, Wiltshire, England
9. David Woodman³ b. 17 Aug 1628 @ Corsham, Wiltshire, England
   m. Martha ----- 
   d. 7 Dec 1676 @ Corsham, Wiltshire, England

Edward Woodman³, our direct ancestor, married in England about 1630. His wife was Joanna, last name recorded Salway by most researchers, although the compiler has never seen the evidence for that claim. She was born in 1614, likely at another parish close to Corsham where the parish registers have not survived. The record of their marriage has not been found but they were probably married in Joanna's parish, which was the custom. Edward³ and Joanna settled at Corsham for a couple of years, before they emigrated to the New World.

Edward Woodman³, along with his wife Joanna and two young children, came to America about 1635. He settled at Newbury, Massachusetts. His younger half-brother, Archelaus Woodman³, with his wife Elizabeth, arrived in Newbury the same year. Although it seems likely, it is not known if they arrived on the same ship. Archelaus was a passenger on the ship James which arrived in Boston on 3 June 1635, and then continued on to the new settlement at Newbury.

The name "Edward Woodman" fails to appear on the passenger list of the James or that of any other extant passenger lists of that year. It is possible he could have been a passenger on the Abigail which arrived in Newbury several weeks after the James. It is also possible Edward Woodman³ could have been on one of the two Dutch ships which arrived in Newbury that summer carrying "some passengers", but "mostly cattell". It seems most likely, however, that he would have been aboard the James with his half-brother, despite his omission from the passenger list. Many people who sailed to America aboard these ships were not listed because they were religious "dissenters". Had their names been included, they would have been prevented from leaving England. It is possible, therefore, that Edward³ came to America seeking religious freedom for his family and to escape persecution in his homeland.
Edward Woodman³ was on the list of the 91 original grantees at Newbury when the town was formed in the spring of 1635. He received one of the larger land grants, of 120 acres, in addition to a house lot and a "suitable quantity of salt and fresh meadow". Edward³ was one of the 15 settlers at Newbury who was given the title of "Mr.", which signified wealth and education compared to the average settler. He was prominent in town affairs, serving as a selectman for some years. On 8 September 1636, Edward Woodman³ was chosen Deputy to the General Court, which was located at Boston, forty miles away. The records of the Massachusetts Bay Colony show that Edward Woodman³ was elected to that position from Newbury eight different years, the last being in 1670.

Edward³ was also a Lieutenant in the Newbury militia. He held numerous other positions at Newbury, including the ability "to see people marry". Of the last position, he said in 1681 that it was "an unprofitable commission; I quickly laid aside the worke, which cost me many a bottle of sacke and liquor, where friends and acquaintance have been concerned." Edward Woodman was also a minister. For many years the church in Newbury had been divided, almost equally, between the original pastor, Reverend Thomas Parker, and Edward Woodman³. Of Woodman, noted historian Joshua Coffin wrote: "He was a man of influence, decision and energy, and opposed with great zeal the attempt made by the Rev. Thomas Parker to change the mode of Church government from Congregationalism to something like Presbyterianism."

This division of the town was not due to a great difference of theology, but of church government. As early as 1645, Parker and his faction maintained that the church should be governed by the pastor, his assistants, and a ruling elder. Edward Woodman³ and his party believed it was the right of the members of the church, and government should be by the congregation. In a letter to the church council, Edward Woodman³ stated, "As for our controversy it is whether God hath placed the power in the elder, or in the whole church, to judge between truth and error, right and wrong, brother and brother, and all things of church concernment."

These ecclesiastical problems, which grew more violent and partisan each year, plagued the town for over 25 years and became known throughout New England as the "Parker-Woodman War". By 1669, the difference of opinion had reached such proportions that an appeal was made to the court to settle the matter. The court took over two years to decide, when on 29 May 1671, the court found in favor of Parker's faction. Edward Woodman³ and his faction were fined, the largest fine of 20 nobles [a noble was six shillings and eight pence] to Edward³ himself. Others fined in his faction were "John Emery, senior, John Emery, Junior" and "Thomas Browne", all our direct ancestors. However, the judgement of the court did not end the controversy, and the conflict continued for several years. Finally, a Baptist Church was formed in Newbury on 6 February 1681/2, with eight residents of the town joining, including "Mr. Edward Woodman and wife".

On 25 March 1681, Edward Woodman³ conveyed to his youngest son, Jonathan⁴, his "dwelling-house, barns and orchard and pasture, and all my plow land" in return for the usual agreement in which he and his wife would be supported for life. His wife Joanna died after 1687 and Edward³ about 1690. He is buried in the 1st Burying Ground of the First Settlers located just off present-day Route 1A in Newbury. A marker for Edward Woodman³ stands at that location. Edward³ and Joanna (Salway) Woodman had the following children (the first three born in England, the others in Newbury, Massachusetts):

1. Edward Woodman⁴  b. 1 Apr 1632   @ Corsham, Wiltshire, England  
m. 20 Dec 1653 Mary Goodridge  @ Newbury, MA
Edward Woodman (Jr.), who came to this country as a young boy, married Mary Goodridge, the daughter of William and Margaret Goodridge. Like Edward, she had been born in England. They lived at Newbury, where he was known as a "planter" and a "yeoman". He died on 11 September 1694 and both are probably buried at Newbury.

Joshua Woodman was the first of the Woodman children to be born in America and supposedly the first boy born in Newbury. The first girl born there was Mary Brown, also our ancestor. Joshua married Elizabeth Stevens, who was born in 1645 to Capt. John and Elizabeth (Parker) Stevens of Andover, Massachusetts. Joshua died at Newbury on 30 May 1703 and is buried in the graveyard adjoining the Byfield Parish church, which was located "on the line" between Newbury and Rowley. A Newbury house built before 1700, the so-called Elijah Pearson house, was said to have been built by Joshua Woodman.

Jonathan Woodman married Hannah Hilton on 2 July 1668 at Newbury. She was the daughter of William and Sarah (Greenleaf) Hilton. Jonathan and Hannah lived at Newbury, where he was in the business of building ships. His shipyard was near the mouth of the Merrimack River, at the foot of Woodman Lane (now Kent Street) in present-day Newburyport, Massachusetts. It was here that he built the ship Salamander in 1674 for some people in Boston, whom he had to sue the next year for non-payment. The owners protested the suit, claiming that the requirement that the vessel be inspected had not been complied with. The court found in favor of the ship owners and fined Jonathan Woodman 10 pounds.

The case was not over though. Jonathan then petitioned the court for release from payment of the fine, stating that the ship had been surveyed by a carpenter "as the custom is with us" before she was planked. He further asserted the aforesaid owners had forced him to take up the deck when partially laid and raise it four feet higher. Apparently accepting his explanation, on 16 October 1676, the court granted his request and remitted his fine.

Unfortunately, Jonathan Woodman would be involved in another court case of a much more
sinister nature. In 1679, Newbury became entangled in the only witchcraft trial in the town's history. The accused was Elizabeth Morse, wife of William Morse, a shoemaker. Their home was on Market Street, in what is now Newburyport, and only a short distance from Woodman Lane where Jonathan Woodman\(^4\) had his shipyard. During the initial trial, more than twenty townspeople testified or gave depositions, including Jonathan Woodman, who declared Elizabeth Morse had shown incriminating wounds.

In his deposition Jonathan Woodman\(^4\) stated: "I met with a white thing like a cat, which did play at my legs, and I did often kick at it, having no weapon in my hand; at last I struck it with my feet against the fence where I saw Webster's house, and there it stopped with a loud cry after the manner of a cat and I see it no more. I further testify, that William Morse of Newberry did owne that he did send for a doctor for his wife the same night and same time that I was troubled with that cat above mentioned, which was some grounds for suspicion." After several years of controversy, Elizabeth Morse was found innocent and released. Note that this trial occurred thirteen years before the famous Salem witchcraft trials (also in Essex County, Massachusetts) in which twenty people were found guilty and executed.

Our ancestor, John Woodman\(^4\), was born about 1634 in England. He came to America as an infant and lived in Newbury, Massachusetts with his parents. At Newbury on 15 July 1656, he married Mary Field\(^11\), the daughter of Darby\(^10\) and Agnes Field of the Oyster River section of Dover, New Hampshire. John\(^4\) and Mary\(^11\) soon moved to Oyster River (today this location would be Durham, New Hampshire), where he was listed as an inhabitant on 17 June 1657. He received a grant of 100 acres on 10 November 1658, another grant on 10 January 1659, and a grant of 20 acres on 30 September 1660.

It was on this last grant of 20 acres "at ye west side of Wm Beard's Creek" where John Woodman\(^4\) built his garrison house. It was built on a hill with a commanding view of the river and the surrounding area, allowing it to be easily defended. The unsuccessful Indian attack on his garrison in 1694 was proof of his wisdom. That year, the settlement at Oyster River was attacked by Indians of the Penobscot and Norredgewog tribes, under the leadership of Villieu, a French missionary. The settlement had twelve garrison houses for the protection of its inhabitants. Of the twelve, five were destroyed, while seven were successfully defended, including the Woodman Garrison. The house, with bullets still in its logs, was still standing in 1896, when it accidentally burned. The hearthstone from this garrison is at the front of the Oyster River Middle School in Durham, with a plaque reading: "Hearthstone of Woodman Garrison, 1659-1896".

John Woodman\(^4\) took the Freeman's Oath on 22 May 1666. He attained the rank of Captain of the militia at Oyster River and "remained in active service till he was three score and ten years of age, vigorous and alert." Captain John Woodman\(^4\) was one of the outstanding men of the Province. He served as selectman of the town for several years, Justice of the Court of Common Pleas for five years, and Deputy to the Provincial Assembly from Dover for eight or nine different years.

When his wife, the former Mary Field\(^11\), died on 6 July 1698 at Oyster River, John Woodman\(^4\) then married Sarah Huckins on 17 October 1700 at Dover. Sarah was the daughter of Robert and Frances Burnham and the widow of Lieut. James Huckins. Huckins was a miller who had purchased his land from William Furber\(^1\). He and seventeen other men from his garrison were killed by the Indians while they worked in their fields on 28 August 1689. His garrison was burned and all of its
inhabitants were either killed or captured. Sarah Huckins was carried away by the Indians but was returned, over a year later, on 15 September 1690 at Fort Androscoggin. In 1692, her son Robert's wife was accused of secretly burying a dead child, but was not indicted.

Captain John Woodman⁴ must have outlived his second wife, since his will of 20 December 1705 mentions his three living children but not her. John⁴ died 17 September 1706 and is buried at Oyster River (now Durham), New Hampshire. His children, by the former Mary Field, were:

1. John Woodman⁵  b. @ Oyster River, Strafford, NH  
   d. 7 Jun 1705 @ Oyster River, Strafford, NH
2. Mary Woodman⁵  b. @ Oyster River, Strafford, NH  
   m. Edward Small
3. Sarah Woodman⁵  b. @ Oyster River, Strafford, NH  
   m. John Thompson
+ 4. Jonathan Woodman⁵  b. Abt 1665 @ Oyster River, Strafford, NH  
   m. Abt 1698 Elizabeth Downing  
   d. 1750 @ Oyster River, Strafford, NH

John Woodman⁵ (Jr.) apparently never married, and definitely never married Mary Raines as has been erroneously reported many times. He died "the Sabbath before" 10 June 1705.

Mary Woodman⁵ married Edward Small, who was granted land at Oyster River early in 1694. Soon after, he and Mary⁵ moved to Manomoisett, and afterwards, to Chatham, both on Cape Cod in southeastern Massachusetts. Edward Small died on the "last day of April" 1702, and Mary stayed in Massachusetts until at least 1707. By 24 October 1721, she was back in Oyster River, where she received 20 acres in compensation for the care of Archibald Smith. She was still alive in 1742 when she conveyed this land to her grandsons.

Sarah Woodman⁵ married John Thompson, the son of William Thompson of Kittery, Maine. A number of court records of John's father can be found in which he was charged for rebellion against his father-in-law, drinking, absence from church, idleness and not providing for his family. John Thompson settled at Oyster River, where Sarah⁵ still lived when her husband's estate was administered on 24 July 1734.

Jonathan Woodman⁴, our direct ancestor, was born about 1665 in the Oyster River part of Dover, New Hampshire, where he also lived his entire life. He received all of his father's land and "the whole part of the mill att oyster river", since his older brother John⁵ never married and died a year before their father. He was active in the militia and probably still commanded his own garrison, since he was called "Lieut. Jonathan Woodman". A historical marker at the junction of Bennett Road and Route 108 in Durham reads:

These scenic falls, 1.6 miles west of here on the Lamprey River, once provided waterpower and industry for the early settlers. A deed dated Apr. 11, 1694, shows that Capt. Packer, Jonathan Woodman, James Davis, Joseph Meder, and James Thomas were granted "the hole streame of Lamprele River for erecting a saw mill or mills."

About 1698, Jonathan Woodman⁵ married Elizabeth Downing, the daughter of Joshua and Patience (Hatch) Downing of Kittery, Maine. Elizabeth died on 17 April 1729 at Oyster River, while he died there in 1750 at the age of 85. Both are buried in the Woodman Cemetery, at the end of Woodman Road, in present-day Durham, New Hampshire. Jonathan⁴ and Elizabeth (Downing)
Woodman had the following children:

1. Mary Woodman⁶  
   **b. 1 Sep 1699** @ Oyster River, Strafford, NH  
   **d. 15 Jul 1777**

2. John Woodman⁶  
   **b. 6 Mar 1701** @ Oyster River, Strafford, NH  
   **m. 11 Sep 1732** Mary Fabyan @ Newington  
   **d. 15 Jul 1777** @ Durham, Strafford, NH

3. Jonathan Woodman⁶  
   **b. 23 Apr 1702** @ Oyster River, Strafford, NH  
   **m. 28 Mar 1776** @ Durham, Strafford, NH

4. Joshua Woodman⁶  
   **b. 25 Oct 1703** @ Oyster River, Strafford, NH  
   **m. 11 Sep 1732** Mary Fabyan @ Newington  
   **d. 15 Jul 1777** @ Durham, Strafford, NH

5. Edward Woodman⁶  
   **b. 22 May 1705** @ Oyster River, Strafford, NH  
   **m. 11 Sep 1732** Mary Fabyan @ Newington  
   **d. 15 Jul 1777** @ Durham, Strafford, NH

6. Downing Woodman⁶  
   **b. 5 Dec 1706** @ Oyster River, Strafford, NH  
   **m. 28 Mar 1776** @ Durham, Strafford, NH

7. Archelaus Woodman⁶  
   **b. 23 Jun 1708** @ Oyster River, Strafford, NH  
   **d. 20 Sep 1786** @ Durham, Strafford, NH

8. Alice Woodman⁶  
   **b. 12 Feb 1710** @ Oyster River, Strafford, NH

Very little other than what appears in the list of children above is known about them. Mary Woodman⁶ never married, and nothing else is known of her. Likewise, Alice Woodman⁶ apparently never married either, and probably died young.

Our ancestor, John Woodman⁶, married Mary Fabyan³ at Newington on 11 September 1732. She was the daughter of John² and Mary³ (Pickering) Fabyan, described earlier. John⁶ inherited his father's homestead and lived in the garrison house at Oyster River, which while he lived there became known as Durham, a name it retains today. John Woodman⁶ was repeatedly moderator of town meetings and a selectman many times. He also served as a "lot layer" and surveyor of timber. In several deeds, his occupation is referred to as simply "trader".

Mary³ (Fabyan) Woodman died at their home in Durham, New Hampshire on 7 August 1775, only a few months after the American Revolution erupted. John Woodman⁶ died two years later, on 15 July 1777, at the age of 76. They are both buried in the Woodman Cemetery in Durham. John⁶ and Mary³ (Fabyan) Woodman had the following children, all born at Durham:

1. Mary Woodman⁷  
   **b. 15 Feb 1735** @ Durham, Strafford, NH  
   **m. 13 May 1755** John Coleman  
   **d. 9 Sep 1819**

2. John Woodman⁷  
   **b. 4 May 1740** @ Durham, Strafford, NH

3. Jonathan Woodman⁷  
   **b. 5 Jan 1743** @ Durham, Strafford, NH  
   **m. 1st 1755** Martha Davis  
   **m. 2nd 1774** Mary (Jewett) Smith

4. Elizabeth Woodman⁷  
   **b. 30 Jan 1745** @ Durham, Strafford, NH  
   **m. 1776** Abednego Leathers  
   **d. 11 Nov 1809**

5. Ebenezer Woodman⁷  
   **b. 17 Sep 1750** @ Durham, Strafford, NH

Of the five children, two probably died young. John Woodman⁷ and Ebenezer Woodman⁷ were listed in the town records as having been baptized but there is not further record of either.
Ebenezer⁷ was listed in the records as having been baptized "in private" and that he was "sick". Of Jonathan Woodman⁷ and Elizabeth Woodman⁷, all that is known is listed above.

Our direct ancestor, Mary Woodman⁷, was probably the oldest of the children and was named for her mother. She married John Coleman, whose family will be introduced next.
THE COLEMAN, BRACKETT AND JOHNSON FAMILIES

THE COLEMAN FAMILY

We are descended from five generations of members of the Coleman family. The first ancestor with that name was Thomas Coleman, who was born in Marlborough of Wiltshire County, England in 1602. At the age of 33, he came to this country aboard the ship James, sailing from Southampton and arriving at Boston on 3 June 1635. With him was his wife Susanna, about whom we nothing else, not even her maiden name.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Birth/Death</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Thomas Coleman¹</td>
<td>(1602-1682)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tobias Coleman²</td>
<td>(1638-1650)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eleazor Coleman³</td>
<td>(1690-1698)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nicholas Jackson</td>
<td>(1647-1655)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lydia Jackson</td>
<td>(1647-1655)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah Riley</td>
<td>(1655)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John Coleman⁴</td>
<td>(1729-1807)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hatevil Nutter¹</td>
<td>(1603-1675)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anthony Nutter²</td>
<td>(1630-1686)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anne Ayers</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John Nutter³</td>
<td>(1663-1719)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry Langstaff</td>
<td>(1605-1705)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah Langstaff</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anne Nutter⁴</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John Johnson</td>
<td>(1639-1691)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rosamond Johnson</td>
<td>(1665-1691)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anthony Brackett</td>
<td>(1642-1691)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eleanor Brackett</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alice Coleman⁵</td>
<td>(1756-1781)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary Woodman⁷</td>
<td>(1735-1819)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Thomas Coleman¹ had been hired by Sir Richard Saltonstall and other men from Wiltshire, England to keep their cattle for them after arriving in the New World. Saltonstall and the others had formed a company for the purpose of raising cattle, horses and sheep in America, which at the time were selling at their highest prices. Thomas¹ had been employed by the company to provide food for the stock and to care for them for a period of two years. But there was disagreement and some time during this two-year period, Thomas Coleman¹ refused to carry out his part of the contract. The General Court finally ordered the imported grain to be divided among the various cattle owners and instructed each owner to arrange for care of his cattle.

Thomas Coleman¹ settled at Newbury, Massachusetts, where he became a freeman on 17 May 1637 and worked in laying out the lots for the new town. Thomas¹ was the owner of two of those lots there in 1635. By 1645, a notation in the town records indicates that another man was appointed the task of laying out the town lots because "Thomas Coleman having taken a farme so that he cannot attend to lay out lottes". Susanna died at Newbury on 17 November 1650 and Thomas¹ moved slightly north to Hampton, in what is today New Hampshire, where he married Mary Johnson, the widow of Edward Johnson, on 11 July 1651. At Hampton on 30 January 1663, his second wife Mary also died. Thomas Coleman¹ then married a third time to the former Margery Fowler, the daughter of Philip Fowler and the widow of both Christopher Osgood and Thomas
As early as 1659 and certainly before 1663, Thomas Coleman1 moved to Nantucket Island, 30 miles off the coast of southern Massachusetts. The island had been discovered in 1602, and in 1641, was deeded to Thomas Mayhew by the Earl of Stirling. The rights to the island were bought by a company of ten individuals, who in turn agreed that they would each choose a partner to assist them in settling the island. Thomas Coleman1 was one of the ten partners chosen, and as a result, became owner of 1/20 of the island in 1659. It appears that he also assisted others by laying out lots on the island, as he had done previously at Newbury.

He received a house lot and other lands from the committee that laid out the land for the settlers. Thomas1 lived in the town of Sherburne on the island, which was renamed to Nantucket in 1795. On 3 November 1673, when he declared he was a resident of Nantucket, Thomas1 signed a deed leaving his lands and houses to his son Tobias, the deed to take effect after his death. Thomas Coleman1 died on Nantucket Island in 1682. His wife Margery survived him and married a fourth time. The children of Thomas Coleman1, all by his first wife Susanna, were:

1. Susanna Coleman2
d. Jan 1642 @ Newbury, Essex, MA

2. Tobias Coleman2
   b. 1638 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   m. 16 Apr 1668 Lydia Jackson
   d. 21 Oct 1650

3. Benjamin Coleman2
   b. 1 May 1640 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   d. 21 Oct 1650

4. Joseph Coleman2
   b. 2 Dec 1642 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   m. Bef 1673 Ann Bunker
   d. 1690

5. John Coleman2
   b. 1644 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   m. Bef 1667 Joanna Folger
   d. Dec 1715 @ Nantucket

6. Isaac Coleman2
   b. 20 Feb 1646/7 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   d. 6 Jun 1669 drowned in ocean

7. Joanna Coleman2

There may have been other children. The usually reliable Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire states that the oldest child was Dorcas Coleman2, but her marriage on 14 July 1648 to John Tillotson makes that seem unlikely. Further, the History of Newport by historian Joshua Coffin states that "Dorcas Coleman was a sister of Thomas Coleman the proprietor." This seems more likely. There may also have been a son named Thomas Coleman2, but if there was, he died young. There is also some confusion about the mother of these children. It is almost certain that the mother of all of the children listed was Susanna, the first wife of Thomas Coleman1. The source Early Settlers of Nantucket states that the mother of Tobias Coleman2 was Margery, the third wife of Thomas1. Since Tobias2 was married in 1668 and his father didn't marry Margery until after 1663, that clearly is impossible. However, as is so often the case, that error has been replicated many times in other works.

Of some of the children, we know nothing of their fate. Susanna2 died young as did probably Joanna2. Of the remaining five known sons, two of them drowned as boys. Benjamin2 drowned at Newbury when he was 10 years old. His brother Isaac2 drowned in the ocean between Martha's Vineyard and Nantucket. The town records of Nantucket recorded that "John Barnard and Bethia his wife and Isaac Coleman ended their days ye 6th June 1669 being drowned out of a canoe.
between nantucket & ye Vineyard, at the same time Eleazor Folger was preserved."

Joseph Coleman² survived to adulthood and married Ann Bunker of Nantucket. Her mother was a Godfrey, one of our ancestor families described earlier. One of Joseph's sons also drowned as a boy, in a mill pond. John Coleman² married Joanna Folger, the daughter of Peter and Mary (Morrell) Folger. The Bethiah who drowned in the canoe at sea was Joanna's sister. Another of Joanna's sisters, Abigail Folger, was the mother of Benjamin Franklin. John Coleman² continued to live on Nantucket until his death in 1715. Many of his descendants became Quakers.

Tobias Coleman², the eldest surviving son, is our direct ancestor. He was born in Newbury, Massachusetts in 1638. He seems to have left Newbury as a young man and moved to Rowley, a town about seven miles south of his birthplace. On 16 December 1653, he was chosen "warner of town meetings" in Rowley. Given his age of only about 15 at the time, it is possible that he was serving in an apprenticeship at the time. At any rate, he married Lydia Jackson of Rowley on 16 April 1668 and moved back to Newbury about 1673.

Lydia was the daughter of Nicholas and Sarah (Riley) Jackson. Her father may have been the 22-year-old Nicholas Jackson who sailed from London on 24 July 1635 for Virginia as has been reported by some, but that seems unlikely since relatively few of the people who emigrated to the southern colonies ended up in New England. In any case, a Nicholas Jackson was in Salem, Massachusetts by 1638 and a year or two later, appears in Rowley, where he received a grant of land. Nicholas also was granted a lot of 2½ acres by "the cart path." His name appears many times in the Rowley town records. Nicholas Jackson married Sarah Riley of Rowley in July 1646. Sarah was buried 12 August 1655 at Rowley and Nicholas married second to the widow Elizabeth Chaplain. Nicholas died 13 February 1697/8 at age 84. Nicholas and Sarah Jackson had the following children:

<p>| | | | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Lydia Jackson b. 23 Apr 1647</td>
<td>@ Rowley, Essex, MA</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>m. 16 Apr 1668</td>
<td>Tobias Coleman</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Samuel Jackson b. 23 Mar 1649</td>
<td>@ Rowley, Essex, MA</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Jonathan Jackson b. 15 Jul 1650</td>
<td>@ Rowley, Essex, MA</td>
<td>m. 6 Dec 1681 Hannah Garfield</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>d. 1715 @ Framingham, MA</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Caleb Jackson b. 25 Apr 1652</td>
<td>@ Rowley, Essex, MA</td>
<td>m. Elizabeth How</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>d. 10 Aug 1718 @ Rowley, Essex, MA</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

As an interesting sidebar, Caleb Jackson's mother-in-law, also named Elizabeth How, was hanged as a witch on 19 July 1692 as a result of the Salem witch trials. These events at Salem, in the face of an utter disregard of human logic, were clearly the lowest ebb in this country's colonial history.

Returning to Tobias Coleman², by 1678, he was living on Nantucket where his father lived, when he and his father both signed a deed on 12 November of that year. Thomas¹ and Tobias² were both listed as "inhabitants" in the town of Sherburne. As described earlier, Tobias Coleman² received his father's 1000-foot-square house lot at Sherburne, on the island of Nantucket. However, it does not appear that island life appealed to Tobias² as much as it did his father. After his father's death, Tobias² left Nantucket and returned to either Newbury or Rowley, as some have reported, or to Martha's Vineyard, according to another account. It is not known when or where Tobias Coleman²
or his wife died. He and Lydia had the following children:

1. Jabez Coleman<sup>3</sup>  
   - b. 17 Mar 1668/9  @ Rowley, Essex, MA  
   - m. 2 Nov 1699  Mary Prescott  
   - d. 24 May 1724  

2. Sarah Coleman<sup>3</sup>  
   - b. 17 Jun 1670  @ Rowley, Essex, MA  
   - m. 16 Jun 1696  Mighell Hopkinson  

3. Thomas Coleman<sup>3</sup>  
   - b. 26 Mar 1672  @ Rowley, Essex, MA  
   - m.  Phoebe Pearson  

4. Lydia Coleman<sup>3</sup>  
   - b. 25 May 1676  @ Nantucket, MA  
   - d. 14 Mar 1730/1  

5. Deborah Coleman<sup>3</sup>  
   - b. 25 May 1676  @ Nantucket, MA  
   - m. 2 Nov 1699  Mary Prescott  
   - d. 24 May 1724  

6. Ephraim Coleman<sup>3</sup>  
   - m.  Susanna -----  

7. Judah Coleman<sup>3</sup>  
   - b. 3 Oct 1686  @ Rowley, Essex, MA  
   - m.  Hepzibah -----  
   - d. 22 Dec 1759  @ Rowley, Essex, MA  

8. Eleazor Coleman<sup>3</sup>  
   - b. Abt 1690  @ Martha's Vineyard, MA  
   - m. 1713  (1st) Mary Langstaff  
   - m. 1 Mar 1716/7  (2nd) Anne Nutter  

For most of the children of Tobias Coleman<sup>2</sup>, the only information known about them is already stated in the list of the children above. However, we know that Jabez Coleman<sup>3</sup> settled at Kingston, New Hampshire, where he was an original settler in 1700. Both he and his son Joseph, who was apparently his only child, were killed by Indians in 1724. According to church records, Deborah Coleman<sup>3</sup> died "an old maid".

Eleazor Coleman<sup>3</sup> is our direct ancestor, and a bit of an odd one he must have been. In 1713, at the recorded age of 23, he married "a maiden thrice his age". The maiden [an unmarried woman] was Mary Langstaff of Newington, the daughter of Henry Langstaff, mentioned early in this book. Mary had been born about 1650 and would have been about 63 at the time of their marriage. Mary died soon after their marriage.

Eleazor<sup>3</sup> then married, on 1 March 1716/7, Anne Nutter<sup>4</sup>, the daughter of John<sup>3</sup> and Rosamond (Johnson) Nutter. John Nutter<sup>3</sup>, mentioned in a previous chapter, was the son of Anthony Nutter<sup>2</sup> and the grandson of Hatevil Nutter<sup>1</sup>, the original immigrant. Anne Nutter<sup>4</sup>, on her mother's side, also was a descendant of the Brackett and Johnson families, described next. We will return to Eleazor Coleman<sup>3</sup> later in this chapter.

**THE BRACKETT FAMILY**

There are a great many family traditions within the Brackett family. First is the tradition that the family name was originally *Brockett* and not Brackett, and that the name originated from Wales. Then there is the family tradition that the family was Scottish in origin. There is also the legend that four brothers named Brackett came at the same time with Governor Winthrop when he founded the Massachusetts Bay Colony in 1630. Our ancestor supposedly went on to New Hampshire with Capt. John Mason in 1631. It is uncertain if any of these stories are true.

What we do know is that Anthony Brackett first appears in the records of Portsmouth, New Hampshire in 1640, when he signed a deed for a *glebe* [land provided to clergymen for their benefit and use]. Anthony probably married about 1635, but we do not know the name of his wife, even her
first name. He lived southeast of the present-day city of Portsmouth, New Hampshire, near Little Harbor and Odiorne's Point, at a place called Sandy Beach, now Rye, New Hampshire. His house was located about a mile south of Little Harbor and, 350 years later, there is still a Brackett Road located near where he lived. Because many of the people who originally settled in this area near the ocean were involved in fishing, it could be that Anthony was originally a fisherman, although there is no evidence that he pursued that occupation later in life.

Anthony came to own a considerable amount of land. On 13 January 1652, "Anthony Brackite" received a grant of 30 acres of land from the town of Portsmouth. On 17 March 1653, a grant was given "unto Anthony Braket, upland 30 ackers adjoyninge unto his hous and of medow 20 ackers more". On 20 March 1656, he received "50 acres more land than his former grant to join with his hous and to lye in such form as it may enclose his hous, so that it be not in any man's former grant." On 3 February 1660, Anthony received yet another grant of 100 acres, an amount given to each head of a family "who had come to dwell in the town." In all, Anthony Brackett was granted over 200 acres of land.

Anthony Brackett appears in the town records frequently; thus it appears that he was active in town affairs. He was often referred to as "Anthony, the selectman," as he was chosen one of the town's selectmen for several years. In all records, he signed his name with his mark, the letter "A", meaning he could not write.

The problems with the Indians that plagued colonial New Hampshire for years, and described at length earlier in this book, did not escape the Brackett family. One of Anthony's sons, Thomas Brackett, was killed by Indians in Maine in August 1676, and Thomas' children taken captive. The children were "redeemed from captivity" by Anthony Brackett and several of these grandchildren lived with him for several years. At his home in Portsmouth (now Rye, New Hampshire), Anthony and his neighbors had few problems with the Indians. But by 1691, the troubles with the Indians had escalated and a garrison house had been built at Odiorne's Point to which the families in the area could flee when danger arose. Despite the fact that the latest hostilities with the Indians had been going on for three years, the settlements near Sandy Beach had been spared.

That changed on 28 September 1691, when an Indian war party landed just south of Little Harbor and attacked the homes situated on what was then known as Brackett Lane. Fifteen people in all were killed that day, including Anthony Brackett and his wife. At least three of those were believed to have been "consumed in the burning of the houses." The Indians killed one or more small children "by dashing out their brains against a large rock" which stood on what is now Wallis Road. Tradition has it that, for many years, the rock bore the stains of the blood of those victims. The rock is no longer there, having been removed as a result of road improvements.

A contemporary account of the event states: "The sons of Francis Rand went a fishing; the sons of ould Goodman Brackett were in the salt marsh and with no suspicion of danger. The settlers went about their usual vocations. Early in the afternoon a party of Indians came from the eastward in canoes, landed at Sandy Beach, left the garrison there unmolested, and attacked the homes of the defenseless ones, killing and capturing twenty-one persons. Among the killed was Francis Rand, one of the first settlers. When his sons came in from fishing they followed the Indians over to the Bracketts, fired upon them and frightened them away. The sons of Anthony Brackett who had the guns with them ran to the garrison at Odiorne's Point."
The "sons of Anthony Brackett" described actually were his son John and his grandson Joshua. As the settlers had been instructed to do in case of an Indian attack, they hastened to the garrison to defend any of those who had managed to escaped the Indians. The fifteen people who died that day were gathered in one place and buried in separate graves. Those graves were placed on a knoll entirely surrounded by salt marsh near the present-day town of Rye, New Hampshire.

Perhaps with a concern for the increasing Indian problems, Anthony Brackett made out his will only 17 days before he died. The children of Anthony Brackett were (order of children approximate):

1. Anthony Brackett  
   b. Abt 1638 @ Portsmouth, NH  
   m. (1st) Anne Mitton  
   m. 19 Nov 1678 (2nd) Susanna Drake  
   d. 21 Sep 1689 @ Falmouth, ME

2. Thomas Brackett  
   b. Abt 1640 @ Portsmouth, NH  
   m. Mary Mitton  
   d. 11 Aug 1676 @ Falmouth, ME

+ 3. Eleanor Brackett  
   b. Abt 1642 @ Portsmouth, NH  
   m. 26 Dec 1661 John Johnson

4. John Brackett  
   b. Abt 1645 @ Portsmouth, NH  
   m. (1st) Martha Philbrick  
   m. 24 Nov 1698 (2nd) Dinah (Sanborn) Marston  
   d. Abt 1726

5. Jane Brackett  
   b. Abt 1651 @ Portsmouth, NH  
   m. 28 Dec 1671 (1st) Matthias Haines  
   m. 19 Apr 1697 (2nd) Isaac Marston  
   d. Aft 1731

The children of Anthony Brackett also suffered at the hands of the Indians. The oldest son, Anthony Brackett Jr., moved to Falmouth, Maine (near Portland) prior to 1662. He married Anne Mitton and lived on an 100-acre parcel of land given to his wife by her grandfather, later enlarging the farm to 400 acres. He was known as "Captain Anthony Brackett", indicating that he was prominent in the militia. On 11 August 1676, when Indian problems hit the area, he and his wife, along with one child, were taken captive by the Indians. In November, after being held by the Indians for three months, they managed to escape. Rowing across the bay in an old birch canoe they found and which Anne had been able to mend, they were able to board a vessel bound for Piscataqua.

A resident of the area named Thaddeus Clark wrote a letter to his mother-in-law in Boston on 14 August 1676, just three days after the Indian attack and provided a first-hand account. The mother-in-law was related to the Bracketts and it was Clark who broke the news to her: "On Friday last in the morning your own Son with your two Sons in Law, Anthony & Thomas Bracket & their whole families were Killed & taken by the Indians, we Know not how, tis certainly known by us that Thomas is slain & his wife & children carried away captive, & of Anthony & his families we have no tidings & therefore think that they might be captivated the night before because of the remoteness of their habitation from neighbourhood."

Following the death of his first wife soon after their return to New Hampshire, Captain Anthony Brackett married Susannah Drake of Hampton, New Hampshire on 9 November 1678. Tradition has it that she was a descendant of Sir Francis Drake. The same year, he and his new wife returned
to Falmouth, Maine, where she bore him six more children. Here, he was put in charge of the defenses of the ravaged settlement, and commanded a garrison there. However, Anthony Brackett Jr. was killed by the Indians on his farm on 21 September 1689. His widow returned to Hampton, where her family lived, and stayed there. She died on 4 November 1719 at Hampton. One of her stepsons, Seth Brackett, was also killed by Indians near the fort in Falmouth in May 1690. Another of her sons, also named Anthony Brackett, eventually leased out the property they owned in Maine and the family never returned there.

Thomas Brackett, the next oldest son, also went to Falmouth, Maine at the same time as his brother Anthony. He married Mary Mitton, the sister of his brother's wife, and also lived on land given to her by her grandfather. Thomas was killed by Indians on 11 August 1676, the same day his brother's family was taken captive. Thomas' wife and children were carried off by the Indians to Canada and she died within a few months. The children were taken by the Indians to Portsmouth and were eventually released there after their grandfather, Anthony Brackett, paid a ransom.

John Brackett fared better than his older brothers. Since both his older brothers were killed by Indians in Maine before his father also died at their hands in 1691, John received the homestead at Portsmouth. Although he was left nothing in Anthony Brackett's will, that was because on 20 July 1686, his father had deeded his farm and buildings at Sandy Beach to John Brackett, in exchange for the support for life of his parents. He married, first, Martha Philbrick, the daughter of John Philbrick, and second on 24 November 1698, the former Dinah Sanborn, the widow of James Marston. John probably died earlier in 1726, when his estate was administered in December of that year.

Although neither John Brackett nor any member of his family that we know of was killed by the Indians, he had a daughter Abigail who was carried off to Canada by the Indians in 1691. She apparently was about eight years old at the time this occurred, since she was baptized in Canada on 17 December 1698 at the age of sixteen. She married Pierre Roi on 16 December 1715 in Quebec. However it appears that she did return to New Hampshire for a time, since in 1727, Peter King alias Roi of Greenland and wife Abigail signed a quit claim to her brother Samuel. Also that year, "Frenchman Brackett" is shown on the tax rolls. However, they must have returned to Canada, for she was buried in the Notre-Dame of Quebec on 3 December 1743 at the age of 57.

Jane Brackett married twice. Her first husband was Matthias Haines, the son of Samuel Haines. The elder Haines was one of the servants of John Cogswell who came over on the ill-fated Angel Gabriel in 1635, the same ship on which William Furber sailed. Haines stated in a later deposition that he had been a servant for Cogswell for about nine years in England. Despite his experience on the Angel Gabriel, he returned to England and married there in 1638 before returning to Dover by 1640. Matthias and Jane Haines lived at Greenland, New Hampshire, where he operated a sawmill that his father had purchased. Jane was a widow by 1690, when her status as such was stated in a tax list. On 19 April 1697, she remarried to Isaac Marston of Hampton, New Hampshire, who was licensed to sell ale. She was still alive in 1731, when at the stated age of 80, she made a deposition regarding the Mitton family.

THE JOHNSON FAMILY

Eleanor Brackett is our direct ancestor. Her name is often spelled Elinor in early records. She
was born about 1642 at Portsmouth, New Hampshire. On 26 December 1661, she married John Johnson, about whose ancestry nothing is known. He may have been related to the James Johnson who lived on Great Island, but that connection has not been proven. He was born about 1639 and stated in a deposition in 1675 that he took possession of the land on Great Island that John Odiorne purchased there in 1656. Since Odiorne came from Boston, that is possibly where John Johnson originated as well. The common name makes it very difficult to distinguish him from others.

John Johnson was granted one acre of land on Great Island on 13 January 1660/1, just eleven months before he married Eleanor Brackett. This island, which lies in Portsmouth harbor, is now called New Castle Island and, for years, was the commercial and political center of New Hampshire. John Johnson sold his house on the island on 21 August 1668, by which time he was living in Portsmouth. Five years later he was living at Greenland, where he was a tavern keeper for many years. In 1692, he was listed as a "culler of pipestaves". On 25 May 1713, John Johnson deeded half his farm to his son James, with the other half to be his after John's death and with the instructions that James was to pay his two brothers for their portions. His son John was taxed as "Jr." in 1717 but without the "Jr." in 1718, implying that John Johnson died about that time.

John and Eleanor (Brackett) Johnson had the following children, all probably born on Great Island, at Portsmouth or Greenland:

1. John Johnson  b. 2 Nov 1662
   m. Hannah Lewis
   d. 7 Dec 1747 @ Greenland, NH

+ 2. Rosamond Johnson  b. 10 Jun 1665
   m. Aft 1691 John Nutter

3. Hannah Johnson  b. 7 Feb 1670/1
   m. 27 Apr 1692 John Cate
   d. Bef 1710

4. James Johnson  b. 13 Nov 1673
   m. 25 Sep 1708 (1st) Elizabeth Thompson
   m. 19 Dec 1734 (2nd) Ann (Allen) Bill
   d. 28 Mar 1752 @ Greenland, NH

5. Ebenezer Johnson  b. 27 Nov 1676
   m. Bef 1703 (1st) Margaret Weeks
   m. 25 Oct 1716 (2nd) Susannah (Wiggin) Martin
   d. 6 Sep 1748 @ Greenland, NH

John Johnson (Jr.) was a miller who lived at Greenland, New Hampshire, where he died in 1747 at the age of 85. Oddly, as the oldest son, he did not receive his father's farm. Hannah Johnson married John Cate, who was a housewright and the owner of a corn mill. Hannah was the mother of at least one of John Cate's children but died before 1710, when he remarried. James Johnson, as mentioned earlier, received the family farm and lived the rest of his life at Greenland. He was called "Lieut. James Johnson" in 1712 and "Captain" in 1716, proving that he was active in the local militia. He died in 1752 at age 78. Ebenezer Johnson was a deacon in the church at Greenland, New Hampshire. His second wife, the widow Susannah Martin, was the granddaughter of Capt. Thomas Wiggin.

Rosamond Johnson, our direct ancestor, married John Nutter of Newington, the grandson of Hatevil Nutter. He was active in town affairs at Dover (before the township of Newington was
organized in 1713), serving as their constable in 1692 and serving on both juries and grand juries. He died by 1719. John and Rosamond (Johnson) Nutter had the following children, probably all born at Newington:

+ 1. Anne Nutter⁴  m. 1 Mar 1716/7  Eleazor Coleman
2. Mary Nutter⁴  m. 16 Jan 1718  James Pickering
3. John Nutter⁴  m. 8 Feb 1718/9  Abigail Whidden
   d. Abt 1747
4. Matthias Nutter⁴  m.  Hannah Furber
5. James Nutter⁴  m. 1 Jan 1723/4  Abigail Furber
6. Hatevil Nutter⁴  m. 28 Jun 1727  Rebecca Ayres
7. Rosamond Nutter⁴  m. 29 Nov 1733  Samuel Fabyan

Little else is known about any of these children. But the reader will probably recognize some of the family names of the people they married. Rosamond Nutter⁴, who was baptized 31 January 1724/5, was the first wife of Samuel Fabyan. Samuel's daughter Rosamond, by his second wife, married Levi Furber⁵.

ELEAZOR COLEMAN

Our direct ancestor, Anne Nutter⁴, became the second wife of Eleazor Coleman³, to whom we now return. His first wife, the old maid Mary Langstaff, who was well over sixty years old when she married the 23-year-old Coleman, died soon after that union. Apparently cured of relationships with much older women, Coleman then married Anne Nutter⁴, someone much closer to his own age.

But we must consider that there may have been another reason why Eleazor Coleman³ chose, for his first wife, someone old enough to be his grandmother. As the youngest son in the family, Eleazor³ was not likely to receive any of his father's land. English common-law tradition of primogeniture dictated that the eldest son usually received all or most of his father's estate, and the younger the male child, the less likely he would be to receive any inheritance. But on 27 October 1704, Henry Langstaff had deeded his land "in the little bay in Dover", half of all his property at Greenland and half of all his household goods to "my lawful begotten daughter Mary Langster, spinster". It may be unfair to speculate such sinister thoughts about our ancestors, but perhaps Eleazor Coleman contrived that the "spinster" Mary Langstaff could supply him with land and goods that he would not readily accumulate otherwise.

Despite his intentions, good or bad, Eleazor Coleman³ found himself a widower before he was 27 years old and then married Anne Nutter⁴. They lived at Newington, on the property that had once belonged to Henry Langstaff. Eleazor³ and Anne⁴ (Nutter) Coleman had the following children, all born at Newington (all birth dates below are baptism dates from Newington Church records except for John⁴):

1. Phineas Coleman⁴  b. 22 Aug 1719  @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
   m. 22 Apr 1739  Abigail Huntress
2. Eleazor Coleman⁴  b. 22 Aug 1719  @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
   m. 20 Sep 1739  Keziah Leighton
3. Mary Coleman⁴  b. 30 Apr 1721  @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
   m. 21 Jan 1742  Samuel Huntress
4. James Coleman⁴  b. 14 Mar 1725  @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
5. Anna Coleman⁴  b. 29 May 1726  @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
   m. 20 Jun 1745  Benjamin Matthews
6. Joseph Coleman⁴  b. 15 Jul 1728 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
m.  Abigail Downing  
+ 7. John Coleman⁴  b. 30 Mar 1729 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
m.  13 May 1755 Mary Woodman  
d.  18 Oct 1807  
8. Rosamond Coleman⁴  b. 20 Jan 1734 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
m.  27 Dec 1753 Joshua Trickey  
9. Sarah Coleman⁴  b. 26 Oct 1735 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
m.  21 Oct 1756 Enoch Toppan  
10. Lydia Coleman⁴  b. 4 Jun 1738 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
m.  Ephraim Pickering  
d. 16 Feb 1832  

Since Phineas Coleman⁴ and Eleazor Coleman⁴ were baptized the same day and married the same year, it is possible they were twins. Both lived at Newington, New Hampshire. Phineas⁴ married Abigail Huntress, the daughter of two other direct ancestors, Samuel and Abigail (Ham) Huntress. Eleazor⁴ married Keziah Leighton, the daughter of Thomas and Deborah Leighton, also our direct ancestors. Mary Coleman⁴ married the Samuel Huntress just mentioned as his much younger second wife, thus becoming her own brother's mother-in-law. Accounts of the Huntress and Leighton families were provided earlier.

Nothing more is known of James Coleman⁴. Anna Coleman⁴ married Benjamin Matthews, the son of Francis and Lydia (Drew) Matthews of Oyster River. Joseph Coleman⁴ married Abigail Downing and lived at Newington. Rosamond Coleman⁴ married Joshua Trickey, the son of John and Mary (Wittum) Trickey, and the great grandson of another ancestor, Thomas Trickey. Sarah Coleman⁴ married Enoch Toppan of Newbury, Massachusetts. Lydia Coleman⁴ married Maj. Ephraim Pickering of Newington, the son of Joshua and Deborah (Smithson) Pickering. He was the grandson of Thomas Pickering, another direct ancestor, mentioned previously. Major Pickering was an officer in the Revolutionary War and a member of the Legislature. He died in 1803.

John Coleman⁴ of Newington was our direct ancestor. He was called Deacon John Coleman, so he apparently took a very active role in the affairs of the Newington Church. John Coleman⁴ married Mary Woodman⁷, a family that was introduced earlier. John⁴ wrote out his will in 1805, in which he named six of his eight children. He also named the four children of his son Benjamin and his granddaughter Alice Coleman Furber, from whom we are descended. He left all of his real estate to his son Eleazor Coleman⁵. The children of John⁴ and Mary⁷ (Woodman) Coleman were:

+ 1. Alice Coleman⁵  b. 13 May 1756 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
m.  18 Jun 1780 Richard Furber  
d.  28 May 1781 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
2. Woodman Coleman⁵  b. 1 Dec 1757 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
d.  9 Aug 1819 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
3. Benjamin Coleman⁵  b. 3 Aug 1759 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
m.  2 Jun 1791 Hannah Shackford  
d. 11 Jul 1800  
4. Mary Coleman⁵  b. 22 Aug 1761 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
m.  6 Mar ---- Jethro Furber (year torn off)  
d. 11 Jun ---- year torn off (but before 1805)  
5. Elizabeth Coleman⁵  b. 4 Oct 1763 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
m.  ----- Colbath  
6. John Coleman⁵  b. 2 May 1767 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Date of Birth</th>
<th>Place of Birth</th>
<th>Father</th>
<th>Mother</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Anna Coleman</td>
<td>21 Nov 1769</td>
<td>Newington, NH</td>
<td>Benjamin Moses</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Mehitable Coleman</td>
<td>17 Apr 1772</td>
<td>Newington, NH</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>Eleazor Coleman</td>
<td>5 Nov 1775</td>
<td>Newington, NH</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Of the children of Deacon John Coleman⁴, little can be added to what is listed above. Our direct ancestor was Alice Coleman⁵, who married Richard Furber⁶, a sixth-generation descendant of William Furber¹. It is to him we turn next, after introducing several families related to Richard⁶.
RICHARD FURBER AND OTHER RELATED FAMILIES

THE BACHILER FAMILY

The Reverend Stephen Bachiler is perhaps the most colorful and interesting of all of our ancestors described in this family history. He left a great many descendants and has been thoroughly researched by a number of historians. The compiler found no less than eight different family histories written about the Reverend Stephen Bachiler. Unfortunately, several of these histories are flawed by research that later was proved incorrect, resulting in the usual replication of incorrect information over the years. This chapter will attempt to provide a correct account of the Reverend Stephen Bachiler.

Like the Reverend Joseph Hull described previously, Stephen Bachiler led a controversial life filled with contentious conflicts with church and government authorities, both in England and in the colonies. During the Reverend Stephen Bachiler's stay in the colonies, he was in regular conflict with various officials and ministers in regard to religious matters, in particular at Lynn and at Hampton. Many of his descendants continued the conflict, becoming Quakers. Among Stephen Bachiler's descendants were Richard M. Nixon, Daniel Webster (U.S. statesman and Secretary of State), John Greenleaf Whittier (author and abolitionist), Caleb Cushing (U.S. Attorney General) and William P. Fessendon (U.S. Secretary of State, abolitionist, and co-founder of the Republican party).

As historian Frederick C. Pierce pointed out, Stephen Bachiler's life "was stormy and contentious." He must have possessed unusual physical vigor, since he did not sail for New England until after he was 70 years old, and lived to well into his nineties. Descendant Daniel Webster wrote
to his son Fletcher on 5 March 1840: "I believe we are all indebted to my father's mother for a large portion of the little sense which belongs to us. Her name was Susannah Bachelder; she was the descendant of a clergyman and a woman of uncommon strength of understanding. If I had had many boys I should have called one of them Bachelder."

Stephen Bachiler came from England, where the family had lived for hundreds of years. The first usage of the surname is a Gilbert le Bachler who lived in Normandy in 1195. The origin of the name is most likely from the French word bachiler, meaning a young man. Besides its present-day meaning of an unmarried male, it was also used to mean a younger man when an elder person with the same given name lived in the area. In English and colonial records, the name is often spelled Bachelder, Bachellor, Bachelor, Batchelder, Batcheler, Batchelor, etc. Historian Frederick Clifton Pierce noted that he had found 44 different spellings of the name. Stephen Bachiller himself, who was well educated, always wrote his name Bachiler, and that spelling will be used here.

Stephen Bachiler was born in England (probably in Hampshire county) about 1561. There were several Bachiler families in the area and the identity of his parents has never been determined. Historian Victor C. Sanborn speculated that perhaps Stephen was descended from a branch of the Bachiler family that came from the Channel Islands. At about the age of 20 he entered St. Johns College at Oxford. He was matriculated 17 November 1581 and received his Bachelor of Arts degree on 3 February 1585/6. The leading profession for college graduates during this period was that of a clergyman and Stephen Bachiler began his study for the ministry. On 17 July 1587, he was named the vicar of Wherwell in Hampshire. Wherwell was a small parish and the seat of an ancient abbey founded in 986 by Queen Aelfrida, the widow of King Edgar.

It appears that Stephen Bachiler attracted controversy almost from the beginning. He believed that the union of church and state was a bad idea many years before that concept became a cornerstone of the American constitution and rebelled against the doctrine of a religious commonwealth. In May 1593, he was arrested and committed by his superior, the Bishop of Winchester, for having "uttered in a sermon at Newbury very lewd speeches tending seditiously to the derogation of her Majesty's government". He was ordered to appear before the Archbishop of Canterbury, but records of what happened as a result of that meeting do not exist. However, we can assume that he escaped the fate of other Puritan ministers who were persecuted, and often hanged, since he continued to be the minister at Wherwell.

The name of his first wife is unknown to us, but she was the mother to all of his children born at Wherwell. Some have reported that she was Ann Bate, but there is no direct evidence to support that claim. We know little about his life while at Wherwell since the church records were not begun there until 1643. We know only that he remained as the minister at Wherwell until 9 August 1605, when John Bate was appointed vicar there, the vacancy existing because of "the ejection of Stephen Bachiler, the last vicar." It appears that Stephen Bachiler's first wife was closely related in some way to the John Bate who succeeded Bachiler as the minister at Wherwell, leading to the speculation of her name.

Stephen Bachiler married two more times in England. His first wife died sometime between 1610 and 1624, and Bachiler married a widow named Christian Weare at Abbots Ann in Hampshire on 2 March 1623/4. But she died soon after their marriage and Stephen then married Helen (also Helena) Mason at Abbots Ann on 26 March 1627. Helen was the widow of another minister, the
Reverend Thomas Mason. Helen accompanied her husband to New England and died there before 1647.

Bachiler's dismissal as the vicar of Wherwell was shared by nearly a hundred ministers who lost their positions between 1604 and 1609 following the accession of James I as King of England in 1603. In January 1604, King James called the famous Hampton Court Conference and uttered his angry threat against the Puritans, stating that "I will make them conform or I will harry them out of the kingdom." The next year the King's threat was carried out against Stephen Bachiler, and no doubt he was thoroughly "harried" following his excommunication. Governor Winthrop wrote in his journals that Bachiler had "suffered" much at the hands of the bishops.

It appears that Stephen Bachiler stayed at Wherwell, for he appears in records there in 1606 and 1614. In the latter year, George Wighley, a minister and another Oxford graduate filed a complaint accusing Stephen Bachiler and several others of libelling him by means of verses that ridiculed him. In 1622 and again in 1629, Bachiler acquired land in Newton Stacy, a small village within the parish of Barton Stacy, a few miles east of Wherwell. Without a parish, he probably preached to different congregations when he could avoid the persecution of the church people. On 11 June 1621, the diary of Adam Winthrop (the father of the future Massachusetts Governor John Winthrop) stated that "Mr. Bachelour, the preacher, dined with us."

Some of the parishioners of Barton Stacy who listened to Bachiler's sermons apparently were incited to violence by them. In 1632, we find that the sheriff petitioned the King in Council for redress, stating that "some of the parishioners, petitioner's tenants, having been formerly misled by Stephen Bachelor, a notorious inconformist, had demolished a consecrated chapel at Newton Stacy, neglected the repair of their parish church, maliciously opposed petitioner's intent (to repair the church at his own charge), and executed many things in contempt of the cannons and the bishop."

Possibly as a result of these problems, Stephen Bachiler soon left Newton Stacy and England itself. He sold the land he owned at Newton Stacy by 1631 and on 23 June 1631, at the age of 70, he applied for permission to visit his "sons and daughters" in Flushing, Holland. At the time of the request, he was a resident of South Stoneham, in the county of Southampton. He requested that his wife, Helen, aged 48 years, and his daughter, Ann Sandburn, a 30-year-old widow, accompany him. He was to return within two months. It is not clear whether he ever made this trip. At about the same time, Stephen Bachiler joined a group of London merchants in forming the Plough Company, which received a grant of 1600 square miles of land in New England near the present-day site of Portland, Maine. The proposed colony was to be called Lygonia.

Bachiler invested £100 in the Company and loaned them another £67, which probably explains the sale of his property at Newton Stacy. He was an active participant in the company as well as their pastor. The company sent out a ship, the Plough, in 1630 with a small group of colonists who failed to establish the proposed colony and instead landed at Watertown, Massachusetts. The company sent two more groups of settlers to New England, but neither of these groups ever occupied their grant either, and the venture soon failed. Some of the settlers went on to Virginia, some returned to England, and some settled in Massachusetts. Stephen Bachiler was part of the second group, sailing on 9 March 1631/2 on the William and Francis from London with 60 passengers, which after 88 "dreary days", landed at Boston.
Since the project for establishing the Lygonia colony had failed, the backers of the company wrote to John Winthrop, the governor of the Massachusetts colony, requesting that he dispose of the goods which had been sent over on the ships and use the proceeds to pay off some of the investors, including Stephen Bachiler. As late as 3 June 1633, Bachiler was in communication with Winthrop regarding the disposal of part of the cargo.

There is some evidence that, following his arrival in New England and the failure of the Lygonia colony, Stephen Bachiler had planned to live in Newtowne (now Cambridge, Massachusetts). But he received an offer to become pastor of the church in Saugus (now Lynn, Massachusetts) and immediately began to organize a church there. For the next four years, Bachiler and his followers were repeatedly at odds with the colonial authorities and other members of the congregation at Saugus.

On 3 October 1632, less than four months after arriving in New England, he was in trouble with the General Court of the Colony of Massachusetts. The court ordered that he could not continue publicly as a preacher or teacher in the colony, except to those who had come over with him, because of "his contempt of authority" and until certain alleged scandals were removed. Apparently he had attempted to organize a church without first securing permission from the proper authorities but as to where this was done is not clear from the records. The court order was removed on 4 March 1633.

For the next three years, Stephen Bachiler continued as the pastor of the Saugus church, during which time he became a freeman of the Massachusetts Colony. However, there was much dissension within his church. In March 1635, Winthrop noted in his journal that there was trouble in the Saugus church but that the differences had been debated "and so all were reconciled." This reconciliation proved to be short-lived, lasting only until January 1636, when Stephen Bachiler was called before the magistrates because he and some of his congregation had asked to be dismissed from the Saugus church in order to form a new church, presumably in another location. The dismissal was granted but he and his followers, instead of leaving, started a rival church in Saugus. This caused the members of the first church to complain and Bachiler was ordered to desist until the matter had been reviewed. He refused to be bound by the order so a marshal was sent to bring him in, whereupon he agreed to obey and promised to move out of Saugus within three months.

From Saugus, Bachiler possibly went to Ipswich to live (as is claimed by many published accounts about him), but the records at this point are not clear and it is more likely that, with his son-in-law Christopher Hussey, he moved to Newbury, Massachusetts. He was now without a position as pastor of a church, but Stephen Bachiler apparently was not content to remain as a mere parishioner. In the winter of 1637/38, he walked to the site of present-day Yarmouth, on Cape Cod, with the idea in mind of establishing a settlement there. John Winthrop wrote on 30 March 1638: "Another plantation was now in hand at Mattakeese, six miles beyond Sandwich. The undertaker of this was one Mr. Batchellor, late pastor at Sagus, being about seventy-six years of age; yet he walked thither on foot in a very hard season. He and his company, being all poor men, finding the difficulty, gave it over, and others undertook it."

Stephen Bachiler lived for about a year at Newbury, Massachusetts, where he received a grant of land on 6 July 1638. He appears to have attempted to start a church there and failed, based upon writings from some years later. Later that year, Stephen Bachiler and others, mostly from Newbury,
began a settlement at Hampton, New Hampshire, which was granted the status as a town on 2 May 1639. In the spring of 1639, the first settlers of Hampton were joined by the Reverend Timothy Dalton, who had accompanied a group of settlers from England. Dalton became the teacher of the church of which Bachiler was the pastor. Soon after the arrival of Dalton the differences between the two clergymen became more of an open division and, as had happened throughout Bachiler's life, controversy soon arose.

Historian Victor C. Sanborn wrote: "Dalton was a Cambridge graduate, ejected from his Suffolk rectory of Woolverstone for non-conformity, who had come to New England in 1635, settling in the Puritan colony at Dedham. The pastor and teacher, nominally head of the church and assistant, were as far apart as the poles. Bachiler was old, educated, controversial, versed in polemical discussion, and wedded to his own ideas. Dalton was younger, less cultivated, equally obstinate, and determined to uphold the tenets of his cousin and neighbor, Winthrop. Probably dissension began at once; it grew and spread like wildfire. Time has obliterated nearly all traces of the quarrel. The town records contain no reference to it. The church records have disappeared."

On 12 November 1641, John Winthrop wrote in his journal that Bachiler, "being about 80 years of age, and having a lusty comely woman to his wife, did solicit the chastity of his neighbor's wife." This led to an attack on his character by Dalton and a large portion of the Hampton congregation. Winthrop wrote that Bachiler denied the charges at first and "complained to the magistrates" concerning the slander against him but that he later confessed his guilt and was excommunicated from the church for a period of two years before being received back in again but without being restored to the office of pastor. This contemporary account constitutes the chief evidence against Bachiler and, unfortunately, records proving his guilt or innocence have not been found.

During the controversy his house burned and he lost all of his books and papers. In the latter part of 1644 he wrote a long letter to John Winthrop in which he accused the Reverend Timothy Dalton of having "don all and ben the cause of all the dishonour" that had befallen him. Stephen Bachiler went on to state that he had not received a fair trial and implied that Dalton's actions were motivated by a desire for revenge. In 1650, Stephen Bachiler sued the town of Hampton for wages due him and won the case.

Historians disagree about whether or not Stephen Bachiler was likely guilty of the alleged attempt at adultery at the age of 80. Most historians of the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries make no reference to the incident. For example, historian Belknap, despite the fact that he consulted the manuscripts which were later printed, ignores the charges in his History of New Hampshire. Others, such as the nineteenth century English historian J. A. Doyle, were considerably less kind to Bachiler. Philip Mason Marston, Professor of History at the University of New Hampshire wrote in 1961: "In the light of the available material we are faced with the question of whether or not Bachiler was guilty of the accusation made against him. His age, for he was about eighty years old, the fact that he won his case for unpaid wages against the town of Hampton and his letter to John Winthrop are in his favor but he did make a confession before the church and that weighs against him, that is if we can believe John Winthrop. Perhaps the best that we can do is give Bachiler the benefit of the doubt and say that the accusation was made but not completely proven and unfortunately not disproven."

By the beginning of 1644, Stephen Bachiler had come to the conclusion that he should leave
Hampton. Despite the controversy that swirled around him, he received offers to become the pastor of the churches in both Exeter, New Hampshire and Casco, Maine. He decided upon the Exeter position only to have this position taken from him by the action of the General Court of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, when on 29 May 1644, they forbade the inhabitants of Exeter from organizing a church at that time. John Winthrop referred to this action in his journal and again raised the issue of disruption of churches when he wrote that "Mr. Batchelor had been in three places before, and through his means, as was supposed, the churches fell to such divisions, as no peace could be till he was removed."

In 1644, at an age when most men would have long since retired if they had managed to live that long, Stephen Bachiler sold his farm in Hampton and went to live in the Portsmouth area. Once again, controversy followed him. His second wife Helen died before he left Hampton and so Bachiler was faced with the problem of finding someone to do his housework in an time when a housekeeper was regarded with considerable disapproval. In a letter to John Winthrop, dated 3 May 1647, Bachiler wrote that he had found a widow, whom he called "an honest neighbour", to have "some eye and care towards my family, for washing, baking, and other such common services" and that this arrangement had met with the "approbation of the whole planta[tion] of Strabury Banke." Evidently, she was much younger than he. However there were rumors that he was already married to her "or certainly shalbe", and that there were "cast on her such aspertions without ground or proufe" that he did not see how he could possibly continue to live in the place.

The housekeeper was Mary Beedle, the widow of Robert Beedle, who had lived at Kittery, Maine, across the river from Portsmouth. Her maiden name has not been determined. Probably by 1648, and certainly before 9 April 1650, Bachiler did marry his housekeeper, for on that date he was fined £10 by the same court in which he won his case for back wages against the town of Hampton "for not publishing his marriage according to law." But that was probably the least of his worries. The court also ordered that "Mr. Bacherler and Mary his wife shall live together, as they publicly agreed to do, and if either desert the other, the marshal to take them to Boston to be kept until next quarter Court of Assistants, to consider a divorce. Bail to be granted if satisfactory security could be obtained. In case Mary Bacheller live out of this jurisdiction without mutual consent for a time, notice of her absence to be given to the Magistrates at Boston."

However, this situation was just getting interesting. The reason that the court took the unusual position of ordering Stephen Bachiler and his wife to live together was that, despite her marriage to him, she had left her husband and was living with another man named George Rogers. On 15 October 1650, court documents filed at the court at York stated "George Rodgers and Mrs. Batcheller [were] presented upon vehement suspicion of incontinency for living in one house together and lying in one room." The court ordered that "they are to be separated before the next court or to pay 40 s." The result of all this "lying in one room" business was fairly predictable and Mary had two children by George Rogers while married to the elderly Reverend Stephen Bachiler.

George Rogers was a renegade individual who had worked as a fisherman at the Trelawney fishing station on Richmond Island in 1639. By 1641, he had settled at Kittery, Maine. It appears that George Rogers and the adulterous Mary Bachiler chose to ignore the order of the court. On 16 October 1651, a jury at Kittery convicted "George Rodgers and Mary Batcheller, the wife of Mr. Stephen Batcheller, minister, for adultery." Rogers was also convicted "for swearing & abuseing the Constable in his owne house." George Rogers was ordered to receive forty strokes, while Mary
Bachiler, "for her adultery, shall receive forty stripes save one at the first town meeting held at Kittery, 6 weeks after her delivery, and be branded with the letter A."

Nathaniel Hawthorne, who wrote the famous Scarlet Letter in 1850, based his novel on Puritan New England. In the book, a character named Roger Chillingworth is an elderly scholar who arrives in Boston to discover that his wife, Hester Prynne, whom he had sent to America two years before him, has an infant daughter named Pearl and has been publicly sentenced for adultery. Though condemned to wear for life a scarlet letter A on her chest, she steadfastly refuses to disclose the name of her lover and makes atonement for her crime against society by devoting her life to deeds of mercy. According to several sources, Hawthorne based the characters in his American classic on our real-life ancestors, Stephen Bachiler and Mary Beedle. We can probably assume that the real-life people probably were not as nice as those in the book.

Following these events, the Reverend Stephen Bachiler decided to return to England. The date of his return has not been determined. Many sources state his return was in 1654, but it is more likely that he was already back in England by 1651, shortly after the conviction of his wife for adultery. Most accounts of the Reverend Stephen Bachiler incorrectly state that he died at Hackney in England in 1660, at an age of nearly one hundred. But recent research published in 1991 indicates that he died in London in 1656. The following entry was discovered in the burial register for the Allhallows Staining Parish: "Steeven Batchiller Minester that dyed att Robert Barbers was buryed in the new church yard Octob 31th 1656".

Meanwhile, back in New England, Mary Bachiler continued to lead a "more than normally venturesome" life, as described in a York court record. Mary was sentenced by the Maine courts for "sexual irregularities" in 1651, 1652 and 1654, and in 1656 cast one final slander at her aged husband. She petitioned the Massachusetts General Court in that year for a divorce, stating: "Whereas, your petitioner having formerly lived with Mr. Stephen Bachiler in this Colony as his lawful wife (and not unknown to divers of you, as I conceive), and the said Mr. Bachiler, upon some pretended ends of his own, has transported himself into old England, for many years since, and betaken himself to another wife, as your petitioner hath often been credibly informed, and there continues; whereby your petitioner is left destitute not only of a guide to herself and her children, but also made incapable of disposing herself in the way of marriage to any other without a lawful permission ... And were she free of her engagement to Mr. Bachiler, might probably so dispose of herself as that she might obtain a meet helper to assist her to procure such means for her livelihood, and the recovery of her children's health, as might keep them from perishing, which your petitioner, to her great grief, is much afraid of, if not timely prevented."

The allegation that her husband had returned to England and married again, while still married to Mary, is completely unsupported. There is no evidence to support the claim that he married again in England. Considering the fact that the good Reverend by this time was about 95 years old and that his adulterous wife was not of the highest character makes the claim suspicious at best. It is not clear whether the divorce was ever granted. Such matters were then heard by the Court of Assistants of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, and the records of that court are no longer in existence. It is possible that word of his death reached Massachusetts before the court ruled on the case, making the petition for divorce a mute point.

There is no evidence that the Reverend Stephen Bachiler ever lived at Kittery. His name never
appears on any records from that town. In an unrelated York County deed dated 14 February 1648, there is the description "Mrs. Batchellers Lot is bounded from the High Way betwixt George Rogers his Lot & hers...". The clear implication is that Mary Bachiler continued to live at Kittery, carrying on her adulterous relationship with George Rogers, while Stephen Bachiler probably remained in Portsmouth.

Mary Bachiler, while married to the elderly Reverend Stephen Bachiler, bore two children. It is very unlikely that either of these children were Stephen Bachiler's biological children, but rather more likely that they were fathered by George Rogers. The name of one of the children is unknown and it is possible that this child died young. The other child, Mary Bachiler, named after her mother, is our direct ancestor. Whether the elder Mary Bachiler received her divorce or learned that she was a widow following the death of her legal husband, she did marry once again to Thomas Turner of Kittery in 1674, who was to "succeed George Rogers in the grass widow Bachiler's affections." A grass widow is an old term for an abandoned mistress or a mother of an illegitimate child.

The daughter Mary Bachiler survived to adulthood and married William Richards. A Dover court record of 26 March 1673 seems to indicate that the daughter Mary Bachiler (born in coverture and therefore legally the daughter of the Reverend Stephen Bachiler, though undoubtedly disowned by him) attempted to secure some part of Bachiler's estate. Her husband, William Richards, was given power of administration to the estate of "Mr. Steven Batchelor dec'd, being also prudently enjoined to bring in an inventory thereof to the next court, and to put up sufficient security to respond ye estate any y' may make better claim unto it." No further record exists of this matter.

The children of the Reverend Stephen Bachiler, both legitimate and probably in name only, are as follows (all but the last child by the first wife):

1. Nathaniel Bachiler  
   b. Abt 1590 @ England  
   m. (1st) Hester Mercer  
   m. (2nd) Margery ------  
   d. Bef 1645 @ England

2. Deborah Bachiler  
   b. Abt 1592 @ England  
   m. Bef 1611 John Wing

3. Stephen Bachiler  
   b. Abt 1594 @ England

4. Samuel Bachiler  
   b. Abt 1597 @ England

5. Ann Bachiler  
   b. Abt 1601 @ England  
   m. Abt 1620 (1st) ------ Samborne  
   m. 20 Jan 1631/2 Henry Atkinson @ England

6. Theodate Bachiler  
   b. Abt 1610 @ England  
   m. Abt 1635 Christopher Hussey

+ 7. Mary Bachiler  
   b. 1651-2 @ Kittery, York, ME  
   m. William Richards

All of the first six children were born in England and never came to America except Ann, who accompanied her husband to Sandwich, Massachusetts in the late 1630s. Of course the last child, Mary, was probably not Stephen Bachiler's legitimate child at all, but probably fathered by George Rogers. However, that doesn't change the circumstance that Stephen Bachiler was legally her father and that she carried his name until she married.
THE RICHARDS FAMILY

The last child, the controversial Mary Bachiler, was our direct ancestor. She grew up to marry William Richards, a Portsmouth currier. A currier was someone who worked with leather, preparing the tanned hides for other uses by soaking them in oil or grease and perhaps coloring them. He was born about 1645, but we have no knowledge of his origins. William Richards and Mary Bachiler were married by 1673.

It would seem that the "wrong side of the tracks" stigma of her mother followed the young couple. Early court records paint a picture of a couple that were something less than totally law abiding. In 1675, William Richards was convicted of receiving stolen goods from James Gallison, although he may have been deceived as to their origin. In 1680, Mary was accused of stealing the coat of Wilmot Oliver's 16-year-old daughter Constance. In 1681, Sarah Sherburne testified that William Richards knocked Sarah Pearce down when she was going to his house. In 1693, he was in hot water again for saying that Mr. Moody (a Portsmouth preacher) "never did preach a sermon".

Not surprising, it appears that the people with which the couple associated might not have been at the top of the social register either. We know from early records that William and Mary Richards rented a room to a Dr. John Baxter for six years from 1688 to 1694. Apparently not exactly the image of Dr. Welby, Dr. Baxter had been in several scrapes in the Boston area before coming to Portsmouth and renting the room in William Richards' house to practice medicine. There, he was convicted of beating two women, was accused of having two illegitimate children by the widow Rebecca Nossiter, who he later married, and was sued for calling the wife of Peter Golding "a liar".

Despite an apparent lack of social graces, William Richards took part in military affairs, served on at least one jury, took part in a coroner's inquest, and had a seat in "meeting" (church). William Richards died on 7 November 1694, probably before he was 50. His widow Mary continued to live in Portsmouth and died there by early 1703. The children of William and Mary (Bachiler) Richards were as follows (probably all born at Portsmouth):
+ 1. Abigail Richards m. Jun 1695 Samuel Shackford
2. Samuel Richards
3. William Richards m. 23 Aug 1694 Mary Doe

Little else is known of the Richards children. Samuel Richards might have lived in Rochester, New Hampshire, where a person of that name with a wife Sarah, had several children baptized. But that connection has not been proven. William Richards married Mary Doe in Portsmouth in 1694, was a juror there the next year, and does not appear again in the records.

THE SHACKFORD FAMILY

Our ancestor, Abigail Richards, married Samuel Shackford in 1695. He was the son of William and Deborah (Trickey) Shackford of Newington, described earlier. Samuel Shackford was born about 1674 in Newington, but later moved to Portsmouth, where he was a "blockmaker". He and his brother John were partners in the successful block making business which they owned, along with a wharf, in Portsmouth. We might assume that Samuel had a bit of a wild streak in him as a youth since, in 1687, Walter Barefoot had a warrant issued for Samuel for "breach of peace."
Samuel would have been only about 13 at the time.

When his wife Abigail died, Samuel Shackford² married, at Haverhill, Massachusetts on 10 May 1716, the widow Frances Peabody of Topsfield, Massachusetts. Frances was the daughter of John and Mary (Barnes) Hoyt, and the widow of Nathaniel Peabody. Samuel Shackford² died sixteen years later and his will was proved 11 March 1730/1. His widow Frances returned to Massachusetts where she would live long enough to marry two more times. The children of Samuel² and Abigail (Richards) Shackford were (all children born at the Bloody Point section of Dover, later Newington):

1. Elizabeth Shackford³ b. @ Newington, Rockingham, NH m. 23 May 1717 Ezekial Pitman Jr. @ Portsmouth
2. Abigail Shackford³ b. @ Newington, Rockingham, NH m. 11 Jun 1719 Samuel Sherburne
3. William Shackford³ b. @ Newington, Rockingham, NH m. 5 Oct 1727 (1st) Susanna Downing m. 7 May 1752 (2nd) Patience (Ham) Downing m. (3rd) Eleanor (Mendum) Marshall d. Abt 1773
4. John Shackford³ b. @ Newington, Rockingham, NH m. 26 Oct 1727 (1st) Dorcas Lovejoy m. 27 Nov 1751 (2nd) Hannah Lancaster d. 2 Nov 1786 @ Chester, NH
5. Joshua Shackford³ b. @ Newington, Rockingham, NH m. 24 Dec 1735 Lydia Lovejoy
6. Samuel Shackford³ b. @ Newington, Rockingham, NH d. Bef 1731
+ 7. Mary Shackford³ b. @ Newington, Rockingham, NH m. 22 Nov 1722 Richard Furber m. 9 Jul 1727 Alexander Hodgdon

All seven children were baptized over a six month period between September 1716 and March 1717. Elizabeth Shackford³ married Ezekial Pitman, who was born at Oyster River, the son of a man with the same name. The younger Ezekial was a sailor out of Portsmouth early in his life, but later became a blacksmith in Portsmouth. Abigail Shackford³ married Samuel Sherburne, the son of Capt. John and Mary (Cowell) Sherburne. Samuel was a blacksmith and a innkeeper at Portsmouth. Abigail died by 1734, when Samuel married his second cousin Catherine Sherburne.

William Shackford³, named for his immigrant grandfather, was the executor of his father's will and the recipient of both his father's property at Newington and his half of the block making business at Portsmouth. He was known as Captain William Shackford³, a rank he attained in the militia during the French and Indian War, and also was a church deacon and a justice of the peace. He married three times. His first wife was Susanna Downing³, the daughter of Col. John² and Elizabeth (Harrison) Downing of Newington. His second wife was the former Patience Ham, who was the widow of John Downing³, his brother-in-law. William Shackford³ married third Eleanor (Mendum) Marshall. William probably died in very early 1773, as his will was proved 24 February that year. One of his sons, Josiah⁴, was the founder of Portsmouth, Ohio.

John Shackford³ lived at one end of his father's homestead at Newington and eventually acquired all of it. John³ was a cordwainer. He married Dorcas Lovejoy of Andover, Massachusetts where he lived for a time and, secondly, the widow Hannah Lancaster at Methuen, Massachusetts.
John Shackford\textsuperscript{3} died at Chester, New Hampshire on 2 November 1786. \textbf{Joshua Shackford}\textsuperscript{3} received grants of land at Chester and Barrington, New Hampshire. On 24 December 1735, he married Lydia Lovejoy of Andover, Massachusetts. He was also a cordwainer. \textbf{Samuel Shackford}\textsuperscript{3} (Jr.) died before 1731 when his father's will was made, leaving 10 shillings "to any of the Children of my son Samuell Deceasd If they or any Come here".

Our direct ancestor was \textbf{Mary Shackford}\textsuperscript{3} who would marry Richard Furber\textsuperscript{4}, to be introduced later in this chapter.

\section*{THE EMERY FAMILY}

The name \textit{Emery} is very old and appears in England from the times when surnames were first used. Its variants, which are numerous, include \textit{Amory, Embrey, Emberry, Imbrey, Hembrey}, etc. The Old French equivalent was \textit{Amauri} or \textit{Emaurri}, while in Italian the name was \textit{Amerigo}, as in Amerigo Vespucci, for whom America was named.

The first Emery ancestor known to us is \textbf{John Emery}, who lived in Romsey, Hampshire, England before 1600. Romsey is a very old town that lies on the River Test, one of the prettiest rivers in England and famous for its trout. The town, which lies only about seven miles from Southampton, dates from the year 907. The church abbey is famous and dates back to the first half of the twelfth century. The village received brief but widespread notoriety on the afternoon of 29 July 1981 when the newly married Prince Charles and Princess Diana arrived in Romsey to spend their wedding night at the Mountbatten estate.

That persons with the Emery surname lived in this area for years is evidenced by the nearby hamlet called \textit{Emery Down} and by the fact that a John Emory conveyed land in Romsey as early as 1485. However, the parish registers at Romsey do not begin until 1569 and there are no Emery entries in it until 1594. In that year, a John Emery was buried at Romsey and it is possible that he was the father of our John Emery. A Thomas Emery who married in 1597 at Romsey may have been John's brother. However, neither contention can be proved.

John Emery left no will and does not appear on the Subsidy Rolls of the period, meaning he probably did not own land at Romsey and was of small personal wealth. Since his sons were carpenters, he may have been of that profession as well. It is probable that he was the same John Emery buried at Romsey on 25 June 1627. A Margery Emery, buried at Romsey in 1610, or an Anne Emery buried there in 1626, may have been his wife. But there is no evidence whatsoever that his wife was the former Agnes Northend, as has been widely reported in genealogies as early as 1890. John Emery\textsuperscript{1}, by an unknown wife, had the following children (all baptized at Romsey, England):

\begin{itemize}
  \item \textbf{1. John Emery}\textsuperscript{2} \\
      b. 29 Mar 1599 \@ Romsey, Hampshire, England \\
      m. 26 Jun 1620 Alice Grantham \@ Whiteparish, Eng. \\
      d. 3 Nov 1683 \@ Newbury, Essex, MA
  \item \textbf{2. Anthony Emery}\textsuperscript{2} \\
      b. 29 Aug 1601 \@ Romsey, Hampshire, England \\
      m. Frances ------
  \item \textbf{3. Hugh Emery}\textsuperscript{2} \\
      b. 6 Oct 1604 \@ Romsey, Hampshire, England
\end{itemize}

All three of these children were baptized at Romsey (the dates given above are baptism dates).
and the father of each child was identified as John Emery. There may have been a fourth child, Ellen Emery, who was baptized 7 September 1601, with no father listed in the register. If so, it is possible that she was the twin of Anthony, baptized nine days earlier. There is no further record of Hugh Emery.

Brothers John Emery and Anthony Emery both sailed to New England on the ship James, which left Southampton, England on 3 April 1635. The ship landed at Boston on 3 June of the same year. This was the same ship and the same voyage that also brought ancestors Thomas Brown and Thomas Coleman to America. In all likelihood, both came with their wives and possibly one or more small children each. We know the wife of Anthony Emery only as Frances. One account, without source evidence, states that she was Frances Porter, the daughter of Nathaniel Porter of Ipswich, Massachusetts. John Emery probably is the person of that name that married Alice Grantham on 26 June 1620 at Whiteparish, Wiltshire, England, although that is not for certain. Alice Grantham is believed to have been the daughter of Andrew Grantham, who died 15 December 1668.

Anthony Emery was arguably the more interesting of the two brothers in that he frequently quarreled with the authorities and led a turbulent life. He first settled in Newbury, Massachusetts, as did several other passengers of the James. In 1638, Anthony was fined 20 shillings there for permitting his animals to escape the town pound and was directed to pay additional money to Thomas Coleman, the poundkeeper.

The previous year, Anthony received a grant at Dover, New Hampshire, and he moved there by 1640, when he signed the Dover Combination. He purchased six acres of land "on the Dover side of the Newichawannock" on 2 May 1642, and received more grants in 1646 and 1648. Anthony Emery's house was on Dover Neck, about 3-4 miles from Major Richard Waldron's settlement on the Cochecho River. He petitioned the town in 1643 "to keep an ordinary ... to sell beer & wine" (an ordinary is an ancient term for a tavern), which was later destroyed by fire, having "burnt down to the ground".

On 15 November 1648, he bought a house and property on Sturgeon Creek from John White of Kittery, in what would now be Eliot, Maine. He apparently didn't move there until the next year since he served as a grand juror in Dover in 1649. In 1649, Anthony sued George Webb for calling his wife "a witch" (considered much more serious in Puritan New England than such a statement would be today since, if proved in a court of law, it was a capital offense). On 15 July 1650, he also bought some upland that had "one thousand five hundred foote of boards, for & in Consideration of Two stears Called by ye name of droggon and Benbow". He stayed at Kittery for eleven years, receiving grants of land there four times during that period. Despite being listed as a carpenter on the passenger list of the James, he appears to have been an inn keeper and a ferryman while at Kittery.

Anthony Emery was in frequent trouble with the courts. On 18 March 1652, he was fined ten shillings "for being overgone with drinke so that he could not speake a true word", an offense that most of us have been able to relate to at one point in our lives. Anthony was in frequent trouble over Quakers, and in 1656, was fined five pounds for "mutinous courage" in questioning the authority of the court at Kittery. On 12 November 1659, he was disfranchised [deprived of his rights of citizenship, especially voting rights] for telling a lie "in the face of the court". The next year, he
was in trouble again, for entertaining Quakers, and deprived of his rights of a freeman at Kittery. It is interesting that, despite his recurring troubles with the courts, Anthony Emery and his wife were chosen to receive one of the children of the scoundrel George Rogers, who had taken up with the wife of the Rev. Stephen Bachiler and was thus found to be unfit as a parent.

Deprived of the rights and privileges of a freeman because of his Quaker sympathies, Anthony Emery and his wife Frances sold their property at Kittery on 12 May 1660 to their son James for 150 pounds and he moved to Portsmouth, Rhode Island. Apparently tired of her husband's conflicts with the courts, Anthony's wife did not accompany him to Rhode Island. Despite having signed the deed selling the Kittery property to her son, Frances sued her husband in October 1660 for her one third dower rights to the money received from the Kittery property rather than move yet again.

Rhode Island was a colony in which greater liberty was allowed and Anthony Emery was received there as a "free inhabitant" on 29 September 1660. He spent the rest of his life in Rhode Island, where he appears to have been active in town affairs. The last record we find concerning him is that of a deed of land in Portsmouth to Rebecca Sadler, his daughter, dated 9 March 1680. From other records, we know that he had three children and that James was his only surviving son. He was dead by 1694.

John Emery is our direct ancestor, and it seems that he wasn't any less outspoken than his brother. After arriving on the James from England, John settled in Newbury, Massachusetts, where he received a grant of half an acre for a house lot. It appears that John Emery may have borrowed the funds to come to America. The Reverend Joseph Avery of Romsey also came to America, although not on the James, and settled in Newbury. But he died soon after and his estate of 1635 included the item "due to him from John Emery, carpenter, 07:00:00 ... John Emery denies this debt, but Richard Knight, Nicholas Holt & John Knight, all three of them of Newbury can & will testify & prove it to be due." All three of the other men, also from Romsey, were prepared to testify that John Emery received seven pounds from the Reverend Avery, probably for the cost of the passage, tools and supplies.

On 22 December 1637, John Emery was fined 20 shillings by the town for enclosing ground not laid out or owned by the town, contrary to a town order. But on 1 February 1638, the town granted him the same parcel of ground which he had already enclosed, indicating that perhaps there had been an error in the previous court action. On 10 April 1644, John Emery received a grant from the town of 22 acres and five rods, being his own and Henry Palmer's portion of Divident (a dividend or bonus) land in the "great field beyond the new town."

Some have questioned whether the Emery brothers were really carpenters, as stated on the passenger list for the James. Rather, it has been suggested in some accounts that they may have booked themselves as carpenters to evade the restrictions of the English emigration laws, and to answer the call for more carpenters in New England. But, in the case of John Emery, there is little doubt that he was a carpenter and cabinetmaker. A dozen or more pieces of masterful late seventeenth-century cabinet work have been attributed with some certainty to the shop he established. The shop's work is characteristically among the most heavily constructed and elaborately ornamented seen during that period in New England.

John Emery was made a freeman on 2 June 1641, and the next year he was appointed with three
others to make a valuation of all the property in the town, for the purpose of proportioning each man's share in the new division. But then John's troubles began. After 1650, John met with increasing difficulties with the authorities, involving a number of different issues, but notably his hospitality with Quakers. On 16 March 1663, he was charged in the Court at Ipswich by Henry Jaques, Constable of Newbury, for entertaining travellers and Quakers. The next meeting of the court fined him four pounds, plus costs and fees for "entertaining strangers".

The evidence given in the case was that "two men quakers were entertained very kindly to bed and table & John Emmerie shok them by ye hand and bid them welcome." It was also stated "that the witness heard John Emery and his wife say that he had entertained quakers and that he would not put them from his house and used argument for the lawfulness of it." In May 1663, John Emery petitioned the court for a release from his fine, arguing that among other things, he was "not knowing the law". His petition was signed by the selectmen of the town and fifty of its citizens. The court was unsympathetic and let the fine stand. But, unlike his brother, John Emery was not forced out of town and continued to hold offices in Newbury.

It is interesting to note that the case involved the "entertainment" of two men and two women Quakers. The four had come from Salem, Massachusetts and "passed eastward to visit the seed of God in those parts, and in their way through Newbury, they went into the house of one John Emery (a friendly man)". The two Quaker women were identified in the records as Mary Tompkins and Alice Ambrose. The astute reader may recognize those names as the same women who traveled on to Dover and caused such a disturbance there. They were the same women who clashed with Hatevil Nutter and were ordered to be stripped to their waist, tied to carts, and given ten lashes each with a whip as they were taken from town to town on their way from the Dover area.

Also in 1663, John Emery was fined "for entertaining" Dr. Henry Greenland at his house for four months. Greenland was a character in his own right, and seems to have been a traveling doctor with a keen eye for women. In Newbury, "still uncertain where to settle" until his wife joined him from England, he became involved with Mary, the wife of John Rolfe, and they were charged with adultery. Elizabeth Webster, the stepdaughter of John Emery, lived with Mary Rolfe during her husband's absence, so the Emery household contributed much testimony on both sides of this case. For his part, Dr. Greenland went on to Kittery, Maine, where he appeared to be in continual trouble with the authorities. "Convicted of many high misdemeanors" in 1672, Dr. Greenland was ordered by the court to leave Maine and he moved to Piscataway, New Jersey in 1673.

John Emery also figured prominently in the case of Lieut. Robert Pike by refusing to recognize the authority of the Court to deprive him and his neighbors of the right of petition. John Emery was a courageous man who did not back down from those in high places in the colonial government. The petition in favor of Pike so irritated the authorities that they appointed a commission to examine the signers (and probably in an attempt to intimidate them as well). "John Emery demanded (to see) their commission and a sight of the petition before he would answer. He then said that the commissioners had no power to demand who brought the petition to him".

But despite his ongoing battle with the authorities about Quakers and other matters, records show that John Emery was a selectman in 1661, a fence viewer in 1666, a grand juryman in the same year, on a trial jury in 1672, and was appointed to carry votes to Salem in 1676.
It has been stated that his first wife was named Mary and that she died in Newbury in April 1649. Evidence to support that claim has not been found. His first wife, who he married in England, was most likely Alice Grantham, although conclusive evidence to support that claim is also lacking. However, support of that contention comes from the fact that John Emery had a daughter named Alice (and not one named Mary) and the fact that Alice's father, Andrew Grantham, also came to Newbury, Massachusetts and died there in 1668.

Further evidence that refutes the claim of a wife named Mary who died in 1649 comes from the fact that his first wife, never referred to by name, died before September 1646. On that date, John Emery was fined for "his attentions to Bridget, wife of Henry Travers, and bound not to frequent her company." The bond was discharged in 1647, apparently after his second marriage. That marriage at Newbury, probably on 29 October 1647, was to Mary (Shatswell) Webster, the widow of John Webster of Ipswich, Massachusetts. Mary died 28 April 1694.

John Emery made out his will on 1 May 1680, in which he gave his age as 83 years. He died on 3 November 1683 and his will was proved on 27 November of that year. The inventory of his estate was taken the same day, amounting to 263 pounds and 11 shillings. Included in the inventory were carpentry and joinings tools, as well as a set of surgeon's tools, possibly kept for payment of Dr. Greenland's board bill. It is interesting to note that John Emery was a seventh-generation ancestor of Franklin Pierce, the 14th President of the United States. John Emery had the following children, the last two by his second wife:

1. Eleanor Emery
   - b. 7 Nov 1624 @ Romsey, England
   - m. Bef 1641 John Bailey, Jr. @ Newbury, MA
2. Alice Emery
   - b. @ Romsey, England
   - m. John Chater
3. John Emery
   - b. 3 Feb 1628/9 @ Romsey, England
   - m. 29 Oct 1650 Mary Webster
   - d. 1693 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
4. Anne Emery
   - b. 18 Mar 1632/3 @ Romsey, England
   - m. 25 Nov 1648 James Ordway @ Newbury, MA
   - d. 31 Mar 1687
5. Ebenezer Emery
   - b. 16 Sep 1648 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   - m. 21 Apr 1669 John Hoag
6. Jonathan Emery
   - b. 13 May 1652 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   - m. 29 Nov 1676 Mary Woodman
   - d. 29 Sep 1723

The first four children, all born in Romsey, England to the first wife of John Emery, undoubtedly came to America aboard the James with their parents in 1635. Eleanor Emery, identified in the baptism registers at Romsey as Helena, daughter of John Emery, married John Bailey, Jr. before November of 1641. He came with his father of the same name on the ill-fated Angel Gabriel. The father, the reader may remember, was the man who was so affected by the experience that his wife never joined him in America and he never returned to England. John Emery (Jr.) married Mary Webster, the daughter of his stepmother. Anne Emery married James Ordway of Newbury. Both John and Anne lived their lives at Newbury, Massachusetts.

The two youngest children, born to Mary, the second wife of John Emery, were both born at Newbury. The sixteen year gap between the births of Anne and Ebenezer might indicate that John
Emery's first wife died in England before he sailed on the *James*, or maybe soon after their arrival. **Jonathan Emery**³ married Mary Woodman and died on 29 September 1723. The other child born at Newbury was **Ebenezer Emery**³, which a betting person would wager large sums was a boy. However, despite the male name, Ebenezer was a girl who married John Hoag! Her father left "his daughter Ebenezer Hoag" one and a half acres on the west end of his property and her mother provided in her will that her "daughter Ebenezer" should have "the rest of my wearing cloths."

**Alice Emery**³, one of the children born in England but not listed in the Romsey baptism registers, is our direct ancestor. Further, Alice was not mentioned in her father's will, but that omission was probably intentional as will become clear in a moment. Alice Emery³ married John Chater of Newbury, whose "father Emery" is mentioned in an otherwise insignificant court case about a lost steer in 1657.

**THE CHATER FAMILY**

The **John Chater** of Newbury may have been the same person as the 17-year-old of that name who sailed from Gravesend, England on 20 November 1635 aboard the ship *Expedition*. The ship was bound for Barbados, but a great many of the early settlers in the West Indies eventually migrated on to New England. In any event, John Chater was in Newbury, Massachusetts before 1643, where he married Alice Emery³. Although the land transaction does not appear to have been recorded, Chater bought a farm in Newbury from Henry Palmer and became a freeman in the town in 1651.

But all was not well in the Chater household. The next year, John Chater was taken seriously ill as was one of his servants, Daniel Gunn. Gunn was a Scotchman who had been deported and sold into servitude after participating on the losing side of the Battle of Worcester in England the previous year. Alice Chater was caring for Gunn and her husband, and one day while bringing food to Gunn, she told him that in the event her husband should die, Gunn should become her husband. Unwilling to wait for that event to occur, the young man took immediate advantage of the desirous, but obviously disillusioned, wife.

The husband did not die but did become an "invalid", and that might have been the end of it had not Alice been taken to confess her indiscretion to John eighteen months later. Her confession was overheard by William and Isabel Houldred, who were visiting the Chaters at the time, who promptly reported the confession to the colonial authorities. Alice Chater and Daniel Gunn were charged with adultery, a capital offense, and tried before a jury. The court records do not indicate what verdict was rendered, but whether guilty or not, it was not satisfactory to the judges, who instructed the case be sent on to the higher court in Boston.

The prisoners were then sent to Boston to be tried there on the same charges. On 14 May 1654, the court there rendered a decision of not guilty, perhaps because they were hesitant to inflict the death penalty despite the confession of guilt. But because of her "shameful and unchaste behavior," Alice Chater was ordered to be severely admonished and to "stand tied to the whipping post for one hour". Following that, she was to be discharged so that she could return to her husband. Daniel Gunn, who still was not healthy, was ordered to be whipped following his restoration to health by a physician. However, Gunn soon died, whether from his illness or his whipping is not clear.
Meanwhile, like Gunn, John Chater was still ill. While his wife was being tried for adultery in Boston, he was being nursed to health by Isabel Houldred, the woman who had reported his wife's confession. In what was perhaps a case of fair turnabout, the Newbury gossip was that they had become an item during his wife's absence and this too was investigated by the court. However, the magistrates decided that these rumors were unfounded.

As instructed by the court, Alice Chater returned to her husband, and it seems that he eventually recovered from his extended illness. On 13 March 1659/60, John Chater was mentioned in a deed as being in possession of land on Cape Porpoise at Wells (now part of Kennebunk), Maine. John Chater and his family moved from Newbury soon after, for John was named a lot layer for the town of Wells that same year. In 1661, one of Chater's servants named Thomas Latimer ran away and was found drowned in the Saco River. A jury was impanelled to inquire into his death, but found that the man had drowned through his own fault.

Called Lieutenant Chater, it appears that John Chater was actively involved in the local militia. In 1662, he was appointed ferryman for the Mousam and Little rivers and was authorized to charge 12 pence for a man and a horse, except at low water, when he could only charge half that amount. Probably in conjunction with the ferry, he was also permitted to keep an ordinary (an inn or tavern) to meet the demands of travellers. He was granted the "liberty to draw one-third of a barrel of strong water which he had in his house" and to sell wine, beer and food. This tavern was the first public house in the Kennebunk region.

John Chater died before 19 September 1671, when a Nathaniel Fryer sued the administrator of his estate, John Miller, for an uncollected debt. The court found for the defendant and awarded him his costs. We do not know when the slightly wayward Alice died, only that she was still alive in 1680.

John and Alice (Emery) Chater had only two daughters known to us, and since a 1657 court case names only "two little Chater girls, aged thirteen and nine," that may have been their only children:

+ 1. Hannah Chater b. 7 Aug 1644 @ Newbury, Essex, MA
   m. Abt 1662 John Miller

2. Lydia Chater b. 12 Jan 1647/8 @ Newbury, Essex, MA

Of Lydia Chater, we have no further record other than that of her birth. Our ancestor, Hannah Chater, married about 1662 John Miller of Cape Porpoise, Maine, who was the administrator of his father-in-law's will.

THE MILLER FAMILY

John Miller was born about 1639/40 based upon an age of 45 that he gave in June 1685. It seems probable, therefore, that he was the son of John and Elizabeth Miller, a tailor in Salem, Massachusetts, with a 22-year-old son named John Miller who was a witness in a lawsuit at Salem in 1661. However, that connection has yet to be proven. In any event, a John Miller married Hannah Chater by the next year, 1662, about the time that John Chater moved his family from Newbury to Cape Porpoise, Maine. On 25 April 1662, his new father-in-law represented John Miller in the York county court in a lawsuit brought against Miller by Isaac Walker. John Miller prevailed in the lawsuit and was awarded costs.
The fact that he did not represent himself points to the conclusion that John Miller and his new bride had already moved up the Maine coast to Jeremisquam (now Westport), Maine, on the mouth of Kennebec River. John Miller and his family lived in this area for about seven years, until late in 1669, when they sold their house and land to George Pearson of Boston and returned to Cape Porpoise. The reason for this return may have been the recent death of John Chater; since his father-in-law had no sons, the land would have passed to John Miller. Miller was undoubtedly living on the land that had belonged to John Chater when he was sued in 1671 regarding his father-in-law's estate, a suit in which John Miller prevailed. Ten years later, John Miller received a grant of an additional 100 acres near the Kennebunk River.

John Miller appears in the town records as a selectman, constable, jury and grand jury member for almost twenty years, including serving as a member of a jury of inquest regarding John Batson, who was found drowned under a mill wheel in 1685. He also filled roles of lot layer and surveyor. John Miller appears in several civil court actions, having successfully sued two different men for debts in 1673 and 1674. He was sued by a Nicholas Frost in 1683, a case in which Frost prevailed. However, it is possible that John Miller received some gratification when he caused Frost to be taken before the court for drunkenness a year later.

When the Indian troubles began in 1675, John Miller sent his family to live with his wife's relations in Newbury. Later, when he wished to regain custody of two of his sons, the ever contentious John Emery\(^2\), his wife's grandfather, refused to give his children back to him. In March 1677/8, he complained to the Essex court about this issue and it was agreed after some debate that each son would be bound as an apprentice, John Miller Jr. to Joseph Bailey and Andrew Miller to John Emery Jr., until each was 21 years old. As an additional stipulation to the agreement, John Emery Jr. agreed to teach Andrew Miller to read and write.

When the second Indian wars broke out in full force in 1690, John Miller and the other settlers in the area were forced to leave the area for the protection of more thickly settled areas. John fled with his family to New Hampshire. There is no evidence that he ever again lived on his property in Maine, instead settling at Portsmouth and later at Newington, where he was cared for by the Downings. He died, probably at Newington, before 18 April 1720, when three of his children quit claimed his property at Cape Porpoise to the Downings.

John and Hannah (Chater) Miller had the following children, all born in Maine (order only approximate):

1. John Miller  
   b. Abt 1663 in Maine  
   d. 1701 @ Newbury, Essex, MA

2. Susannah Miller  
   m. Bef 1684 John Downing  
   d. 31 May 1733 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH

3. Andrew Miller
4. Hannah Miller  
   m. 25 May 1715 (1) John Cowell  
   (2) Daniel Quick @ Portsmouth, NH
5. Benjamin Miller  
   m. Lydia (Fernald) Harmon  
   d. 1750 @ Portsmouth, Rockingham, NH
6. Jeremiah Miller  
   b. Abt 1673 in Maine

**John Miller** (Jr.) was born about 1663, probably at Jeremisquam. He was apprenticed to Joseph Bailey of Newbury in 1678, where he continued to live as an adult. He died there intestate in 1701,
and appears to have been in the King's military, since his estate consisted of "all wages due for services done under the Government of Sir Edmund Andros at the Eastward as a soldier in his Majesty's service" in 1700 and 1701, amounting to over £6. Like his brother, Andrew Miller was apprenticed in 1678, but we can find no further record of him.

Hannah Miller married John Cowell and lived at Portsmouth. A John Cowell, described as "a lad" when he was persuaded by a Zachariah Leach to steal leather from William Cotton, may have been their child. Hannah married a second time to Daniel Quick, a Portsmouth tailor, on 25 May 1715. Quick was declared non compos mentis (not mentally sound) in 1747 and his house and land sold for £350, the amount to be applied to his benefit.

Benjamin Miller also lived at Portsmouth, where he was called at different times a laborer, yeoman, butcher and planter. He also seems to have dabbled almost continually in Portsmouth real estate. He married Lydia Harmon, the widow of John Harmon and the daughter of John and Mary (Norman) Fernald. He died at Portsmouth in 1750, when his will was proved on 30 May, leaving seven children.

Jeremiah Miller was born about 1673. Very little is known about him unless an unrelated 1711 deposition stating that he was in attendance in a "nine pin alley" might be considered of some significance. In 1727, Jeremiah was listed as one of the proprietors of the new town of Barnstead. Finally, the Portsmouth town records for 1735 mention an expense to the town "by Jeremiah Miller carrying him to his brothers", probably indicating that he was either destitute or sick, or both.

Susannah Miller was our direct ancestor. She married, before April 1684, John Downing of Cape Porpoise, Maine. She lived until 31 May 1733, when she died at Portsmouth before her husband.

THE DOWNING FAMILY

John Downing was born about 1659 based upon a deposition that he gave in August 1742, at the age of 84. In that deposition, he claimed that he came to Portsmouth about 1680 and soon after "hired himself to Major Vaughan for one year and lived with him." His employer was Major William Vaughan, who rose to several positions of great importance in the New Hampshire colony, including Chief Justice of the Superior Court and Treasurer of the Province. In 1683, he leased Major Vaughan's farm at Cape Porpoise, Maine for seven years and lived there for six years, also owning five islands. In 1689, because of the increasing Indian problems, John Downing returned to New Hampshire.

Back in New Hampshire, John Downing lived at Dover and Newington, where he was a man of some note, being a Captain in the militia, an elder in the Newington Church, and a representative to the Provincial Assembly for several years. Because of his stature, he was dignified with the title "Esquire", one of the most prestigious titles a man could attain in colonial New England. John Downing was a butcher by occupation and he sold his meat throughout the town of Portsmouth.

In 1720, while living at Newington, the other three children of John Miller quit claimed their father's property at Cape Porpoise to their sister Susannah and her husband, John Downing. This was "in consideration of the charges and expense in maintaining and keeping their honored father
John Miller late of Cape Porpus alias Arundel." The same year "Capt. John Downing and his son John Downing" each received a 50-acre grant of additional land at Cape Porpoise, which had been renamed to Arundel in 1717. (In 1821, the town was renamed again to Kennebunkport, which today is the home to ex-President George Bush.) John and Susannah Downing, in turn, sold this land to their son Benjamin.

After his wife Susannah died on 31 May 1733, John Downing married again. His second wife was the widow Elizabeth Walford, the daughter of Sylvester and Elizabeth (Norton) Stover, and previously the wife of both Capt. Richard Hunnewell and Jeremiah Walford. John Downing's second wife survived him "some years", but it doesn't seem likely that she could have outlived him by long since she would have been about 91 at the time of his death. According to his son's bible, Captain John Downing died "about 12 of the clock at noon" on 16 September 1744, at age 85, leaving a will. John1 and Susannah (Miller) Downing had the following children:

1. John Downing2  
   b. 10 Apr 1684 @ Cape Porpoise, Maine  
   m. 26 Nov 1706 (1st) Elizabeth Harrison  
   m. 10 Apr 1742 (2nd) Sarah (Little) Thing  
   d. 14 Feb 1766 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH

2. Richard Downing2  
   m. 24 Apr 1709 Alice Downing  
   d. 1754

3. Hannah Downing2  
   m. Bef 1715 Jethro Bickford

4. Jonathan Downing2  
   m. 15 Mar 1715/6 Elizabeth Nelson

5. Joseph Downing2  
   m. 21 Jun 1716 Sarah Spinney

+ 6. Benjamin Downing2  
   m. 3 Dec 1724 Elizabeth Fabyan  
   d. 1753 @ Arundel, York, ME

7. Joshua Downing2  
   m. 17 Nov 1724 Susanna Dennett  
   d. 1747 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH

8. Josiah Downing2

John Downing2 was known as Colonel John Downing and was the leading man of Newington in his time. He was perhaps even more prominent than his father. He had a large private section in the Newington Church, with his own private entrance. He inherited the family home at Newington, lived at Exeter, New Hampshire for a time, but returned to Newington. Born at Cape Porpoise, Maine on 10 April 1684, he grew up in New Hampshire after the family returned there in 1689. He married Elizabeth Harrison, the daughter of Nicholas and Mary (Bickford) Harrison, on 26 November 1706. After she died on 27 July 1740, Colonel Downing then married the widow Sarah Thing on 10 April 1742. She had previously been married to Nicholas Gilman and Major Bartholomew Thing. The family bible of John Downing2 is at the New Hampshire Historical Society.

Richard Downing2 was much more common than his older brother, and was known as a "yeoman". Like his older brother, he was born at Cape Porpoise, Maine before the family fled from there because of the Indians. And again, like his older brother, he lived at Newington. On 24 April 1709, Richard Downing married Alice Downing, the daughter of Joshua and Patience (Hatch) Downing of Kittery, Maine, from whom we are also descended. Alice may have been a distant cousin of Richard Downing2, but the relationship between the Downings of Kittery and those who lived at Newington has not been established. Richard and Alice never had children.

Hannah Downing2 married Jethro Bickford, the son of Sgt. John Bickford and his wife, the
former Susanna Furber\textsuperscript{2}. Susanna\textsuperscript{2} was the daughter of William Furber\textsuperscript{1}, who came on the Angel Gabriel. On 15 March 1715/6, Jonathan Downing\textsuperscript{2} married Elizabeth Nelson, the daughter of John and Elizabeth (Haley) Nelson of Kittery, Maine. Elizabeth's father was called a "common drunkard" in 1696. Jonathan Downing\textsuperscript{2} lived at Newington and had eight children baptized in the Newington church. Joseph Downing\textsuperscript{2} was a farmer at Newington. He married, on 21 June 1716, Sarah Spinney, the daughter of James and Grace (Dennett) Spinney of Portsmouth. Joshua Downing\textsuperscript{2}, who also lived at Newington, married Susanna Dennett, the daughter of Alexander and Mehitable (Tetherly) Dennett of Kittery, Maine, on 17 November 1724. Joshua\textsuperscript{2} died at Newington in 1747, leaving his wife Susanna and nine of ten children still alive. Josiah Downing\textsuperscript{2} inherited his father's land in Rochester. Nothing more is known of him.

Benjamin Downing\textsuperscript{2} was our direct ancestor. He was born about 1695, after the family returned to New Hampshire, and probably while they lived at Portsmouth. Like his brothers, he lived at Newington, but after 1728 moved to Arundel, Maine onto land his father gave him at Cape Porpoise. In a York County deed dated 10 September 1725, John Downing\textsuperscript{1} deeded to Benjamin\textsuperscript{2} the "lands and property at Kennebunk or near Cape Porpus at a place called Miller's creek, formerly occupied by my Honoured Father-in-Law Mr. John Miller." He was known as Deacon Benjamin Downing, so he was active in the church at Arundel, where he also was the town clerk from 1750 until his death in 1753. He was also a joiner [a carpenter who did inside finish work].

On 3 December 1724, Benjamin Downing\textsuperscript{2} married Elizabeth Fabyan\textsuperscript{3}, the daughter of Lieut. John\textsuperscript{2} and Mary (Pickering) Fabyan, also our direct ancestors through no less than three of their children. They were mentioned earlier in this book. The children of Benjamin\textsuperscript{2} and Elizabeth (Fabyan) Downing were:

1. Alice Downing\textsuperscript{3}  
b. 11 Oct 1725  
m. 5 Jan 1743/4 Richard Downing  
d. 15 Jan 1790

2. Samuel Downing\textsuperscript{3}  
b. 8 Jan 1727  
m. 8 Jan 1747 Patience ------

+ 3. Elizabeth Downing\textsuperscript{3}  
b. 20 Jul 1728  
m. 28 Jan 1748 Richard Furber

4. Benjamin Downing\textsuperscript{3}  
b. 12 Mar 1732  
m. 26 Mar 1756 Mary Fairfield  
d. 27 Jan 1797

5. Jonathan Downing\textsuperscript{3}  
b. 12 Mar 1732  
m. 26 Mar 1756 Sarah Cleaves

6. Richard Downing\textsuperscript{3}  
b. 12 Mar 1732  
m. 26 Mar 1756 Thomas Goodwin

7. Susanna Downing\textsuperscript{3}  
b. 12 Mar 1732  
m. 26 Mar 1756 Adam Clark

8. Sarah Downing\textsuperscript{3}  
b. 12 Mar 1732  
m. 26 Mar 1756 Thomas Boothby

9. Hannah Downing\textsuperscript{3}  
b. 27 Dec 1749  
m. 27 Dec 1749 Thomas Boothby  
d. 18 Mar 1818

10. Phebe Downing\textsuperscript{3}  
b. 27 Dec 1749  
m. 27 Dec 1749 Jonathan Stone

11. Mary Downing\textsuperscript{3}  
b. 27 Dec 1749  
m. 27 Dec 1749 as an infant

12. Temperence Downing\textsuperscript{3}  
b. 27 Dec 1749  
m. 27 Dec 1749 Ephraim Wildes
The only piece of information that can be added to the list of children above is that the Richard Downing who married the first child, Alice Downing\textsuperscript{3}, was her first cousin. Our direct ancestor, Elizabeth Downing\textsuperscript{3}, married Richard Furber\textsuperscript{4}, to be introduced momentarily.

**THE THREE RICHARD FURBERS**

In a previous chapter, an account of William Furber was given. He arrived in this country on the ill-fated *Angel Gabriel* and had both a son and a grandson named William, from whom the compiler's family is also descended. Also described earlier was a fourth-generation Furber descendant, Nehemiah Furber and his family. Here, we pick up with the other branch of the Furber family from which we are descended, fourth-generation Richard Furber.

Richard Furber\textsuperscript{4} was born about 1700 in Newington, New Hampshire, the son of William\textsuperscript{3} and Sarah\textsuperscript{3} (Nute) Furber. He continued to live in Newington, where he was a cordwainer (a shoemaker). On 22 November 1722, he married Mary Shackford\textsuperscript{3}. Richard\textsuperscript{4} did not live long, probably dying by the time he was about 26 or 27. Mary remarried, as the administration of Richard Furber's estate was granted to Alexander Hodgdon of Newington and his wife Mary, "formerly widow of the deceased". This occurred on 20 August 1728. There were two children born to Richard\textsuperscript{4} and Mary\textsuperscript{3} (Shackford) Furber, both baptized at Newington:

1. Francis Furber\textsuperscript{5}  
   b. 8 Dec 1723  
   @ Newington, Rockingham, NH

2. Richard Furber\textsuperscript{5}  
   b. 12 Sep 1725  
   @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
   m. 28 Jan 1748 (1st) Abigail Wadleigh
   m. 28 Jan 1748 (2nd) Elizabeth Downing

We have no further information about Francis Furber\textsuperscript{5} beyond the baptism record. On 20 September 1743, the courts granted guardianship of "Richard Furber, minor, aged more than fourteen years, son of Richard Furber of Newington, cordwainer, granted to Nehemiah Furber of Newington, husbandman". Since there was no mention of Francis, we can probably assume that the other child died young.

Richard Furber\textsuperscript{5}, whose father died soon after he was born in 1725, lived at Newington and, later, at Lee, New Hampshire. He was possibly raised by his uncle, Nehemiah Furber\textsuperscript{4}, who gained guardianship of Richard\textsuperscript{5} when he reached the age of 18. His grandfather, William Furber\textsuperscript{3}, obviously was very fond of him. In his will, William\textsuperscript{3} stated "I give and bequeath unto my granson Richard Furber all that my land in Newington ... with all the Orchards, Buildings and Ediffices thereon and Two Cows upon the Said p'misses and also one hundred Acers of Land part of my Second Devision in the Town of Rochester ...".

In 1745, Richard Furber\textsuperscript{5} fought in what became known as King George's War, a series of military clashes between France and England, when he participated in the battle at Louisbourg. Louisbourg is located on the island of Cape Breton in what is today Nova Scotia, Canada. In 1720, when the French began construction of a large fortress there, Louisbourg became an important French stronghold in North America. It was called the Gibraltar of North America. From there, the French could launch a number of guerilla attacks on the English colonists in New England, and did so. The English colonists decided to get rid of it. Richard Furber\textsuperscript{5} was part of the force that attacked the fortress at Louisbourg.
Richard Furber\(^5\) married Abigail Wadleigh, the daughter of John Wadleigh. The date of their marriage has not been found but it does not appear that they were married long, for there do not appear to have been any children from this union. After Abigail died, on 28 January 1748, Richard\(^5\) married Elizabeth Downing\(^3\), daughter of Benjamin and Elizabeth (Fabyan) Downing. Richard\(^5\) and Elizabeth\(^3\) (Downing) Furber had the following children, all baptized at Newington:

1. Samuel Furber\(^6\)  
   b. 7 May 1749  
   m. 12 Sep 1776 Mary Emerson  
2. Benjamin Furber\(^6\)  
   b. 8 Mar 1752  
   m. 18 Dec 1777 Deborah Tibbetts  
3. Richard Furber\(^6\)  
   b. 20 Sep 1753  
   m. 18 Jun 1780 (1st) Alice Coleman  
   m. 12 Oct 1786 (2nd) Mary Powers  
   d. 14 Mar 1848 @ Farmington, Strafford, NH  
4. Elizabeth Furber\(^6\)  
   b. 31 Aug 1755  
   m. James Chesley  
5. Frances Furber\(^6\)  
   b. 9 Apr 1758  
   m. Dearborn Jewett  
6. Mary Furber\(^5\)  
   b. 1 Jul 1759  
   m. 21 Dec 1786 Dearborn Jewett  
7. Alice Furber\(^6\)  
   b. 25 Apr 1762  
   m. James Chesley

Our ancestor was Richard Furber\(^6\), the third in a row to carry that name. He was known as General Richard Furber. All historical accounts of him are with this title and usually further state that he was an officer in the Revolutionary War. When this discovery was first uncovered, the compiler of this work was elated since it would add a little gentility or nobility to our ancestors, which for the most part were a pretty drab bunch. Realizing fully that, as military men got older in the colonial era, their ranks always seemed to increase (Captains had a way of becoming Colonels, Colonels somehow became Generals, etc.), there was still hope that General Richard Furber was at least an important officer, with a company or regiment under his command.

However, General Furber made the mistake of living so long that he received a Revolutionary War pension. In their pension applications, surviving Revolutionary War veterans had to disclose their rank, the units in which they served, and the type of military service they saw. In a sworn declaration before the judge of the Strafford County Probate Court in Rochester, New Hampshire on 15 September 1832, Richard Furber\(^6\) disclosed his war record.

Richard Furber\(^6\) stated that he was "residing in Wolfborough" in October 1775 when he enlisted with the New Hampshire militia, joining "the company commanded by Captain David Copp in the regiment of Colonel Burnham". His regiment marched south to defend Portsmouth against the British, an anticipated invasion which never materialized. After a month, many of the men went home to tend their neglected farms. But Richard Furber\(^6\) enlisted to serve three more months and marched south to the Boston area, where his company went to Winter Hill in December to take the place of the retiring Connecticut troops. His declaration states that "during this time he acted as a Sergeant in said Company - that they were stationed at Cambridge near Boston."

Two years later, in September 1777, he enlisted again for three months at Dover under Captain Daniel McDuffee and Colonel Stephen Evans. Richard\(^6\) stated that he "was appointed by Col. Evans to act as adjutant of his regiment" and that he acted as "adjutant during his said time of service". During his three month enlistment, Richard\(^6\) and the other New Hampshire troops "marched through
the southerly part of New Hampshire and into Vermont at Brattleborough, crossed the Green
Mountains by Bennington, met the enemy at Stillwater". This battle, known as the Battle of Saratoga
or Stillwater and described earlier, was one of the most important in the Revolutionary War, at least
to the victorious American side.

The pension application of Richard Furber⁶ stated that "after the surrender of the enemy, they
were marched toward Albany when he was taken sick and continued so for about two months. Soon
after that time he returned home." Richard⁶ wasn't done though. He stated that "he volunteered in
June 1778 to serve two months at Rhode Island - that he joined the regiment of Col. Wingate of the
N.H. line and was by said Col. Wingate appointed his adjutant of said regiment and that he did duty
as such during all of said two months - That after his said engagement was out he returned to his
home". He further stated that "as his engagements were for short times he never had any regular
commission, nor did he take any written discharge".

As interesting as the account of his service in the Revolutionary War was, there is nothing to
indicate that Richard Furber⁶ held any significant rank, let alone General. An adjutant, then as now,
was a staff officer who assisted a commanding officer with administrative affairs. In all likelihood,
Richard Furber⁶ became known as General because of confusion with the term "Adjutant General".
Despite that, it is clear that Richard⁶ did nothing to interfere with the use of his title. In 1845, in a
letter to the U.S. Pension Office written on behalf of Richard Furber⁶ a few years before he died, the
writer inquired about the pension of "Gen. Richard Furber, a Pensioner". The Pension Office
apparently never bought his story of even being an adjutant, let alone a General, sent they reduced
his annual pension from $84.99 to $31.55 in 1835. The records indicate that he "received no
commission as Lieutenant or Adjutant."

On 18 June 1780, before the war ended, "General" Richard Furber⁶ married Alice Coleman⁶,
the daughter of John and Mary (Woodman) Coleman, described previously. They had one daughter
before Alice died eighteen days later, probably as a result of childbirth. Richard⁶ then married, on
12 October 1786, Mary Powers. "General" Furber died at Farmington, New Hampshire on 14 March
1848. He was almost 95 years of age. Because of his very old age, his will only names three
children still living. There were probably others, all but the first by his second wife Mary, who was
living when he died and named in his will. The children of Richard Furber⁶ were (the first by Alice
Coleman⁶, the others by his second wife Mary):

+ 1. Alice Coleman Furber⁷ b. 10 May 1781 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
   m. 18 Jan 1801 William Furber @ Newington, NH

  2. Pierce P. Furber⁷
  3. John W. Furber⁷

Alice Coleman Furber⁷ is our direct ancestor. Named for her mother and reflecting the new
trend of giving children middle names, Alice Coleman Furber⁷ grew up to marry her second cousin
once removed, William Furber⁶, described next.
LEVI AND WILLIAM FURBER

Levi Furber⁵ was born at Newington on 16 May 1751 and baptized there ten days later, the youngest child and only surviving son to Nehemiah⁴ and Abigail⁴ (Leighton) Furber. On 31 December 1767, when Levi⁵ was just 16 years old, his father sold him "sundry pieces of land" for £20. These parcels included "the one half of the Second Division in Rochester which was formerly my Fathers, Wm Furber". They also included Lot No. 62 in Division 1 and Lot No. 28 in Division 2 in the town of Barnstead, which had also belonged to William Furber³. Levi⁵ never lived on any of the land in these other towns, but remained at Newington all his life. He was a husbandman (farmer).

Levi Furber⁵ served in the New Hampshire militia during the Revolutionary War. He was called by historian Henry W. Hardon "an officer in the Revolutionary War" but, in fact, was a sergeant. Following the outbreak of war at Lexington and Concord, he enlisted as a private in Captain David Copp's company and was mustered into the service on 25 November 1775, along with ancestors Grafton Nutter and Richard Furber (described earlier). This unit of militia men, after training for a short time, marched south to Portsmouth to defend against an anticipated invasion there by the British. When that invasion did not materialize, they continued on south to Boston to assist in what became known as the Siege of Boston.

To understand what Levi Furber⁵ (and Joseph Richardson⁵, Grafton Nutter⁵ and other ancestors) went through, it will be necessary to back up and provide a brief history lesson. Most people are familiar with Lexington, Concord, Paul Revere and all that. Most know that the American Revolution started in Boston in 1775. But some details are necessary before one can understand why Levi Furber⁵ and the others joined the militia units and did the things they did.

In Boston, the British had been maintaining a force of about 3500 men to keep the peace after a series of raucous demonstrations against British rule. General Gage, the commander of the British troops, learned that American militia members in the outlying towns near Boston were being trained and organized into active elements known as Minuteman, ready for immediate service. Gage learned that ammunition and military stores were being gathered, which he considered a serious threat to his British troops. So on the night of 18 April 1775, General Gage sent out 800 men to seize munitions being gathered at Concord, some 18 miles from Boston.

The move did not escape the attention of the colonials, including a local silversmith named Paul Revere, who quickly sounded the alarm. Early the next morning, the advance guard of the British
force exchanged fire with a party of militia at Lexington. Eight Minutemen were killed, and the British continued marching on to Concord, where the British commander found militia companies assembling near the town. Most of the military stores had already been moved, and a British attempt to seize one of the two bridges near the town was forestalled by an American counterattack. More militia companies began appearing.

The British commander, having sent back for reinforcements, took his time reassembling his men for the return march to Boston. That 800 British regulars should be seriously threatened by colonial militiamen, no matter how many, was impossible for a British officer to conceive. British regulars were trained to encounter other regulars in the mechanical formations and volley firing of the rigid European school of war. They were not, however, prepared to use small-unit tactics to drive off persistent attacks by opponents who were accustomed to the individual use of firearms in the open country against targets such as birds and small animals. The British retreat became a disastrous rout. British casualties were 73 killed, 174 wounded, and 26 missing, against 49 killed, 39 wounded, and 5 missing for the colonists.

Militia companies from at least 23 towns took part in this operation, which was nothing less than an armed uprising of a whole countryside against the British. Further, the American offensive did not end with chasing the invaders back to Boston. Militia forces kept coming, closing in on the city, which would remain in a state of siege for nearly a year. General Artemas Ward of Massachusetts assumed temporary command of the American militia men. The heavy losses the Redcoats suffered in their retreat from Concord had a paralyzing effect on General Gage. He could not explain how they had done it, and he showed that he did not want to repeat the experience. Rather than trying to break the siege lines that had closed around him, he waited for the arrival by sea of reinforcements from England.

Within a month, the Second Continental Congress met in Philadelphia and established the Congress as a central government for "The United Colonies of America". They adopted the troops engaged in the siege of Boston as their own "Continental Army," and by unanimous vote appointed George Washington as commander in chief. Washington immediately set out for Boston to take up his new responsibilities. Meanwhile, Gage's expected reinforcements had arrived, raising the strength of his garrison to 8000 men. He now felt that his forces were strong enough to occupy the heights overlooking Boston from the north at Charlestown and from the south at Dorchester. The colonists had advance notice of his intention and promptly sent troops to confront him at Charlestown, where they occupied and began to fortify a height known as Breed's Hill.

The famous Battle of Bunker Hill, actually fought on neighboring Breed's Hill, took place on 17 June 1775. The British losses were about 1000 men killed and wounded, the American losses about half that number. In the end, the Redcoats had routed the colonial militia men from their heavily fortified positions on Breed's Hill. Technically, the British had won, but the moral effect on both sides was that of an American victory. On 3 July 1775, Washington assumed command of the American forces with a total strength varying from 13,000 to 16,000, as men came and went almost at will. Washington devoted his immediate efforts to training and reorganizing his army. He could not press the siege of Boston without heavy artillery. For that he would have to wait until winter, when frozen roads and rivers would enable him to drag overland to Boston the guns that had been captured on 10 May 1775, when Ethan Allen of Vermont and Benedict Arnold of Connecticut had surprised and captured the British fort at Ticonderoga on Lake Champlain.

CHAPTER 13 201 BIOG/HIST
It was during the winter of 1775 near Boston that Levi Furber saw his first action in the war. Washington had begun the Siege of Boston by positioning his forces so as to confine the British to the peninsula of Boston and the adjacent islands. The Americans set up strong lines of entrenchments and Washington arranged his army into three divisions on the three flanks of the enemy. The right flank was commanded by General Artemas Ward and stationed at Roxbury. The center flank was commanded by General Putnam. The left flank, commanded by General Lee, occupied Winter Hill and Prospect Hill. The British were strongly entrenched on Bunker Hill (not Breed's Hill). Their sentries occupied Charlestown Neck, with floating batteries moored in the Mystic River near Bunker Hill, and a twenty-gun ship anchored at the ferry between Boston and Charlestown. The British also had a strong battery on Copp's Hill within the city of Boston itself.

Such was the relative position of the colonial and British forces during the fall and winter of 1775. At least for George Washington, the most important thing was that nothing changed until he could get his men more training and supplies. Troops were brought in from surrounding colonies to assist those from Massachusetts. In New Hampshire, on 12 October 1775, the Committee of Safety requested that several companies of Minutemen be raised. In response to that, on 25 November 1775, Levi Furber (along with Grafton Nutter) was mustered into one of those companies, which according to Revolutionary War documents, "went to Winter Hill in December to take the place of the retiring Connecticut troops." The Connecticut militia near Boston had demanded a bounty, which was refused, and a great many of the Connecticut men left for their homes on 6 December 1775.

The two sides maintained a waiting game, keeping a close eye on the other, but little military action took place. It was probably just as well, since the supply of gunpowder among the colonial militia "was not sufficient for nine rounds to each man". Meanwhile, the cold was increasing and many of the soldiers lacked comfortable clothing. It was difficult to procure wood for fuel, and whole regiments were compelled to eat their provisions raw for lack of a way to cook them. With no further action, within probably three months, the New Hampshire regiments returned to their homes.

During that winter of 1775, Colonel Henry Knox, Washington's chief of artillery, did succeed in bringing 59 heavy guns and mortars from Ticonderoga to Boston. On the night of 4 March 1776, Washington occupied Dorchester Heights, overlooking Boston from the south, and began positioning his newly arrived artillery there. General Howe, who had succeeded Gage, was taken completely by surprise and realized that he would have to storm those well gunned heights if he hoped to hold Boston. Rather than do this, Howe loaded his troops and more than 1000 Loyalists on ships and sailed for Halifax, Nova Scotia.

Washington knew that Howe had withdrawn only to reorganize and receive reinforcements. He also foresaw that when Howe returned in force, New York City, with its spacious harbor and immediate access to the interior by way of the Hudson River, was by far the most likely place for the British to begin their invasion. While the Continental Congress in Philadelphia began to think seriously of declaring the independence of the colonies from Great Britain, Washington in New York was wrestling with the problems of preparing to beat off a British invasion, which this time was sure to be made in great force. On 29 June 1776, General Howe arrived off Sandy Hook, New Jersey just south of New York City. In this fleet were transports carrying troops of the strongest expeditionary force Britain had ever sent overseas. When fully assembled, this force would number...
30,000 troops including 8000 German mercenaries.

Against this huge force of veteran British troops, Washington had less than 20,000 men, of whom nearly half were inexperienced as soldiers. In the leisurely manner that was typical of all his operations during the remainder of the war, Howe waited nearly two months before attempting a landing in force. While he waited, the Continental Congress adopted, on 4 July 1776, a Declaration of Independence declaring that the colonies "are and of right ought to be free and independent States." From that point on, the Americans no longer fought as dissatisfied British subjects in rebellion against their king, but as the citizens of a sovereign nation repelling invasion by a foreign power.

Washington had taken up positions on Long Island and Manhattan Island awaiting Howe's opening move. On 22 August 1776 it came at last, as British troops began landing in Gravesend Bay. During the next five days the American troops were driven back to Brooklyn Heights, where they were defeated in the Battle of Long Island. They further retreated in boats across the East River to Manhattan during the night of August 29-30, under Washington's personal supervision and without interference by a greatly superior enemy force. Still moving with great caution, Howe pushed Washington's forces northward. An indecisive skirmish on Manhattan Island was followed by the Battle of White Plains on 28 October also without a clear victor.

In November, the two forts Washington had constructed to keep the British fleet from using the Hudson River fell. Washington retreated southwestward across New Jersey and, on 8 December 1776, across the Delaware River into Pennsylvania. Convinced that the Americans were thoroughly beaten and that the Continental Congress would ask for peace, Howe did not pursue Washington, but merely established several outposts in New Jersey and settled down in winter quarters to wait for spring.

Howe had hardly underestimated the weakness of the American army toward the end of 1776. It consisted of less than 3000 men, badly clothed and equipped and poorly fed. In spite of strenuous efforts on the part of Washington and others to recruit new troops, few citizens cared to join an army that appeared on the point of collapse. It seemed as if total defeat and the end of the new nation were at hand, but by a master stroke of strategy Washington redeemed the situation. On Christmas night, during a blinding snowstorm, Washington led his troops across the Delaware and with a surprise attack overwhelmed a force of about 900 Hessian soldiers in Trenton. On 3 January 1777, Washington struck again, routing three regiments of a force under General Charles Cornwallis in the Battle of Princeton. Washington then took up a strong position on high ground at Morristown in north central New Jersey. The British retreated to New York, leaving the American army in full control of New Jersey.

But by early 1777, the British had prepared a plan which they hoped would end the rebellion in the colonies before the end of the year. The plan was to cut the colonies in two by separating New England, already blockaded by sea, from the southern colonies. A British army under General John Burgoyne was to land in Canada and move south from Montreal to Albany, New York. Another force of British and Indians under St. Leger was to move east from Lake Ontario through the Mohawk Valley and meet Burgoyne's troops at Albany. Finally, Howe was to send a force from New York City up the Hudson Valley to join the other two columns at Albany. Had it worked, today we would all probably still enjoy Queen Elizabeth's picture on our money.
But the plan was too complicated to be successful in such terrain and with the poor communications of the day. St. Leger marched east to Fort Stanwix but was unable to capture it, and he retreated when a relief force under Benedict Arnold approached. Burgoyne, with 7000 men, was successful at first. On 6 July 1777, he took Fort Ticonderoga and 23 days later, he reached the upper Hudson River. There he waited for additional supplies from Canada.

While waiting, Burgoyne sent a Hessian foraging party east into Vermont but this force was cut to pieces by New Hampshire militia commanded by General John Stark in the Battle of Bennington. This battle, described earlier, was the one in which Grafton Nutter fought. The American victory at Bennington not only cost Burgoyne heavy casualties but stimulated American militia enlistments. Burgoyne proceeded south in September but was defeated in two battles at Saratoga by American militiamen and Continental troops commanded by Major General Horatio Gates. On 17 October 1777, Burgoyne surrendered his entire army to Gates.

We know that Levi Furber participated in the Battles at Saratoga, perhaps the most important and decisive of the entire Revolutionary War. A year and a half after he saw service at Winter Hill in the Siege of Boston, Levi Furber (and again with Grafton Nutter and Richard Furber) reenlisted as a sergeant in the New Hampshire militia. On 8 September 1777, Levi was mustered into the company of Captain Nicholas Rawling. This company, according to Revolutionary War records, was formed to "reinforce the Northern Continental Army at Stillwater".

The American victory at Bennington had been disastrous to Burgoyne, who was having great difficulty getting provisions over the 185-mile long supply route through the wilderness from Montreal. Compounding his problems, St. Leger had been defeated and Howe was stalled. Neither were going to join him and give him the reinforcements he needed. Had he been wise, he would have chosen to fall back into Canada at this point. But the obstinate Burgoyne decided to press on towards Albany, despite the fact that his troop strength had dwindled to 6500 men and that he only had provisions for, at the most, another 30 days.

A series of skirmishes near Stillwater, New York soon spelled an end to Burgoyne's forces. The final battle began on 7 October 1777, known as the Second Battle of Saratoga, the Battle of Stillwater or the Battle of Bemis Heights. The American forces had previously been defeated at Brandywine and Germantown just days earlier, and colonial hopes were at an ebb. At Saratoga, an American force under the command of General Gates met the British forces of Burgoyne along the Hudson River near Albany. Gates had a force of 11,000 men, of which 2700 were seasoned Continental Army veterans, the remainder being militiamen of various colonies, including 1100 men commanded by John Stark from New Hampshire.

In the skirmish, Burgoyne lost 600 men against losses of 150 men for the Americans. Completely surrounded and in a hopeless situation after five days, Burgoyne surrendered his 5799 troops, including six members of Parliament who were part of Burgoyne's staff. Among the spoils of war that fell to the Americans were 42 pieces of the best brass cannon then known, 4600 muskets and a large quantity of war munitions. Psychologically, the battle was of enormous value to the American side. In one battle, one fourth of King George's forces in America had been wiped off the slate. Confidence in an eventual victory soared again among the colonials. As a result of the victory, all British forces to the north were withdrawn into Canada. Abroad, King Louis XVI of France recognized the United States and soon moved his country into a declaration of war with
England, with Spain and Holland joining the alliance later.

Little is known of Levi Furber's personal involvement in the war, but as a sergeant in Captain Rawling's company, we can probably assume that he was actively involved. The Revolutionary War records do indicate that of the 94 men in Levi's company, only one died, but that 29 of the men deserted, including the company's ensign. But this appallingly high desertion rate had nothing to do with cowardice. It is safe assumption that these men possessed courage that would be hard to match today. Rather, the dates of the desertions were all in late October, after the surrender of Burgoyne's men, and reflects the men's urgency to return to their family and crops once their jobs as citizen soldiers were completed.

After the surrender of Burgoyne's forces at Stillwater, the New Hampshire militia must have escorted the prisoners of war further south along the Hudson River, for the records indicate that they returned to New Hampshire from New Windsor. New Windsor, New York is located about ten miles north of West Point and was a major encampment area during the Revolutionary War. New Windsor was the headquarters of General Knox, as well as General Washington for a time. The entire Continental Army camped there during the winter of 1782-83. It was also here that the Treaty of Paris was finally announced to the troops officially ending the war and where many regiments in the Continental Army officially disbanded.

Levi Furber was discharged 15 December 1777, after serving three months and eight days helping to defend his country. He was paid £4 and 18 shillings per month, and with the travel allowance that the men received, his total pay was almost £21. Of that amount, he only received a little over £16, which was more than many of the Revolutionary War veterans saw from their new cash-strapped country. After his service in the New Hampshire militia, Levi Furber returned to his farm at Newington.

On 14 October 1780, his father Nehemiah sold to "my son Levi Furber of Newington" the family homestead there. The property, "all my homestead Farm whereon I now dwell containing Forty five acres of Land", was next to "the road leading from Newington Meeting house to Nutters Gate so called". Levi also bought from his father two other parcels of land separate from the homestead, one of 15 acres "lying on the Neck" and the other of 12 acres "on the Plains". The purchase price of all this land was "twenty thousand pounds lawful money". For the price, Nehemiah threw in "one large brass Kettle, one large iron Kettle & one large looking Glass". This £20,000 should be compared to the £20 that Levi paid his father for much more land that he purchased from him at Rochester and Barnstead in 1767.

If the £20,000 sounds like a lot of money, it wasn't really. Rather, it reflected the incredible inflation and devaluation of the colonial currency during the height of the Revolutionary War. Only months before, in April 1779, Washington had complained in a letter that "a waggon load of money will scarcely purchase a waggon load of provision." In April 1781, the Virginia Assembly passed a law fixing the price of a cavalry horse, worth $150 in "hard money", at $150,000 Continental. They found, however, that horses could not be bought even at that price. The worthless colonial currency was the source of the old expression "not worth a continental". Given the extreme inflation, one wonders if the reference to 20,000 "pounds [of] lawful money" was referring to the value of the currency or its weight.
In the ensuing years, Levi Furber⁵ became active in buying and selling property in Newington and other towns in New Hampshire. On 6 October 1782, Levi⁵ bought the 60-acre Lot No. 63 in Division 1 at Barnstead from Ebenezer Adams. This property, "it being the original right of William Furber of Newington deceased", was next to the 60-acre Lot No. 62 that he already owned. Along with the 75-acre Lot No. 28 in Division 2 that he owned, Levi⁵ now owned three lots in Barnstead. He sold the last lot to Dr. Joseph Adams on 11 September 1788. The other two he sold for $500 each to his sons Richard⁶ and William⁶ on 7 February 1803.

On 24 January 1784, Levi Furber⁵ bought 120 acres of land at Chester. He held the land for sixteen years, only to buy another 16 acres there on 1 April 1800. This last parcel he was able to buy from Joshua Tree, the "Collector of Taxes for the town of Chester", for 62 cents, which was probably the amount of the back taxes owed by the previous owner. Obviously, Levi⁵ had an eye for a bargain. On 17 August 1803, Levi⁵ sold "all the land and Real Estate of every description which I own in the Town of Chester" to his daughter Deborah Dame for a token payment of one dollar.

On 4 March 1785, Levi⁵ disposed of part of the land at Rochester he had received from his father, when he sold 70 acres there to Jonathan Palmer of Wakefield, New Hampshire. On 4 February 1801, Levi⁵ bought John Nutter's "house and land on which I now dwell" at Newington. This was the neighboring farm to the Furber homestead. This property and the Furber homestead eventually was passed to the oldest son Samuel⁶. The remaining land at Rochester was sold to Levi's son William⁶ and Richard⁶.

The Newington town records record that, on 23 March 1799, the town granted Levi Furber⁵ the right to keep a "Public House or Tavern in his own house". Approximately a year later, on 14 March 1800, the same right was granted to his son Nehemiah Furber⁶ "as a Suitable Person for Keeping a Tavern in said Town at the House of Levi Furber." The same right was granted again in 1801.

Levi Furber⁵ married Rosamond Fabyan⁴, an account of whose family has been given previously. The couple married at Newington on 4 October 1770. After bearing 13 children, Rosamond died on 13 February 1802. On 25 March 1811, Levi⁵ sold the 45-acre family farm to his son Samuel⁶ for $3000 in exchange for a bond that would provide for the care of Levi⁵ for the rest of his life. The bond that Levi Furber⁵ received from his son Samuel⁶ is one of the most unusual documents of its type in existence.

With the typical bond of this type, found often in early land records, the father would deed, by gift, the farm to the oldest son in exchange for a simple "take care for me for the rest of my life" agreement. That was the extent of it; rarely was any other language attached to the deed. But not only did Levi Furber⁵ sell the farm to his son in exchange for such care, the bond required that "during all the natural life of" Levi⁵, "one full half part of all the produce, emblements or products of all kinds of that farm" should go to Levi⁵. Further, the agreement required that the son would "pay or make good to the said Levi his part of the growth of the stock now on said farm". Levi, the document further stated, was to receive three fifths of that growth.

If that wasn't bad enough, the bond also required that the son "guaranty to the said Levi the peaceable & quiet occupation, possession & enjoyment of the following parts of the dwelling house
The bond then specified what parts of the house and farm that Levi could use, specifically "parts of said house so to be occupied by the said Levi are the bedroom in the Northwest corner of said house, & the middle bedroom, and the long chamber in the west end of the House, the westerly half of the Cellar, with the privilege of using the Kitchen in common, a privilege in the barn for hay or fodder or grain, & for stabling a horse if he should choose to use it for those purposes, and the use of the yard for passing and repassing, & also of the land adjoining to & around said house for the same purpose." This document kind of reminds you of Michael Douglas and Kathleen Turner in the movie *The War of the Roses*.

Levi Furber\(^5\) outlived his son Samuel\(^6\) by over four years. We will never know, but perhaps the son strayed into the wrong room of the house too many times. Levi\(^5\) died on 19 January 1829 without leaving a will. Soon after, his son William\(^6\) petitioned the court to be appointed administrator of the estate, stating that "Levi left no widow" and that he was "the oldest son of the said deceased". Levi\(^5\) and Rosamond\(^4\) (Fabyan) Furber had the following children, all born at Newington:

1. Deborah Furber\(^6\)  
   b. 2 May 1771 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. Moses Dame  
   d. 18 Oct 1851
2. Nehemiah Furber\(^6\)  
   b. 27 Jun 1773 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. never married  
   d. 14 Aug 1825
3. Samuel Furber\(^6\)  
   b. 1 Jul 1775 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. Sarah -----
   d. 1 Aug 1824 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
+ 4. William Furber\(^6\)  
   b. 20 Apr 1778 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. 18 Jan 1801 Alice Coleman Furber
5. Elizabeth Furber\(^6\)  
   b. 17 May 1780 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   m. (1st) Richard Dame  
   m. (2nd) Simon Davis  
   d. 2 Nov 1839 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
6. Abigail Furber\(^6\)  
   b. 12 Jun 1782 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   d. 31 May 1784
7. Dorothy Furber\(^6\)  
   b. 24 May 1784 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   d. 3 May 1785
8. Nathaniel Furber\(^6\)  
   b. 26 Apr 1785 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
   d. 3 May 1785
9. Mary Furber\(^5\)  
   b. 13 Apr 1786 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
10. Mehitable Furber\(^6\)  
    b. 16 Aug 1788 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
11. Richard Dame Furber\(^6\)  
    b. 13 Feb 1791 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
12. Nancy Furber\(^6\)  
    b. 10 Jun 1793 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH  
13. Sarah Furber\(^6\)  
    b. 6 Jan 1796 @ Newington, Rockingham, NH

Little information beyond that given above is known of the thirteen children of Levi Furber\(^5\) other than for our own ancestor, William Furber\(^6\). The estate settlement for Levi\(^5\) in 1829 includes a petition to the Rockingham court requesting that Thomas Brackett of Portsmouth be appointed the administrator of the estate. The petition was signed by Simon Davis of Newington. Both men were identified in the petition as being the sons-in-law of Levi Furber\(^5\). Simon Davis was the husband of Elizabeth Furber\(^6\), but it has not been determined which Furber daughter became the wife of Thomas Brackett.

**William Furber\(^6\)**, our direct ancestor, was a tailor. He lived at Newington on the family...
homestead until he was about 27 years old, when he moved to Rochester. William married, at Newington on 18 January 1801, Alice Coleman Furber. She was his second cousin once removed, meaning that his great-grandfather and her great-great-grandfather were the same person. Both descended from William Furber, who came from England to New Hampshire on the Angel Gabriel.

The marriage of William and Alice probably created a bit of a scandal in Newington, but not because they were distant cousins. Alice was only nineteen years old, fairly young for marriage during these times, but the urgency of the marriage is evident from the fact that the couple's first child was born 27 January 1801, only nine days after they married. The clear recording of these dates in the Newington town records, plus the date of the birth of their second child, makes a record-keeping error unlikely in this case.

On 7 February 1803, William Furber bought a 60-acre lot of land in the town of Barnstead from his father Levi. This lot, No. 62 in the first division, had belonged to William Furber, and had been passed to Nehemiah and Levi, though there is no evidence that any of them ever lived on this land at Barnstead. William's brother, Richard Furber, bought the neighboring lot No. 63 from his father the same day. Each paid $500 for their lots. The same day, the two brothers also jointly purchased from their father the 100-acre lot he owned at Rochester, this land also having belonged to their great-grandfather William Furber. William and Richard together paid $1000 for the Rochester land.

William Furber was identified in both deeds as a "taylor" (tailor), a profession that he would be identified with his entire life. He was only 24 years old at the time, already with a wife and two young children. An investment in this property would have been logical for him. One would tend to be more suspicious of the purchase by his younger brother Richard, since he was only twelve at the time. Despite the fact that he was "of Newington" and was not identified with any profession, it would be pertinent to assume that this Richard Furber was not the son of Levi because of his young age.

However, on 1 April 1808, "William Furber of Rochester" and "Richard Furber of Newington" stated that they "do own a part of the second division in said Rochester number three" which "we have divided". In this deed, the Richard Furber is identified as a minor "who covenants by Levi Furber Father & natural Guardian to the said Richard Furber". This clearly identifies Richard Furber, the son of Levi, as the one who made these highly unusual land purchases at age twelve. The 100-acre lot was divided, apparently in half, between the two brothers, each quit claiming their rights to the other. In addition, William granted Richard a "privilege to the water" from a spring that was located on William's part of the land.

William Furber kept his land at Barnstead until 15 September 1810, when he sold it to Henry Littlefield of Barrington for $300. Since he had purchased the same 60-acre lot from his father for $500 seven years before, it does not appear to have been the best deal William ever made. But bad financial situations appear to have been the trademark of William Furber. In fact, it would not be unreasonable to characterize William as a total deadbeat.

On 8 August 1815, William Furber signed a promissory note to the widow Lydia Furber for $18.30 plus interest. In a lawsuit recorded in the Strafford County Superior Court at Dover for 20 February 1821, Lydia claimed that "though often requested he hath not paid said sum or interest but
neglects" the obligation. The court awarded her a $19.74 judgment against William Furb by, plus $6.33 for attorney fees and court costs. On the same day, three other lawsuits were brought against William Furb by. Moses Hale of Rochester had a promissory note from William Furb by for $31.15 plus interest. He was awarded $35.45 plus costs.

James Chesley of Durham had previously been awarded $30.96 plus costs in a judgment against William Furb by in the Court of Common Pleas at Rochester. Part of the judgment had been recovered but now he was back in court to try to recover the remainder. He was awarded $14.78 plus court costs in a second judgment against William Furb by. Finally, Humphrey Hanson, a Rochester merchant, had a 60-day interest-bearing note for $104.81 signed by William Furb by on 7 April 1819, which also went unpaid. Hanson was awarded $116.52 plus costs in another judgment against William Furb by.

The court records show that William Furb by, although ordered to appear in court on 20 February 1821 to respond to these lawsuits, failed to do so. After he was found to be in default in all of the cases and the judgments were awarded against him, William Furb by did what all good deadbeats do in this situation; he ignored the judgments.

As a result, portions of William's land was seized in the ensuing months to satisfy the various judgments against him. On 25 April 1821, five acres were seized for the widow Lydia Furb by, who despite being "of Newington", owned land at Rochester adjacent to that of William Furb by. On 20 June 1821, another 11 acres and 22 square rods were seized to satisfy the debt to Humphrey Hanson. On 6 August 1821, four acres and 9 square rods were seized for the debt owed Moses Hale. Finally, on 14 September 1821, another 15.25 acres were seized to satisfy a debt of $95.73 that William Furb by owed Nathaniel March, a Portsmouth saddler. He had sued William Furb by in the court at Portsmouth and was awarded a judgment similar to the others. It is not clear what happened to the judgment awarded to James Chesley.

As a result of all of these property seizures, William Furb by's land at Rochester had slipped to about forty percent of its original size. On 5 March 1822, William Furb by mortgaged the only 20 acres of his land that had not been seized by the Strafford County Sheriff. He agreed to pay back John Nutter Jr. the $25 he borrowed one year later. Once again, William Furb by was borrowing money and promising to pay it back, only this time he was literally "betting the farm" on his promise.

It is not clear from the extant records whether or not William Furb by himself actually paid off the mortgage. On 28 May 1824, a quit claim deed was filed in the Strafford County courthouse from John Nutter Jr. to William Furb by. The quit claim released any right that Nutter might have had in the property at Rochester, implying that the mortgage had been retired. But a second quit claim was filed the very same day from William Furb by to Benjamin Furb by, his son. In that document, William Furb by released the property to his son in exchange for $50.

The sons of William Furb by then set out to rebuild the tarnished image of their deadbeat father. On 2 December 1826, Benjamin Furb by and John H. Furb by purchased for $158 "that part of the farm in said Rochester where their Father William Furb by now lives which was set off to Humphrey Hanson". This was the eleven acres and 22 square rods that had previously been seized by the Sheriff and deeded to Hanson to satisfy their father's debt. "Under new management", the farm was starting to grow again. In a mortgage granted to John H. Nutter on 3 May 1834, the farm was listed
as being "forty acres" in size.

How much longer William Furber\(^6\) lived is not clear. No record of his death has ever been found despite a protracted search for it. No will or administration of his estate can be found in Strafford County or any other courthouse in New Hampshire. William\(^6\) had a couple of adult daughters who moved to Maine with their husbands, and it is possible that he died there. In any event, he may have been dead on 5 December 1831 when his son, John H. Furber, took out a mortgage on the family farm for $500. That document mentions that the farm is "the same which my late Father William Furber formerly owned". One meaning of the word *late* is "recently deceased" but another is "having recently occupied a position or place" as in *the company's late president*. It is unclear which usage was meant in the mortgage document. One undocumented source places his death in 1846.

William Furber\(^6\) and his wife, Alice Coleman Furber\(^7\), had three children while at Newington, where the births of their first three children appear in the town records. After the family's move to Rochester about 1805, we lose track of the later children, for the town recorder there failed to keep vital statistics the way his counterpart in Newington did. From a myriad of other records, we can reconstruct the family of William\(^6\) and Alice\(^7\) Furber as follows:

1. Nicholas P. Furber\(^7\)
   - b. 27 Jan 1801
   - @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
2. Benjamin C. Furber\(^7\)
   - b. 14 Dec 1802
   - @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
   - m. (1st) Olive Hussey
   - m. 1876 (2nd) Sarah Brewster
   - d. 21 Sep 1881 @ Somersworth, Strafford, NH
3. Alice C. Furber\(^7\)
   - b. 9 Aug 1804
   - @ Newington, Rockingham, NH
   - m. Levi Cochran
4. John H. Furber\(^7\)
   - b. Abt 1806
   - @ Rochester, Strafford, NH
   - m. Tryphena Downing
   - d. Oct 1884 @ Carlinville, Macoupin, IL
5. Rosamond F. Furber\(^7\)
   - b. 26 Aug 1809
   - @ Rochester, Strafford, NH
   - m. 14 Aug 1833 Joseph R. Nutter @ Boston, MA
   - d. 21 Apr 1882 @ Bunker Hill, Macoupin, IL
6. Mary W. Furber\(^7\)
   - b. Abt 1811
   - @ Rochester, Strafford, NH
   - m. 10 Apr 1831 Richard Sykes
7. Elizabeth D. Furber\(^7\)
   - b. Abt 1814
   - @ Rochester, Strafford, NH
   - m. 27 Nov 1837 Isaac Chandler
   - d. 2 Mar 1873
8. Richard Furber\(^7\)
   - b. Abt 1815
   - @ Rochester, Strafford, NH
   - m. Hannah L. ----- 
   - d. 2 Nov 1852 @ Bunker Hill, Macoupin, IL
9. Miranda E. Furber\(^7\)
   - b. Abt 1818
   - @ Rochester, Strafford, NH
   - m. 29 Feb 1843 Allen Fisk

Most, if not all, of the children born to William Furber\(^6\) received middle names, reflecting the trend of the times at the beginning of the nineteenth century. In the case of the Furber children, all the middle names appear to have been the surnames of their ancestors.

The oldest child, Nicholas Pickering Furber\(^7\), we know only from the record of his birth in the town records at Newington, born nine days after his parents married. No further record of him exists and he may have died young.
Benjamin Coleman Furber⁷ was one of only two of the children to stay in Rochester. He married Olive Hussey and lived at the village of Great Falls in the neighboring township of Somersworth in his later years, where he was a miller. After Olive died on 4 October 1871, he married Sarah Brewster of Berwick, Maine in 1876. Benjamin⁷ died on 21 September 1881 at Somersworth, leaving five children.

Alice Coleman Furber⁷, who shared the name of her mother, married Levi Cochran. They moved to Maine where they had a farm near the town of Mount Vernon. They had at least four children. Levi Cochran died on 19 October 1865.

John H. Furber⁷ married Tryphena Downing, the daughter of Benjamin and Tryphena (Knowles) Downing. Although raised on a farm, John⁷ preferred carpentry and moved to Portsmouth in 1836 to pursue that profession. An extant city directory for Portsmouth in 1839-40 verifies this, showing a John H. Furber, who was a ship carpenter, living on 10 Cabot Street. The 1840 census for Portsmouth shows a John H. Furber living in that town. In 1846, John⁷ moved onto 50 acres of land near Pembroke, New Hampshire, where he continued to work as a carpenter. He paid $300 for the land and buildings that were on it.

On 4 November 1848, John H. Furber⁷ sold his land at Pembroke for $500, and pocketing his tidy profit, moved west to Bunker Hill, Illinois. The trip, described in the Portrait and Biographical Record of Macoupin County, Illinois, took only 14 days because John⁷ and his family were able to travel by railroad and steamship for much of the journey. John⁷ bought land about a mile northeast of town and built a home on the property. He continued to work as a carpenter while living at Bunker Hill, while his older children worked the farm. His wife Tryphena died in 1868 and John⁷ sold the family farm in 1880, moving to Carlinville with his son. He died there in October 1884.

Mary W. Furber⁷, whose middle name was most likely Woodman after her maternal great grandmother, married Richard Sykes at Somersworth on 10 April 1831. Like Mary's father, Richard Sykes was a tailor. After living in New Hampshire for a couple of years, Mary⁷ and her husband moved south to Massachusetts, where they were living in the city of Worcester with their five children at the time of the 1850 census. They later moved to Boston, where they were living in 1853.

Elizabeth Downing Furber⁷, named for the other maternal great grandmother, married Isaac Chandler on 27 November 1837 at Somersworth. Chandler became a man of some prominence. He was born in Windsor, Connecticut in 1811 but came to Great Falls, New Hampshire in 1830. There, he began working for the Great Falls Manufacturing Company "covering rollers" for 22 cents a day. He worked in this factory, which spun cotton, all his life. At this time, the manufacture of cotton was comparatively in its infancy in this country, and all the skilled spinners were imported from England. Chandler described that the efforts of these men were "equally divided between spinning and beer drinking and but a small product was obtained for their labor."

Isaac Chandler soon moved into the position of a hand-mule spinner, where he demonstrated greatly increased production to the company. He later was given control of the belt- and roller-shop for the company, a position he held for many years. Chandler was a captain in the state militia for four years, a director of the Great Falls National Bank, a vice-president of the Somersworth Savings Bank, and a director of the Great Falls and Conway Railroad. Although he only received a small
amount of formal schooling himself, Isaac Chandler was extremely interested in education. In 1855, he helped found the town library at Somersworth. In August 1888, he gave the library a 99-year lease in one of the buildings that he owned.

Elizabeth7 died on 2 March 1873. Isaac Chandler remarried, on 25 September 1876 in Boston, to Charlotte M. Cochran. Charlotte was Isaac's niece from his first marriage and the daughter of Alice Coleman Furber7. Charlotte was 27 years younger than Isaac.

Unlike his brothers and sisters, Richard Furber7 may not have had a middle name. Rather, he was probably named for his maternal grandfather who shared his name. Richard7 married a woman by the name of Hannah, who was born in Maine and whose last name is unknown to us. By 1841, Richard7 had moved to Bunker Hill, Illinois, where he was the town's first blacksmith. He also dabbled in speculative land sales at Bunker Hill, having at different times purchased ten town lots platted there. Historical articles printed years later in the Union Gazette state that Richard Furber7 built a house at Bunker Hill in April 1844.

On 6 June 1846, Richard Furber7 bought 60 acres for $480 at the edge of town at Bunker Hill. It was this land, together with property that Joseph R. Nutter7 already owned, that eventually became the Nutter family farm at Bunker Hill. Richard7 died at Bunker Hill on 2 November 1852, at the age of 37. On 19 April 1854, Hannah L. Furber married Benjamin F. Long in Macoupin County, Illinois. She died before 1880, when "Dr. Benjamin F. Long" was married to someone named Mary.

Miranda E. Furber7 married Allen Fisk of Fayette, Maine on 29 February 1843. They moved to Maine, near Fayette, where Allen Fisk was a wood turner.

Rosamond F. Furber7, whose middle name was probably Fabyan after her paternal grandmother, married Joseph R. Nutter7. She was our direct ancestor and her story will be continued next.
THE NUTTER FAMILY MOVES WEST

With this chapter, we return to Joseph R. Nutter⁷, the seven-generation descendant of Hatevil Nutter. After the Nutters had lived in the colony and now the state of New Hampshire for almost exactly 200 years, it was Joseph⁷ who would break from the rest of the family and move west.

Joseph Richardson Nutter⁷, the son of Grafton⁶ and Elizabeth⁶ "Betsy" (Richardson) Nutter, married Rosamond F. Furber⁷ in Boston, Massachusetts on 7 August 1833. Following their marriage, Joseph⁷ and Rosamond⁷ (Furber) Nutter left for Illinois, where they would make their life-long home. The reason for moving west was fairly simple; in one word, land. By 1830, most of the eastern seaboard was fully populated and the prices of farm land had escalated to $10-20 per acre. When Joseph's older stepbrother, William⁷, bought their father's 100-acre farm in Tuftonborough in 1820, he paid $1000, or $10 per acre, for the land. In the far west (which Illinois was considered to be at this time), public domain land from the federal government sold for $1.25 per acre. In addition, farmers found the soil of the midwest to be very fertile and more conducive to crops than that in the hilly east.

To understand how it came to be that Joseph R. Nutter⁷ joined thousands of others in moving west from New England in the 1830s, one has to go back to the end of the War of 1812 almost two decades earlier. With the Treaty of Paris that ended the Revolutionary War, Britain ceded control of the land that included the present-day state of Illinois to the new United States. But up until the War of 1812, Indians in the Northwest (including present-day Ohio, Indiana, Illinois and Michigan) were a continual problem, and greatly limited the areas where the white man could live peacefully.

The War of 1812 began for two reasons, the maritime rights of neutral nations and the United States' desire for land into which the new nation could safely expand. Britain and France were at war in 1812 and both nations ignored the maritime rights of neutral powers. The British, in particular, seized deserters and other British citizens, including naturalized Americans of British origin, from American ships for service in the Royal Navy. From 1802 to 1812, some 10,000 Americans were seized this way, causing an outrage in the United States. The other concern leading to the conflict was the British support of the Indians in the west, under the Shawnee chief Tecumseh, who bitterly opposed further American westward expansion.

Since 1805, Tecumseh had been traveling throughout the new west, trying to unite the various tribes into a confederation strong enough to resist the American expansion. Tecumseh and his brother, The Prophet, a one-eyed epileptic medicine man believed by the natives to possess supernatural powers, visited the tribes and preached unity and the need to gain the strength to win back their lands. Governor (and later President) William Henry Harrison of the Indian Territory heard of this movement and decided to warn the natives against their newly risen prophet. "If he
is really a prophet," the governor wrote to the Delawares, "ask him to cause the sun to stand still, the moon to alter its course, the rivers to cease to flow."

By the time The Prophet heard of Harrison's message, he had already learned from the whites that there would be a total eclipse of the sun on 16 June 1806. He then "caused" the sun to go dark on that date, which impressed the various tribes so much that his reputation was forever made, having successfully accepted Harrison's challenge. Tecumseh pleaded for aid from the British, which welcomed a chance to build Indian alliances for the increasingly inevitable conflict that was brewing with the United States. In the fall of 1810, 6,000 Indians visited Fort Malden on the Canadian side of the Detroit River, and received the arms they so desperately sought from the British.

Conflicts between the Americans and the Indians began in earnest in 1811, and by the next spring, American settlers were fleeing from the more outlying outposts and fear was sweeping through even the more densely populated areas of the region. It was believed by most American citizens that the hostilities could be laid directly at the feet of the British. Harrison reflected the popular view when he wrote: "The whole of the Indians on this frontier have been completely armed and equipped from the British King's stores at Malden." To the Americans, the solution seemed simple, attack and conquer Canada, wipe out Fort Malden, and forever end the "unholy alliance between red coats and red men". On 18 June 1812, Congress declared war on Britain.

The war raged for the next two years, during which the British burned the Capitol and the White House in Washington, D.C. Being completely unprepared for war with the British and their Indian allies, the American forces suffered several serious setbacks early in the conflict. But, by 1814, the quality of the American troops and the skill of their leaders improved markedly and the tide of the conflict began to turn in favor of the Americans. In September of that year, an American naval victory on Lake Champlain forced 15,000 invading British troops to retreat into Canada. The same month, the British also failed to take Baltimore despite a blistering bombardment of the city, during which American poet Francis Scott Key wrote The Star-Spangled Banner while being held prisoner aboard a British ship in the harbor.

These two defeats encouraged the British prime minister, Lord Liverpool, to seek a peaceful negotiation to the end of the war. A peace treaty was signed at Ghent, Belgium on 24 December 1814. Before Congress could ratify the treaty the next February, the famous Battle of New Orleans was fought, with the British forces being routed by the Americans led by General Andrew Jackson. Neither side in that battle had yet learned that a treaty had been signed.

Meanwhile, throughout 1812 and 1813, the forces of William Henry Harrison continued to battle the British and Indians in the west. On 5 October 1813, the two armies met for the last time at the Thames River in Canada, where the American army, strengthened by 3500 deadly sharpshooters from the Kentucky militia, soundly defeated the British. The Kentucky cavalymen, yelling like demons, swept through the British lines at 2:30 in the afternoon, slaughtering as they went. In a few minutes time, the fierce battle was over and every member of the British force was either killed or captured. With the death of Tecumseh and most of his warriors, the strength and resolve of the Indians broke. By the winter of 1813, all of the Northwest was in American hands, except for a few scattered British posts.
With the return of peace in 1815, President James Madison dispatched "peace commissioners" to meet with the various Indian tribes at the little village of Portage des Sioux in July of that year. The war had cost the Indians dearly, and with a few exceptions, the grievances of the various tribes were settled over the next two months. Technically, the frontier was at peace with the native tribes once again. Just in case, the government launched a fort-building program designed to act as a buffer between the Indians and the settlers of the region. Between 1816 and 1822, many new forts were built, and older ones rebuilt and garrisoned as never before.

As described in the book *Westward Expansion, A History of the American Frontier*, the policy of the government with regard to Indians had now changed. The new policy now had only one objective, to bring the Indians so completely under American control that they could be pushed from their ancestral lands. "This ambition was as old as English settlement in the New World, but the methods were new. Instead of bribing a few weak chiefs into signing a land-grabbing treaty, the commissioners chose to deal with the northwestern Indians acted with brutal directness. The pattern was set in September 1817, when representatives of the half-dozen tribes still owning lands in Ohio were called together, informed they must cede their claims in return for annuities and presents, and forced to sign a treaty of cession. For the next four years that ruthless process went on, with tribes after tribe surrendering its territories and agreeing to live within the confines of a reservation or move to the unwanted wilderness beyond the Mississippi. Powerless without the help of their British allies, the natives had no choice but to give way. By the end of 1821 nearly all of Indiana, Illinois, and Michigan was in American hands, ready to receive westward-moving pioneers."

With the Indians no longer causing problems for the white man on the frontier, the desire of the people in the east to move west intensified. The next stumbling block was how to get there. Between 1812 and 1830, after having been held back by nearly a generation of Indian warfare, the immigrants came mostly from Kentucky and Tennessee, or from Virginia by the National Road through the Cumberland Mountains. However, for people in New England there simply was no easy way to get to Illinois during this period.

But by the time Joseph R. Nutter made the trip west to Illinois in 1833, the trip had become dramatically easier than it would have been a decade earlier. Careful research into the transportation methods available in 1833 can lead us to some conclusions about how Joseph and the rest of his party made their way west.

First they would have traveled to Boston, where they could go by stage or wagon to Albany, New York, approximately 170 miles to the west. Railroads would not appear in Massachusetts for another year, so we can be certain that they did not travel by that conveyance. If the trip were made by stage coach, the trip to Albany would have required about three days and cost about ten dollars. But it is more likely that the group, carrying many of their personal possessions, moved by wagons to Albany.

Once they reached Albany, they could take advantage of the latest method of travel of the day, the canal boat. In 1825, the Erie Canal had been completed between the Hudson River near Albany and Lake Erie near Buffalo, New York. As described in *Westward Expansion*, "travelers might complain of overcrowded canal boats, poor food, and swarming mosquitoes, but they were nevertheless able to travel cheaply, take their household goods with them, and be sure of reaching their destination without losing a wagon in a mudhole."
There were two types of canal boats in common use. One was the packet boat, which was more luxurious and most commonly used to ferry only passengers. The other was the line boat, which was more equivalent to a rail car, moved more slowly than the packet boat and didn't offer the passengers any bedding or food. The line boats were often used by family groups traveling west with their own furnishings and supplies of food. Line boats were pulled through the canal by a single horse, following a towpath along the embankment and traveled at a speed of 1½-2½ miles per hour. Although the lighter packet boats could make the 363-mile journey in about four to five days, the heavier line boats usually required another day or two. Travel on the packet boats cost about $5.50 for the entire trip, whereas the cost for passage on a line boat was slightly less, about a penny a mile.

Once reaching Buffalo, passengers from the east could book passage on one of the lake steamers, with deck passage across Lake Erie costing only about three dollars. In *A History of Travel in America*, historian Seymour Dunbar describes: "The lake boats made special rates to families, and five or six people moving as one party, together with all their domestic and household goods, could obtain passage from Buffalo to Detroit for twenty dollars." Our ancestors probably did not travel as far as Detroit. More likely, they debarked at what was then the small village of Cleveland, Ohio. There, the traveler could attempt overland transportation to the Ohio River. However it's unlikely that Joseph R. Nutter and his party did that. On 1 December 1832, just months before the party set out for Illinois, this part of their trip was also made easier. On that date, after seven years of construction, the Ohio and Erie Canal opened between Cleveland, on Lake Erie, and Portsmouth, Ohio, on the Ohio River.

The party likely boarded another canal boat at Cleveland, and were pulled through the canal system from the great lakes south to the approximate location of Canton today, where the canal turned west towards present-day Columbus, and then south, generally following the path of Scioto River. In a few days time, the travelers would have reached the Ohio River at Portsmouth, Ohio. There, the Nutter party almost certainly took to the water yet again, this time on a flatboat outfitted for river travel.

A historian of the time, Timothy Flint, described travel conditions in the west as follows: "If bound to Indiana, Illinois or Missouri, they build or purchase a family boat. Many of these boats are comfortably fitted up, and are neither inconvenient nor unpleasant floating houses. Two or three families sometimes fit up a large boat in partnership, purchase an 'Ohio Pilot,' a book that professes to instruct them on the mysteries of navigating the Ohio; and if the Ohio be moderately high, and the weather pleasant, this voyage, unattended with either difficulty or danger, is ordinarily a trip of pleasure. A number of the wealthier emigrant families take passage in a steamboat."

Despite the claims of the contemporary writer, travel on the flatboat (or "Ohio-boat" or "Kentucky-boat" as they were also called) was far from simple. The people from the east were not necessarily experienced river pilots, and even if they were, they were not familiar with the Ohio River. But the alternative was to hack their way through the wilderness on primitive roads and trails, and flatboats were easily the most popular way to get to Illinois.

In *A History of Travel in America*, it is stated regarding the flatboats: "Throughout thirty or forty years [ending about 1840] they were extensively used, and within that period probably a million people lived in them for weeks at a time, during journeys of from three hundred to two thousand miles. They were built by tens of thousands, yet not one of them remains as a memorial of the
vehicles which bore so important a share in the nation's expansion. Roman galleys and ships of the early Norsemen have been found for modern eyes to look upon, but there is small chance for future Americans ever to see an example of the quaint boats into which men, women, children, horses, pigs, chickens, cows, dogs, kegs of powder, dishes, furniture, boxes of provisions and farm implements were all loaded and jumbled together, to float down the rivers to somewhere. They resembled a mixture of log cabin, fort, floating barnyard and country grocery."

Once aboard their flatboat, the party would have floated down the Ohio River, past Cincinnati and Louisville, to the Mississippi River. Once they got to the Mississippi, they could have secured passage up the river by steamboat to St. Louis, or arranged to have their flatboat towed upriver. From St. Louis, they probably crossed the Mississippi by ferry to Alton, Illinois. The entire trip, from New England to Illinois, probably did not require more than three to four weeks to complete.

Historian Seymour Dunbar, in *A History of Travel in America*, states that "the long trip from the eastern states to St. Louis by way of the Erie Canal and the lakes cost about fifty dollars, including meals and all other necessary expenses. If the same journey was undertaken by means of line-boats on the canal, and without either cabin or meals while on the steamboats, it could be performed for twenty or twenty-five dollars."

We don't know for sure when Joseph R. Nutter⁷ and his party left New England following Joseph's marriage on 7 August 1833, or exactly when they arrived in Illinois. But they were in Illinois on 27 November of that same year, when "Joseph Richardson Nutter" purchased 40 acres (SE¼ of NE¼ of T6N-R10W-S25) of land in Madison County, about a mile north of Alton. The land was located adjacent to a 160-acre parcel of land that had been purchased a year earlier, on 30 May 1832, by Dr. Samuel Adams Chamberlain, who was Joseph's brother-in-law. Joseph⁷ purchased the land for $1.25 per acre as part of the public domain land sale from the federal government.

Joseph R. Nutter's stay at Alton was very short. From his obituary years later, we learn that Joseph⁷ and his family farmed for a year at Alton and then moved the following year, in 1834, to an area in Macoupin County, near the small town of Bunker Hill, an area located about 15 miles northeast of Alton. In 1836, after farming near Bunker Hill for two years, Joseph⁷ moved his family back to the Alton area, where he kept a public house [an inn, rooming house or boarding house where alcoholic beverages were also available] at Upper Alton until 1840. In that year, he returned to Bunker Hill and kept "the old tavern" there until 1845. It appears from available records that all of these things are true.

At the time that Joseph R. Nutter⁷ first moved there, Bunker Hill was a prairie wilderness. In *Bunker Hill History*, it is described: "The site of the present town of Bunker Hill was once known to the early settlers of Macoupin County as Wolf Ridge. It was thus named because wolves lived in the area. The choice of the name, Bunker Hill, was not due to the existence of any great elevation, but rather to the fact that there is a hill here somewhat like that upon which the famous battle of the Revolution was fought and because those who gave the name came from a section of the country in which Bunker Hill was familiar and held in great reverence."

From the *History of Macoupin County*, published in 1879, we learn a few things about the earliest inhabitants of Bunker Hill. The historical account states that "An entry of eighty acres of
land covering the central portion of the town was made in 1834 by Luke Knowlton, then county surveyor. A little to the north of this tract, on the highest point of Wolf Ridge, he also put up the body of a cabin with the purpose of keeping others off until he could command sufficient means to enter additional land. In this hope, however, he was disappointed, for in 1835, Mr. Wilbur came out from Boston and entered land north, east and west of Knowlton's tract. He also purchased the eighty acres which Knowlton had entered, and built a house on the Reuben Barnes farm. The season of 1835 was marked by the great prevalence of malarial disease and continued sickness, and for this reason Wilbur seems to have sold his tract to Robert Smith of Alton. J.R. Nutter entered land, and in 1834 built a house west of the city limits; he also disposed of his tract to Mr. Smith."

The date (1834) given for the year that Nutter first went to Bunker Hill confirms the personal account given in Joseph R. Nutter's obituary over fifty years later. The reader should also note the use of the word "enter" as used in the historical account above. No longer in common use, this meaning of the word enter meant "to go to or occupy in order to claim possession of land". It was not uncommon for pioneers to take physical possession of a parcel of land, erect a cabin or house on the property, and then file a claim with the government or purchase the property. Like Knowlton, this appears to be what Joseph R. Nutter did.

Macoupin County land deeds indicate that, on 29 September 1835, "Joseph R. Nutter" bought 160 acres (SE¼ of T7N-R8W-S15) for $226.80 from Caleb and Esther Tuttle, the amount paid in full. Probably realizing they were short of cash to get through the winter, about a week later, on 6 October 1835, Joseph R. Nutter and his wife Rosamond borrowed $300 from the State Bank of Illinois, using the property as collateral. The loan, with a healthy ten percent interest, had to be paid back in one year. A year earlier, on 12 October 1834, Joseph's younger brother, listed in the records as "Josiah Mutter" of Madison County, purchased 80 acres (E½ of NE¼ of T7N-R8W-S15) immediately to the north of the land that Joseph bought.

In 1836, after farming for two years just west of Bunker Hill, Joseph sold his property to Robert Smith of Madison County and moved back to the Alton area. Joseph R. Nutter made a healthy profit, since he sold the land with its improvements for $2000. For years it was a mystery why Joseph R. Nutter moved onto the land at Bunker Hill, stayed only two years, sold out, moved back to Alton, only to later return to Bunker Hill. In the Union Gazette, a newspaper printed at Bunker beginning in 1866, there appeared a series of articles between 8 February 1871 and 3 August 1871 titled "Bunker Hill, Its Early History" which gives us the answer to this puzzle.

These articles were written by a long-time resident of the town named John A. Pettingill, who had kept a diary during the early days of the town. In one of these articles, Pettingill refers to the "sickly season of 1835". In this context, he mentions that in "the same year J. R. Nutter moved upon his new entry north of town and north of the Woodburn road, where he built a small house in the fall of 1834. He too came to grief by hard labor and exposure to the malarial atmosphere generated by the upturned prairie soil. Chills and fever struck the old settlers closer than a brother, and Mr. Nutter had plainly the mark of that curse of a raw prairie farm, and thereby induced to sell out in 1836 to Robert Smith, and then removed to Upper Alton."

The account of him having run a boarding house at Upper Alton is also apparently true, since the 1840 census shows a "J.R. Nutter" living at Upper Alton with 18 people in his household, including seven men from 20-30 years old and five men 30-40 years old.
In the years while Joseph R. Nutter was gone from Bunker Hill, the small town grew. On Christmas Day 1835, Moses True from Salisbury, New Hampshire and John Tilden from Boston visited the settlement in the company of Robert Smith of Alton. They formed a land company, with the object to lay out a town and improve their personal wealth. The company was composed of Tilden and True, along with John Cavender, James Smith and William H. Smith. All five men were from New England, thus confirming the account previously given of the origin of the name Bunker Hill.

Over 3000 acres of land were subsequently purchased, including the 160 acres of Joseph R. Nutter, and the new town began to be established. The men knew that the first step had to be to establish a store, so in January 1836, True and Tilden returned from St. Louis with a wagonload of groceries, dry goods and other merchandise, which were placed in a building from which Tilden operated the store. In March 1836, True and Tilden had Knowlton, the surveyor, plat the town. That same year, as the second step to establishing the town, Moses True built a "dwelling house", or hotel, that became known as the "Old Tavern".

According to the History of Bunker Hill, the "general population did not share the anticipation of the proprietors and they ludicrously called it 'True and Tilden's Folly' and it was proclaimed abroad that "The Yankee and his money will soon be parted." However, it turned out that True and Tilden were either luckier or smarter than the townspeople. The stage route between St. Louis and Springfield was routed through Bunker Hill and the Old Tavern became a stopping place on that route. In 1837, True enlarged his hotel and town lots soon began to fetch $25 for a choice lot. By 1840, 60 people lived in the small town, and by 1850, 160 citizens called Bunker Hill home. In 1854, the railroad was completed through Bunker Hill, securing the town's survival for years to come.

Today, the town of Bunker Hill, Illinois is a small but bustling farm community. It only has about 1800 residents, but can even boast of its own Internet service provider in town. The center of town is easily identified by the 17½-foot high, 22-ton monument to Abraham Lincoln. The county courthouse in nearby Carlinville is itself an incredible structure. The first courthouse was an 18x24 log structure built for $128.66. By the time Joseph R. Nutter arrived in Macoupin County, they had a 50x50 brick building. However, in 1867 it was determined that the county needed a larger courthouse.

The original cost of the courthouse was supposed to be $50,000 and bonds for that amount were issued. But after construction began in October 1867, the costs escalated out of control. By the time the building was completed in 1870, the final cost was $1,342,226.31. It took 43 years for the residents of the county to pay for the building and caused a scandal that raged for years. Some that were responsible for the cost overruns slipped away in the dead of night, never to be seen again. At the time, the courthouse was the largest in the United States and was even larger in size than the Illinois state house. Even today, it is an incredible structure guaranteed to inspire awe in the visitor.

In 1839, Joseph R. Nutter purchased 30 acres (W part of NE¼ of SW¼ of T7N-R8W-S14) just west of Bunker Hill. Based upon the personal account given in his obituary, Joseph R. Nutter returned to Bunker Hill in 1840 to "keep" the Old Tavern. His experience in running his own inn and rooming house in Upper Alton probably qualified him to run the hotel in Bunker Hill, which by this time no longer belonged to Moses True. Joseph continued to manage the hotel in Bunker Hill
until 1845, at which time it appears that he returned to farming full time.

Meanwhile the mother of Joseph R. Nutter, Elizabeth "Betsy" Richardson had come west to join her son at Bunker Hill. In the cemetery at Bunker Hill is a large four-sided Nutter family monument, with the names of Joseph, his wife and two of his small children who died young. Also on one side of this monument is the inscription "Elizabeth R. Nutter, Died Oct. 15, 1844, Age of 65 Years". The age and name agree closely with the mother of Joseph R. Nutter. But despite some disagreement with the exact date, the confirmation comes from the historical reminiscences of John A. Pettingill in his Union Gazette articles. For the year 1844 (the month not indicated), one of his diary entries states that on "the 25th Mrs. Nutter, mother of J. R. Nutter, was buried."

On 1 April 1846, Joseph R. Nutter borrowed $270 from Rosamond's younger brother Richard Furber, who had also come west from New Hampshire about five years before and settled at Bunker Hill. In the chattel mortgage, Joseph provided as collateral "one Bay and one Sorrell horse five years old - one Two horse waggon and Harness, 10 Cows, 2 Three year old steers, 4 Two year old steers & Heifers, 4 yearlings, Fourteen sheep, Sixteen Hogs between one year old and Three years old, Five shoats now up fatning, one Bay mare 10 years old and one bay 3 year old colt, Ten feather beds and bedding & bedsteads." On the same day, Joseph also borrowed $152.20 from John Cavender.

In the meantime, both Joseph R. Nutter and some of his in-laws invested in other property in Macoupin County. Joseph himself purchased 40 acres (NW¼ of NW¼ of T7N-R7W-S32) of public domain property about three miles southeast of Bunker Hill on 4 April 1836. Joseph's stepsister's husband, Samuel A. Chamberlain, who records indicate continued to live near Alton, purchased 79.5 acres (W½ of SW¼ of T7N-R9W-S30) on 7 December 1836 west of Bunker Hill, near Brighton. On 6 June 1846, Richard Furber bought 60 acres (S½ of SW¼ of T7N-R8W-S14 and NW¼ of SW¼ of T7N-R8W-S14) just west of Bunker Hill for $480 from John Cavender. This land immediately adjoined the 30 acres that Joseph R. Nutter lived on at the time. In the 1850 census for Macoupin County, Richard Furber, who was a blacksmith, was shown living at Bunker Hill with his wife Hannah and one daughter.

However, Richard Furber died on 2 November 1852 at the age of 37, without leaving a will. Shortly after his death, Joseph R. Nutter purchased Richard Furber's land, which created a series of interesting land transactions for several months during 1853. For reasons not apparent to the compiler, Joseph had to pay for quit-claim deeds against the property he purchased from the widow. These quit-claim deeds were extremely helpful in piecing together the family of Joseph's wife. In exchange for one dollar, Joseph R. Nutter received quit-claims from Levi and Alice Cochran of Fayette, Maine, Allen and Miranda E. Fisk of Fayette, Maine, Isaac and Elizabeth Chandler of Great Falls, New Hampshire, and Richard and Mary W. Sykes of Boston, Massachusetts. The four women of each of these marriages were sisters to Richard Furber, and therefore, Joseph's wife, the former Rosamond Furber.

In addition, Joseph R. Nutter also paid one dollar in exchange for quit-claims to Benjamin and Olive Furber of Great Falls, New Hampshire, John and Tryphena Furber of Bunker Hill, Illinois, and Hannah L. Furber of Bunker Hill. Benjamin and John were brothers of Richard (and Rosamond), while Hannah was Richard Furber's widow. Two other people, John B. Furber and Ann Mariah (Furber) Miller of New York City were also paid for their quit-claims, but it has not been determined
In 1855, part of the thirty acres that Joseph R. Nutter had purchased was subdivided and platted as part of the Cavender Addition to Bunker Hill, which was done by John Cavender, Moses True and Joseph R. Nutter. This subdivision, forever known as J.R. Nutter's Subdivision, still appears on plat maps and property legal descriptions to this day. Joseph kept approximately twenty acres, which added to the 60 acres that he obtained from the estate of his deceased brother-in-law, became the 80-acre farm he lived on the rest of his life. The farm remained in the possession of the Nutter family and its descendants until 1919, when it was sold to Jesse E. Scroggins.

Rosamond F. (Furber) Nutter died at Bunker Hill on 21 April 1882, at the age of nearly 73, following "an illness of four or five weeks". The Carlinville Democrat reported that the cause of her death "was paralysis, of which she had a shock about five weeks ago". Today, we would likely identify her condition as a stroke. Her obituary in the Bunker Hill Gazette stated: "Mrs. Nutter was a woman of kind disposition, and many of the old settlers recall with grateful remembrance her neighborly deeds. She was a member of no religious body, but lived a life of practical piety."

Joseph Richardson Nutter lived for ten more years, dying at Bunker Hill on 20 November 1892, nearly sixty years after he had come west to Illinois. His obituary in the Bunker Hill Gazette noted:

Joseph R. Nutter passed away quietly and without a struggle at 1:30 on Sunday afternoon, aged 86 years, 9 months and 14 days. The infirmities of age had impaired his physical vigor for some years, but his great energy served to keep him up; his face was a familiar one upon the street until a short time ago; he made his last walk up town on Thursday following election. Although housebound since then, he would not take to his bed, and sat up and conversed as usual until the night before death. His mental faculties were well preserved, the only impairment being a noticeable absentmindedness of late.

Deceased was born in New Hampshire, and was reared a farmer; he came to Illinois in 1833 with his wife who died here ten years ago; he farmed for a year near Alton; in 1834 he came here and opened up a farm. Two years later he removed to Upper Alton where he kept a public house until 1840, when he returned to this place and kept 'the old tavern' until 1845, when he went upon the farm which he made his home until his death. He was the father of six children; two died in infancy; those surviving are James and Anna (with who he lived on the home place), Mrs. Max Illhardt of Shelbyville, and Will of Webb City, Mo. Mr. Nutter was a man of positive convictions, much force of character, and high integrity. He kept himself well informed throughout his life, and his fund of information and reminiscence made him a most entertaining companion.

Funeral services were conducted at the family residence on Tuesday by Rev. J. V. Hopper, and the remains of him whom his friends spoke of tenderly as 'the old gentleman,' found that rest which on account of physical infirmities he had frequently craved. Mr. Nutter was the oldest resident of this city.

Joseph R. Nutter was buried in the Bunker Hill Cemetery next to his wife, mother and several children. Joseph and Rosamond Nutter had been in Illinois for most of their adult lives. Joseph lived there for 59 years, most of that at Bunker Hill. They had six children, including two who died in infancy, the other four being raised at Bunker Hill. The children of Joseph R. and Rosamond (Furber) Nutter were:
1. James R. Nutter 8  
b. 3 Aug 1835 @ East Alton, Madison, IL  
m. 22 Jan 1873 Mary S. Furber @ Macoupin Co. IL  
d. 29 Jul 1910 @ Bunker Hill, Macoupin, IL  

2. Anna Nutter 8  
b. 25 Jan 1839 @ East Alton, Madison, IL  
d. 24 May 1900 @ Bunker Hill, Macoupin, IL  

3. Miranda Nutter 8  
b. 8 Apr 1841 @ Bunker Hill, Macoupin, IL  
d. 11 Jul 1842 @ Bunker Hill, Macoupin, IL  

4. Charles W. Nutter 8  
b. 13 Aug 1843 @ Bunker Hill, Macoupin, IL  
d. 1 Jun 1844 @ Bunker Hill, Macoupin, IL  

5. Mary E. Nutter 8  
b. 28 Jun 1847 @ Bunker Hill, Macoupin, IL  
m. Max M. Ilhardt  
d. 4 Sep 1935 @ Decatur, Macon, IL  

+ 6. William H. Nutter 8  
b. 26 May 1849 @ Bunker Hill, Macoupin, IL  
m. 29 Oct 1873 (1) Sarah DePew @ Macoupin Co. IL  
m. 20 Oct 1880 (2) Ann Eliza King @ Pike Co. MO  
m. 16 Mar 1885 (3) Sarah E. (Phillips) Jones  
d. 26 May 1919 @ Portland, Multnomah, OR  

James R. Nutter 8, born two years after his parents came west to Illinois, would live his entire life at Bunker Hill. He lived at home with his parents until his mother died there in 1882 and his father in 1892. He continued to live on the family farm with his sister Anna, farming the land there until his death.

It is suspected that James R. Nutter 8, with his comfortable life at home with his parents, may not have had a desire to marry. But when he was 37 years old, he got his first cousin pregnant and had to marry her. She was 29-year-old Mary S. Furber, the daughter of John H. Furber 7, the brother of Rosamond 7, who had come west to Bunker Hill in 1848. James 8 and Mary married on 22 January 1873 and a son was born about four and half months later.

Mary died on 19 June 1873, from consumption (tuberculosis) if you believe what her obituary said at the time. Given that she had just given birth a week or two before, one must consider it more likely that she died from complications associated with the birth of the child. The infant boy, whose name never appeared in the records, lived for about 2½ months and died on 24 August 1873. Both Mary and the infant son were buried in the Bunker Hill Cemetery. James R. Nutter 8 never remarried.

He continued to live on the family's 80 acres and farmed there long after his parents retired. Farming, as virtually everyone did, does not normally attract much attention. However, a small entry in the newspaper at Bunker Hill for the date 3 October 1878 states that a "team of James Nutter's made a desperate runaway scrape of it on Saturday. The animals jumped the farm fence, taking the wagon with them, and crossed the railroad just in front of the down passenger train, the engine barely missing them. Strange to say, the horses were uninjured by their furious drive." As an interesting sidebar, the paper the same day mentioned that a "base ball match between our boys and the Jerseyvilliands, appointed for Friday, did not come off, a number of the latter being wanted by a grand jury to testify in regard to crooked whisky."

Following the death of his parents, James R. Nutter 8 and his sister Anna 8 continued to work the farm together. He outlived her by ten years, dying on the family farm on 29 July 1910. His obituary, printed in the Bunker Hill Gazette-News, stated:
On Saturday morning, the community received a shock by the announcement that James Nutter, one of our oldest and esteemed citizens, had been found dead in his easy chair. He had lived alone since the death of his sister some ten years ago, taking his meals at the residence of his near neighbor J. W. Alderson. His non-appearance at breakfast time caused Mrs. Alderson to step over but before she reached the door, she saw through the screen a lamp burning and Mr. Nutter sitting therein which so frightened her that she returned to tell her husband who found he was dead. His appearance indicated he passed away peacefully Friday night just before his usual retiring time. A paper (the Gazette-News of which he had been a life long reader) was in his lap as also was one hand, the other just reaching the floor. His death therefore was apparently painless. He had eaten a good supper the night before and was in good spirits generally. He was up town and sold a case of eggs for $4.50 and on his return, had asked one of Mrs. Alderson's children what one dozen was worth at the case rate. His relatives Mrs. Mary Ilhardt, her son and daughter of Decatur were immediately notified and were in attendance at the funeral which took place from his residence Tuesday morning, Rev. Frame of Springfield officiating. Mr. Nutter was a citizen that will be missed. His age was 74 years, 11 months and 26 days. The uncertainties of life are illustrated in this, as many who attended the plowing demonstration on his place the previous Monday, were present at his funeral and of course little dreamed another concourse on an entirely different mission would gather there the following week.

As an interesting sidebar, from the obituary we learn that, by 1910, modern conveniences had reached the Nutter family farm. In January 1899, the task of "stringing the wires for lighting the residences" had begun at Bunker Hill and within a month those who desired to have electric lighting in their homes could have it.

Like his parents, several siblings, wife and infant son, James R. Nutter was buried in the Bunker Hill Cemetery. His sister Mary was administrator to his estate, which besides the family farm itself, consisted primarily of "furniture, horses, cattle, farm implements, any growing crops and grain in storage". The "growing crops" and the fact that several men were paid "for work" from the estate indicates that 74-year-old James R. Nutter still maintained a working farm. His personal property was appraised at $917. Despite the fact that she lived in Decatur, Illinois at the time, his sister Mary bought the family farm for $9250 at a public sale held on 29 October 1910.

Because James R. Nutter did not leave a widow or children, and left no will, his estate was divided between his sister Mary and brother, William H. Nutter, who lived in Oregon by this time. Each of them received over $3340 in 1911 as their portion of the settlement of the estate.

Anna Nutter lived on the family farm all her life and never married. On 22 May 1867, Anna bought two lots of J.R. Nutter's subdivision from her parents for $450. These lots were part of the family farm on which they lived and there is no evidence that she ever lived separate from her family. On 24 April 1878, she purchased 20 acres and another large lot of J.R. Nutter's subdivision from her parents for $500. On 10 December 1896, after the death of both of her parents, she sold all this property to her brother for $10, at which time the old family homestead was once again whole under one owner.

Anna Nutter undoubtedly took care of her parents in their later years. Following their deaths, she lived with her brother on the farm. She died on 24 May 1900 at the family farm, as a result of
a 20-year bout of ulcers according to her death certificate. However her obituary in the Bunker Hill newspaper told a different story:

*Miss Anna Nutter died at her home north of town on Thursday, May 24th, 1900 at 2:00 o'clock p.m. aged 61 years, 3 months and 29 days. Miss Nutter was born in Upper Alton where she lived with her parents until 1841 when they removed to this place and where she has lived since. Her parents died in this place. Here mother preceded her in 1882 and her father in 1892. Not a week previous her death she fell and broke the left thigh and was a sufferer from this. Thursday she ate a hearty dinner, was in the best of spirits until about 2:00 o'clock when the end came in a hurry. Miss Nutter's death was thought to have been caused from heart disease. She leaves to mourn her loss, Mrs. Mary Ilhardt, DuQuoin; James of this place; William, living in Oregon.*

One typically would believe what a doctor wrote on her death certificate as opposed to an obituary in a small hometown newspaper. But if she died suddenly soon after having eaten a "hearty" lunch, one would be suspicious of death by ulcers. In any event, Anna* was buried at Bunker Hill Cemetery near the rest of the family.

The next two children, *Miranda Nutter* and *Charles W. Nutter* both died as infants and both are buried next to their parents. John A. Pettingill, in his historical articles about the early days of Bunker Hill, mentions the death of "a child of J. R. Nutter" in July 1842. This was the infant daughter Miranda, obviously named for one of Rosamond's younger sisters.

*Mary E. Nutter* married Max M. Ilhardt, although it is not known when or where that marriage occurred. Max Ilhardt was a Prussian immigrant but little else is known of his activities. The Ilhardtts lived at Bunker Hill for a time, where Max was a dealer in hardware and agricultural implements and later a grocer. Mary* and her husband later moved to DuQuoin, Illinois and then later to Decatur, Illinois. Max died at Decatur on 14 January 1910.

Six months later, when her brother James* died at Bunker Hill, Mary purchased the Nutter family farm there. It is doubtful that she moved back to Bunker Hill from Decatur, for she almost immediately sold the farm to her daughter Alice Ilhardt for one dollar. Alice, who never married, owned the farm for almost eight years. Finally, on 29 January 1919, Alice Ilhardt sold the old Nutter farm to Jesse E. Scroggins for $10,000.

Amazingly enough, today the entire 80-acre parcel of land is still intact and still being farmed, by Jesse's son, Glenn Scroggins. In well over a century and a half, only two families have owned this land, without it ever having been divided and used for non-agricultural purposes.

Glenn Scroggins told of living in the old Nutter house as a boy growing up on the farm and of raising his own children in it as well. Luckily, the house survived the tornado of 1948, which devastated most of Bunker Hill. Glenn eventually built a new home on the same site, and in 1977, tore the old house down. Knowing that the old place was infested with termites, he figured that he would be able to simply pull the house over with his big farm tractor. After snapping a one-inch cable trying to do so, Glenn changed his mind. Later, as he tore the house down in pieces using a front-end loader, he was surprised to discover that the walls of the house were constructed with two layers of brick. Glenn also discovered hand-hewn beams in the floor, and square nails and wooden pegs used in the construction of the house.
Mary E. Ilhardt died in St. Mary's Hospital in Decatur, Illinois on 4 September 1935. Though she was 88 years old at the time of her death, she was listed as being the owner of one or more hotels. The circumstances of her death were surprisingly similar to that of her older sister Anna. Mary had fallen in her residence and fractured her femur. She subsequently died as a result of "cardiac exhaustion & chronic myocarditis" (an inflammation of the heart muscle). Mary was buried at Greenwood Cemetery in Decatur, Illinois. In 1959, her remains, as well as those of Max and her daughter Alice, were removed from this cemetery and reburied in Macon County Memorial Park in the same city.

William H. Nutter was the youngest of the six children. Like his older brothers and sisters, he grew up on the family farm at Bunker Hill. But unlike the others, he did not stay in Illinois. Rather, after marrying at the age of 24, he moved from his native state to Missouri, where he bought a farm. Sadly, his young wife would soon die and he would marry again, to the daughter of a neighbor. But after giving William one son, his second wife also died. After burying two wives by the time he was 35, William gave his young son to his in-laws to raise, sold his farm in Missouri and moved further west. Before long, he would marry a third time, to a young widow named Sarah Jones.

Sarah had been born Sarah E. Phillips, and like the Nutters and the Furbers, her family has quite a story to tell. Next, we will examine the ancestry of Sarah E. Phillips before returning to an account, in detail in a future chapter, of William H. Nutter and his descendants.
THE TILGHMAN AND DRYDEN FAMILIES

For the reader who has been patiently awaiting an ancestor with ties to kings, queens and all sorts of famous historical figures, you finally get your break. In fact, you get it in spades; a 1959 published genealogy of the Tilghman family, *Tillman & Hamilton Family Records* by James David Tillman, Jr., traced the family back to before the birth of Christ! Despite the fact that the compiler maintains an extremely healthy dose of skepticism for such research, this work at least looks plausible.

The family lineages were established using a number of references dealing with ancient history and medieval history, all cited by Tillman. Further, Tillman notes that the records before 400 A.D. are based upon the legends and traditions of early bards and singers, since such records exist at the very edge of written history. After that date, the records are based upon published ancient histories of England. Should we consider this lineage to be accurate? There is no way to know for certain but the best answer is possibly.

In any event, the lineage (tracing from Mark Antony down to the earliest Tilghman ancestor to immigrate to America) is reproduced here. Whether accurate or not, it makes for an amusing study and could lead to some fascinating bragging rights. For those whose grasp of ancient history might be considered weak (which is most of us), Mark Antony was a Roman statesman and general, and an associate of Julius Caesar. After the assassination of Caesar in 44 B.C., Mark Antony's skillful oratory, immortalized by Shakespeare in his play *Julius Caesar*, turned the Roman people against the conspirators, leaving Mark Antony with almost absolute power in Rome. He was later married to Cleopatra, the Queen of Egypt, his fifth wife.

1. Mark Anthony (BC 83-30 BC), married 4th, Octavia, half sister of Caesar Augustus. Their daughter:
2. Antonia, married Drusus, adopted son of Augustus, whose mother was Livia. Their son:
3. Tiberius Claudius Drusus (BC 10-54 AD), Emperor of Rome. His daughter:
4. Venissa (Venus Julia), married Arviragus, a Druid king, 11th son of Cunobeline (-40 AD), educated in Rome by Caesar, King of Britain, who was son of Tenustitius, who was son of Lud (died BC 62), son of Beli who died BC 72. Cunobeline's brother, Caracoc, went to Rome, 60 AD. Their son:

5. Marius (Meric) married a daughter of Boadicea, Queen of Iceni (died 62 AD), whose husband Prosutagus left a will in 60 AD bequeathing his wealth jointly to his two daughters and the Roman Emperor, hoping to save their inheritance. However, it was disregarded by the Roman authorities in Britain. The record of Marius is well preserved in ancient Welsh manuscripts. Iceni is now Suffolk and Norfolk counties in England. Their son:

6. Colius I, King of Britain in 125 AD, was educated in Rome; he died 170 AD. His daughter:

7. Athilids, married Marcomir IV, King of Franconia (-149 AD). Their son:

8. Clodimir IV (-166 AD), King of the Franks, married Hasilda. Their son:

9. Farobert (-186 AD). His son:

10. Sunno (-213 AD). His son:

11. King Hilderic (-253 AD). His son:

12. King Betherus (-272 AD). His son:

13. King Clodius III (-298 AD). His son:

14. King Walter (-306 AD). His son:

15. King Dagobert (-317 AD). His son:

16. Genobald I (-350 AD), Duke of East Franks. His son:

17. King Dagobert (-379 AD). His son:

18. King Clodius IV (-389 AD). His son:

19. King Marcomir (-404 AD). His son:

20. Pharamond (-427 AD), Duke of the Franks and King of Westphalia; his wife, Agatha (Argotta). Their son:

21. Chlodis "The Long Haired" (-447 AD), King of Westphalia, married Basina. Their son:

22. Merevee (-458), King of Franconia, married Verica. Their son:

23. Childeric I (-437-481), married Basinga (sister or wife of Basin, King of Thuringia). Their son:

24. Clovis "The Great" (465-511), married 493, St. Chlotilde (474-545), sister of Theodoric, King of Austrasia, whose capital was at Metz. She led Clovis to embrace Christianity. Her father was Childeric II, King of Burgundy, son of Grunodi (-473); her mother was Agrippina. Their son:

25. Chlothaire I (-561), sole King of France, his capital at Soisson. Married Ingonde. Their daughter:

26. Blithilde, married Ausbert of Moselle. Their son:

27. Arnulf (-598), Bishop of Metz, married Oda de Savoy. Their son:

28. St. Arnulf (580-640), Bishop of Metz, married Lady Dodo of Saxony. Their son:

29. Ansegis (Anthis) (-685), Mayor of the Palace, married Begga of Brabant, daughter of Pepin I (-629), Mayor of the Palace. Their son:

30. Pepin II (-714) of Heristal, Mayor of the Palace. Married Alpaide (or Chalpaide). Their son:

31. Charles Martel "The Hammer" (689-741), King of France, married Rotrude (-724) Their son:

32. Pepin III "The Short" (714-768), King of France, married Bertha (Bartrade) (-783), daughter of Charibert, Count of Laon. Their son:

33. Charlemagne (742-814), married 2nd, Hildegarde. He was known by many titles, including Charles the Great, King of Lombardy, Emperor of the West, etc. Their son:

34. Louis I "The Pious" (778-840), married 2nd in 819, Judith (-842) daughter of Welk I "The Bavarian". Their son:

35. Charles "The Bold" (820-877), King in 875, married Ermintrude of Orleans (-869). Their son:

36. Louis II "The Stammerer" (846-879), married Ausgarde, daughter of Count Hardin of Brittainy. Their son:

37. Charles III "The Simple" (878-929), King in 893, married Odgiva, daughter of King Edward the Elder of England and sister of Athelstan. Their daughter:

38. Gizela, who married Rollo (862-931), who was made Duke Robert, and granted in 911 the Duchy of Normandy. He was son of Rognvold, (-890) and a descendant of Sigurd of Sweden and conqueror of Norway. Their son:

39. William I (927-943). The name of his wife is not known. He was known as "Longsword". His son:

40. Richard "The Fearless" (-996), Duke of Normandy. His son:

41. Richard II "The Good" (-1026), married Judith de Bretagne, who died 1018. He was Duke of Normandy. Their son:

42. Robert "The Devil" (-1035), Duke of Normandy. He married Herleve de Fallais (daughter of Fulbert, a tanner) or at least were parents of:

43. William "The Conqueror" (1027-1087), who married in 1053, Matilda, his distant kinswoman and descendant of Alfred the Great of England. She was daughter of Baldwin V of Flanders. Their son:

44. Henry I (1068-1135), King of England, married first in 1104, Matilda (1080-1118), daughter of Malcolm III of Scotland and Margaret Atherling. Their daughter:

45. Matilda (1104-1167), who married (when widow of Henry V of Germany) in 1128, Geoffrey Plantagenet (1113-1151), son of Sulk "The Handsome", Count of Anjou. Their son:

46. Henry II (1133-1189), Plantagenet, married in 1152, Eleanor of Acquitaine (1122-1204), former wife of Louis VII of...
France. Their son:

47. King John "Lackland" (1166-1216), married in 1200, Isabel de Taillefer ( -1246), daughter of Aymer, Count of Anjouleme, as 2nd wife. The Counts of Anjouleme descended from Count Vulgrin, who died 3 May 886, a kinsman of Charles "The Bold". Their son:

48. Henry III (1207-1272), married 1236, Eleanor of Provence ( -1291). Their son:

49. Edward I (1239-1307), married first in 1254, Eleanor of Castile ( -1290), daughter of Ferdinand III, King of Castile. Their son:

50. Edward II (1284-1327), married in 1299, Isabella ( -1357) daughter of Philip IV, King of France. Their son:

51. Edward III (1312-1377), married in 1329, Phillipa (1313-1360), daughter of William, Count of Holland. Their son:

52. Edmund Langley (1341-1402), Duke of York, married 1st in 1371, Isabella ( -1392) daughter of Peter "The Cruel", King of Castile and Leon. Their daughter:

53. Constance Plantangoaten ( -1416), married Thomas Le Despenser (1373-1400), Earl of Gloucester, who was executed in 1400. Their daughter:

54. Isabel Despencer, who married in 1411, Richard Beauchamp (1397-1422), Lord Abergavenny and Earl of Worcester. They had no sons, but a daughter:

55. Elizabeth Beauchamp (1415-1448) married Sir Edward Neville ( -1476), Baron Abergavenny. Their son:

56. Sir George Neville ( -1492), Baron Abergavenny, married Margaret Fenne ( -1485), daughter of Sir Hugh Fenne. Their daughter:

57. Elizabeth Neville, who married Thomas Berkeley ( -1500), son of Sir Edward Berkeley and Alice Poyntz. Their daughter:

58. Alice Berkeley, who married George Whetenhal ( -1573) of East Peckham and Kent, England. Their daughter:

59. Anna Whetenhal, who married John Sanders of Chilton. Their son:

60. Edward Sanders of Northborne, County Kent, married Anna Pandreth. Their daughter:

61. Anna Sanders, who married Christopher Tilghman of Selling, Kent County, England. He died about 1619. Their son:

62. Christopher Tilghman (or Tillman), born in Kent County, England about 1595. He came to Virginia in 1638.

Whether or not one wants to accept such a lofty and grand lineage back to ancient Romans, there is no denying the more recent ancestry of the Tilghman family. As with most surnames, the early spelling of the name varies from Tilghman to Tylghman, Tillman, Tillman, Tilmont, etc. We will generally use the spelling Tilghman in this work, except when the ancestor is known to have spelled his own name differently. There are several possibilities regarding the derivation of the name, but the most obvious is a man who tills, thus a farmer. In early English records, reference to the name can be found as early as 1225.

Spes Alit Agricolam is a book about the Tilghman family published by Stephen Frederick Tillman in four volumes over a number of years, the last in 1962. The title comes from a family motto which appears on a coat of arms attributed to the Tilghman family and which translates to "Hopes Sustains the Farmer". In the book, the author identifies eight generations before the first ancestor that will be recognized here. The reason for this is that the identity of these earlier generations is based upon family tradition and a little guesswork, a criteria unacceptable in this work.

The first Tilghman ancestor we can identify with some degree of certainty is Nicholas Tilghman¹. He was a yeoman who lived in the tiny village of Selling, England. Selling is located in the county of Kent, near the towns of Faversham and Canterbury in the very southeastern tip of England. According to the family bible of his grandson who came to America, he married Jane Benson, but record of that marriage has not been found. He had two children:

1. Christopher Tilghman² b. @ Selling, Kent, England
   m. Anna Sanders
   d. Bef 1619 @ Selling, Kent, England

2. John Tilghman² b. @ Selling, Kent, England
Christopher Tilghman\[2\] was listed in early records as "de Selling", meaning that he also lived at Selling, England. He married Anna Sanders, whose ancestry was traced back to ancient times above. Her father was Edward Sanders, who was from Northbourne, England, the son of John Sanders and Anna Whetenhall. Her mother, Anna Pandreth, was the daughter of Miles Pandreth and Elizabeth Lowin. Christopher Tilghman\[2\] died prior to 1619, when "Anna Tilghman, widow of Christopher Tilghman" is mentioned. The children of Christopher\[2\] and Anna (Sanders) Tilghman were (order unknown):

1. Isaac Tilghman\[3\] b. @ Selling, Kent, England
2. John Tilghman\[3\] b. @ Selling, Kent, England
d. 3 Jun 1592
+ 3. Christopher Tilghman\[3\] b. Abt 1600 @ Selling, Kent, England
d. James City County, Virginia
m. Ruth Devonshire
4. Mary Tilghman\[3\] b. @ Selling, Kent, England
m. Thomas Bix
5. Armigill Tilghman\[3\] b. @ Selling, Kent, England

Christopher Tilghman\[3\] was born about 1600 in Selling, England. Early English records indicate that Christopher\[3\] came into possession of the estate known as Rhodes Court, formerly owned by a Thomas Bealde, and which Christopher\[3\], in turn, sold to a Thomas Carter. Rhodes Court is described as being a manor situated in the southeast extremity of Selling Parish, in the borough of Rhodes. Christopher Tilghman\[3\] emigrated to America and is listed in Greer's *Early Emigrants to Virginia* as having arrived in Virginia on 9 May 1635. He married Ruth Devonshire, about whom nothing else is known. His known children were (order unknown):

+ 1. Gideon Tilghman\[4\] b. Abt 1640 @ Accomac County, Virginia
m. 15 Feb 1681 Margaret Manen
d. 7 May 1720 @ Somerset County, Maryland
2. Roger Tilghman\[4\] b. Abt 1645 @ Accomac County, Virginia
m. Abt 1674 (1st) Winnefred Austin
m. Abt 1680 (2nd) Susannah Parham
d. @ Prince George County, Virginia
3. John Tilghman\[4\] b. @ Accomac County, Virginia
m. Magdalen Gutch
d. Maine

Roger Tilghman\[4\] was granted 1060 acres of land in Bristol Parish of Charles City County, Virginia on 20 April 1689. This patent was granted to him for "the transportation of 22 persons into the Colony". The land was on the south side of the Appomattox River and would today be located in Dinwiddee County. The settlement was known as Fort Tillman, reflecting the change in spelling that this line of the family later used. Roger\[4\] later settled in Prince George County, Virginia, where his widow died on 2 March 1717. John Tilghman\[4\] moved to Maine, where he was living on the west side of the Kennebec River in 1665. He married Magdalen Gutch, the daughter of Robert and Lydia (Holgrave) Gutch.

Gideon Tilghman\[4\], our direct ancestor and the first son of Christopher Tilghman\[3\], was born in Accomac County, Virginia. On 22 November 1665, he was still living in Accomac County when he appointed Thomas Clark to be his attorney in both Virginia and Maryland. By 1 April 1669, three and a half years later, he was living in Somerset County, Maryland, when he bought over 100 acres on Back Creek. The land, called the "Golden Quarter", was purchased for 1000 pounds of
tobacco and "some cash", according to the deed.

It seems evident from the existing records that Gideon Tilghman⁴ acquired the customs of the sophisticated gentlemen of rural England, which he undoubtedly learned from his father. He lived according to the manner of "landed gentry" of the time. He adhered to the distinctly English custom of granting and patenting lands under definite names, as his forefathers had done with their manors in England. Some of the properties acquired by Gideon Tilghman⁴ had names like *Tilghman's Adventure*, *Tilghman's Care*, *Poolshape*, *Small Hopes*, *Dale's Adventure* and *Gideon's Luck*.

Gideon Tilghman⁴ married Margaret Manen (or Maneux) on 15 February 1681 in Somerset County, Maryland. He died there on 7 May 1720. Gideon⁴ and Margaret (Manen) Tilghman had the following known children, all born in Somerset County, Maryland:

1. Gideon Tilghman⁵
   - b. 12 Oct 1682 @ Somerset County, Maryland
   - m. Esther Holland
   - d. 1770 @ Bladen County, NC

2. Solomon Tilghman⁵
   - b. 13 Feb 1685 @ Somerset County, Maryland
   - d. 1729 @ Somerset County, Maryland

3. John Stephen Tilghman⁵
   - b. 15 Sep 1689 @ Somerset County, Maryland
   - m. Rosanna Tapper
   - d. 11 Jul 1733 @ Somerset County, Maryland

4. Eleanor Tilghman⁵
   - b. 15 Sep 1689 @ Somerset County, Maryland

5. Moses Tilghman⁵
   - b. 28 Jun 1692 @ Somerset County, Maryland
   - d. Craven County, North Carolina

6. Elizabeth Tilghman⁵
   - b. 1 Jan 1694 @ Somerset County, Maryland

7. Joseph Tilghman⁵
   - b. 4 Mar 1700 @ Somerset County, Maryland
   - d. Apr 1767 @ Somerset County, Maryland

Two of the children, John Stephen Tilghman⁵ and Eleanor Tilghman⁵, were twins. Little else is known of these children.

Our ancestor, Gideon Tilghman⁵, was born 12 October 1682 in Somerset County, Maryland. He married Esther Holland about whom nothing else is known. He died in 1770, probably in Somerset County. He and his wife had at least the following children:

1. John Tilghman⁶
   - b. Abt 1721/2 @ Somerset County, Maryland
   - m. Eva Dryden
   - d. 1809 @ Preble County, Ohio

2. Aaron Tilghman⁶
   - b. @ Somerset County, Maryland
   - m. (1st) Mary Margaret Gibbons
   - m. (2nd) Catherine Hull
   - d. 1764

Nearly a dozen other children have been attributed to this couple, some of whom are clearly not theirs. Their names will not be stated here for lack of evidence of their correct parentage.

John Tilghman⁶, or Tillman, as the name was often spelled by this time, is our direct ancestor. He was probably born about 1721 or 1722 in Somerset County, Maryland and married Eva Dryden. Before continuing with a description of John Tilghman⁶, we will make a detour and provide an account of the Dryden family.

THE DRYDEN FAMILY
The Dryden family is Scottish in origin and originally spelled the name *Dredden, Dreddan, Dredan*, etc. Although the name can be found in Scottish records as early as 1296, the first member of the family from which we can trace descendance is William Dryden, who lived in Edmonston, Scotland in the mid 1600s. Today, Edmonston cannot be found on the map as it has become a tiny hamlet consisting of only three or four cottages near the village of Danderhall, both of which are near the capital city of Edinburgh.

William Dryden¹ was probably born about 1635-1640, and may well have been the William Dredden who was born on 28 March 1638 in the town of Mussilburgh in Inversk Parish, only 3½ miles from Edmonston, although this connection has not been proven. William Dryden¹ became a tailor in Edmonston and was married to a woman named Agnes, whose maiden name is unknown. William¹ and Agnes Dryden were religious non-conformists as evidenced by the fact that none of their children were registered in the parish records of the established church.

Further, on 29 September 1682, William¹ and Agnes Dryden were arrested and imprisoned in the Old Tolbooth Prison in Edinburgh, where many religious prisoners were incarcerated. Arrested with them on the same day were eight other people, one of whom was a widow with five young children, the youngest still being nursed. All ten were said to be "guilty of a tumultuous convocation and riot committed at Wolmet upon y' 14 of September instant in opposition to his Majesty's authority". For their unruly and riotous demonstration, the ten people were kept in prison for a period lasting from several days to a week. In addition, as one of the two leaders of the group, "William Dredan" was also ordered to receive a public whipping.

Scottish emigrants seeking the religious freedom of the New World often came to Maryland, a place known for its religious tolerance. Unlike the far less tolerant New England area, Maryland was a colony where members of the Church of England, Presbyterians, Quakers and even the occasional Roman Catholic could live side by side in peace. An obviously less tolerant individual named Edward Randolph of Virginia mentioned Maryland in a letter dated 27 June 1692, specifically "Somerset County on ye eastern shore, a place pestered with Scotch and Irish." It was to Somerset County, Maryland that William Dryden¹, with his wife and children, would come.

It is not known when they arrived in Maryland, but they were there by 27 May 1685, when both William¹ and Agnes "Dredden" witnessed a will. How they lived or even where they lived in Somerset County is not known, but we can assume that since they had been town dwellers in Scotland and not farmers, that William Dryden¹ continued to work as a tailor. It does not appear that they lived very long in this country. The known children of William¹ and Agnes Dryden were:

1. Margaret Dryden²  
   b. Abt 1664 @ Edmonston, Scotland  
   m. Adam Spence  
   d. Bef 1732 @ Worcester Co, Maryland

2. John Dryden²  
   b. Abt 1665 @ Edmonston, Scotland  
   m. Hannah ------  
   d. Abt 1726 @ Somerset County, Maryland

3. Elizabeth Dryden²  
   b. Abt 1667 @ Edmonston, Scotland  
   m. (1st) Thomas Price Jr.  
   m. (2nd) Matthew Parker  
   d. Bef 1703

4. David Dryden²  
   b. Abt 1669 @ Edmonston, Scotland  
   d. Abt 1744/5 @ Somerset County, Maryland

CHAPTER 15  231  BIOG
5. Mary Dryden²  
   b. Abt 1678  @ Edmonston, Scotland  
   m. ----- Craig

6. Jane Dryden²  
   b. @ Edmonston, Scotland

In addition to these children, there may have been an eldest son William who stayed in Scotland, but that has not been proven. There also was another daughter who married twice, first to Robert Butcher and second to Christian Harmonson, but whose name remains unknown.

Margaret Dryden² had a daughter involved in an indenture agreement noted in the judicial records for Somerset County on 8 October 1685, but not recorded until 1692. The entry states that "Katherine Dredden has put herself out as an apprentice to Randall Revell Senr. of Somerset County Gent. by and with the consent of her mother Margarett and friends for fifteen years from the date hereof, the said Revell to learn the said Katherine such things as are usually taught such apprentices." Both Katherine and Margaret signed by making their mark. The age of Katherine was not given but we can assume she was quite young due to the unusually long period of apprenticeship. Since the court records did not indicate that Margaret was a widow and there was no mention of a deceased father, we can safely assume that Katherine was the illegitimate daughter of Margaret Dryden².

Margaret² later married Adam Spence, their marriage possibly being the reason for the recording of the apprenticeship of Margaret's daughter in 1692. Spence was a merchant and planter (as farmers were usually called in the south). He and Margaret² moved to Bogerternorton Hundred in what later became Worcester County, Maryland and lived near Snow Hill. Margaret² apparently died before Adam Spence, whose will of 13 February 1732 does not mention his wife.

John Dryden² was a cooper (barrel maker), first at Manokin and then later near Rehobeth, in Somerset County, Maryland. Later still, he left Rehobeth and moved up the Pocomoke River to a point north of the present-day town of Snow Hill, Maryland. It was there in December 1701 that his house was robbed during his absence by a pair of thieves, a slave that belonged to Ellis Coleman and an Indian named Nat. The items stolen were valued at 500 pounds of tobacco and included such things as two pieces of venison, three pieces of pork, a gown, a handkerchief and a powder horn.

John² lived on a 300-acre tract of land called Parkers Adventure. A rent roll from 1708 indicates that this land was in the "present possession" of John Dryden², but he did not actually purchase it until 3 November 1714. John² bought the land for 9000 pounds of tobacco from William Shanklin, who was also a cooper and who had moved to Delaware. Despite the indication in colonial records of his occupation as a cooper, with that much land there can be little doubt that John Dryden² also farmed. He married and his wife was named Hannah. From tax rolls, we can assume that John Dryden² died between 1725 and 1727.

Elizabeth Dryden² married Thomas Price Jr., the only child of Thomas and Katherine Price. Elizabeth² moved with her in-laws to Slaters Neck in Sussex County, Delaware, where her husband died. Elizabeth² then married Matthew Parker, who had moved to Sussex County from Accomac County, Virginia. Elizabeth² died before July 1703, when John Dryden², as their uncle, petitioned the court for custody of the children of Thomas Price Jr.

Mary Dryden² had an illegitimate child about 1695 at the age of about 17. The father was
identified as Robert Stitt. When the birth was recorded in 1701, the child was given the name of John Dryden. Mary later married a man named Craig, possibly Edward Craig of Sussex County, Delaware.

Jane Dryden² is known to us only by an entry in the Somerset County records for a cattlemark. The entry states "Jane Dreden, her mark cropt on the left ear & a hole in the said Ear Slitt down right on the right ear & a Small Slitt under y' Said right ear entered y' May 31th Ao 1687". Jane may have been the daughter who later was the unidentified wife of Robert Butcher and Christian Harmonson.

David Dryden², our direct ancestor, was born in Scotland about 1669. He was probably about 15 years old when he accompanied his parents on their voyage to Maryland from Scotland. As a young man, David² worked for Randall Revell or for his estate. In January 1689/90, David² sued the estate of Revell for 1217 pounds of tobacco due him for a year's wages, of which only 200 pounds had been paid. Two years later, in December 1692, David Dryden² was sued for a debt he owed George Layfield, but the case was settled out of court and the details of the case are not known.

David² appears in a few other colonial records in Maryland, including the registration of his cattlemark and being a witness in a lawsuit. He signed a petition dated 28 November 1689 which pledged loyalty to the new King William and Queen Mary of England. The new royal family had been enthroned as a result of the Protestant revolution in England. As a consequence, the Roman Catholic proprietor of Maryland, Lord Baltimore, was swept from office and petitions were circulated throughout the colony seeking signatures for such declarations of loyalty. "David Dreaden" was the 170th signature of the 283 who signed the petition from Somerset County.

On 17 November 1694, David Dryden² received 100 acres of land, which he called Davids Destiny. He lived on this parcel of land the rest of his life, where he was listed as being a tanner and shoemaker. But with this much land, he undoubtedly also devoted much of his time to farming. David² married, but the name of his wife never appears in any of the records. Therefore, not even her first name is known. Based upon tax records for Somerset County, David Dryden² likely died about 1744 or 1745 without leaving a will. His known children were:

+ 1. William Dryden³  b. Abt 1698/9  @ Somerset County, Maryland  
   d. Abt 1775-77  @ Somerset County, Maryland

2. Jane Dryden³  b. Abt 1702  @ Somerset County, Maryland  
   m.  William Thompson

3. David Dryden³  b. Abt 1708  @ Somerset County, Maryland  
   m.  4 Sep 1729  Hannah Noble  
   d.  1761  @ Somerset County, Maryland

Jane Dryden³ married William Thompson, who died not long after their marriage, leaving one son named John Thompson. In the August 1730 session of the Somerset County court, the widow Jane Thompson was cited for having an illegitimate child born that year. The father was identified as David Dryden, a tailor, of Somerset County. This person was likely a first cousin to Jane³, but the name of his father is not known. Her brother, David Dryden³ Jr., a carpenter, paid her fine.

On 4 September 1729, David Dryden³ Jr. married Hannah Noble, the daughter of Jonathan and

CHAPTER 15  233  BIOG
Mary Noble. David^3 may have been more inclined to pay the fine for his sister having a child out of wedlock since his own wife also had an illegitimate child before he married her. Hannah was cited in the November 1728 session of the court for having a child by George Benston. Her uncle, George Tull, with whom she was probably living at the time, paid her fine. The nephew of David Dryden^1, John Thompson, lived with David^3 for a number of years.

David^3 lived in his father's household until 1733, when he inherited his own place from his father-in-law. Jonathan Noble had died in 1721, leaving his land to be divided equally between his two sons. However, both of his sons died before reaching the age of majority and their father's land then passed to their three sisters. Because two of the sisters moved to Sussex County, Delaware, they sold their rights to the Noble land to David Dryden^3. The land, which was located near present-day Pocomoke City, Maryland, was the subject of a boundary dispute with an adjoining parcel of land for many years. The true boundary between the two pieces of land was not agreed upon until after David's death. David Dryden^3 died intestate, probably in 1761 when his widow Hannah was named administrator of his estate.

William Dryden^3 was the eldest son of David Dryden^2 and inherited the Somerset County plantation named Davids Destiny from his father. William^3 was born in Somerset County about 1698/9 and raised on the farm that would become his. After the death of his father, William^3 and his son-in-law, Thomas Benston, who owned an adjacent tract of land known as Greenfield, decided to re-patent their two tracts. This was probably due to the fact that the original patents were vague in the description of the boundaries between the two parcels of land.

Davids Destiny and Greenfield, along with adjacent unclaimed land, were combined into one tract of 258¼ acres, which they called Drydens Destiny. Benston secured a patent for this land in 1759 under his name, and on 8 November 1762, conveyed 109 acres of the land to William Dryden^3 as his share.

William Dryden^3, like all his family before him, was Presbyterian. Extant records of the Manokin Presbyterian Church at Princes Anne, Maryland show that he was assigned pew number 31 in that church in 1747. William^1 married, probably about 1725-1727, but even the first name of his wife remains unknown to us. He was alive in 1775 but it appears that he had died by the spring of 1777. The children of William Dryden^3 were:

1. Mary Dryden^4  
   b. Abt 1728  @ Somerset County, Maryland  
   m. Richard Ward

2. Eva Dryden^4  
   b. Abt 1730  @ Somerset County, Maryland  
   m. Abt 1751  John Tilghman

3. Samuel Dryden^4  
   b. Abt 1732/3  @ Somerset County, Maryland  
   m. Jane Coulbourn  
   d. 1796  @ Worcester County, Maryland

4. Sarah Dryden^4  
   b. Abt 1733  @ Somerset County, Maryland  
   m. 14 Jul 1753  Thomas Benston  
   d. Bef 1802  @ Somerset County, Maryland

5. David Dryden^4  
   b. Abt 1737  @ Somerset County, Maryland  
   m. Mary -----  
   d. 1775  @ Somerset County, Maryland

6. John Dryden^4  
   b. Abt 1740/1  @ Somerset County, Maryland  
   m. (1) -----  
   m. (2) Rachel Riggin
Mary Dryden\(^4\) married Richard Ward, who was a shoemaker. Richard and Mary\(^4\) moved to Worcester County, Maryland where he purchased 215 acres on 28 December 1744. Richard died on 6 February 1759.

Samuel Dryden\(^4\) first appears on the 1749 tax list for Somerset County living with his father William\(^3\). For the next four years, he appears on the tax rolls living with Captain John Williams, during which time he probably learned to be a shipwright. In 1756 or 1757, he moved to Worcester County, Maryland and about this same time married Jane Coulbourn, the daughter of Solomon and Rachel (Handy) Coulbourn. When Jane's mother died in 1771, she left her daughter "Jane Dreding, wife of Samuel Dreding" one feather bed and furniture, six pewter plates, one dish, one basin, one small iron pot, four head of sheep, and one old side saddle.

On 10 March 1758, Samuel Dryden\(^4\) purchased 50 acres called *Chailles Neck* in Worcester County from Peter Chaille. Four years later he patented another 50 acres which he called *Drydens Chance*. Both these parcels were later resurveyed and vacant land added to them, until Samuel\(^4\) owned 200 acres. Samuel followed the trade of a carpenter or shipwright. He was also a slaveowner, listed as owning two slaves on a 1783 tax list and four slaves in the 1790 census.

Samuel Dryden\(^4\) was also a Tory during the Revolutionary War. Both Somerset and Worcester Counties in Maryland had their share of allegiance to England and it was reported that a number of these loyalists were supplying the British ships with provisions. An American militia group under General Henry Hooper finally arrested a large number of the Tories in 1777 and placed them in the Cambridge jail for several months. In 1778, after taking the oath of allegiance to the colonies, these men were released from custody. Among those that were imprisoned and signed the oath of allegiance was Samuel Dryden\(^4\). Samuel\(^4\) died in Worcester County, Maryland in 1796. He left a will which provided his wife with a negro and certain personal property during her widowhood. His land went to one of his sons. His widow Jane died in late 1800.

On 14 July 1753, Sarah Dryden\(^4\) married Thomas Benston, the son of Thomas and Alice Benston. Thomas Jr. received some land that had belonged to his father and patented other parcels. He became a large landowner and owned several slaves. The 1798 tax list showed that he owned 277 acres of land, while the 1800 census shows that he owned seven slaves. Thomas Benston died in early 1802, leaving a will. As the will did not mention Sarah\(^4\), it is assumed that she died before him.

David Dryden\(^4\) lived on his father's homestead until 1759, when he is listed in the tax lists as the head of his own household. Probably about that time he married a woman named Mary, last name unknown. Besides purchasing 165½ acres of his own called *Powells Chance* on 5 March 1757, he eventually received his father's 109 acres called *Drydens Destiny*. David Dryden\(^5\) died in 1775 in Somerset County.
John Dryden⁴ was a blacksmith. He was married four times but the name of his first wife, who
he married about 1760, is unknown. He married second Rachel Riggin, the widow of Cornelius
Riggin. After Rachel died, John⁴ married Naomi Riggin, the daughter of Pearce and Ann (Phillips)
Riggin. On 13 June 1766, "John Dreadon son of William of Somerset County blacksmith"
purchased 217 acres called Riggins Addition from Moses Greer in Worcester County. The following
March, John⁴ bought some farm animals and various household items from Moses as well.

Soon after, John Dryden⁴ moved to Worcester County, Maryland. In the Revolutionary War,
he enrolled as a private in Captain Bennett's Company in the Worcester County militia in 1780. The
same year, he was assessed the value of one horse for use by the Continental Army. In the 1783 tax
list, John Dryden⁴ is listed as the owner of 170 acres, one slave, two horses and six black cattle. In
the 1790 federal census, he is listed as "John Dreaden, B.S.", the latter designation for blacksmith.

John Dryden⁴ began selling off his land in Worcester County in 1799, conveying the last of his
tract to Thomas Westerhouse on 26 February 1805. He then moved to Mason County, Kentucky
where he was listed in the census of 1810. Following the death of his third wife, he married Emily
Brooks, the daughter of William Brooks, on 6 October 1813 in Mason County. Based upon the tax
records there, he probably died about 1816.

Joshua Dryden⁴ was born in Somerset County about 1745. On 3 November 1771, he married
Sarah Bowland, the daughter of William and Elizabeth Bowland. Joshua⁴ purchased 106 acres
called Dumfrees in Worcester County on 28 June 1776 and soon moved there. In 1780, he enlisted
as a private in Captain Quinton's Company in the Worcester County militia, and like his brother, he
was assessed for the value of one horse for the use of the Continental Army. Joshua died in August
1785 at the age of about 40. His widow Sarah remarried two times.

Eva Dryden⁴, our direct ancestor, was born about 1730 in Somerset County, Maryland. About
1751, she married John Tilghman, to whose family we now return.

JOHN TILGHMAN

John Tilghman⁶, the son of Gideon⁵ and Esther (Holland) Tilghman, was born in Somerset
County, but not in 1705 as stated in Spes Alit Agricolam, the Tilghman family genealogy. Boys
were added to tax lists when they turned 16 years old, and John Tilghman⁶ first appears on the tax
lists in 1738, making it more likely that he was born about 1721 or 1722. He continued to appear
in the household of his father Gideon Tilghman⁵ until 1751, in which year he appears as the head
of his own household, which probably indicates that he had married Eva Dryden⁴ about this time.

Also about this time, John Tilghman⁶ moved his young family to Orange County, North Carolina
and then later to "Dodds" County. The name of the latter county was based upon the records for the
state of North Carolina which state that his "gun was impressed into his Majesty's service in 1771
for the Dodds detachment's expedition against the insurgents for which he received compensation."
The county was actually Dobbs County, North Carolina, which ceased to exist in 1791 when it was
split into Lenoir and Glasgow counties, the latter renamed Greene County in 1799.

John⁶ moved several more times, probably with his son Tobias⁷, until he ended up in Preble
County, Ohio. It was there that he died in 1809. An old family bible, still in the possession of
family descendants in 1925, provided much of the information about John and his family, but the location of that bible is no longer known. John\textsuperscript{6} and Eva\textsuperscript{4} (Dryden) Tilghman had at least the following children:

1. Tobias Tilghman\textsuperscript{7} b. 5 Jun 1751 @ Orange County, North Carolina
   m. Abt 1778 Catherine Sharp
   d. 6 Feb 1845 @ Preble County, Ohio

2. Elizabeth Tilghman\textsuperscript{7} m. Joseph Snodgrass

Elizabeth Tilghman\textsuperscript{7} married Joseph Snodgrass and the couple settled in Botetourt County, Virginia.

Tobias Tilghman\textsuperscript{7} is our direct ancestor. His name was most often spelled Tillman, reflecting the more modern spelling of the name, and the spelling which will be now be adopted. According to the old family bible in the Tilghman family, Tobias Tillman\textsuperscript{7} was born on 5 June 1751 although, based upon later records, Tobias\textsuperscript{7} himself did not know exactly when he was born. On 22 March 1833, Tobias Tillman\textsuperscript{7} applied for a pension as a result of his service in the Revolutionary War and stated that he "was born about the middle of June in the year 1751 or 1752 in the county of Orange in the state of North Carolina". Despite his claim that he was born in Orange County, North Carolina, he may have been born in Somerset County, Maryland and moved to North Carolina as an infant.

Tobias Tillman\textsuperscript{7} married Catherine Sharp. Before continuing with the story of Tobias Tillman\textsuperscript{7}, we will make another detour and account for the Sharp and Graves families.
THE GRAVES, SHARP AND TILLMAN FAMILIES

THE GRAVES FAMILY

The oldest known member of our Graves family is John Graves. There is an intriguing story handed down in the Graves family which states that "one Honnas Graves who was born in Holland 'East of the Rhine' or perhaps in Germany, of Protestant ancestry, took refuge in England because of religious persecution, settling in Devonshire where he worked in a foundry. He married an English woman and shortly afterward joined a group of colonists and went to Boston, Mass., just prior to the passage of the Stamp Act. He took a homestead under colonial laws and when the Revolutionary War began he joined Washington's forces and remained with him throughout the war. He was slightly wounded several times. At the close of the war he sold his property near Boston and went to the Carolinas and from there to eastern Tennessee where he died at the age of 103. He was said to have been the father of seventeen children, one of whom, Peter, was killed by the Indians in 1803."

The only problem with family legends such as this one is that they almost never turn out to be true. This one is no exception. Even without close examination, there are several things that draw skepticism with this story. Research by others into the Massachusetts records shows so sign of our John Graves in that colony. But, as is usually the case with most family legends, there are also some elements of truth to the story. Start with the legendary name "Honnas". His name was actually Johann or Johannes. He almost certainly came from Germany, he did die at a very old age, and he did have a son Peter who was killed by Indians.

The surname of John Graves was spelled Graff in the old country and was often spelled that way in colonial records. He was probably born about 1703 in the German Palatinate, however we have no information as to his parents or exact point of origin. It is very likely that our John Graves was the Johann Sebastian Graff who arrived at Philadelphia on the ship Alexander and Anne on 5 September 1730. The ship was listed as having been "from Rotterdam, but last from Deal". Deal is a town in the very western tip of England, where sailing ships would put in after sailing from Europe and receive fresh supplies for the voyage to America.

The name of our immigrant ancestor appears on all three lists associated with the arrival of the Alexander and Anne at Philadelphia. First, the name "Johan Sebastian Graft" was listed on the Captain's List, supplied by William Clymer, the ship's Master. Second, the name "Johann Sebastian Graff" appears as one of the signers of the Oath of Allegiance appearing in the minutes of the Provincial Council for the date 5 September 1730. That list included "the Names of Forty six Palatines, who with their families, making in all about one hundred and thirty persons". Finally, the exact same signature appears on the Oath of Abjuration on the same date. With this document,
the signer renounced his allegiance from whichever country he originated.

There is nothing to indicate whether Johann Sebastian Graff was married or whether he was accompanied by a wife or children when he arrived in Philadelphia. But the ship was from Rotterdam, where almost all Palatinate immigrants originated and we can be fairly certain that he did not sail to America from England, other than the provisions stop in Deal. We can also state with some certainty that he did not settle in the extremely intolerant Massachusetts colony.

Thousands of immigrants from the German Palatinate came to America in the period 1720-1750. Most of them settled in Pennsylvania, simply because they weren't welcome anywhere else, whereas the Quakers welcomed everyone regardless of their nationality or religious persuasion. But eventually even the extremely tolerant Pennsylvania authorities began to worry about the large numbers of German immigrants coming through Philadelphia. Most of the Palatines, as they were called, settled in Berks County, Pennsylvania. Our John Graves, or Johann Graff if you prefer, was no different.

John Graves lived in Greenwich Township of Berks County, Pennsylvania, where in the baptism records of the Dunkel Church for 1746 and 1747 appear the names of two of his sons. The names of the parents are listed as "John Graff & wife" in both cases. We do not know the name of John Graves' wife since her name never appears in any other place. How long the family lived in Pennsylvania is not known, but they joined many other "Pennsylvania Dutch" (who were actually German) in moving to central North Carolina in the 1750s.

After 1730, the colony of North Carolina experienced a phenomenal growth of population, mostly from non-English people. German colonists, most of whom reached North Carolina by traveling over the great wagon road that led from Pennsylvania through Virginia, located in the Piedmont and what was then the extreme western counties. Although England treated the colonies with salutary neglect during this period because of its interminable wars, the population of North Carolina increased from about 35,000 in 1730 to approximately 345,000 in 1775. In the latter year, there were also about 80,000 black slaves in the colony.

About 1757, John Graves moved to Orange County, North Carolina, where he settled on Stinking Quarter Creek. Today, this site would be located in Alamance County about five miles south of the city of Burlington, North Carolina. The origination of the name Stinking Quarter Creek, still in use today, is in dispute. The name appears on maps as early as 1770. One source indicates that the name originated from the fact that Indians cleaned animals here and left quarters of meat to spoil. Another source states that the waterway was formerly known as Stauken's Quarter Creek, presumably for a grant of land to a pioneer settler.

An examination of the early records for this area indicates that John Graves was a large landowner. In 1757, the first year he appears on the tax rolls, he purchased 640 acres of land from Hugh Dobbins. John Graves subsequently purchased 190 acres in 1762, 459 acres in 1764 and 457 acres in 1765. Many of the histories published for early North Carolina refer to him as "Old John Graves of Stinking Quarter" so it is evident that he was not a young man when he moved to North Carolina.

In North Carolina as in other colonies prior to the Revolution, there was an on-going struggle
between the colonists and the British authorities over government, religion, taxes and commerce. All of us are aware of the struggles that took place in New England, which lead to the outbreak of armed hostilities between American colonists and the British forces at Lexington and Concord in April of 1775. But what few people know is that this battle was actually the second such armed conflict in America. The first, called the Battle of Alamance, remains cloaked in obscurity.

The people who settled the frontier counties of North Carolina were not represented proportionately in the General Assembly of their colony. Their frustration was compounded by corrupt officials such as land agents, surveyors, tax collectors, and sheriffs, who exploited and extorted them unmercifully. By the 1760s, the protests of the frontiersmen against the abuses in local government led to the organization of the Regulators (who hoped to regulate the taxes levied upon them) and considerable vigilante activity.

Governor William Tryon heard a rumor that a band of armed Regulators was ready to march upon New Berne to release Herman Husbands, a Quaker who had been previously imprisoned there for his Regulator activities. Tryon released Husbands and the colonists returned to their farms. But the governor called out the militia of neighboring counties and made a virtual declaration of war against the Regulators. His council authorized him to march into the rebellious district with sufficient troops to restore law and order. With 300 militia and a small amount of artillery, he left New Berne late in April 1771.

Early in May, Tryon was encamped on the Eno River, where he was joined by reinforcements. General Hugh Waddell had been directed to collect his forces from the western counties, which he did and waited at Salisbury for powder to arrive from Charleston. But the powder convoy was intercepted in Cabarrus County by Regulators with blackened faces, and the powder fell into the hands of the militant colonists. Waddell crossed the Yadkin to join Tryon, where he received a message from the Regulators telling him to halt or retreat. He found many of his troops wavering, so he turned around and crossed the Yadkin again, hotly pursued by the Regulators. Though many of his men were captured, General Waddell escaped to Salisbury.

When Tryon heard of this, he pressed on toward Alamance Creek to confront the Regulators, whom he heard were now gathering in force. When he approached, they sent to him a proposition for a peaceful solution and demanded an answer within four hours. He responded that he would reply by noon the next day. Buying himself some time, Tryon moved his men that night and formed a battle line within a half mile of the Regulators' camp before his action was discovered.

The Regulators, many of whom had no firearms, grabbed what few weapons they had and the two sides confronted each other. A parley was requested and a representative for the Regulators named Thompson was sent to talk to Tryon. The governor, however, had him taken prisoner, and after some heated words, Tryon snatched a gun from the hands of one of his militiamen and shot Thompson dead. The Regulators saw Thompson fall and immediately opened fire. For the next several minutes, there was a chaotic battle. Some young Regulators rushed forward and seized the governor's cannons, but they did not know how to use them.

There was no acknowledged leader among the Regulators except Herman Husbands, who, when the firing began, declared that his ideals of peace as a Quaker would not allow him to fight, and he rode away. He was not seen again in the region until after the Revolutionary War ended. In the
conflict, which became known as the Battle of Alamance, nine of the militiamen and more than twenty of the Regulators were killed, and many more were wounded on both sides. It was the first armed conflict in the war for independence from British control. But rather than a struggle between colonists and British redcoats, it was sort of a civil war, fought on the soil of North Carolina between citizens of North Carolina, and today, is largely unknown.

The Regulators were defeated, and all the people in that region were compelled to take an oath of allegiance, which restrained their patriotic action when the War of the Revolution began in earnest. Governor Tryon condemned a young carpenter named Few to be hung on the night of the battle, and ordered the property of his mother to be destroyed. Other prisoners were marched through the countryside in a triumphal procession, with Tryon's men destroying crops in the field as they went. At the town of Hillsborough, six more of the prisoners were ordered to be hanged.

Among the six ordered to be hanged was a Captain Messer. His wife hurried to Hillsborough with her 10-year-old son and begged Tryon to spare her husband's life. The governor rejected her rudely and Messer was led out to be executed. The boy broke away from his mother and pleaded with Tryon that if his father was hanged, his mother and "the little children will perish". Tryon relented and offered Messer his freedom if he would find Herman Husbands and bring him back. Messer consented, and his wife and children were kept as hostages. Messer returned after several days and reported that he had overtaken Husbands in Virginia but was unable to bring him back. The exasperated Tryon then proceeded to hang Messer with the other prisoners.

The name of John Graves appears on a list of "Regulators of the Alamance" in 1768. Whether he participated in the battle of 16 May 1771 is not known. But he was required to take the oath of allegiance along with other Regulator members.

A great grandson of John Graves named William Carroll Graves wrote a genealogy of the Graves family in 1870. In that work, he states that John Graves moved west to Tennessee when he was quite old, and further, that "some of his children had preceded him and settled in Big Valley on the north and south side of the Clinch River, now in Union County." This statement cannot be confirmed from extant records, but John Graves deeded his property in Orange County, North Carolina to his son Jacob on 22 November 1799, so it is entirely possible that he moved to Tennessee soon after.

William Carroll Graves wrote that John Graves lived in Tennessee with his grandson John. He states that both John Graves and the grandson died on the latter's farm and that "old John" was buried near the old Presbyterian Church in Big Valley. He was alleged to have been 101 years old when he died in 1804. When the Tennessee Valley Authority built the Norris Dam in 1935, the area where John Graves was buried was permanently flooded. Before that happened, the TVA disinterred his grave for reburial, along with many others. John Graves was reinterred in the New Loyston Cemetery on 4 May 1935, complete with new commemorative marker.

The family tradition has it that John Graves had a large family; one historian states without supportive evidence that he had 17 children. However, only five children are known, which were (order unknown):

1. Jacob Graves² b. 8 Mar 1746 @ Berks County, Pennsylvania婚 Turley Coble
d. 10 Apr 1820 @ Orange County, NC
b. 1 Oct 1747 @ Berks County, Pennsylvania
m. 17 Jun 1769 Sarah Efland
d. 1 Apr 1840 @ Knox County, Tennessee

+ 3. Barbara Graves

m. Henry Sharp

4. Peter Graves

b. @ North Carolina
m. Lucy -----
d. 13 Nov 1794 @ Sharps Chapel, Tennessee

5. John Graves

m. Mary -----
d. Abt 1844 @ Morgan County, Indiana

It is also likely that John Graves had a son named William Graves who moved to Randolph County, North Carolina, where he probably died in the 1790s. However, this connection has not been proven.

A birth record in St. Michael's and Zion Church Records in Pennsylvania provides another hint as to another child of John Graves, as well as the name of his wife. The record is of the birth of Maria Philippina Graef, born to parents Johannes and Maria Magdalen Graef. After moving to Orange County, North Carolina, members of the Graves family intermarried with the Sharp family, to be mentioned later. Keeping in mind that German custom often dictated that people use their middle names, an Isaac Sharp in Orange County had a wife named "Philopena" and children named John, Bostion, Christian, Peter, Elizabeth and Philopena. The similar names in this family make a connection to our John Graves a very good, but unproven, possibility.

Jacob Graves was born 8 March 1746, when his name appears in the birth and baptism records of the Dunkel Church in Greenwich Township of Berks County, Pennsylvania. He married Turley Coble, the daughter of Anthony Coble. There is evidence that he may have served for a time in the British Army during the Revolutionary War, or at least was a Loyalist to the British cause, although the facts on this issue are not clear. If Jacob Graves was a Loyalist, it may be due to the fact that he was forced to sign the oath of allegiance by Governor Tryon, since many of the former Regulators were pressured to become Loyalists when hostilities broke out. In any event, Jacob Graves would find himself in a great deal of trouble following the war.

In his book The Winning of the West, Theodore Roosevelt included the following letter, written by Jesse Benton on 23 March 1783. As a sidebar, Benton was the father of Thomas Hart Benton, who was a famous United States senator from Missouri for 30 years. In the letter, written at the end of the Revolutionary War but six months before the Treaty of Paris officially ended the conflict, Benton complained of the unruly mobs who were taking out their wrath on the Loyalists. He wrote:

One Jacob Graves, son of John of Old Stinking Quarter, went off and was taken with the British Army, escaped from the Guards, came & surrendered himself to Gen'l Butler about the middle of last month & went to his family upon Parole. Col O Neal being informed of this, armed himself with gun and sword, went to Grave's in a passion, Graves shut the Door, O Neal broke it down, Graves I believe thinking his own life at stake, took his Brothers gun which happened to be in the house and shot O Neal through the Breast.

O Neal has suffered much but is now recovering. This accident has inflamed and set to work those who were afraid of suffering for their unjust and unwarrantable Deeds, the Ignorant
honest men are also willing to take part against their Rulers & I don't know when nor where it is to end, but I wish it was over. At the Guilford Feb'y Court Peter O Neal & others armed with clubs in the Face of the Court then sitting and in the Court house too, beat some men called Tories so much that their lives were despaired of, broke up the Court and finally have stop'd the civil laws in that County. Your old friend Col Dunn got out a Window, fled in a Fright, took cold and died immediately. Rowan county Court I was told was also broke up.

If O Neal should die I fear that a number of unhappy wretches called Tories will be Murdered, and that a man disposed to do justice dare not interfere, indeed the times seem to imitate the commencement of the Regulators.

The man shot by Jacob Graves\(^2\) was Colonel William O'Neal, and the Peter O'Neal referred to in the letter was his brother. Jacob\(^2\) was suspected of being a Loyalist, which was considered the same as being a traitor in these turbulent times. Apparently after the shooting, Jacob Graves\(^2\) was jailed for treason at Hillsborough, then as now the county seat of Orange County, where he awaited a death sentence. One must remember that the United States Constitution would not be adopted for another six years, since a national-level government had not yet been formed, and people like Jacob Graves\(^2\) did not enjoy such things as constitutional rights.

Entries in the North Carolina State Records for 1784 permit us to know what happened to Jacob Graves\(^2\). The following message from the governor to the General Assembly appeared in the record: "To the Honorable, the General Assembly, Gentlemen: I herewith send you sundry petitions in favor of Jacob Graves who is now under sentence of death in Hillsborough Gaol [jail] for high treason, who is to be executed the 15th day of May. I request the sense of the Honorable the General Assembly as to the fate of this person."

The General Assembly subsequently passed the following resolution: "Resolved, it is the opinion of this House that Jacob Graves, now under sentence of death in the Gaol of Hillsborough, is a proper subject for the mercy of Government to be exercised upon and that it would be advisable for his Excellency the Governor to grant him a pardon for the particular offense of which he is convicted. Received from the Senate the resolve of this House for extending mercy to Jacob Graves, now under sentence of death in Hillsborough Gaol. Endorsed in Senate 24 April 1784, read and concurred with."

His life spared by the Governor, Jacob Graves\(^2\) would live another 36 years. He continued to live on the family homestead in Orange County (now Alamance County), North Carolina. He died on the family farm on 10 April 1820, having left a will which he signed "Jacob Graff". His will specified the land to divided among several of his sons, and his "negro girl Rainey" to his wife Turley as long as she lived. The will further provided that the slave "girl and her increase to be sold among my children after my wife's death". Jacob Graves\(^2\) was buried in the Stoner Cemetery in present-day Alamance County.

Boston Graves\(^2\) was born 1 October 1747 in Berks County, Pennsylvania, where his name also appears in the records of the Dunkel Church. His name was recorded as Sebastion Graff in the church record book. Boston was a Anglicized variation of Bostion, which was a shortened nickname for his true name. Several of his nephews carried the name Bostion. On 17 June 1769, Boston Graves\(^2\) married Sarah Efland, the daughter of Peter and Catherine Efland.
Like his brother Jacob², Boston Graves² served in the Revolutionary War. However, unlike his brother, he actively fought on the colonial side. The pension application of 85-year-old Boston Graves², made in Knox County, Tennessee on 23 August 1832, provides numerous details of his service as well as his use of substitutes in the war. It was extremely common during the Revolutionary War for men, especially those married with families, to pay a substitute to fight in their place.

In his pension application, Boston Graves² stated that he was drafted in Orange County, North Carolina in 1779 as a private in the militia under Captain William O'Neal. His commanding officer was the same man that his brother Jacob² shot after the war had effectively ended. Boston Graves and William Graves, who was single, were in the blacksmith business together. It was agreed that William Graves would perform the war service since Boston was a married man with a family, so the two partners divided the profits and William went off to war. This William Graves might have been the brother of Boston².

Boston Graves² was drafted a second time, and this time he paid his brother-in-law, John Efland, to serve the five to six month commitment in his place. John Efland had been raised by Boston Graves² and lived with him at the time. Boston² was drafted a third time and again hired a substitute. Finally, in 1781, he was drafted a fourth time and this time he served himself.

Family tradition has it that Boston Graves² "was at Yorktown and brought the silver spoon belonging to Lord Cornwallis, which spoon came down by Boston's request to each succeeding eldest son." As romantic as this tale may be, there probably isn't a grain of truth to it. The truth is that Boston Graves was to serve an enlistment period of three months in the militia under Captain William Rogers and Colonel William O'Neal. After one month, Boston² was ordered to Hillsborough, where he and others were soon taken prisoner by the British. He and the other prisoners were marched to the British-controlled seaport of Wilmington, North Carolina, where they were put aboard a ship and taken to Charleston, South Carolina. He and the other prisoners remained in Charleston eleven months until they were part of a prisoner exchange.

It is not known when Boston Graves² returned to his unit or to his home. But it is highly doubtful that he ever participated in the Battle of Yorktown in Virginia in October 1781. There is certainly no mention of it in his pension application, as would have been the case for an elderly veteran trying to convince the War Department that he should receive a pension for his military service. It is more likely that he was still being held prisoner at Charleston at the time of Cornwallis' surrender at Yorktown. He did, however, receive a pension of $40 per year beginning on 4 March 1831.

After the war, Boston Graves² continued to work as a blacksmith in his wagon shop in Orange County, North Carolina. His name appeared on the tax rolls there for the last time in 1785. He moved about this time to Montgomery County, Virginia, where he lived for a few years before moving on to Knox County, Tennessee. On 16 August 1797, Boston Graves² sold his property on "Clover Bottom waters of Sinking Creek a branch of New River". He may have returned to North Carolina before moving to Tennessee.

Boston Graves² lived the rest of his life in what was known as Big Valley, in Knox County, Tennessee. This area was north of present-day Knoxville in what is today Union County. This area
will be described in more detail when we get to the Sharp family. Boston\textsuperscript{2} died on 1 April 1840, as stated in an affidavit by his widow Sarah requesting the continuation of the pension's widow benefits. Her pension was denied. Boston Graves\textsuperscript{2} and his wife Sarah are buried in a small cemetery near the Harbisons Crossroads area north of Knoxville.

Peter Graves\textsuperscript{2} moved from Orange County, North Carolina to Montgomery County, Virginia, where he appeared on the personal property tax lists in 1790. His name appeared on these lists for the last time in 1793, when it appears that he moved to Tennessee. The latter move would prove to be a fatal one. He was killed the following year near Sharps Station, a fort where many of the families lived in the Big Valley of Knox County.

Many of the local histories of this area contain a reference to his death, but the History of Campbell County, Tennessee contains a particularly graphic account:

It was on Nov. 13, 1794, that Peter Graves thought he heard a turkey gobbling in the thick woods above Sharps Station. Deciding to investigate, he crept to the edge of the woods and as he did so, he was shot in the head at such close range by an Indian that the hair on his head was powder burned. After scalping him, the savage is said to have thrust a sword into his body with such force that 6 inches of the point was broken off and left in his body. He was the first person buried in the cemetery between the Station and the river.

For some time after that the people around the station were on the lookout for Indians, but all was quiet. Early in December, the weather being mild, several of the Sharps crossed the Clinch and Powell Rivers to a saltpeter mine, said to have been owned by them, for niter for gunpowder. Nicholas Gibbs, Henry Sharp Sr., Conrad Sharp and Levi Hinds remained at the Station, as well as several small children, women and girls and several boys from nearby cabins. Just before dark, Gibbs heard several owls hooting on the mountain above the Station, arousing his curiosity and convincing him and the others that the Indians were again on the prowl. Placing the small children in one of the cabins, the women, girls and boys were divided into several groups to ward off a possible attack. Suddenly all was quiet and shortly thereafter the chain at the stockade gate rattled and those inside were ordered to open the gate. This aroused the dogs and they rushed around the stockade barking madly. The Indians' order to open the gates was met with gunfire, which continued all night. As morning came, the Indians retreated, leaving their blood spattered all around the Station but there were no injuries suffered by those inside the stockade. There were bullet holes left in the old log fort which served to remind the occupants for a long time of the battle waged at Sharps Station.

The present day location of the attack on Peter Graves is in Big Ridge State Park north of Knoxville, Tennessee. A commemorative marker was erected at the site in 1968.

The name of Peter's wife was probably Lucy, based upon an entry in the Knox County court records for April 1796, when a motion was filed by John Sartain and Lucy Graves for "administration of the estate of Peter Graves, deceased." Lucy Graves remarried to John Cooper on 1 November 1797. In the October 1798 session of the Knox County court, Henry Sharp was appointed to be the guardian of the minor children of Peter Graves\textsuperscript{2}, whose names were recorded as John, Bostian, Caty, Christian and Betsey.
John Graves\(^2\) Jr. lived in Randolph County, North Carolina for several years before settling in Morgan County, Indiana. He married someone named Mary, probably the daughter of Anthony Coble who mentioned a daughter named Mary Graves in his will. Thus he and his brother Jacob\(^2\) probably married sisters. John Graves\(^2\) died in Morgan County, leaving a will dated 6 September 1839 and recorded 20 January 1844. He presumably died before the latter date.

Barbara Graves\(^2\) is our direct ancestor. As the only known daughter of "old John Graves of Stinking Quarter Creek", she married Henry Sharp, whose family we examine next.

THE SHARP FAMILY

The first member of the Sharp family from whom we can trace our lineage is Henry Sharp, who married Barbara Graves\(^2\). He lived in North Carolina, Virginia and Tennessee. Since he lived in areas that were populated by people of German origin and moved with these families in their migrations, his own family was undoubtedly of German origin as well. Genevieve E. Peters, who wrote an extensive genealogy on the Sharp and related families called *Know Your Relatives*, states that she was "told that the Sharps who settled in and around Sharps Chapel were in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania prior to settling in North Carolina". However, she was never able to find records to confirm this family tradition.

A number of people have attempted to trace the lineage of Henry Sharp back to four men among the passengers who arrived in Philadelphia on 16 September 1738 aboard the *Queen Elizabeth*. The four men, listed on the Captain's List, were:

- Ernst Sharp    Age 39
- Jno. Georick Sharp    Age 16
- Georick Sharp    Age 36
- Isaac Sharp    Age 26

Further, an Isaac Sharp lived in East Hanover Township of Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, where he died leaving a wife Margaret and five children, including sons John and Henry. However, this Henry Sharp was born too late to have been our forefather.

The frequent appearance of the names Isaac and George in successive generations of Sharp families have lead some to suspect that Henry Sharp may have been the son of the 26-year-old Isaac Sharp who immigrated to America on the *Queen Elizabeth* in 1738. Further, Sharps named George, Aaron, John and Isaac also lived in Orange County, North Carolina where our Henry Sharp was known to have lived early in his life. However, proof of these connections is lacking.

We know that Henry Sharp lived in Orange County, North Carolina, but the tax lists for the years between 1755 and 1779 for that county are missing. As a result, we have no way of knowing when he arrived in the area. The first clear record we have of our Henry Sharp is in the Orange County tax list for 1779, when the property he owned was assessed at $1480. He also appears on the tax rolls for the next three years, taxed as the owner of 225 acres of land.

In 1782, Henry Sharp and several other families moved from North Carolina to Botetourt County, Virginia. Many settlers in North Carolina moved to Virginia soon after the Revolution because of the heavy tax burden and other abuses from government authorities that had led to the formation of the Regulators in years prior. One of the other families that moved with Henry Sharp
was that of Tobias Tillman, Henry's son-in-law. The name of Henry Sharp does not appear on the Orange County tax lists after 1782, but does appear that year on the list of taxpayers for Botetourt County, Virginia. The latter county was named after Lord Botetourt, the governor of the Virginia Colony from 1768 to 1770, and is pronounced "BOTT-uh-tott".

At the time that he was already living in Botetourt County, Virginia, Henry Sharp still owned his land back in North Carolina. On the "3rd day of June in the 9th year of the American independence and in the year of our Lord 1785", Henry sold his land in Orange County to a Michael Holt for £175. The deed lists the seller as "Henry Sharp and Barbary his wife, Botetort and in the Province of Virginia", clearly indicating that he had already moved. The property in North Carolina, estimated to be 216 acres in size, was described as being "on the waters" of the Haw River, near the "Grate Allamance" and "Little Allamance" Rivers. Today, this area lies about five miles south of Burlington, North Carolina and was a short distance from where John Graves lived.

The early evolution of counties in any state can be very challenging to genealogical researchers. The evolution of the counties in Virginia can only be characterized as insane. In extreme cases, it would have been possible for very early residents of Virginia to have come under the jurisdiction of fourteen different counties and two different states without ever having moved. Botetourt County is no exception. Residents of the area where Henry Sharp lived could have been under the jurisdiction of either Augusta, Botetourt, Fincastle or Montgomery Counties, all within a period of only eight years!

Thus, we find in the court house for Montgomery County at Christiansburg, Virginia old land records on file that state: "Surveyed for Henry Sharp 370 acres by virtue of 2 entries on 2 Land Office Treasury Warrants -- No. 13,253, dated Aug. 3, 1782, 270 acres of which was assigned to Alexander Lewis; the other No. 14,993 -- 100 acres of which was assigned to him by Geo. Williams, assign. of Wm. Lovele lying in Montgomery County on Sinking Creek ...". Henry Sharp also got other land, as noted in the files at the Virginia State Library in Richmond. On 21 December 1786, Henry received a grant from the Commonwealth of Virginia of 112 acres "on Sinking Creek, a branch of New River" for "15 shillings sterling". The grant was given in consideration "by the Commissioners for adjusting the tithes to unpatented lands in the district".

Sinking Creek is only about 18 miles long "as the crow flies" and today is located in Giles and Craig County of southwestern Virginia, about 8-10 miles north of the town of Blacksburg. How long Henry Sharp stayed in Botetourt County is not known but it appears that he left about 1789 for eastern Tennessee, where he settled north of present-day Knoxville. Early, he lived in Hawkins County, which became Knox County in 1792, which in turn became Union County in 1850. Other county jurisdictions, such as Anderson, Campbell and Claiborne counties, all formed in the period 1801-1806, also enter the equation when looking for records of Henry Sharp and his descendants.

The first record of Henry Sharp in Tennessee is an entry in the June 1792 session of the Hawkins County court noting that Henry was one of the settlers and had "entered strays" (unclaimed livestock, usually horses). The first mention of the fort that would bear the Sharp name for many years was an item in the Knoxville Gazette on 22 May 1794, which carried an advertisement by Jacob Sharp (most likely the son of Henry) stating that he had caught stray horses and the owner could recover them "at Sharps Station on the Clinch River". 
According to tradition, the Sharps were responsible for erecting the fortress that was known as Fort Sharp or Sharps Station. At the time, the fort was located about three-fourths of a mile south of the Clinch River in what is today Union County. There are no surviving pictures or drawings of the fort, but we can assume that it was made of logs and timbers, probably with a projecting upper story. Today, the site where the fort stood is located within the boundaries of Big Ridge State Park north of Knoxville. There is no road to the site of Sharps Station, but it can be reached by a series of trails within the park.

Blockhouses or forts in North America were certainly not a new means of protection against assaulting forces. The Normans built similar structures after conquering England in 1066. Following these examples, the early American settlers built comparable structures for protection. The *Annals of Tennessee* describes the early forts in the area as consisting of "pieces of timber, sharpened at the end and firmly lodged in the ground; rows of pickets enclosed the desired space, which embraced the cabins of inhabitants. One blockhouse or more, of superior care and strength, commanded the side of the fort, with or without a ditch, completed the fortification or stations, as they were commonly called. Generally the interior cabins formed the sides of the fort." Individual log cabins dotted the area surrounding the fort so that farmers could be closer to their crops. However, whenever hostilities threatened, families quickly moved into the fort.

Until 1935, the site of the old fort's blockhouse was located on the land of Henry's great grandson Lon Sharp. Mattie Sharp Stooksbury, the daughter of Lon Sharp, had her recollections of the fort recorded as it was described to her. She said the fort was constructed of logs along the style of a barn. Families that occupied the fort were quartered in sections of the facility she called "stalls". Holes were cut in the exterior logs to observe the surrounding terrain as well as to serve as gun-slots in case of Indian attacks. There was probably one large fireplace inside the stockade for preparing meals as indicated by a pile of limestone rock at the site today.

In 1935, Lon Sharp's land and that of many others was purchased by the Tennessee Valley Authority, and much of the area now lies under water due to the construction of Norris Dam. The original site of Sharps Station, once three fourths of a mile from the water, now is lakeside property. A bronze historical marker stands at the site of the old fort. The marker states that the fort was erected "about 1784", which is suspect since Henry Sharp was still being taxed in Montgomery County, Virginia in 1787. Another place that survived the rising backwater of Norris Dam is the town of Sharps Chapel, Tennessee, named after the family.

McHenry Sharp, a grandson of Henry Sharp, used some of the logs from the old fort at Sharps Station to build a barn on the homestead. Marshall Wilson worked for the Tennessee Valley Authority in the 1930s. He compiled a book in 1982 which he called *Tales for the Grass Roots of TVA 1932-1952*. In his book he wrote: "In 1935, Mrs. Lon (Lertie) Sharp walked with me from her house about a hundred yards to the site of the 'old blockhouse,' as she called it. Some of the old stones from a chimney were still protruding through the sod. Suddenly she stumbled and, with one foot, scratched the ground and came up with an Old English penny having the image of King George II on it. That King George had died in 1760."

As he had done when he moved from North Carolina to Virginia, Henry Sharp did not sell his land in Virginia until he was well established in Tennessee. On 2 November 1795, "Henry Sharp and Barbara his wife of the county of Knox in the Territory of the United States of America south
of the River Ohio" sold their 112-acre tract back in Virginia to George Williams for £125. Note that Knox County did not yet belong to a state; rather, it was officially the Territory of the United States South of the River Ohio. There is quite a story behind this designation.

The area of eastern Tennessee had been in limbo for a few years by the time this deed was written. Formerly part of North Carolina, that state ceded its western lands to the Federal Government in 1784 in settlement of its Revolutionary War debts. When the federal government refused to acknowledge the cession, the people living in the area felt quite neglected, especially since the United States was still governed by the Articles of Confederation. For their own protection, the area organized itself into the state of Franklin in 1784 with John Sevier as its governor and Jonesborough as its capital.

But the United States did not yet have the power to admit new states. North Carolina opposed the idea of the new state and withdrew its cession offer, and promptly began trying to collect back taxes from the inhabitants of the area. When fighting broke out over property seized and sold to pay for delinquent taxes, the state of Franklin collapsed in 1788. Sevier was arrested for treason, although he was later pardoned. In 1790, the Federal Government finally accepted the ceded lands and incorporated them into the Territory of the United States South of the River Ohio. William Bount was appointed the territorial governor. Tennessee was finally admitted as the sixteenth state of the Union on 1 June 1796, with John Sevier as its first governor. Today, very few people are aware that Franklin almost became a state and that we came close to having 51 stars on our flag today.

Records kept by the TVA indicate that Henry Sharp bought 500 acres on the "north side of the Clinch River in Bald Valley" on 9 June 1795 for £65 of Virginia money. The designation of "Bald Valley" was a mistake on the recorders part and should have been "Bold Valley", and which would later become known as Big Valley. On 22 October 1798, after Tennessee was a state, Henry Sharp purchased another 600 acres on the north side of the Clinch River adjoining the land he already owned. Court minutes for Anderson County show that three of Henry Sharp's sons-in-law, Tobias Tillman, Frederick Miller and James McNutt, all were residents of Anderson County at the time of its formation in 1801. Where son-in-law John Graves settled became Claiborne County the same year.

Henry Sharp did not stay in eastern Tennessee although several of his children did, and a great many of his descendants still live in the area today. Using old court records, we can determine about when he left the area. On 13 June 1804, the Anderson County court ordered that $3 per month be set aside for the care of William Keeling, "an Aged infirm blind man", and that "Henry Sharp Senior take care of and support him." On 9 December 1805, the same court ordered that $4 per month be paid to William Sharp to keep the same man "instead of Henry Sharp who has removed." Thus Henry Sharp moved from the area about 1805.

Henry went to Harrison Township in Preble County, Ohio with his daughter Catherine and his son-in-law Tobias Tillman. Tradition has it that Tobias was accompanied by his father John and his father-in-law Henry Sharp. The court records confirm that tradition. In the History of Preble County, Ohio, published in 1881, the following item appears: "The first death in Harrison Township was that of Henry Sharpe, a native of Scotland. After spending a great part of his life in Germany, he came to Ohio and died in Harrison Township about 1814". Three years later a log church was
built near his grave. The place where Henry Sharp was buried was expanded into the Euphemia Cemetery, the oldest cemetery in that township.

The accuracy of the account in the Preble County history is typical of many old published county histories. It is highly doubtful that Henry Sharp was ever in Scotland. And since his first child was born in this country about 1760 and he died here in 1814, he certainly did not spend "a great part of his life" in Germany.

While on the subject of wild accounts, here's another one that appears in the same book: "In 1812, Rebecca Sharp, a sister of Henry Sharp, was taken prisoner by some wandering Indians. She was carried to Darke County and afterwards back to Preble County by her captures, who stopped on Swamp Creek and made salt. They had a salt pit which they guarded jealously from the whites. Miss Sharp fixed the place in her mind and after her release, which occurred at Greenville soon after, she came back and gave information concerning the salt pit. After the Indians were through with their salt making they were accustomed to stop the mouth of the pit with large stones and then strew it over with elm bark. Upon her release, Miss Sharp went back to Tennessee. Four years later, her relatives went after her and persuaded her to accompany them back to Ohio. On the journey back she died when 10 miles north of Cincinnati, within 50 miles of her destination."

It is difficult to question the validity of an account that offers so many details as this one, and it may be quite accurate. However, no record of Henry Sharp having a sister or any close relative named Rebecca has ever been found. But if valid, it would appear from the account that she was an unmarried sister, which from a genealogical viewpoint represents a nearly invisible person.

There is no mention of Henry Sharp's wife in the Preble County, Ohio records. Therefore, it is likely that she died sometime after 1795, when her name appeared on the deed disposing of their Virginia property, and the time that Henry left eastern Tennessee for Ohio. From various record sources, the names of the children of Henry1 and Barbara2 (Graves) Sharp were (order approximate):

1. Catherine Sharp2
   b. Abt 1760 @ Pennsylvania?
   m. Abt 1776 Tobias Tillman
   d. 12 Apr 1837 @ Preble County, Ohio

2. Elizabeth Sharp2
   b. 1762 @ Pennsylvania
   m. Frederick Miller
   d. 1835 @ Preble County, Ohio

3. Henry Sharp2
   b. Abt 1765 @ Orange County, North Carolina
   m. (1st) Elizabeth Mosier
   m. (2nd) Henrietta Keck
   d. Sep 1848 @ Claiborne County, Tennessee

4. Conrad Sharp2
   b. Abt 1767 @ Orange County, North Carolina
   m. Abt 1785 Sally (Sarah) Gibbs
   d. Dec 1826 @ Campbell County, Tennessee

5. Mary Sharp2
   m. James McNutt

6. Sarah Sharp2
   b. Abt 1774 @ Orange County, North Carolina
   m. John Graves
   d. Aft 1860 @ Tennessee

7. Jacob Sharp2
   m. 8 Apr 1796 Philopena Stiner @ Orange Co. NC
   d. 16 Jun 1843 @ McMinn County, Tennessee

8. Daniel Sharp2
   m. 3 Apr 1799 Jean Howard
   d. 1809 @ Campbell County, Tennessee
9. George Sharp\(^2\)  
   b. Abt 1781 @ Orange County, North Carolina  
   m. (1st) Mary Loy  
   m. (2nd) -----  
   m. 19 Dec 1850 (3rd) Catherine Adair @ Alabama  
   d. Aft 1860 @ Tennessee?

10. William Sharp\(^2\)  
    b. 1783 @ Botetourt County, Virginia  
    m. (1st) Rachel Stiner  
    m. (2nd) Jane Irwin  
    d. 25 Jun 1862 @ Union County, Tennessee

Elizabeth Sharp\(^2\) was born in 1762 in Pennsylvania, according to information that was provided years later by her grandson. She married Frederick Miller, who was born in Augusta County, Virginia in 1760. He served in the Revolutionary War for 13 months beginning in May 1778 and was at Yorktown, where he witnessed the surrender of Cornwallis. Elizabeth\(^2\) and her husband lived for a time in Anderson County, Tennessee until the fall of 1803, when they moved to Ohio. In Ohio, Miller also served in the War of 1812, and his home was often a rendezvous point for other soldiers.

Frederick Miller and Elizabeth\(^2\) lived on 160 acres of land between New Lexington and West Alexandria in Preble County. They built the second brick house in the county, in which they raised nine children. Both Frederick and Elizabeth\(^2\) died in 1835, and are buried together in the Presbyterian graveyard at New Lexington, Ohio.

Henry Sharp\(^2\) Jr. was better known as "Pioneer Henry". He was born about 1765 in Orange County, North Carolina. His first wife was Elizabeth Mosier, the daughter of Frederick and Barbara Mosier of Orange County, where they married. It appears that Henry\(^2\) continued to live in North Carolina, while his father and some of his siblings went to Virginia. He did join them in Tennessee, when he settled in what became Claiborne County about 1795. His father gave him 200 acres of land in Claiborne County as a gift deed on 18 June 1801. After his first wife died in September 1821, he married the spinster Henrietta Keck, who was at least 15 years his junior.

Henry Sharp\(^2\) died in September 1848 in Claiborne County, Tennessee. The records of the TVA indicate that in 1935, when they moved thousands of graves before the inundation, a tombstone was found at the Irwin Cemetery wired to a tree. It's inscription read "Here lies Henry Sharp, the old pioneer, who settled on this farm in 1797, whose house was a home for Methodist ministers where the weary and needy found relief. By his side rests the wife of his youth and the mother of his children. Born 1765, died September 1848. This monument was erected by his beloved and freed slave Harry Sharp." The tombstone had been removed from the grave and laid outside the cemetery lot. A grandchild of Henry Sharp\(^2\) had objected to it and replaced it with another smaller and less attractive stone with the same inscription, but with the last line omitted.

Conrad Sharp\(^2\), whose first name also appeared frequently spelled Coonrad, which perhaps reflected the pronunciation of his name, was born about 1767 in Orange County, North Carolina. He married Sarah Gibbs, the daughter of Nicholas and Mary (Efland) Gibbs (also our direct ancestors, still to be reported). He moved with his family to Virginia and to Tennessee. Conrad Sharp\(^2\) settled in Anderson County, Tennessee, where he became a very large landowner, with 1580 acres in his possession in 1802. The next year, his father gave him an additional 200 acres with a gift deed. Obviously a man of some prominence, his name appears often in the records of Anderson County.
He once sued a man named William Young for slander, causing Young to issue an official retraction recorded by the court: "Whereupon Conrad Sharp has sued me in an action of slander, charging me in his declaration of slander for speaking the following words, to wit: that he had stolen a steer and made use of it. Now this is to make known that I never had any reason to suspect the said Sharp for any offense of that kind and further believe the said Sharp never was guilty of any such offense. But has always conducted himself as far as come within my observation as an honest and upright man." The document was signed and dated 9 December 1813.

Conrad Sharp subsequently died in early December 1826, since his will was probated on 11 December of that year. He and his wife are buried in Lost Creek Cemetery.

Little is known about Mary Sharp other than she married James McNutt. He was in Anderson County with the rest of the Sharps until about 1806, when any record of him stops. It is believed that he and his family, along with several other families from Anderson County, moved to Madison County of the Mississippi Territory, in what would now be the state of Alabama.

Sarah Sharp, born in Orange County, North Carolina about 1774, is believed to be the youngest daughter of Henry Sharp. She married John Graves, the son of Jacob and Turley (Coble) Graves. He was also the grandson of the old "John Graves of Stinking Quarter Creek", and it was with John that his grandfather lived in eastern Tennessee when he died. They lived in Claiborne County, Tennessee, where John Graves left a will dated 2 September 1844 and died before 16 January 1847, when the estate was settled. Sarah was 86 years old when she was living with her son John Graves and his wife at the time of the 1860 census. Despite being from Tennessee, her son John joined the Union Army with the outbreak of the Civil War, where he died 2 October 1861 at Camp Dick in Kentucky.

Jacob Sharp married Philopena Stiner on 8 April 1796 in Orange County, North Carolina. Thus it does not appear that he accompanied his family to Virginia. However, he did eventually move to Tennessee, and was living there on 24 June 1803 when his father deeded him 313 acres in Claiborne County for "love and affection a father hath for his son" (standard language in a gift deed). This land was in that part of the county that became Campbell County in 1806. But Jacob eventually settled in McMinn County, Tennessee, where he was listed as a settler when that county was formed from the Indian Lands in 1819. On 6 March 1820, Jacob Sharp was appointed Justice of the Peace for McMinn County. Jacob died about 16 June 1843 and was buried near Devil's Bluff on the Hiwassee River. Some of his children later moved to Missouri and Arkansas.

Daniel Sharp married Jean Howard on 3 April 1799 in Knox County, Tennessee. He received a gift deed from his father of 276 acres "in Bold Valley on the waters of Lost Creek" on 24 June 1803. This land was located in Claiborne County, Tennessee. Daniel Sharp died early in 1809, when his brothers Jacob and Henry, administrators of his estate, returned to the court an inventory of the property "of the deceased Daniel Sharp." Daniel may have been in the process of moving to the Mississippi Territory, since his two brothers later filed an additional inventory of the estate of "Daniel Sharp on Flint River in the Mississippi Territory". He was buried in the fort cemetery at Sharps Station. Nothing else is known of his family.

George Sharp was born about 1781 in Orange County, North Carolina, and like a great many male children born about this time, was probably named for George Washington (there is evidence
that his middle initial was "W"). He was described by Genevieve E. Peters in her Sharp genealogy as a "wanderer". He was apparently married three times. His first wife is believed to have been Mary Loy, the daughter of Henry and Margaret Loy of Orange County, North Carolina. We do not know the name of his second wife, but she was the mother of his daughter (or step-daughter) Charlotte. His third wife, who is believed to have been his last, was Catherine Adair, whom he married on 19 December 1850 in Lawrence County, Alabama. According to family tradition, Catherine was the daughter of Peter Graves, who was killed by the Indians in 1794.

Like his brothers, George Sharp² received land from his father in the form of a gift deed. He received 200 acres in Bold Valley on the "waters of Hunting Creek", which was located in Claiborne County. It does not appear that he stayed on this land long, but located in the Mississippi Territory, now the state of Alabama. He went there about 1808 and settled in what is now Madison County, Alabama where he made payments on a grant of land from 1809 to 1817. In the 1830 census, he was living in Jefferson County, Alabama. According to records of his children, he lived near Guntersville in Marshall County, Alabama in 1838. In the 1840 census, George Sharp² was living in Bibb County, Alabama. When the 1850 census was taken, he lived in Lawrence County, Alabama.

In his old age, apparently after his third wife had died, he returned to eastern Tennessee, where he was living with his son George³ in Union County. He probably died there.

William Sharp² was born about 1783 in Botetourt County, Virginia and, along with his older brother George², was a minor when his father came to Tennessee. He was known later in his life as "Station Bill" Sharp. Unlike his five brothers, William² did not receive land from his father in the form of a gift deed, possibly because he remained at the site of Sharps Station itself, thus the nickname he carried for the rest of his life.

William² married twice. His first wife was Rachel Stiner and his second Jane Irwin. He supposedly had 17 children, which if this was the case, it was obviously by both wives. "Station Bill" Sharp died in Union County, Tennessee during the early part of the Civil War, on 25 June 1862. He still lived in the old fort of Sharps Station at the time of his death.

Catherine Sharp², believed to be the oldest of the children of Henry Sharp¹, is our direct ancestor. She was said to have been born in September 1761 in Orange County, North Carolina. But her younger sister Elizabeth² claimed to have been born in 1762 in Pennsylvania, and it is likely that Catherine² was born in that state also. Both girls were undoubtedly brought to North Carolina very young. It is also likely that Catherine Sharp² was born by at least 1760, since her first child was born in the spring of 1777.

Catherine Sharp² married Tobias Tillman⁷ (or Tilghman as the name was recorded for his ancestors), to whom we now return.

THE TOBIAS TILLMAN FAMILY

Tobias Tillman⁷, the great-great-grandson of the Christopher Tilghman³ who sailed to Virginia in 1635, was the son of John⁶ and Eva⁴ (Dryden) Tilghman. According to an old family bible apparently in existence in 1925 but subsequently lost, Tobias⁷ was born 5 June 1751. He was
probably born in Orange County, North Carolina, shortly after his family moved there from Somerset County, Maryland. In his Revolutionary War pension application made years later, he would claim himself that he "was born about the middle of June in the year 1751 or 1752 in the county of Orange".

About 1776, when the colonies in which he lived were declaring their independence from the British empire, Tobias Tillman⁷ married Catherine Sharp². He entered a claim to 150 acres of land on both sides of Rock Creek, a branch of Stinking Quarter Creek in Orange County, receiving a warranty deed for the land on 18 November 1778. His name appears on the 1779 tax list for Orange County, his property valued at $667. He appears again on the 1780 and 1781 tax lists, taxed for 150 acres, but the name of Tobias Tillman⁷ does not appear in that county thereafter.

Tobias Tillman⁷ served in the Revolutionary War, enlisting 15 February 1776 in the North Carolina militia. He volunteered in the "Company of Mounted Man or Horse" of Captain William O'Neal (the same one) from Orange County. Tobias⁷ served 6½ months, getting out on 1 September 1776. According to his pension application, his tour of duty consisted of "marching through the country protecting the citizens from the flying or scouting parties of the British & the tories". During this time, he "furnished his own horse and equipage".

After his tour of duty was over, he returned to his home in Orange County, where he was twice more drafted for service, but each time hired a substitute to serve in his place. In his pension application, the 81-year-old Tobias Tillman⁷ declared that he also later "enrolled as a minute man & performed several short tours of duty", the details of "which he omits on account of old age and the consequent loss of memory". The older reader can probably relate to this problem. The Bureau of Pensions ultimately awarded Tobias⁷ an annual pension of $27.04.

In 1782, Tobias⁷ joined Henry Sharp and other families in moving away from the suppressive taxes of North Carolina to Botetourt County, Virginia, where his name is on the tax lists for the years 1782-1787. His name also shows up in the 1791-92 Land Book for Montgomery County, Virginia, taxed for 75 acres that he owns in that county. At first glance, this appears to be two different tracts of land, since Montgomery County formed in 1777 from parts of Botetourt and two other counties, and well before Tobias Tillman² moved to Virginia.

However, the deed when he sold the property makes it clear that it was only one piece of land. On 7 November 1795, "Tobias Tilleman and Catherine his wife of the county of Knox in the Territory of the United States of America south of the River Ohio" sold their 75 acres to George Sharp of Montgomery County for £40. The property, which had been surveyed on 15 November 1783, was described as "lying in the county of Montgomery, formerly Botetourt, on a branch of Sinking Creek ... a place called Bear Camp".

Tobias Tillman⁷ signed this deed in what appeared to be a German script. Despite the fact that the Tilghman family was English in its origins, there is a belief within that family that the reason Tobias⁷ signed in German was that his father was left an orphan at an early age and raised by his grandmother's people who were German. Further, there is a family tradition that Tobias⁷'s father, John Tilghman⁶, never learned to speak English.

As we learn from the 1795 Virginia deed, Tobias Tillman⁷ had already moved to eastern
Tennessee by that year. There is a oft-repeated tradition in the Tillman family that Tobias7 moved to West Virginia before moving to Tennessee, but that tradition is most likely incorrect. In Tennessee, he lived in the part of Knox County that became Anderson County in 1801, where we find a record of him on the 1802 tax list, assessed for 227 acres of land south of the Clinch River and 350 acres north of the river. In the March 1803 session of the Anderson County court is recorded the conveyance of 197 acres of land from William Hawkins to Tobias Tillman7.

Probably in the fall or early winter of 1805, Tobias Tillman7 and his family moved from Tennessee to Harrison Township of Preble County, Ohio. There, he settled on Swamp Creek, located just northeast of the small town of Lewisburg, Ohio. Today, one would find this area just north of Interstate 70 about twenty miles west of Dayton. Tobias7 and Catherine2 continued to live in this area for the rest of their lives. The former Catherine Sharp2 died there on 12 April 1837, while Tobias7 died 6 February 1845 at the age of 93. They were both buried in the old section of cemetery, which today is near the business center of Lewisburg, Ohio. The children of Tobias7 and Catherine2 (Sharp) Tillman were:

+ 1. Sarah Tillman8 b. 4 May 1777 @ Orange County, North Carolina
   m. 4 May 1797 David Gibbs
   d. 17 Jul 1857 @ Knox County, Tennessee

2. Barbara Tillman8 b. 29 Oct 1778 @ Orange County, North Carolina
   m. 16 Nov 1798 Martin Rice @ Knox County, TN
   d. 18 Dec 1865 @ Preble County, Ohio

3. Elizabeth Tillman8 b. 25 Dec 1780 @ Orange County, North Carolina
   m. Alexander McNutt @ Tennessee
   d. 1851 @ Preble County, OH

4. John Tillman8 b. 17 Apr 1783 @ Botetourt County, Virginia
   m. 3 Sep 1805 Nancy Harless @ Tennessee
   d. 24 Feb 1850 @ Preble County, Ohio

5. Mary Tillman8 b. 1784
   m. 22 Nov 1808 John Simonton @ Preble County, OH
   d. 1820

6. Catherine Tillman8 b. 7 Jan 1786
   m. James Abbott
   d. 24 Jan 1865 @ Wabash County, Indiana

7. Phoebe Tillman8 b. 15 Jul 1787
   m. Jul 1805 Jacob Loy @ Tennessee
   d. 11 Aug 1873 @ Page County, Iowa

8. Margaret Tillman8 b. 27 Feb 1812 Isaac Nation @ Preble County, OH
   m. 11 Oct 1821 Jesse Piles @ Preble County, OH

9. Eva Tillman8 b. 8 May 1801 @ Knox County, Tennessee
   m. 13 Jun 1822 Mary Thomas @ Preble County, OH
   d. 18 Feb 1870 @ Wabash County, Indiana

10. Jacob Tillman8 b. 13 Oct 1825 Moses Huffman @ Preble County, OH
    m. 27 Aug 1826 Permelia House @ Preble County, OH
    d. 5 Oct 1869 @ Whitley County, Indiana

For several of the children, such as Phoebe8, Margaret8, Eva8 and Rachel8, there is no further information known other than what appears above. For a few others, there is just scant additional information. Barbara Tillman8 married Martin Rice, believed to have been the son of Henry Rice of South Carolina, who was one of the pioneer settlers in the Big Valley area of Tennessee. Martin
died 21 October 1849 in Preble County, Ohio. It is assumed that Barbara died there as well.

Elizabeth Tillman was born Christmas Day in 1780. She married Alexander McNutt, who was born 17 August 1770 in Virginia. He was a lieutenant of the Ohio Rifleman in the War of 1812. Family tradition has it that they were ancestors of Colonel Paul McNutt, who became Governor of the state of Indiana in 1934. Alexander died in Preble County, Ohio in 1856. It can be assumed that Elizabeth died there as well.

John Tillman was born 17 April 1783, reportedly in West Virginia, most likely the source of the tradition that the family lived in that state. Instead, he was almost certainly born in Botetourt County, Virginia (which was in west Virginia, not the state, thus perhaps the confusion). In 1805, John Tillman married Nancy Harless, the daughter of Henry and Charity Harless. Very soon after their marriage, John and his bride moved with his family to Preble County, Ohio.

After the birth of their first child, a daughter Susannah, in 1807, Nancy wanted to return to Tennessee to visit her parents. Only owning one horse, John Tillman managed to borrow a second horse, and off they went. At Cincinnati, they were forced to ford the Ohio River on horseback. Nancy gave her horse his head and they swam the river with little Susannah on her lap. In 1812, when the area suffered from problems with the Indians, John Tillman moved his family to a blockhouse in Lexington, Ohio until the hostilities ceased. John died in Preble County on 24 February 1850, while his wife survived until 1 September 1863. Both were buried at Lewisburg, Ohio.

Mary Tillman married John Simonton in Preble County on 22 November 1808. They were married by her future brother-in-law, Alexander McNutt, who was the Justice of the Peace. In 1835, Mary and her husband moved to Chester Township in Wabash County, Indiana.

Catherine Tillman married James Abbott, who was ten years older than her. In September 1834, they moved from Preble County, Ohio to Indiana, where they settled in Chester Township of Wabash County. Catherine and her husband located on the banks of the Eel River about two miles from the small town of Liberty Mills, about 30 miles west of Fort Wayne. Catherine died there on 24 January 1865, just three months before the Civil War ended. Her husband died on 24 July of the same year, just three months after the war ended.

Jacob Tillman, like his next two older sisters, moved to Wabash County, Indiana, where was living by at least 1850. He married Mary Magdaline Thomas, the daughter of Catherine Albright Thomas. Jacob died in North Manchester, Indiana on 18 February 1870. His wife died two years later.

Henry Tillman was the youngest child, and undoubtedly named for his grandfather Henry Sharp. He married Permelia House, who went by the nickname Milly, in Preble County on 27 August 1826. They moved to Indiana also, but settled in Whitley County, just over the line from Wabash County. He died there 5 October 1869.

Sarah Tillman was our direct ancestor. She was the oldest of the twelve children, born on 4 May 1777 in Orange County, North Carolina. On her 20th birthday, she married David Gibbs in Tennessee. Of the twelve children, she was the only one who didn't accompany her parents to Preble
County, Ohio when her parents and the rest of her siblings moved there in 1805. Rather, Sarah⁸ and her husband stayed in eastern Tennessee the rest of their lives.

We will take up the account of the Efland and Gibbs families next.
THE EFLAND FAMILY

Members of this family came to America from Germany in the very early part of the eighteenth century. As with all unusual names, the spelling of the name in early colonial records varies widely. A professional genealogist from Knoxville, Tennessee who once researched the Efland family name found the name spelled 17 different ways. There is evidence that the name might have originally been spelled *Ivland* in the family's native Germany. Some of the worst examples of the spelling for the name were *Jifflandt* and *Ysland*. Some of the more common spellings found are Efland, Eveland, Ifland, Eflin, Ephland, Iffland, etc. As is often the case with uncommon names like this, the spelling gradually changed over the years, and evolved differently depending upon what branch of the family you belonged to and where you settled.

The first known ancestor of our Efland family was Johann David Iffland. Based upon family tradition, he emigrated from the Black Forest region of southern Germany to America about 1710. Thus he was from what was known as the Palatinate. He became known as David Eveland, an Anglicized version of his name that he may have adopted himself after he arrived in America. David is supposed to have been born about 1690, although the exact date or location of his birth remain unknown. The name of his wife, who he probably married after he arrived in America, was Anna Maria. As was often the custom with the Palatines, she used her middle name which was also Anglicized, and in later records was referred to as Mary.

Although most of the Palatine immigrants arrived in this country through the port of Philadelphia in the years 1720-1760, the very earliest of these people came through New York. This may have been the case with David Eveland, since family tradition has it that the family first lived in the colony of New York along the Hudson River. Family tradition also has it that he had three sons, all born in America, between 1716 and 1720. If so, it was probably in New York that this occurred. Accepting this, we can assume that David and Mary married about 1715. Family tradition also tells us that the family later moved to New Jersey, near the town of Flemington.
This last fact can be confirmed by old records. There was a David and Mary Eveland who lived in Amwell Township of Hunterdon County, New Jersey. All that we know about them we know from the will that David Eveland left, dated 28 May 1753. In his will he directed that his real and personal property be sold and the money be put "to interest" and all the income derived from those interests to be used to support his wife Mary. He signed the will "David Iffland" in a German script, although he is referred to in the body of the will as "David Eveland".

David probably died in 1761, as an inventory of his estate was made on 26 October 1761 and his will probated on 9 November of the same year. The somewhat unusual directives of his will were carried out and his property was sold. The farm that he owned was 147½ acres in size and encompassed much of the area where the small town of Flemington, New Jersey now stands. According to descendants, the old homestead was located where the Baptist Church was standing (in 1932). The farm was sold on 12 June 1762 by the executors of his estate for £638 and 1 shilling.

The will of David Eveland also dictated that, after the death or remarriage of his widow, the remaining estate was to be equally divided among his children. The children mentioned in the will were John, Peter, Frederick, Margareta, Magdalene, Catherine and Mary. Peter was referred to as his "second son" and Margareta as his "oldest daughter". Thus, we can reconstruct the family of David1 and Mary Eveland as follows (order assumed from order of mention in will):

1. John Eveland2  
   b. Abt 1716 @ New York?  
   d. 1766 @ Sussex County, New Jersey

+ 2. Peter Efland2  
   b. Abt 1718 @ New York?  
   m. Catherine ------ @ New Jersey?  
   d. 1793 @ Orange County, North Carolina

3. Frederick Eveland2  
   b. Abt 1720 @ New York?  
   m. Anna Rosina Woolever  
   d. @ Sussex County, New Jersey

4. Margareta Eveland2
5. Magdalene Eveland2
6. Catherine Eveland2
7. Mary Eveland2

About the four daughters mentioned in the will, we have no additional information, not even the names of their husbands. John Eveland2 and Frederick Eveland2 moved to Sussex County, New Jersey, possibly near the tiny community of Wallpack Center close to the Delaware River. John2 died in 1766; his sons Peter and David fought in the Revolutionary War from Sussex County. Frederick2 was an officer in the Revolution. He and his wife Anna Rosina had a reported eighteen children. These brothers and their descendants continued to spell the family name as Eveland.

Peter Efland2, our direct ancestor, moved to North Carolina, where he settled in Orange County. Unlike his brothers, he and his descendants spelled the family name as Efland, although variations like Ephland, Eflin or Iffland can be found. Today you can still find a number of families in the area around Burlington, North Carolina with various spellings of the Efland name. The tiny town of Efland, North Carolina, located about 15 miles east of Burlington, serves as a memory of the family that settled in that area so many years ago. If you believe the family tradition that three brothers were born in the period 1716-1720, the fact that Peter2 was the second son according to his father's will would place his birth about 1718. There is rough confirmation of that date given his stated age in later records.
Peter Efland² married someone named Catherine, last name unknown. They probably married in New Jersey before they made the move to North Carolina. Little is known of his time in Orange County, except that he had 200 acres of land in St. Asaph's District in that county. In the 1780 tax list, his son David³ appears on the tax list but without any property. On the 1782 tax list, Peter² and son David³ each have 100 acres. The next year, Peter Efland² has no property and his son John³ has 100 acres. One could naturally assume from this that he gifted the land equally between his two oldest sons.

Peter Efland² left a will dated 4 January 1793, in which he left to "Catharena Efland My Dearly beloved Wife, Twenty-five pounds, one cow, one bed, bed spread and Furniture. My will and desire is that it be the bed that we lie on. One large skillet, one Iron pot rack also what she pleases to Take out of the Dresser also it is my Will and desire that She Shall have all that She Brought with her to me. And it is also my Will and Desire that She keep all that I have given her during her Natural Life and Dispose of them at her Decease as She thinks proper."

Peter² also provided for his children to receive "an Equal Shear Each of them all in that part of my Estate which is not already given." One exception to that was the eldest son of Peter². His will also included the vindictive directive that "I give to my son David Efland Five Shillings it being all that Ever I intend he Shall have of my Estate." Perhaps bitterness had arisen between Peter Efland² and his son David³, for even after 200 years, one can sense some hostility in the wording of the will leaving a paltry five shillings to him.

Peter² probably died soon after making out his will since it was probated in May of 1793. Peter² and Catherine Efland left the following children (order as mentioned in will):

1. David Efland³  
   b. Abt 1751  
   d. Abt 1838  
   @ New Jersey?  
   @ Parke County, Indiana

2. John Efland³  
   b. 16 Feb 1762  
   m. Margaret May  
   @ Orange County, North Carolina  
   @ Orange County, North Carolina

3. Catherine Efland³  
   m. John Noe

+ 4. Mary Efland³  
   b. Abt 1745  
   m. Abt 1764  
   Nicholas Gibbs @ Orange Co. NC  
   @ Knox County, Tennessee

5. Elizabeth Efland³  
   m. ----- Nance

6. Sarah Efland³  
   m. Boston Graves

7. Phyllis Efland³  
   m. John Sharp, Sr.

For most of the children, there is no further information beyond what appears above. David Efland³ enlisted in the 1st Regiment of the North Carolina militia and fought in the Revolutionary War. He claimed in his pension application that he served for three years, much longer than the typical Revolutionary War militia veteran. He stated that he served at Wilmington (twice), Halifax, Charleston and Lancaster, Pennsylvania, where he and other troops were vaccinated to prevent smallpox. He also claimed to have served in the Battle of Brandywine, in which their senior commander, General Nash, was killed. Later, under General Greene, David³ claimed they pursued Cornwallis and participated in the Battle of Guilford Courthouse.

David³ received $80 annually for his war service. At the time of his pension application, he lived in Sugar Creek Township of Parke County, Indiana. On 20 September 1838, his name
appeared on a list of pensioners whose money was unclaimed, probably indicating that David\(^3\) had
died by that date.

His brother John Efland\(^3\) also served in the Revolutionary War. In his pension application,
John\(^3\) stated that he was born in Orange County, North Carolina on 16 February 1762 and "had
always resided in that county". He served in the militia from Orange County with Captain O'Neal
(yes, him again) for a period of three months in 1779, during which time they marched to
Charleston. He volunteered again the next year, during which time he was in pursuit of Tories in
Orange County. In early 1781, John Efland\(^3\) declared that he was guarding prisoners 8-10 miles
from the site of the Battle of Guilford Courthouse.

John\(^3\) later was "discharged at Ramsey's Mill" (in North Carolina) and "was taken with Small
Pox" and did not enter the service again until the fall of 1781 when he substituted for John Sharp
for a three-month tour of duty. He claimed in his pension application that he had not seen his
written discharge papers since the "British and Tories plundered the house of his brother-in-law
Boston Graves", with whom he was living at the time. For his efforts in the war, he received a
pension of $40 per year. John Efland\(^3\) died 22 October 1844 in Orange County and was buried in
the cemetery of the Stoner's Church there. He and his wife, the former Margaret May, had nine
children.

Our direct ancestor, Mary Efland\(^3\), was born about 1745 and may have been the oldest child.
About 1764, she married Nicholas Gibbs, the immigrant ancestor of that family. We turn to his
family next.

THE GIBBS FAMILY

Although Nicholas Gibbs arrived in America in 1754, the Gibbs story begins three generations
before that, in his native Germany. A very active group based in Knoxville, Tennessee organized
in 1963, and calling themselves the Nicholas Gibbs Historical Society, spent years researching the
roots of our ancestor. In 1977, the Society published the extensive book Nicholas Gibbs and His
Descendants, upon which much of the material in this chapter is based. Over 1200 copies of the
book were sold and the Society sponsors a reunion of Gibbs descendants held on the fourth Sunday
in June every year.

Nicholas Gibbs had a great-great-grandson, named William Gibbs McAdoo Jr., who became a
man of considerable prominence. A native of Knoxville, Tennessee, McAdoo promoted and built
the Hudson River Tunnel and later served as Secretary of the Treasury under President Woodrow
Wilson. He even married Eleanor Wilson, the President's daughter, in a White House ceremony.
In 1924, at the Democratic Convention in New York City, McAdoo came very close to being
selected as the Democrat's nominee to run against Calvin Coolidge. The two leading contenders at
the convention were Governor Al Smith from New York and McAdoo. Deadlocked, the convention
cast over one hundred ballots before a compromise candidate, John W. Davis of Virginia and a
former ambassador to Great Britain, was selected. Davis lost the election badly, receiving 8.4
million votes compared to 15.7 million for Coolidge. McAdoo went on to become a United States
Senator from California in 1933.

Besides his prominence, the reason for mentioning McAdoo is that, for a great many years, he
was the source of virtually everything known about Nicholas Gibbs. In his possession, he had a letter that his father, William Gibbs McAdoo, had written on 20 March 1846, in which a great deal of family history was detailed. The letter was written to George Washington Gibbs, one of the six sons of Nicholas Gibbs, and the great-uncle of the senior McAdoo. In the letter, McAdoo states "I returned last night from a tour among our relatives. I obtained from Daniel Gibbs, in Knox County, a German manuscript in pamphlet form containing in your father's handwriting a record of his own birth, birthplace, etc., and the births of his children."

The letter goes on to state that the German birthplace of Nicholas Gibbs was "the village of Wallruth in the town of Krumbach". The letter was, of course, written in German and the translator used by McAdoo told him that Krumbach was in "the Duchy of Baden" from where the translator was as well. No trace of the German manuscript mentioned in the letter has ever been found to corroborate the statements made by the translator, who McAdoo even described as "not a very efficient one". With only the description of the German manuscript by McAdoo's translator, for years descendants tried to trace the roots of Nicholas Gibbs to a town with the name Krumbach, always unsuccessfully. There are, by the way, at least 12 places called Krumbach in various parts of Germany.

It turns out the problem was a combination of the translator used by McAdoo and the misinterpretation of McAdoo's handwriting in his 1846 letter. The reference to "Wallruth" should have been "Wallrath", which was not the name of a village but the name of the man who owned or ruled the village. And "Krumbach" is a dialectical pronunciation of "Grumbach", which was the true birthplace of Nicholas Gibbs. Due to some excellent research done by descendant Martha Brodersen, who lives in Germany, several ancestors of Nicholas Gibbs have recently been discovered.

Grumbach is situated in a rural part of southwestern Germany in the state of Rhineland-Palatinate (or in German, Rheinland-Pfalz). It is located about 3 kilometers northwest of Lauterecken on highway 270. Today, about 600 people live there. Since Grumbach had no church of its own at the time that Nicholas Gibbs was born, the residents of this area attended the Protestant church at Herren-Sulzbach, about two kilometers from Grumbach. The church there was built about 1150 and rebuilt around 1700 in the same style. Though the original church records are no longer housed here, it was in this church that the story of the Gibbs family unfolds.

The church records are incomplete, and not every marriage or baptism was recorded, but in the year 1695, the following record appears:

*Den 26.April wurden zu Sultzbach eingesegnet Peter Gibes, weyland Herman Gibßen, gewesenen Einwohners zu Sien, hinterlassenen ehelicher Sohn, und Anna Maria, weyland Sebastian Stübers, gewesenen Gemeinsmanns zu Puporn, hinterlassene Wittib.*

Translated, the record reads:

*On April 26 Peter Gibes, legitimate son of Herman Gibbs, deceased resident of Sien, and Anna Maria, widow of the late Sebastian Stüber of Puporn, were married in Sultzbach.*

Martha Brodersen points out that the original German church records spelled the family name Gibes, Gibß or Gibs, with the character "ß" being the equivalent of an "s". In all cases, the name was spelled with only one "b". For consistency, all European references to the name will be spelled "Gibs", whereas once in America the name was most often spelled "Gibbs" and will be written that
way in this work. But, of course, the writing of the name by half illiterate people on both sides of the ocean spelled "fun" for the researcher.

Herman Gibs\(^1\) is the oldest member of the Gibbs family of whom we can find a record, and the record above is the only one known which mentions him. He obviously had died prior to 1695 when his son married and had lived at Sien, a town about seven kilometers northwest of Grumbach. The church records in that town do not go back far enough to add any information about Herman Gibs\(^1\).

A family tradition in the Gibbs family states "that the grandfather of Nicholas Gibbs left England because of religious and political reasons to save his head when his King, Charles I, lost his in 1649. He married a woman in Amsterdam and never went back to London, settling along the Rhine River in Germany." Like all family traditions, this one should be viewed as highly suspect. Since Herman Gibs\(^1\) was the great grandfather of the Nicholas Gibbs who came to America, the tradition of it being his grandfather who went to Germany is already in trouble.

Peter Gibs\(^2\) was the son of Herman\(^1\) and the grandfather of our immigrant ancestor. Although he probably grew up in Sien, the residence of his father, there is no guaranty that Peter\(^2\) was born there, or for that matter, even in Germany. It is possible that the old legend about Nicholas' grandfather coming from England to Germany (presumably with his parents or at least his father) could be valid. However no evidence to support this tradition one way or the other can be found today.

What we do know is that on 26 April 1695, Peter Gibs\(^2\) married Anna Maria Stüber. She was the widow of Johann Sebastian Stüber, who lived at Buborn, a village 3-4 kilometers south of Grumbach. The name "Puporn" is an older spelling often found in the old church records. Buborn is even smaller than Grumbach. Johann Sebastian Stüber was a 21-year-old resident of Buborn when he married Anna Maria Spiess of Offenbach on 22 November 1682, the marriage recorded in the church records at Herren-Sulzbach. Anna Maria was listed in the records as the daughter of Johann Adam Spiess of Offenbach. Offenbach, not to be confused with the much larger and more famous city of the same name near Frankfurt, is located south of Grumbach. After about twelve years of marriage, Johann Sebastian Stüber died at age 33 and was buried on 19 February 1694.

After her marriage to Peter Gibs\(^2\) a little over a year later, Anna Maria and her husband continued to live at Buborn. This could indicate that Anna Maria inherited a house or small farm upon the death of her first husband. The church records at Herren-Sulzbach show the baptisms of three children to Peter\(^2\) and Anna Maria (Spiess) (Stüber) Gibs:

1. Johann Adam Gibs\(^3\) b. 18 Mar 1696 @ Buborn, Germany
2. Johann Niclas Gibs\(^3\) b. 20 Feb 1698 @ Buborn, Germany
3. Anna Maria Gibs\(^3\) b. 8 Mar 1700 @ Buborn, Germany

There is no other information regarding the first or third child. Their daughter Anna Maria\(^3\) may have died as an infant since the translated baptism entry in the church records states that "Peter Gibs and Anna Maria, a married couple from Puporn, had a young daughter baptized at home so soon after her birth because she was so weak and named her Anna Maria." The impression one gets is that there was some urgency in her being baptized since they did not expect her to live.

Our ancestor, Johann Niclas Gibs\(^3\), married and raised a family in the Grumbach area. He was
the father of the immigrant Nicholas Gibbs. The baptismal records of the church records at Herren-Sulzbach are incomplete for the years 1720 through 1745, and only one record has been found mentioning Johann Niclas3 after he was born. On 9 January 1729, there appears the following translated baptismal record:

On January 9 Joh. Nickel Gibs and his wife Anna Maria (had) a daughter baptized M. Magdalena.

Johann Niclas3 ("Nickel" was a common abbreviated form of Nicholas) had obviously married a woman named Anna Maria, a highly popular name at the time. Unfortunately, there is no record as to where the couple lived in the brief baptism entry, but it is likely that the couple lived at Grumbach.

In his 1846 letter and referring to the immigrant ancestor Nicholas Gibbs, William Gibbs McAdoo states that two elderly family members "both remember hearing him speak of having two sisters, Mary and Catherine". The "M. Magdalena" baptized in 1729 was most likely an abbreviation for "Maria Magdalena" and, therefore, may have been the sister Mary that Nicholas Gibbs spoke of.

No record of Nicholas Gibbs, the immigrant ancestor, or his known brothers appears in the incomplete German baptism records. However, that the "Johann Nickel Gibs" who appears in the baptism entry of 1729 is also the father of our immigrant ancestor is almost certain for two reasons. First, the 1846 McAdoo letter mentions, referring to Nicholas Gibbs, that "Daniel Gibbs remembers of hearing him frequently say ... that he was named for his father" and that the old immigrants name was written once in the German manuscript he had as "John Nicholas Gibbs".

The second reason for the connection is the link to the brothers of Nicholas Gibbs. The 1846 McAdoo letter states "I learn, in reply to your third inquiry, that your father had two brothers; one named Abraham, who lived in Fredricktown, Maryland, and whose descendants are now residents of Baltimore, and with whom I believe you are acquainted; the other named Peter, who is said to have died in Germany, perhaps prior to the departure of your father." Subsequent checks of the Evangelical Lutheran Church records in Frederick, Maryland found an entry referring to the death of an Abraham Gibbs in 1784 and which referred to his birthplace in 1724 as "in the vicinity of Grumbach".

We can, therefore, reconstruct the family of Johann Niclas Gibs3 and his wife Anna Maria as including at least the following children, all born near Grumbach, Germany (order estimated):

1. Abraham Gibbs³
   b. 1724 @ Grumbach, Germany
   m. Maria Fox @ Frederick, MD
   d. 29 Mar 1784 @ Frederick, Maryland
2. Mary Gibbs³
   b. 9 Jan 1729 @ Grumbach, Germany
   d. 29 Sep 1733 @ Grumbach, Germany
3. Johann Nicholas Gibbs³
   b. 29 Sep 1733 @ Grumbach, Germany
   m. Abt 1764 Mary Efland @ Orange Co., NC
   d. 1817 @ Knox County, Tennessee
4. Peter Gibbs³
   b. @ Grumbach, Germany
5. Catherine Gibbs³
   b. @ Grumbach, Germany

Notice that the spelling of the family name reflects whether the children were known to have to come to America or not. No other information about the sisters Mary³ or Catherine³ or the brother Peter³ is available other than the reference to them in the McAdoo letter. There is no evidence that
any of them ever came to America.

Abraham Gibbs⁴ was probably the first of the two brothers to arrive in America. On the passenger list for the ship Mary Galley which arrived at Philadelphia on 7 September 1748 is the name "Abraham Geebs". If this was the brother of Nicholas⁴, he would have been about 24 years old at the time. In an extant letter written in Baltimore in 1841 by a Benjamin B. Snyder to a Gibbs descendant it was stated that Abraham Gibbs married Marie or Maria Fox in Frederick, Maryland. Snyder, a son-in-law of Abraham Gibbs⁴, stated that the children of Abraham were Ann Marie, Nicholas, Catherine, Abraham, Margaret, Elizabeth and Dorothy. The name similarities to that of his father's family in Germany are impossible to ignore.

Nicholas Gibbs⁴, as he was always known, having dropped his first name as was the German custom, was our direct ancestor. In the German manuscript described in the 1846 McAdoo letter, it was stated that Nicholas⁴ wrote in his own handwriting that he was born on 29 September 1733. Other accounts have the year of his birth set in 1735. Both he and his brother Abraham, independently, claimed their birthplace was Grumbach in their German homeland. In his letter, William Gibbs McAdoo wrote that Nicholas Gibbs⁴ "spoke often of having been reared on the river Rhine, and of coming away clandestinely at the age of fourteen on account of having been offended in some way at his father."

This last statement has led some descendants to believe that Nicholas Gibbs⁴ came to America when he was 14, thus about 1747. One can find such statements often, including in the text of the 1977 book Nicholas Gibbs and His Descendants. However, it is difficult to imagine a boy of 14 years of age having either the knowledge or the financial means of finding his way to a foreign land on his own. Also, if Nicholas⁴ "spoke often" of growing up along the Rhine River, then he did so in some place other than Grumbach, which is not located along that river. In all likelihood, he left home at fourteen after an argument with his father and lived in another part of Germany for a time before eventually sailing to America.

There is a family tradition that after coming to America, Nicholas⁴ served in the French and Indian War and that his brother Abraham⁴ heard of Nicholas⁴ and sought a meeting with him. According to the tradition, Nicholas⁴ did not know what his older brother looked like, but "applied the criterion his mother had given him by which to identify Abraham, should they ever meet, which was a spot or scar on Abraham's head. Finding the spot on Abraham's head, he at once claimed him as his brother." After serving his time in the war, Nicholas⁴ went to Frederick, Maryland to live with his brother. However, according to the tradition, Nicholas⁴ and his brother's wife did not get along, and Nicholas soon went to North Carolina.

If the story is to be believed, and there is no evidence or reason not to, then Nicholas⁴ clearly came to America after his older brother arrived here in 1748. But the coup de grâce for the belief that a 14-year-old Nicholas⁴ arrived in America in 1747 was the discovery of the passenger list for the ship Phoenix dated 1 October 1754, having arrived at the port of Philadelphia. Among the "Foreigners" (mostly German passengers) who had sailed from Rotterdam was the name "Johann Nickel Gibbs". The additional fact that the French and Indian War started the same year the Phoenix arrived makes this passenger almost certainly our ancestor.

In the muster rolls for men who enlisted for three years in the Company of Captain John
Nicholas Weatherholt of Northampton County, Pennsylvania was the following entry:

#18 Nicholas Gips 20, Germ. Sept. 1, 1757 Private

If the age of the German recruit was correct, then Nicholas Gibbs⁴ would have born about 1736 instead of 1733 as he claimed. But the ages of enlisted men in these early records are notoriously inaccurate. In any event, it appears that Nicholas Gibbs⁴ was anywhere from 18 to 21 years old when he arrived in this country.

There is another family tradition about Nicholas Gibbs⁴ and his journey to America. According to the story, Nicholas⁴ left Germany "with 30 guineas ($150.00 in American money), which the captain of the ship told him was just half enough to pay for his fare across the ocean, so Nicholas sold his time to pay for the other half."

It is not known exactly when Nicholas Gibbs⁴ moved to North Carolina, but it was probably between the years 1760 (when he would have been discharged from his military service) and 1764. The latter year was determined on the basis that his oldest daughter Elizabeth claimed in the 1850 census that she was 85 years old and was listed as having been born in North Carolina. Nicholas⁴ married, probably about 1764, Mary Efland⁵ of Orange County, North Carolina. In 1768, he purchased 600 acres of land in Orange County from Henry McCollough.

Thus Nicholas Gibbs⁴ was to join the Sharp, Graves and Efland families in the German migration to North Carolina. Before 1750, there were very few white families in the area that would become Orange County two years later. In 1748, there were less than twenty taxable people in the region. But by 1751, Governor Gabriel Johnston reported that settlers were "flocking in" to the area, mostly from Pennsylvania. By 1752, there were 1113 tithables [taxpayers] reported, which would indicate a population of about 4000 people by the time the county was formed. By 1767, Orange County had become the most populous county in North Carolina.

The great migration of German immigrants, as well as Scotch-Irish, started because they found the price of land too high for them in Pennsylvania. So they moved south, along the Great Wagon Road through the Shenandoah Valley into the Carolinas. Scotch-Irish settlements sprang up in eastern Orange County and seven miles north of Hillsborough. West of the Haw River, in what is today Alamance County, were mostly German settlements. By 1773, there were so many Germans in the western part of Orange County that an English traveler named Smyth experienced difficulty finding anyone who spoke his language west of Hillsborough.

The 1779 tax rolls in Orange County list his property with an assessed value of $2778. In 1782, he was taxed for owning an impressive 5 horses and 16 cattle. Nicholas Gibbs⁴ apparently sold most of his 600 acres, for the tax rolls of 1780 through 1792, the last year that his name appears, show that he was taxed on 150 acres. From later records, it has been established that his farm was located in present-day Alamance County about six miles south of the town of Burlington, North Carolina.

Nicholas Gibbs⁴ served in various official capacities. In 1778 and again in 1782, he was appointed tax collector. Entries in the North Carolina State Records indicate that Nicholas⁴ unsuccessfully attempted to get appointed to the position of Justice of the Peace for Orange County. On 6 January 1787, the following entry was found: "For sufficient reasons shewn it is the opinion of the House that his Excellency the Governor be requested to strike the name of Nicholas Gibbs from the recommendation of justices for the County of Orange handed him this assembly." On 8

CHAPTER 17

266

BIOG/HIST
December of the same year, Nicholas filed another petition to be appointed Justice of the Peace and was again voted down. The reason may have been because there were already three acting Justices of the Peace at Hillsborough, the county seat.

On 12 October 1791, Nicholas Gibbs\(^4\) sold his property in Orange County to Obadiah Green, and five days later, his daughter Catherine married John Holmes. With these things out of the way, it is believed that Nicholas\(^4\) and his family soon moved to eastern Tennessee, where they settled in what became Knox County. All of his children except his newly married daughter Catherine and his daughter Mary, who married Henry Albright, went to Tennessee with their parents. Both Catherine and Mary remained in North Carolina for the rest of their lives.

There is evidence that Nicholas Gibbs\(^4\) was at Sharps Station and likely lived within its walls for a time. The story of the attack on Sharps Station following the killing of Peter Graves, mentioned earlier, states that "Nicholas Gibbs (Revolutionary War soldier), Henry Sharp, Coonrod Sharp and Levi Hinds were the only men left at the station. About a score of small children perhaps as many women and girls and several boys were gathered from the cabins nearby. Just at dusk Gibbs heard several owls hooting on the mountain above. Something in the notes of the owls aroused his curiosity." This account of the incident, described earlier, indicates that Nicholas Gibbs and his family probably first stayed at Sharps Station when they arrived in Tennessee.

On 6 March 1792, less than five months after selling his land in North Carolina, Nicholas Gibbs\(^4\) purchased 450 acres of land in Hawkins County, Tennessee for £200. The land, which was described as "including Beaver Dam Fork on Beaver Creek", was in the part of Hawkins County that became Knox County a few months later, on 11 June 1792. It was in this newly formed county that Nicholas\(^4\) finally got to be a Justice of Peace. On 25 April 1796, in the first county court held under the new state constitution, Nicholas Gibbs\(^4\) was named one of the Justices of the Peace by the Governor.

It is hoped that Nicholas Gibbs\(^4\) was not involved in implementing some of the penalties occasionally handed out by the courts. The October 1795 court session found a Michael Johnson guilty of stealing a $50 horse and ordered that "the said Michael Johnson shall stand in the pillory one hour, and shall be branded, whipped on his bare back with thirty-nine lashes well laid on, and at the same time shall have both his ears nailed to the pillory and cut off, and shall be branded on the right cheek with the letter H of the length of three-fourths of an inch, and of the breadth of one-half inch, and on the left cheek with the letter T of the same dimensions as the letter H in a plain and visible manner". Obviously two letters stood for horse thief. Incredibly, this penalty was deemed too light, and two or three years later crimes such as horse stealing, burglary and arson were made punishable by death.

The same day he was selected to be Justice of the Peace, Nicholas\(^4\) was given a grant of 100 acres of land on Beaver Dam Creek for "services in the Continental Line". This land grant, recorded in both North Carolina and Knox County, Tennessee records, was made as a result of his service in the North Carolina militia in the Battle of King's Mountain. So besides several years service in the French and Indian War, Nicholas Gibbs\(^4\) also fought in the Revolutionary War. He was likely about 47 years old at the time. The Battle of King's Mountain was one of the fiercest as well as one of the most one-sided decisive battles fought in the Revolution. It could be compared to the Battle of Bennington in the north, and was a leading cause for the eventual surrender of Cornwallis in the
south. This, in turn, lead to the eventual cessation of hostilities in the war.

In February 1780, British General Clinton had come from New York to South Carolina with almost 9000 soldiers, laying siege to Charleston, a major seaport for the colonies. On 12 May 1780, the American General Lincoln surrendered the city, along with over 300 cannons and over 5000 troops. With this victory in his pocket, Clinton returned to New York, leaving General Cornwallis in command of the British forces. Cornwallis' orders were simply to hold Georgia and South Carolina. For a time it seemed that the two colonies were permanently lost to the Americans and that maybe it was inevitable that Great Britain would prevail in the war. Many colonists who were waveriing in their loyalty then swore oaths to the British King. Loyalists began to attack those who did not, but resistance was kept alive by guerilla raiders, especially in the interior. In North Carolina, especially, there were tremendous problems between neighbors, some Loyalists and some not.

By August 1780, American General Gates had assembled over 3000 troops, with which he invaded South Carolina. He met General Cornwallis at Camden, South Carolina on 16 August 1780 and was badly beaten. Cornwallis then moved into North Carolina, where 1100 Loyalist soldiers were heading to join him. The Loyalists were led by Major Patrick Ferguson, a dedicated and highly competent colonial soldier who had remained intensely loyal to the British crown. Ferguson's unit, called the American Volunteer Rifle Corps, had been used effectively by the British throughout the war.

Ferguson stirred up a quite a horns' nest in North Carolina. Upon learning about the militia movement in the area around Orange County, Ferguson sent a warning to them that if they "did not desist from their opposition to the British arms" that he would march his army over the mountains and "hang their leaders and lay their country waste with fire and sword." Ferguson, as it turned out, made a very big mistake. It was not a good idea to threaten these "uncouth barbarians from the overmountain country" as he called them. The North Carolinian farmers decided not to wait for this big-mouthed Tory to come after them; they went after him instead.

Roused by the threat to their homes and farms, the North Carolina militia assembled for battle, including the contingent from Orange County. By early October more than 1200 militiamen had assembled, most of them from North Carolina but also with some men from Virginia and South Carolina. With reports of additional militiamen flocking to the area, Major Ferguson thought better of his threat and decided to withdraw closer to Cornwallis' main army.

But a total of five militia groups, each commanded by their own colonel, aggressively pursued Ferguson and his men as he retreated south. When the militia arrived at the Cowpens on 6 October 1780, they were joined by Colonel James Williams, the South Carolina partisan, with another 400 men. Then, fearing that Ferguson might escape, the six colonels selected their best mounted men, some 900 in number, to pursue Ferguson in a forced march of a frantic pace. One of those 900 men was Nicholas Gibbs. Late in the day, warned by his scouts that the Americans were very close behind, Ferguson selected a defensive position on King's Mountain, a flat-topped hill just south of the border between South Carolina and North Carolina.

Though the slopes of the hill were wooded, its long, oval summit was cleared. Here Ferguson camped and organized a perimeter defense. Being short of provisions, he sent out about 200 men
to forage, leaving him with just over a thousand men to hold his lines at the top of the hill. He also sent a message to Cornwallis, reporting the rising of the Carolina patriots and requesting reinforcements. Ferguson wrote Cornwallis that "three or four hundred good soldiers, part dragoons, would finish the business." However, his closing words revealed his alarm: "Something must be done soon."

The morning of 7 October 1780 broke as a miserable drizzly day. The American militia did not allow this to bother them, and reached the base of King's Mountain shortly before noon. Discovering the British position, they dismounted and encircled the hill. Warned of their approach, Major Ferguson ordered his men to their posts at the edge of the open hilltop. In a coordinated advance, the American sharpshooters worked their way up the wooded slopes, taking advantage of the cover afforded by the trees, and avoiding the fire of Ferguson's men.

Where the British army was well disciplined and well trained, the Americans were just the opposite, disorderly and hard to handle. They were independent farmers who were accustomed to speaking their minds and doing as they pleased. When they came together in their local militia organizations, they elected their own officers and often criticized them freely. When they felt like going home, they did so. When they decided it was better to run than stand and fight, they ran. They were not orderly and they did not take kindly to tedious drilling. But when their homes and farms were threatened, the kind of fighting they did was well suited to the country in which they lived. They could shoot accurately with their own rifles, go silently through forests, and carry on alone without orders from anyone. In fact, some of the most successful American battles, such as the one at King's Mountain, were those in which the Americans fought in frontier fashion.

By the time the American ring of militiamen had reached to within 100 yards of the hilltop, a fire fight was raging on all sides of the hill. Ferguson's Tories, more exposed on the open crest, were getting the worst of it. Against the sky above the crest of the hill, they were relatively easy targets for the North Carolinians, used to shooting rabbits and squirrels as well as larger game. After an hour, Tory losses were so heavy that the Americans began their advance up the slope. As they approached the top, Ferguson's men drove them down with bayonet charges. But as one attacking contingent was repulsed, another would advance, forcing Ferguson to shift his reserves from one spot to another, while continuing to take heavy casualties from the militia sharpshooters concealed in the trees. Finally, as the Americans were closing in, Ferguson himself was shot from his horse and killed.

At this point, the remaining Loyalists in the American Volunteer Rifle Corps lost heart and surrendered. But with the Americans scattered as they were around the hill, it was difficult to order a coordinated cease-fire. Furthermore, many of the North Carolina militiamen had suffered personally or had friends and relatives killed and plundered by Tories in other actions of the guerrilla war and were decidedly reluctant to stop firing. Once you started killing Tories, it was just awful hard to stop! However, with the Loyalists huddled together in one corner of the hilltop clearing, the patriot rifles finally fell silent. The Tories lost 157 killed, with another 163 severely wounded, in addition to many other slightly wounded among the 698 prisoners taken.

Not one man of Ferguson's force escaped, except for the 200 men who were part of the foraging party. In comparison, the Americans only suffered 28 men killed and 62 wounded. After the conflict, most of the colonial militia dispersed and went back to their homes. One contingent
accompanied the prisoners to Gates' headquarters at Hillsborough in Orange County. There is no record to prove or disprove this, but Nicholas Gibbs⁴ may well have been a part of that group. There were reports afterwards that many of the Tories were killed en route for real or fancied crimes, following summary trials, or in some cases, no trials at all.

Meanwhile, General Cornwallis had received Ferguson's message reporting the advance of the militiamen. Early on the day of the battle, he dispatched Colonel Tarleton to assist Ferguson. But before reaching King's Mountain, Tarleton learned of the disaster and turned around, reporting back to Cornwallis. Shaken by the news, Cornwallis withdrew and would never again convincingly win a battle, eventually surrendering to George Washington at Yorktown.

Following the war and after his move to Tennessee, Nicholas Gibbs⁴ acquired even more land, and according to family records, had 1200 acres at one point. In 1793, he built his family a log house on his land in Knox County, which was occupied continually by members of the Gibbs family until 1971. In that year, the house was restored to its original form and now is listed on the National Register of Historic Places maintained by the U.S. Department of the Interior.

Today, the original log home can be found at 7633 East Emory Road northeast of Knoxville. It serves as the site of the annual reunion of Gibbs' descendants on the fourth Sunday of every June. The Gibbs name remains indelibly attached to this area, known itself as the Gibbs Community, with such entities as the Gibbs Community Club, etc. Near where the old log house stands can be found Gibbs Elementary School, Gibbs Middle School and Gibbs High School. In nearby Andersonville (not the same place as Andersonville, Georgia where the infamous Confederate prison was located) are two Gibbs Cemeteries.

Nicholas Gibbs⁴ remained active in civic affairs for the rest of his life, and his name can be found frequently in county records. We know that he attended Miller's Church near his home on Millertown Pike. It was first known as Lonas Church and was received into the North Carolina Synod in 1811. Nicholas Gibbs⁴ was one of the first elders of the church.

Nicholas Gibbs⁴ wrote out a will dated 19 May 1810. He died in 1817, since his will was probated in July of that year. In his will, Nicholas⁴ named his wife Mary and what are believed to be all thirteen of his children, but one of the sons who was named a co-executor to his will died before his father did. In the will, he left one dollar to each of his six sons, having previously given each of them part of his land. The balance of his remaining estate went to his wife and seven daughters (one of whom was dead, Nicholas⁴ referencing her "heirs"). It is believed that Nicholas' wife, the former Mary Efland³, lived until 1833 or 1834. She was alive on 21 August 1832 when she made an affidavit on behalf of her brother-in-law Boston Graves in his attempt to receive a Revolutionary War pension.

Both Nicholas Gibbs⁴ and his wife Mary were buried in an old cemetery on a slight hill just off present-day Emory Road about a half mile from the old homestead. About 1913, some of their descendants erected new stones at the site, but over the years the graveyard fell into a state of neglect, having been completely taken over by weeds and underbrush. When the Nicholas Gibbs Historical Society was formed in 1963, one of their first tasks was to restore the cemetery. The thirteen children of Nicholas⁴ and Mary³ (Efland) Gibbs were:

1. Elizabeth Gibbs⁵ b. Abt 1765 @ Orange County, North Carolina
Elizabeth Gibbs was the oldest child, having been born in Orange County, North Carolina about 1765, based upon her 1850 census entry at age 85. She married John Snodderly about 1785 or 1786 in Orange County, he being the son of Philip and Elizabeth (Turley) Snodderly. Later John and Elizabeth moved to Campbell County, Tennessee, probably when Nicholas' and his family moved to eastern Tennessee. John Snodderly died about 1835 in Campbell County, Tennessee and is buried in the Lost Creek Cemetery, in what is now Union County. It is not known when Elizabeth died or where she is buried, but she died sometime after the 1850 census was taken. She and her husband were the parents of 10 children.

In an interesting sidebar, one of their grandchildren, Jacob Snoderly, later moved to Independence, Missouri, from where his family departed on the Oregon Trail as part of a wagon train in the spring of 1852. On 25 June 1852, while on the journey west, his wife Quintana died. After burying her, Jacob and his eight children continued on, settling in Linn County, Oregon near
Scio. This event would hardly deserve mention except that in 1974, anthropologists from Casper College in Casper, Wyoming excavated the grave of Quintana Snoderly. The skeleton was studied extensively by forensic anthropologists at Colorado State University and the University of Wyoming, and Quintana became the subject of an academic paper written in 1990, titled *The Excavation of an Oregon Trail Burial*.

What happened was that, in April 1973, Wyoming had an unusually severe snowstorm that lasted for three days. When the heavy, wet snow quickly melted, it damaged many of the rural dirt roads. In repairing one of these roads, located near the banks of the North Platte River, a county road crew cut into a large sand dune. As a result of that, over the next several months, a piece of gray sandstone became exposed by natural erosion. The sandstone slab proved to be the gravestone of Quintana Snoderly.

In June 1974 the grave was excavated, and to their surprise, they discovered that she had been buried in a coffin. Previous beliefs were that such pioneers were hastily buried in relatively shallow graves, wrapped in only a blanket or sheet. Traces of blue paint found on some of the wood fragments, as well as the identification of at least two different types of lumber, led to the conclusion that part of a wagon and some type of furniture were probably used to build the coffin. Analysis of numerous Oregon Trail diaries tell us that discarded furniture and abandoned wagons were common along the Oregon Trail.

The anthropologists were able to determine that Quintana was buried without shoes and dressed in a dark blue, coarse-weave skirt held at the waist by a belt, probably of leather, and fastened by a buckle of iron-base pot metal. Her blouse was made of dark green silk with full sleeves. Her skeleton was well preserved and an extensive analysis of it determined that Quintana died as the result of a blow in the middle of her back, which resulted in fractures to multiple ribs and several vertebrae in her spine. It was further concluded that these injuries were unlikely to have occurred on hard ground.

The portion of the North Platte near where she was buried was known to have been a popular ferry crossing for Oregon Trail wagons. This lead to the conclusion that Quintana Snoderly might have been killed by a wagon that slipped or rolled from the ferry as it bumped into the north bank landing, pinning her in the shallow waters. There is conjecture that part of the damaged wagon and some of the furniture it contained could have been used for her casket. In 1987, Quintana Snoderly was reinterred close to the location of the original grave site, in a fenced grave with a plaque.

Mary Gibbs5 married Henry Albright, the son of Jacob and Sophia Catherine (Welder) Albright about 1784 in Orange County, North Carolina. Henry was born in May 1759 in Pennsylvania. Mary and her husband did not come west to Tennessee with the rest of her family, but stayed in Orange County for the remainder of their lives. She died on 18 August 1837 at the age of 71 in that county, and is buried in the Stoners Church Cemetery. Her husband died 2 June 1840 and is buried in the same place. As late as 1969, the old Gibbs homestead in Orange County was owned by an Albright.

Sarah Gibbs5 was born about 1767-8 in Orange County, North Carolina, where she married Conrad Sharp2 about 1785 or 1786. He was the son of Henry1 and Barbara (Graves) Sharp. Old records often spell his name "Coonrod", possibly reflecting the way it was pronounced. Conrad and Sarah5 may have married before 1782 when Conrad's father moved to Virginia, where they would
probably have lived in the home of Henry Sharp\(^1\) until Conrad acquired land. But it is also possible that Conrad returned to Orange County from Virginia to marry Sarah\(^5\). In either case, Conrad accompanied his father to Botetourt County, Virginia where he acquired a survey of land on 29 March 1782 and no longer appeared on the tax list in North Carolina.

Sarah\(^5\) and Conrad probably left Virginia in the summer or fall of 1789, bound for eastern Tennessee, several years before Henry Sharp\(^1\) moved there. The Knox County records indicate that Conrad bought 200 acres for £50 from Joseph Beard on 10 February 1794, the land described as "the first bottom above the mouth of Big Buffalo Creek" on the north side of Clinch River. It would appear from early records that Conrad Sharp operated a still and was in the whiskey business.

In the 1817 tax collector records for Knox County there appears an entry regarding Conrad Sharp's "still ... of the capacity of one hundred and twenty eight gallons including the head". This obviously was not just for personal consumption. Numerous notes can be found in old court records like this one dated 5 November 1818: "Sir, please to Send me three gallons of whiskey by the barer george Davis I will Come up Shortly and pay you The money for all I owe You. Sir I am yours, John Miller Jr." There was also the note dated 28 September 1818 stating: "I want you to let Henary Quener have my Barrel full of whiskey and in So doing you will much oblige your friend. And if you will send me another Barrel of whiskey will pay you the money at Dec. court and oblige your friend. James Sharp". If he was a good whiskey maker, Conrad was probably everyone's friend.

Some of the geological features in the area were supposedly named by Conrad Sharp. A cave in a bluff was the site where Conrad once killed a bear, and the cave became known as Bear Hole and the bluff as Bear Hole Bluff. There is also a story about Conrad, along with his two brothers William and Henry, going hunting in Big Valley when a hunting companion became lost. They later found him dead in a cane brake on a nearby creek, which they named Lost Creek.

Conrad Sharp probably died sometime in November or December 1826, as his will was dated on 20 October of that year and was probated on 11 December. Sarah\(^5\) was still alive at the time of the 1840 census, living with her daughter Sarah and son-in-law Robert Longmire. Sarah\(^5\) was also still alive in 1844 when she and her youngest son William sold 100 acres of land. She died sometime after that date but exactly when is not known.

**John Gibbs\(^5\)** was the fourth child and first son of Nicholas Gibbs\(^4\), being born in Orange County, North Carolina in 1769. He came to Knox County, Tennessee in 1791 with his parents and, on 8 August 1797, married Ann Howard, who was born about 1777 in Virginia. It was their daughter that married into the McAdoo family and William Gibbs McAdoo was his grandson. John Gibbs\(^5\) was a Justice of the Peace in Knox County, Tennessee in 1802. He later moved to Anderson County where he was also active in affairs for over 40 years. John\(^5\) served as Entry Taker, Justice of the Peace and Sheriff. He also represented Anderson County in the state legislature from 1815 to 1817.

John\(^5\) served in the War of 1812 and participated in the Battle of Horseshoe Bend. According to a story passed down within the Gibbs family it was John\(^5\) who brought back to his parents the cap and the coffee bean tree seeds found on his brother Nicholas' body after his death. John\(^5\) was with Nicholas at Horseshoe Bend when he was killed in March 1813 and he brought "the coffee bean tree seed in his shot pouch which was planted at the Gibbs old homestead and from it a beautiful shade tree grew up, still standing a great monument to the past."
Other records indicate that John Gibbs\(^5\) owned a slave named Jefferson and sold another for $850. John\(^5\) also had a brandy still "at the Luther Clear spring". The following notice of his death appeared in an eastern Tennessee newspaper: "John Gibbs, Esq., departed this life in Anderson County, Tennessee, after a protracted illness of 50 days. His disease was a fit of apoplexy. He died at 7 o'clock in the morning, on the 13th of August, 1840, in the 71st year of his life."

**Catherine Gibbs\(^5\)** was born 17 January 1771 in Orange County, North Carolina and died in the same place on the same date in 1857, her 86\(^{th}\) birthday. Catherine married John Holmes on 17 October 1791 in Orange County. He was born 5 February 1768 and died 30 August 1833 in Orange County, North Carolina. His will dated 21 June 1833 mentions his wife Catherine, sons Nicholas and William, unmarried daughters Ann and Jane, and "their three married sisters who have left me". Despite the melodrama, he probably just meant that the three married daughters, Mary, Hannah and Sarah, had moved into separate households with their husbands.

**Jacob Gibbs\(^5\)** was born about 1776 in Orange County, North Carolina. He came to Tennessee with his parents and spent the remainder of his life in what is now known as the Gibbs Community northeast of Knoxville. In 1799, Jacob\(^5\) married Huldah (Bullard) Reed, the widow of Watson Reed, by whom Huldah had two daughters. Jacob\(^5\) was appointed guardian of one of the children some time between 1801 and 1809 according to Anderson County Court Records, but nothing else is known of these children. Jacob\(^5\) and Huldah had eight children by their marriage.

According to the Knox County roster of soldiers for the War of 1812, Jacob\(^5\) enlisted on 23 September 1813 for three months. He and his brother Nicholas, who was a second lieutenant, served in the Regiment of Tennessee Volunteer Mounted Gunmen commanded by Captain John Bayless. He may have been with his brothers at the Battle of Horseshoe Bend where his brother Nicholas was killed.

On 12 February 1851, at the age of 75, Jacob\(^5\) filled out an application for bounty land as the result of his service in the Tennessee Militia during the War of 1812. This land was made available to veterans under an act passed by Congress on 28 September 1850. Jacob\(^5\) did not live long enough to see his application fulfilled, but after his death, Huldah applied for an additional 140 acres under the act. This was on 3 March 1855 when she was 79. Jacob\(^5\) left a will dated 25 January 1852 and died later that year. In his will he directed that his son John was to have use of this land during Huldah's lifetime and following her death it was to be divided among his other children who were named in his will. Huldah died in the early part of 1856. It is believed that Jacob\(^5\) and Huldah Gibbs were buried near his parents in the old Gibbs Cemetery on Emory Road, but their graves have never been located.

The log house built by Nicholas Gibbs\(^4\) and a part of the original farm remained in the possession of this branch of the family continuously until it was sold in 1971 by Mrs. Ethel Gibbs Brown. Before the sale of the property, the Nicholas Gibbs Historical Society tried to raise $14,000 to purchase the house and the five acres of land surrounding it. The land would have included the spring where the family got its water, a small meadow through which the spring branch runs, and the area thought to have been the kitchen garden. Due to the character of the terrain the house could not be purchased without the acreage. Pledges were not sufficient to make the purchase, and the plan to buy the house was regretfully abandoned. The house remains but the remainder of the farm was subdivided and sold for building lots.
Silphenia Gibbs had the strangest name in the family, and was also referred to as Penna, Penie and Phoebe. Even within the family, her name was also spelled Sylphenia and Silphena. It is not clear when she was born. Some records indicate before 1780, others after 1782, but she was born in Orange County, North Carolina. Her name was recorded as Pheby Gibbs in Knox County records when, on 27 October 1803, she married Jesse Martin.

Jesse Martin had an interesting tale to tell. He was supposedly born in 1768 in England. According to tradition, Jesse was a descendant of an English Lord. But a tragedy took the lives of his parents at a relatively young age and he fell into the custody of a "greedy uncle who took his title and estate, kidnapped young Jesse and placed him aboard a ship bound for America." He was reared in America by a German family in Virginia and when he reached manhood, he moved to Tennessee where he met Silphenia Gibbs.

Jesse and Silphenia lived in Campbell County, Tennessee, where they were still living at the time of the 1830 census. Silphenia died sometime after that year and before 1850, when Jesse Martin was living in Platte County, Missouri with a son John. It has been said that Jesse did not leave Tennessee until after his wife died. In the 1850 census, Jesse was listed as being 82 years of age and as having been born in North Carolina, which didn't do a lot to reinforce his story about being descended from British royalty. He is believed to have lived past 90 years of age and was buried in the Campground Cemetery in Platte County, Missouri.

Sophia Gibbs was born about 1780-1785 in Orange County, North Carolina. She died before her father's will was written in 1810, in which her father mentioned "Sophia's heirs", implying that she left more than one child. It is believed that she married a man named Napoleon Bonaparte Beard (or Baird) and who went by the nickname "Boney". He may have been the "N. B. Beard" who was living in Rhea County, Tennessee where one of Sophia's sisters moved. This Beard became a prominent lawyer.

George Washington Gibbs was born 3 October 1784 in Orange County, North Carolina. It is not known where he received his legal education but he was admitted to the Knox County Bar in 1806. His name appeared often in the early Court Minutes for White County, Tennessee, and the firm name Gibbs & Harris appears several times in connection with different legal cases in that county.

From a manuscript belonging to descendants of George, we gain some insight into his early life: "George W. Gibbs, after studying law and coming of age, started West on a horse given him by his father (John Nicholas Gibbs). It was customary in those days when a son came of age to give him a horse, bridle and saddle. He got as far as Elizabethtown, Kentucky, and put up for the night at the Inn. The innkeeper was in serious trouble -- his son having been arrested for stealing a cow. When he found that his guest for the night was a lawyer, he offered him a year's board if he would defend his son. He did so and won the suit."

With no other resources than a horse, bridle and saddle, George W. Gibbs probably felt that a year's free board was a great inducement, so he stayed on in Elizabethtown. He soon found an even greater inducement in a beautiful young woman of French extraction named Lee Ann Dibrell (or Debruil), whom he married on 12 April 1810 at Monticello, Wayne County, Kentucky. Afterward, they moved to Sparta, Tennessee. It is not known how long he lived there, but he bought land there
that later was discovered to be coal-bearing. From Sparta, they moved to a farm near Nashville, which was named Waverly for one of Sir Walter Scott's novels, which were just coming out at this time. He practiced law and became the president of a bank.

George W. Gibbs\(^5\) served in the War of 1812 as the Captain of a Company of Tennessee Militia in the Second Regiment of Tennessee Volunteers, commanded by Colonel Thomas Benton. He volunteered on 1 December 1812 for 12 months at Nashville, Tennessee and was mustered out in May 1813 at Columbia, Tennessee. George\(^5\) was commissioned again as a Captain in the same regiment about October of 1814 and was at Natchez, on his way to New Orleans, when the Battle of New Orleans was fought and peace declared. He then returned to his home near Nashville. Not surprising, George W. Gibbs\(^5\) enjoyed "rank creep" as he got older and was often referred to as General Gibbs in his later years.

Lafayette, the French soldier and statesman who provided incredibly valuable assistance to the colonies during the Revolutionary War, was invited to tour the United States in 1824 and 1825. Congress also voted him a gift of $200,000 and a large tract of land in this country. In 1824, when Lafayette visited Nashville, George W. Gibbs\(^5\) was a member of the reception committee and went as far as Louisville to meet him. George\(^5\) and his wife attended the reception given in his honor in Nashville, and portraits of each of them were painted by Ralph Earl, the artist who painted Andrew Jackson's portrait. Those portraits remain in the Gibbs family to this day.

About 1837, when President Jackson vetoed the National Bank Bill, it was said to have ruined George W. Gibbs\(^5\) financially, and he moved to western Tennessee, where a tract of 5000 acres of land had come into his possession as payment for his services as a lawyer. A history of Obion County, where he moved, states that George W. Gibbs\(^5\) founded the town of Union City, Tennessee, having had it laid out in 1854 and built the first store there the next year.

For a man who had been financially ruined in 1837, George W. Gibbs\(^5\) must have made a quick financial comeback. In the 1860 census, the value of his real estate was listed at $17,000 while his personal assets were valued at another $50,000. George Washington Gibbs\(^5\) died a relatively rich man in Obion County near Union City, Tennessee on 5 May 1870. His wife Lee Ann died there on 19 May 1876. They had twelve children. One son, Quesney Dibrell Gibbs, moved to Yazoo City, Mississippi and was a Confederate Captain in the Civil War. In the summer of 1862, he came down with yellow fever, returned home from the war, and within a month, Quesney, his wife and their eldest daughter all died of the disease.

Daniel Gibbs\(^5\) was born 20 May 1786 in Orange County, North Carolina. He married Sarah (Sallie) Sharp\(^3\), the daughter of William and Catherine (Graves) Sharp of Claiborne County, Tennessee. Daniel\(^5\) and his wife also had twelve children. One son, John William Gibbs, moved to southeastern Missouri where he became a carpenter, but was killed in 1891 because of a dispute over the building of a church. Daniel\(^5\) was the son of Nicholas Gibbs\(^4\) who William G. McAdoo visited in 1846 and from whom he obtained the old German manuscript. His home was also where his mother, the former Mary Efland, lived until her death. Daniel Gibbs\(^5\) died in Knox County on 6 January 1852. His wife lived until 1881.

Nicholas Gibbs\(^5\) Jr. was born in North Carolina like the rest of his siblings, but we do not know when. He married Rachel Doyle in Knox County, Tennessee on 12 December 1809, and by her, had
two sons. He enlisted during the War of 1812 as a Second Lieutenant. Enlisting again on 10 January 1814 as "Captain Nicholas Gibbs", he fought under General Andrew Jackson at the Battle of Tonopec, or as it was better known, the Battle of Horseshoe Bend. In this battle on 27 March 1814, during the latter stages of the war, Nicholas Gibbs was killed as he led a charge against the Creek Indians.

All through the War of 1812, the British enlisted the support of the various Indian tribes to assist them in defeating the young United States. In 1813, the Creek Indians were openly encouraged and armed by the British to assist them in the south. The task of subduing the Indians was given to Andrew Jackson, who at the time, was General of the Tennessee Militia. The Creek War, as this campaign of the War of 1812 became known, was incited by Tecumseh, the Shawnee Indian chief and an ally of Great Britain, to halt further encroachment on Creek lands by American settlers. On 30 August 1813, the Creeks massacred the garrison at Fort Mims near present-day Mobile, Alabama, killing and scalping most of the some 250 men, women and children there.

The governor of Tennessee authorized an emergency force of 2500 men, led by Jackson, to be sent against the Indians. Following a series of forced marches, Jackson's troops finally met a large body of Creeks in the Mississippi Territory, now eastern Alabama, on 27 March 1814. In the Battle of Horseshoe Bend that day, Jackson's troops killed nearly 900 Creek warriors, an event which for years the Indians have referred to as a slaughter. However, in fairness, history indicates that Jackson gave the Indians an opportunity to surrender, which they refused.

Of the approximate 900 Creek warriors, only 70 were left alive after the battle, and of those only one escaped unwounded when he reportedly jumped into the river and escaped at the first shot. Jackson's militia lost 49 killed (23 of whom were Indians who fought on Jackson's side) and 154 wounded (including 47 of the friendly Indians). The Indian chief Menewa fell, hit seven times by rifle fire. He reportedly recovered consciousness some time after the battle was over, shot a soldier passing nearby, and was in return shot through the head, the bullet going in one side of his face and out the other, tearing away several teeth. But, miraculously, the Indian chief regained consciousness again in the night, crawled to the river, found a canoe and floated downstream to a swamp where some of the Indian wives and children had remained hidden.

Eventually, in a treaty signed at Fort Jackson on 9 August 1814, Andrew Jackson forced the Indians to cede to the United States over 20 million acres, more than half of the old Creek country and comprising three-fifths of the present-day state of Alabama and one-fifth of Georgia.

Family tradition has it that Nicholas Gibbs was a close friend of Andrew Jackson and that members of the Gibbs family were frequent visitors at the Hermitage, the home of Jackson near Nashville. One can only speculate that Nicholas Gibbs might have risen to some prominence had not been for his early death.

The Battle of Horseshoe Bend propelled not only Jackson, but also other officers who were there, like William Carroll and Sam Houston, to national prominence. Carroll and Houston eventually became the governors of Tennessee and Texas respectively. Incidentally, Houston was one of the American casualties and his wounds from the battle plagued him the rest of his life. On the heels of his success against the Creek Indians, Andrew Jackson was appointed a Major General in the U.S. Army and given command of the Southern military district just in time to meet an
impending British invasion of the Gulf Coast. Having secured Mobile and driven the British out of Pensacola, Jackson hurriedly marched his troops to New Orleans to rendezvous with other Tennessee units converging for a defense of that city.

On 8 January 1815, Jackson's ragtag troops inflicted a crushing defeat on a veteran British army under Sir Edward Pakenham, who was killed along with hundreds of his soldiers, while the Americans experienced only 23 killed. Despite having actually occurred fifteen days after the signing of the peace treaty with Great Britain, the Battle of New Orleans was a brilliant victory and one of the few unequivocal American successes of the war. Further, it made Andrew Jackson a national hero and launched him on the road to the Presidency.

Barbara Gibbs\(^5\), born 18 April 1789, was the youngest daughter in the family, and maybe the youngest child. She was barely 17 when she married Beriah Frazier on 1 May 1806 in Knox County, Tennessee. He was a widower 13 years her senior with two small children when she married him. His family had been Quakers and were of Scottish descent, although it does not appear that Beriah followed the Quaker faith. Barbara and her husband lived in Knox County until 1818, when they moved to Rhea County, Tennessee, settling on a 500-acre farm along the Tennessee River in an area now known as Frazier Bend. They raised eleven children of their own. Barbara died on their farm in 1866.

David Gibbs\(^5\) was our direct ancestor. He was born 18 April 1774 in Orange County, North Carolina and came to Tennessee with his parents when he was about 18. On 4 May 1797, he married Sarah Tillman, the daughter of Tobias\(^7\) and Catherine\(^2\) (Sharp) Tillman, described previously. The date of their marriage was Sarah's twentieth birthday. Despite the lack of records to confirm this contention, the marriage likely occurred in Knox County, Tennessee where both the Gibbs and Tillman families lived at the time.

David Gibbs\(^5\) left relatively few public records in his life. One of the few records we find for him was when "David Gibbs of Knox County" sold 100 acres of land in Claiborne County to Martin Rice on 27 December 1805. The land was described as "lying on the north side of the River Clinch in Bold Valley ... [lying on] both sides of Lost Creek". David\(^5\) and Sarah lived in Knox County, Tennessee all their lives. In an 1806 tax list for Knox County, David Gibbs is listed as owning 170 acres of land.

The will of David Gibbs\(^5\) was dated 4 May 1847, on the date of his 50\(^{th}\) wedding anniversary. In it, he directed that all of his "lands where I now live" go to his son Nicholas, who in turn was to support his mother Sarah for the rest of her life. The son was also directed to take care of his brother Henry, who was mentally unbalanced. Further, after Sarah's death, the property was to be sold and the proceeds divided equally among the children, except Henry. David died on 5 June 1847. Sarah continued to live with her son Nicholas until her death on 17 July 1857. Both David\(^5\) and Sarah are buried in the same old cemetery where his parents are buried. The children of David\(^5\) and Sarah\(^8\) (Tillman) Gibbs were:

1. John Gibbs\(^6\)
   - b. 22 May 1797 @ Knox County, Tennessee
   - m. 20 Jun 1819 Susannah George @ Knox Co., TN
   - d. 1881 @ Illinois

2. Mary Gibbs\(^6\)
   - b. 7 Feb 1801 @ Knox County, Tennessee
   - m. 21 Mar 1822 Isaac Foster @ Knox Co., TN
3. Barbara Gibbs⁶ b. 31 Dec 1802 @ Knox County, Tennessee
m. 25 Jul 1833 Anderson Dunlap @ Knox Co., TN

+ 4. Elizabeth Gibbs⁶ b. 11 Nov 1804 @ Knox County, Tennessee
m. 26 May 1824 Alexander Wiley Richardson
d. 1866

5. Henry Gibbs⁵ b. 21 Jan 1807 @ Knox County, Tennessee
d. 30 Feb 1853 @ Knox County, Tennessee

6. Sarah Angeline Gibbs⁶ b. 10 Jan 1809 @ Knox County, Tennessee
m. 19 May 1830 William Harmon @ Knox Co., TN
d. 19 Mar 1898 @ Joseph, Oregon

7. David Gibbs⁶ b. 7 Aug 1810 @ Knox County, Tennessee
m. 19 Apr 1832 Sarah McLain @ Knox Co., TN

8. Annie Gibbs⁶ b. 1 Nov 1812 @ Knox County, Tennessee
m. George Mann

9. Susannah Gibbs⁶ b. 1 Nov 1812 @ Knox County, Tennessee
m. 23 Feb 1845 John McClain @ Knox Co., TN

10. Rachel Tillman Gibbs⁵ b. 20 Jan 1816 @ Knox County, Tennessee
m. 19 Nov 1839 Ezekiel Folkner
d. 28 Feb 1901 @ Union County, Tennessee

11. Nicholas Tillman Gibbs⁶ b. 17 Oct 1817 @ Knox County, Tennessee
m. 13 Aug 1840 Angeline Graves @ Knox Co., TN
d. 2 Apr 1872

12. Nancy Gibbs⁶ b. 9 Feb 1820 @ Knox County, Tennessee
m. 15 Apr 1847 James Graves @ Knox Co., TN
d. 16 Sep 1895

Only a few things are known about any of these children other than what appears above. **John Gibbs⁶** and his wife left Tennessee sometime after 1842, probably 1843, and moved to Hamilton County, Illinois, near McLeansboro. The date of his birth, although recorded in the old family bible, is probably incorrect, because it was the same month that his parents married. The year he was born was probably 1798 or 1799. **Henry Gibbs⁶** was born of "an unsound mind" and was buried at Clapp's Chapel Cemetery near the old Gibbs homestead. The 1850 census listed him as "insane". **Sarah Angeline Gibbs⁶** married William Harmon and moved west, where they settled in Oregon. William Harmon died in 1874 and was buried in Sandridge Cemetery near Shedd, Oregon. **Sarah⁶** died near Joseph, Oregon and was buried there. **David Gibbs⁶** and his wife left Tennessee before 1850, and moved to Illinois.

**Annie Gibbs⁶** and **Susannah Gibbs⁶** were twins, both born on 1 November 1812. The old family bible mentioned that Annie⁶ was born "at half past eleven" while Susannah⁶ was born "at two o'clock". No marriage record for Annie could be found, and the possibility exists that she died young. Susannah⁶, who was also called Susan, married John McClain. No further record of them is known.

**Rachel Tillman Gibbs⁶** married Ezekiel Folkner (also Faulkner) in 1839. He had been married before and had one son when me married Rachel⁶, by whom he had another twelve children. He died during the Civil War, while Rachel lived until 1901, dying at home in Union County, Tennessee. Both Ezekiel and Rachel⁶ are buried in Clapp's Chapel Cemetery near Corryton.

**Nicholas Tillman Gibbs⁶** married Angeline Graves, the daughter of Henry and Elizabeth
(Miller) Graves. They left Knox County in 1869 in an oxen-drawn covered wagon with intentions of locating in Missouri. However, on the way west, they stopped for the night at a place called Crackers Neck, west of McLeansboro, Illinois. While there, they learned that his brother John Gibbs 6 lived only a few miles away. The next morning they visited John 6 and his family. Taken with the country, they decided to locate in Hamilton County, buying 40 acres in Knight's Prairie Township.

A record of their family is available from an old family bible that was kept buried in the ground during the Civil War. Nicholas 6 and Angeline had fourteen children, although five of them failed to reach adulthood. Try to imagine the pain the family experienced when three of their daughters died on three consecutive days in October 1854. A 10-year-old daughter Sarah died on 21 October, followed by 3-year-old Mahala and 5-year-old Rachel the next two days.

Nicholas 6 had a lung disease and was bedridden for 3½ months before he died in 1872. According to family tradition, his last words were "I see three angels coming this way. Now one is going back, but the other two are coming on. They are coming after me. Heaven don't look like I thought it would. It is beautiful, beautiful beyond description. I want to go. Don't any of you miss it." Angeline died on 16 April 1892, also of cancer of the lungs, "which came through to the outside." Both Nicholas 6 and Angeline are buried in the Atchisson Cemetery near Macedonia, Illinois.

Nancy Gibbs 6 was the youngest child, born 9 February 1820. She married James Graves, a grandson of Boston 2 and Sarah 3 (Efland) Graves. There is a story handed down in that branch of the family about how Nancy stayed at home while her husband James and her son Linville fought in the Civil War. She lived in the old Graves home on Tazewell Pike during the war with just her children. Nancy 6 would barricade the doors and windows at night for protection from marauding soldiers. The food, such as meal, flour and meat was hidden under a loosened board in the kitchen floor. Nancy died on 16 September 1895 and is buried at the Little Flat Creek Cemetery near Corryton, Tennessee. Her husband survived the Civil War and died in 1904 at the age of 83.

Elizabeth Gibbs 6 was our direct ancestor. She was born 11 November 1804. On 26 May 1824, at the age of 19, she married Alexander Wiley Richardson in Knox County. They also moved to Illinois. Their story will be continued after we account for the Wiley and Richardson families in the next chapter.
THE WILEY AND RICHARDSON FAMILIES

With this chapter, we begin the story of two families who lived in Virginia in early colonial times. Unfortunately, in many ways, researching your family roots in Virginia is more difficult than in other colonies. For instance, the census schedules for 1790, 1800 and part of those for 1810 are all missing for the state of Virginia, adding to the difficulty of tracing families during this period. It has been widely reported that the loss of these census schedules and others was the result of a fire set by the British when they attacked our capitol during the War of 1812. That may have been the case, but in fact, the actual reason for their disappearance remains unknown.

Until 1786, the Anglican Church was the state church of Virginia. In accordance with English law, the church kept parish registers of vital statistics, but unfortunately, most of these are no longer in existence. Another pitfall with finding ancestors in early Virginia is the fact that so much of the Civil War was fought within its boundaries. As a result, many courthouses in Virginia did not survive that war.

Compounding the problem of a general lack of Virginia records are the relatively common names of our ancestors who lived there. As a result, comparatively little is known about the early roots of either the Wiley or Richardson families who lived in Virginia.

THE WILEY FAMILY

Close behind the wave of German people who began emigrating to America in the 1700s were the Scotch-Irish, and among those was our Wiley family. The term Scotch-Irish refers to the people of Scottish ancestry who had lived for several generations in Ulster Province, or Northern Ireland. Like the people from the German Palatinate, they were forced out of their homelands by poverty, misrule, and discontent.

From ports in northern Ireland, many a shipload of hopeful Scottish Protestants sailed after 1720, primarily for Philadelphia. Like the Germans who emigrated from the Palatinate, the Scots who poured into America from Ulster were middle-class farmers and craftsmen who had suffered in the Old World. They came from the poor, rural countries of northern Ireland where English rule had grown increasingly severe.

The Scottish emigrants were descendants of lowland Presbyterians who had moved from
Scotland after 1607 in response to English inducement to colonize Ireland and where cheap farmland was made available to them. The reason for this was that King James I hoped to lessen the strength of the native Irish chieftains, who were resisting his rule. So the King seizing their properties and apportioned them out among Scottish and English settlers, who were encouraged to migrate to the land in Northern Ireland. The plan was called the Plantation of Ulster. For the next hundred years, Scotsmen by the thousands emigrated from their country to Ireland, building up profitable linen and woolen manufacturing operations there.

Then, in 1698, English wool producers persuaded Parliament to suppress the exportation of Irish woolens. The subservient Irish Parliament agreed, and Scotch-Irish wool growers were forbidden to sell their product to any buyers except the English. In addition to this, Church of England bishops who sat in the Irish Parliament persuaded the government in 1692 to require all Irish officeholders to partake of the Lord's Supper three times a year in the Established Church. Penalties were imposed on any Scottish Presbyterian minister who preached against this rule. Outvoted by Irish landholders, who generally upheld the Church of England, the Ulster Scots were persecuted both in politics and business.

Disenchanted by the treatment they received, the transplanted Ulster Scots began to move in small numbers to America. The exodus began about 1718, but ten years later a bishop of the Church of England noticed that "above 4200 men, women, and children have been shipped off from hence for the West Indies, within three years." Boarding a ship at Belfast or Derry, the Ulster families brought with them to America only the few clothes, tools, kitchen implements, and books which they could pack in their wooden sea chests. Huddled below deck in the dark and stinking ship's hold, they endured a rough voyage which usually lasted eight weeks or more.

Some emigrant vessels were lost at sea, even though they avoided the worst storm months. A Philadelphian in 1732 described this ordeal: "One of the vessels was seventeen weeks on the way and about sixty of its passengers died at sea. All the survivors are sick and feeble, and what is worst, poor and without means; hence, in a community like this where money is scarce, they are a burden, and every day there are deaths among them ... When one is without the money, his only resource is to sell himself for a term from three to eight years or more, and to serve as a slave. Nothing but a poor suit of clothes is received when his time has expired. Families endure a great trial when they see the father purchased by one master, the mother by another, and each of the children by another. All this for the money only that they owe the Captain."

The torrent of Scottish leaving Ulster disturbed the Irish landowners, and they introduced a bill in the Irish Parliament in 1735 to restrict their emigration. As a result, hundreds of families rushed to board ships the next spring before the threatened cutoff occurred. A thousand migrant families crowded the docks at Belfast early in 1736, pleading for passage to America. When the landlords learned this, they tried to intimidate ship masters into canceling their advertised voyages. A Dublin ship captain, John Stewart, reported on 3 May 1736 that ten ships lay at anchor in Belfast harbor because Irish landlords had issued warrants against any captain who attempted to load and sail. However, the Irish courts declined to halt the Scottish emigration, and the exodus continued.

Because of Pennsylvania's reputation for religious tolerance, most of the Ulster Scots made their way to Philadelphia. That city was like a beacon of hope to the 200,000 Scotch-Irish who came to the American colonies before the Revolutionary War, a third of all the Scotsmen then in Ireland.
The influx of the Scotch-Irish raised the wrath of even the highly tolerant Quaker authorities. One of these, James Logan (oddly enough, himself a Scotchman) wrote: "It looks as if Ireland is to send all its inhabitants hither, for last week not less than six ships arrived, and every day, two or three arrive also. The common fear is that if they thus continue to come they will make themselves proprietors of the Province. It is strange that they thus crowd where they are not wanted."

Our Wiley family was Scotch-Irish and were undoubtedly among those who landed at Philadelphia. Unfortunately, we have no record of when they came or where their homeland was in either Ireland or Scotland. In America, the family name was also often spelled Wylie, Willey or Wyley. The first record we find of our Wiley family is in the records of the First Presbyterian Church of Philadelphia, a church that had been established in 1695 with the Baptists in the waterfront storehouse of the Barbados Company. In the baptism registers of that church we find the following entries:

- 23 Sep 1733 Elizabeth, born 16 inst., daughter of Alexander Wyley
- 11 Mar 1736/7 Hannah, born 17 past, daughter of Alexander Wiley
- 10 Dec 1738 Susanna daughter of William Wiley, born 17 past
- 1 Oct 1739 John, born 15 past, son of John Wiley
- 8 May 1740 Seborough, born 8 past, daughter of Alexander Wiley
- 29 Dec 1740 Peter, born 12 inst., son of John Wiley
- 13 Nov 1742 Alexander, born 29th past, son of John Wiley
- 2 Oct 1744 Mary, born 10 past, daughter of John Wiley

The term "inst." used in the baptism register is an abbreviation for "instant" which has a somewhat antiquated definition meaning "in the current month".

The relationship, if any, between the three men whose children were born at Philadelphia remains unknown. But there is a good possibility that they may have been brothers. Our ancestor is John Wiley1. The name of his wife remains unknown to us since she was not identified in one of the few colonial records that might have given us the name of a man's wife.

How long John Wiley1 stayed in Philadelphia is not known either but it is possible, perhaps even likely, that John Wiley1 and the others moved soon after the last baptism entry. Like many of his fellow Scotch-Irish, he left Philadelphia and moved south to Virginia. The primary reason, the same over and over for so many of our pioneer families, was land. Another contributing factor was probably the restrictive measures that were eventually adopted by the Pennsylvania government against both the Scotch-Irish and the German immigrants. The Pennsylvania Quakers, despite their famous religious tolerance, are said to have especially disliked the Presbyterians. Therefore, the Scotch-Irish Presbyterians began, in 1732, to move south along the Great Wagon Road to Virginia.

This road had its humble beginnings in an Indian path, which undoubtedly followed game trails that had existed for millennia. Few trails in early America were more important than the Indian route which extended from Pennsylvania to Georgia east of the Appalachians. This ancient path was used for centuries by Iroquois Indians when they came south to trade or make war in Virginia and the Carolinas. Then, by a series of treaties with the powerful Five Nations of the Iroquois, the English acquired the use of what was known as the Warriors' Path. After 1744, they took over the land itself. The growth of the route after 1744 into the principal highway of the colonial back country is an important but little known chapter in the development of this nation. Over the Great Wagon Road, as it came to be known, vast numbers of English, Scotch-Irish, and German settlers
moved south from Philadelphia into the interior of this continent.

The endless procession of new settlers, Indian traders, soldiers, and missionaries swelled as the Revolution approached. "In the last sixteen years of the colonial era," wrote the historian Carl Bridenbaugh, "southbound traffic along the Great Philadelphia Wagon Road was numbered in tens of thousands; it was the most heavily traveled road in all America and must have had more vehicles jolting along its rough and tortuous way than all other main roads put together." And from the Great Wagon Road, pioneers passed through the Cumberland Gap and the Holston River settlements into the territories which became Kentucky and Tennessee.

Countless cities and towns between Philadelphia and Augusta, Georgia owe their beginning to early camp sites along the Great Wagon Road. These camp sites grew into tavern locations, then into county seats, and then into centers of agriculture and industry. Today these are such towns as Lancaster, York, and Gettysburg in Pennsylvania; Harpers Ferry in West Virginia; Winchester, Newmarket, Harrisonburg, Staunton, Lexington, and Rocky Mount in Virginia; Winston-Salem, Salisbury, and Charlotte in North Carolina; and Newberry and Camden in South Carolina. Today, Interstate 81 in Virginia follows much of that old Indian path.

The first record we have of our Wileys outside of Philadelphia is on 17 August 1762, when a John Wiley bought property in Augusta County, Virginia from William Davis of Philadelphia. Since the buyer was identified in the Augusta County deed records as John Wiley Junior, he was likely the one baptized in Philadelphia in 1739, as the son of our John Wiley1. John Junior purchased 280 acres of land "at the head of Buffalo Creek, a branch of the James River".

The astute reader may be wondering how it came to be that a stream was named Buffalo Creek, since the settlers in the Appalachians were a thousand miles from the plains of the midwest. Not widely known is the fact that these mountains were the home to the wood buffalo, or more correctly, the wood bison, which had no counterpart elsewhere in the world. This shaggy creature ate vegetation like spruce and balsam buds and roamed in groups of two or three, usually just a cow and her calves. Smaller, darker and woollier than the plains bison, this animal was hunted to extinction in Virginia by 1794 and in Kentucky by 1810.

By 1891, there were less than 300 wood bison left on the continent. But Wood Buffalo National Park, Canada's largest national park, was established in 1922 to protect a small herd of wood bison. Today the park, which spans the Alberta-Northwest Territories border, is home to thousands of wood bison. In 1988, the wood bison was "downlisted" from the endangered category to the threatened category. Wood Buffalo National Park is also the home of the world's largest free-roaming plains bison herd, as well as the only nesting ground of the whooping crane.

In Virginia, the first record of John Wiley1 appears on 21 September 1763, when he purchased 400 acres of land on the east side of the New River in Augusta County, Virginia. Today this land would be located at the edge of Radford, Virginia near where Plum Creek enters the New River. John1 bought this land from the same William Davis of Philadelphia, and the land was the same tract that had been selected by a John Mills who received the original grant for the property in 1748. Mills sold the land to a William Young, a Pennsylvania cordwainer, and William Davis bought it from him in 1763. Davis kept it only a short time before selling it to John Wiley1 for £120.
Since a man who was a cordwainer (a man who worked with leather, primarily a shoemaker) owned the property for a time and then sold it to Davis, who was identified as a "skinner", we may assume that the land might have been used as a collection and shipping point for skins and hides. If so, these products would probably be taken north and after being turned into shoes and other leather goods, and sold in the markets there. From records that will be identified shortly, it would appear that the Wiley family and the Davis family had been acquainted for some time, and may even have worked together in the fur trade. Despite the image one forms when you think of a "skinner", William Davis was probably a very successful man since he bought numerous large tracts of land in Augusta County, Virginia.

John Wiley\(^1\) did not keep the 400-acre property long. Two years later, on 18 August 1765, "John Willey of the County of Augusta & Colony of Virginia" sold the 400 acres to "Peter Wiley & Alexander Wiley (sons of the said John Wiley) of the same County and Colony" for £200. According to the book *Early Adventures on the Western Waters*, a history of the New River area in Virginia before 1800, "John Wiley, Sr. took up 12 acres of land" on the east side of the New River opposite an island on 17 March 1769. The last reference we have to John Wiley\(^1\) is in the 1771 List of Tithables for the Lower District of the New River. In that list, the name "John Willey Sener." appears next to that of "Peter Willey", his son.

Tithables lists were lists of taxpayers. From the earliest times, settlers in Virginia were required to pay this tax, which was much like a poll tax. Despite its name, tithables were not one tenth of the farmers income or crop, but were much lower. Each year, the county court would appoint commissioners to make up these lists. Thus this person served much like a annual census taker. A tax was levied on each white male over the age of 16, except certain public officials or because of "age and infirmity".

The 400-acre parcel once owned by John Wiley\(^1\) and then his sons eventually came into the possession of a man named John Taylor, and even later, was inherited by his son. By 1838, this land as well as other land near it was all owned by John B. Radford. The town of Radford, Virginia, named for him, now stands at the place where our Wiley ancestors once lived.

As an interesting sidebar about the New River, it is anything but new. Geologists tell us that it is the second oldest river in the world, and the oldest river in the western hemisphere. Only the Nile River in Africa is older. The age of the New River has been established as being over 100 million years, and the land masses where the New River begins are the oldest land masses in North America. The river is known for having the best white water in the eastern United States and has been called the "Grand Canyon of the East". Always noted for its treacherous current, the Indians called it "The River of Death". A 1781 traveler along the river noted "the New River is broad, deep and rapid, frequently impassable and always dangerous."

In 1770, Botetourt County was formed from a portion of Augusta County, Virginia. The next year, an interesting and unusual deed was recorded in the Botetourt County courthouse. Although registered as a deed, the document was essentially a "do-it-yourself" divorce, at a time when such documents were rare. The indenture, dated 9 November 1771, states that "the said John Wiley and the said Mary his wife have mutually agreed to live separate and apart from each other". The document also stated that "John Wiley shall not nor will at any time or times hereafter sue her the said Mary in Ecclesiastical Court or any other Court for living separate & apart from him".
There were numerous other stipulations in the agreement, which was quite long. One of them was that the husband relinquished any claim to any money or property that the wife might acquire after their separation, "as if she were a Feme sole, and unmarried". The unusual document was signed by John Wiley and by Mary Wiley with her mark, and was witnessed by a William Ingles and another man. Ingles was listed in the 1771 Tithables list only three names away from John Wiley¹. Because of that, it is nearly certain that the John and Mary Wiley who had agreed to live apart with this document were our ancestors.

In 1789, John Wiley¹ sold his land along the New River and apparently moved west. In 1780, Kentucky County, Virginia became part of the Kentucky Territory and was divided into three counties: Fayette, Jefferson and Lincoln. John Wiley¹ died in Lincoln County, Kentucky in 1792. He left a will dated 3 January 1792 and which was proved in the Lincoln County court on 20 November 1792. In his will he directed that "I gave and Bequeath to my three sons Peter and Alex and Tho' Willey one Dollar Each and the rest and whole and all and Every other part of my Estate and all my bonds and other accounts I gave and bequeath to my Eldest son John Willey whom I appoint my Executor ...". Not surprising, there was no mention of a wife in the will.

No other records of John Wiley¹ have been found. His children, perhaps by the wife Mary from whom he sought separation in 1771, included at least the following, the first four of whom were baptized at Philadelphia:

1. John Wiley² b. 15 Sep 1739 @ Philadelphia, Pennsylvania  
m. Elizabeth ------
2. Peter Wiley² b. 12 Dec 1740 @ Philadelphia, Pennsylvania  
m. Bef 1769 Mary ------
3. Alexander Wiley² b. 29 Oct 1742 @ Philadelphia, Pennsylvania  
m. Bef 1769 Mary ------  
d. Dec 1809 @ Washington County, Virginia
4. Mary Wiley² b. 10 Sep 1744 @ Philadelphia, Pennsylvania
5. Thomas Wiley²

Quite a number of articles and books have been written about "Jenny Wiley". Born Jean Sellards, this person married a Thomas Wiley about 1779 in what would be Tazewell County, Virginia today. Jenny Wiley was captured by Indians on 1 October 1789 at Walker's Creek, Virginia. The Indians had broken into her cabin, killed her 15-year-old brother, and three of her children. The life of her youngest child, about 15 months old, was spared when Jenny protested and made signs that she would carry it. With Jenny and the baby as a captive, the Indians went westward, eventually into present-day West Virginia. After four days on the move, Jenny's strength gave out and the Indians seized her baby, which she had carried all the way, and killed it.

After continuing on to present-day Johnson County, Kentucky, the Indians took shelter in a cave on Little Mud Lick Creek, where they continued to hold Jenny captive for about six months. Pregnant at the time of her capture, she gave birth to a son while in the cave shelter, who by tradition, she named Robert Bruce Wiley. However, this boy too was killed by the Indians. Jenny was eventually able to escape her captors and was able to make her way to a settlement called Harmon Station. Jenny was subsequently able to return to her home in Virginia, where her and her husband had five more children. It is believed that all of these five lived to adulthood. Thomas Wiley died in 1810 and Jenny Wiley in 1831. It is only speculation that her husband Thomas was the son Thomas Wiley² identified in the will of John Wiley¹.
Little is known of John Wiley\(^2\) and Peter Wiley\(^2\). In 1779 and 1780, men who had served during the French and Indian War had an opportunity to record that service in the Botetourt County Court Order Book. In exchange they would receive grants of land. Two men whose names are recorded in that book on 9 March 1780 are John\(^2\) and Peter\(^2\) Wiley, both of whom stated that they served in Captain Dickerson's Company of Rangers in 1759. They each received 50 acres in return for their service.

John Wiley\(^2\) apparently moved west with his father into what became Lincoln County, Kentucky. From a Botetourt County land record dated 9 September 1769, when he sold his 280 acres on Buffalo Creek to Samuel Davis for £110, we learn that his wife's name was Elizabeth. It appears that Peter Wiley\(^2\) may have stayed in the New River area until at least 1782.

Our ancestor was Alexander Wiley\(^2\). Born in Philadelphia on 29 October 1742, he moved south into Virginia with his parents when he was very young. It is nearly impossible to determine exactly where he lived as an adult, since there was more than one individual with that name in Virginia. There was a person with that name who served in the French and Indian War from Virginia in 1755 and 1756, but it is not likely that it was our Alexander Wiley\(^2\), since he would have been only 13 or 14 at the time.

The first record we find of our Alexander Wiley\(^2\) is in 1764, when he appears as a private in Captain Christian's Company of the Virginia militia. His brother Peter\(^2\) was a sergeant in the same company. On 16 June 1770, his name appears on a list of tithables for Botetourt County. The name appears on other tax lists in the succeeding years, but it is apparent that another person with the same name lived in southwestern Virginia in this time period. Based solely upon the Philadelphia church records, this other person might have been his uncle.

On 21 June 1769, Peter\(^2\) and Alexander\(^2\) Wiley sold some of the 400 acres that they had purchased from their father back to him. John Wiley\(^1\) purchased 100 acres of the land along the New River for £50. On the same day, Peter\(^2\) and Alexander\(^2\) also sold 150 acres of the land for £60 to a Henry Strafford. Finally, in a deed dated only in the year 1780 but recorded in the Montgomery County courthouse in May of that year, Peter\(^2\) and Alexander\(^2\) Wiley sold 170 acres "more or less being part of four hundred Acres conveyed to the said Peter Wiley and Alexander Wiley by John Wiley".

With the last transaction, Peter\(^2\) and Alexander\(^2\) had sold all of the 400-acre parcel they received from their father (if you add up all three acreages the brothers sold, you get 420 acres instead of 400; but such was the accuracy of old deed descriptions). In all three deeds, the names of the wives of both Peter\(^2\) and Alexander\(^2\) appear. The names of both of their wives was recorded as Mary. This puts the date of the marriage for both men before 1769, the date of the first deed.

Alexander Wiley\(^2\) was living in the Rich Valley area of what became Washington County as early as 1771, when his name appears on a List of Tithables at the "Head of Holston River". A Botetourt court entry dated 15 August 1771 ordered that "Alexander Wyley" and five other men "do view the way from the head of Holstein River to the Wolf Hill Creek". A court order such as this, common in colonial records, was essentially an order for a road survey. The river mentioned in the court entry was the Holston River, which lays in the Rich Valley of southwestern Virginia. Later in 1771, "Alexander Willey" was appointed Surveyor of the Highway for the same district in
Botetourt County. He also appears in several other records for Botetourt and Fincastle counties, mostly having to do with being an overseer of roads, and living in the same area.

A lawsuit was filed in 1800 involving a land dispute, which were very common due to the dreadfully inaccurate and vague "metes and bounds" method of land measurement used in the colonies. The people named in this lawsuit were Robert Davis, William Davis and Alexander Wiley. It is assumed that William Davis was the Philadelphia "skinner"; Robert may have been his son. Robert Davis gave a deposition for the lawsuit in 1802 in which he stated that "in 1779, he and Alex. Wiley drove cattle to Turkey Cove in Powell's Valley ...". He further deposed that "he and Alex continued on to the Cumberland country and then returned."

In what became the state of Virginia, Washington County was formed in 1777 from Fincastle County, which formed in 1772 from Botetourt County, which formed in 1770 from Augusta County (this is the simple version of early Virginia county formation, it's actually much more complicated). In the early Washington County records is a deed recorded for "Alexander Wylie" on 1 October 1782 for 181 acres "in the Rich Valley by virtue of a certificate from the Commiss" for the District of Washington and Montgomery counties".

Also noted in the land entry is the fact that "William Davies" proved to the Montgomery County court in November 1782 that "he had two certificates granted by the commissioners for the District of Washington and Montgomery Counties, one for Alexander Wylie, the other for John Campbell and that the said certificates were lost or mis-laid by him before they were entered with the Surveyor". How William Davis was able to get all of these land grants is not clear, but it is possible that he may have used them as payment for work done by people such as Alexander Wiley.

Another deed recorded 15 February 1783 in the Washington County courthouse states: "Surveyed for William Davies, Alexander Wylie & Robert Davies nine hundred and seventy acres of land in Washington County by virtue of a Virginia land office preemption warrant and agreeable to an act of the General Assembly of Virginia passed in May 1779, lying in the Turkey Cove and on both sides of Thompson's creek and on both sides of the dry run the waters of Powells river ...". This 970-acre parcel was probably the same land that was involved in the later lawsuit. It is not clear how much, if any, of this land Alexander Wiley retained in his personal possession.

On 27 August 1796, "Alexander Wilie" received another 100 acres of land in Washington County adjacent to "Wily's survey of settlement right". This grant was made "by virtue of a Virginia Land Office Treasury Warrant No. 9480 & dated the 30th day of November 1781." There were several types of land warrants used at this time. The most advantageous was the right of settlement. It was free, plus it gave the holder the right to the particular land on which he had been living and had improved. Also free was the bounty land certificate, but which was limited to land that the early settlers had not acquired either by right of settlement or preemption. This certificate allowed the settler to claim land by virtue of military service in the French and Indian War (no Revolutionary War bounty land was given in this area).

Two other types of warrants cost the same amount. One was the treasury warrant, which could be purchased by anyone at the rate of £40 per 100 acres for as much land as the buyer chose. The other was the preemption warrant, which had the advantage over the treasury warrant in that it was the right of first choice. Every one of these certificates could be "assigned", i.e., sold to someone...
else. Lack of gold and paper money made barter extremely common and land warrants were often used as a medium of exchange.

Alexander Wiley\(^2\) served in the Revolutionary War. Though, as explained earlier, most of the men who fought at the Battle of King's Mountain were North Carolinians, there were some Virginia and Tennessee volunteers as well. One of the 900 men who fought at King's Mountain that day on 7 October 1780 was Alexander Wiley\(^2\).

The battle involving one of Cornwallis' officers, Major Patrick Ferguson, was described earlier, but additional details will be offered here. After being threatening by Ferguson, the settlers had decided to attack Ferguson rather than sit and wait for him to come to them. After gathering a large militia force, including one commanded by Colonel Campbell from Virginia, the militia set out to find Ferguson. But two of their men deserted to the British and warned Ferguson of the approach of the Americans, spoiling their plan for a surprise attack. Ferguson soon found himself in retreat as over a thousand militiamen pursued him through North Carolina. The mountaineer army, dressed in homespun hunting clothes and armed with their own Deckhard hunting rifles, carried an outfit made up of a shot pouch, tomahawk, knife, knapsack and a blanket.

Just across the border into South Carolina, Ferguson decided to make his stand. He encamped on a tall ridge which Ferguson named King's Mountain in honor of his English king. He sarcastically called the colonists pursuing him "barbarians, mongrels, backwater men, and dregs of mankind" and bragged that neither the "Almighty nor all the rebels out of hell" could drive him off that mountain. For three days the patriots had pursued the British, hardly stopping to rest. When they learned that Ferguson had chosen King's Mountain as a battleground, they began making their plans for an attack, since some of their men were already familiar with the hill.

Each militia group was to climb a certain section of the mountain, in this way surrounding the entire mountain. Then they would all attack at once. The signal for attack was to be an Indian war whoop. On the afternoon of 7 October 1780, the attack on Ferguson's army began. Each time the British concentrated on one militia group, another group attacked them from the rear, giving their own comrades time to recover lost ground and attack again. Soon the British were completely surrounded and crowded together. Steady firing from the mountain riflemen killed so many of the British forces that they twice raised a flag of surrender, but each time Ferguson cut it down.

Major Ferguson was too proud to surrender to an army of "raw mountain men." He continued to ride among his men while blowing a silver whistle to encourage them, but he was finally shot and killed. His second-in-command knew that further resistance was useless and raised the white flag. The Battle of King's Mountain had lasted only about an hour, but the victory was complete. This battle has been called the turning point of the Revolution, and was one of the main reasons for Cornwallis' retreat from the South to Wilmington and then to Yorktown, where he surrendered on 19 October 1781.

Although Alexander Wiley\(^2\) didn't live long enough to receive a pension for his service in the Revolutionary War, he is listed in the pay roster for Captain James Dysart's "Company of light horse in actual service on a tour to North Carolina under the Command of Col. William Campbell." Campbell instructed his men to "shout like hell and fight like devils". Among the men in Alexander Wiley's militia company were a significant number listed as killed and wounded, and according to
a Washington County Historical Society bulletin, the company suffered more than half of the casualties received by the colonists. One man in the roster named Robert Young had the notation "(shot Ferguson)" beside his name, while another had the notation "(got Ferguson's sword)" beside his.

Though John² and Peter² Wiley both fought in the French and Indian War (a war in which the colonists fought on the side of England against the French), there is no record that either participated in the Revolutionary War. The records indicate that only Alexander Wiley² fought in that war. Though one may be able to explain that away by noting the ages of the older brothers, a mysterious entry on 7 September 1779 in the Montgomery County court records may offer another explanation. On that day, a Robert Alford appeared before the court and "Alexander Wylie" testified that Alford was employed by John Griffith to "convey intelligences from him to a certain John Wylie" of Montgomery County.

Since Alexander Wiley² had been made a Lieutenant in the Washington County militia on 26 February 1777, he was probably privy to information regarding the movements or plans of his militia and other militia groups. The fact that the court entry refers to the communication of "intelligences" to others clearly implies information of a military nature. Apparently the court believed the testimony by Alexander² and considered it a serious offense, since Alford was ordered to be taken into custody by the Sheriff and taken to the "gaol" of Washington County. The fact that the information was being conveyed to a person named John Wiley leads one to suspect that perhaps the oldest brother of Alexander Wiley² was a Tory.

Today the land that Alexander Wiley² settled on in Rich Valley would be located about fifteen miles southwest of Abington, Virginia. The valley is still called by that name today. He probably lived there for the rest of his life. Alexander Wiley² died in December 1809, between 4 December, when he wrote his will, and 19 December, when it was proven in Washington County court. Because it is one of the few things we know about Alexander Wiley², his will is reproduced here:

In the name of God Amen I Alexander Wylie of Washington County being sick and weak in body but of a sound mind & disposing memory for which I thank God and calling to mind the uncertainty of human life & being desirous to dispose of all such worldly estate as it hath pleased God to bless me with I give & bequeath the same in manner following that is to say.

1st. I desire that all my just debts that I owe be paid and those that are due me collected immediately after my demise.

2nd. After the payment of my debts & funeral expenses I give unto my wife Mary Wylie the tract of land I now live on with all the appurtenances thereto belonging and also one other tract of land lying in Lee County whereon my son James Wylie now lives containing four hundred & thirteen acres by survey with all its appurtenances and also one Negro girl named Sena about fifteen years of age also my waggon & gears & all my stock of every kind including all my horse beasts cattle sheep & hogs also all my Household & kitchen furniture with all my Farming utensials to be enjoyed by her during her life except what I dispose of hereafter in another manner.

3rd. After the decease of my Wife Mary Wylie I give unto my Daughter Catherine Banning & her heirs the Negro girl above mentioned named Sena.

4th. After the decease of my Wife I give unto my son James Wylie the tract of land I now live on and the one my son James Wylie now lives on (except one hundred and fifty acres I shall hereafter mention) with all the appurtenances belonging to both tracts of land to the sole use
of him & his heirs forever. And also my waggon & gears stock of every kind horses cattle
Hogs sheep household & kitchen furniture & farming utensils for the use of him & his heirs
forever except what I shall hereafter particularly mention, I also give unto my son James
Wylie one set of black smith tools which he is now to receive.
5thly. I give unto my Daughter Nancy Richardson & her heirs twenty pounds to be paid to
her by James Wylie out of my personal estate at the decease of my wife Mary Wylie.
6thly. I give unto my Grandson William Wylie one hundred and fifty acres of land lying in Lee
County part of the s\textsuperscript{d} tract where James Wylie now lives to include the improvement wherob
Christly Planck now lives provided my son James Wylie does not obtain a lawful Title for
a tract of land lying on Richland creek the waters of Elk river in the state of Tennessee but
if he does obtain a good Title for the said land on Richland creek William Wylie is to have
one hundred & fifty acres of that ...”.

In the will, Alexander Wiley\textsuperscript{2} proceeds to appoint the executors for his estate, which were his
son James and a man named "James Davis Jun". Apparently, the relationship between the Wiley
and Davis families was a life-long one. Nothing else is known of his wife Mary, who may have
been born Mary Davis based solely upon the close relationship of the two families. Despite the fact
that the 1790 and 1800 census schedules for Virginia have been lost, the 1810 schedules for some
counties have survived. Washington County is one where the 1810 schedules exist, but no Wiley
or Wylie families are to be found in the county. Schedules for Lee County do not survive for 1810,
and it is possible that the widow Mary was living there with her son James Wiley in that year.

Some of the children of Alexander\textsuperscript{2} and Mary Wiley, based solely on his 1809 will, were as
follows (order unknown, and given as mentioned in the will):

1. James Wiley\textsuperscript{3}  b. @ Virginia
2. Catherine Wiley\textsuperscript{3}  b. @ Virginia
   m. ----- Banning
+ 3. Nancy Wiley\textsuperscript{3}  b. @ Virginia
   m. Abt 1797 Isaac Richardson

Our ancestor is Nancy Wiley\textsuperscript{3}, who married Isaac Richardson of Washington County, Virginia.
It is the Richardson family that we examine next.

THE RICHARDSON FAMILY

There were a great many Richardsons in Virginia. As with most names, it can be found spelled
many ways in early records, including Richison, Richeson, Richerson, Richardson, etc. The earliest
Richardson ancestor from which we can trace descendance is the Isaac Richardson who married
Nancy Wiley\textsuperscript{3}, and even with him, the linkage is by circumstantial evidence. Despite several years
of research, the compiler has been unable to prove who his parents were. But his father was likely
to have been either William Richardson or Nathan Richardson, both of whom lived in the Rich
Valley area of Washington County, Virginia.

On 16 June 1770, a List of Tithables was presented to the court for Botetourt County, Virginia.
On that list, some of the residents of the area from "Reed Creek to Stalnackers" in the Rich Valley
were:

William Richison
Nathaniel Richison
Thus three Richardson families lived in the same area as Alexander Wiley. The Abel Richardson on the list disappears first from subsequent tax lists and may have been the father of the other two. The other two were possibly brothers but no family connection between any of the three has been determined. In 1772, the List of Tithables has the same three Richardson names plus a second William Richardson, probably a son of one of the other three.

On 2 March 1775, Fincastle County records show a "William Richeson" received 157 acres as "part of the Loyal Company grant" on the waters of the North Fork of the Holston River, bounded by a spur of Walkers Mountain. On 27 May 1774, the same records show that "Nathan Richeson" received 122 acres as "part of the Loyal Company grant" on both sides of Licking branch of the waters of the North Fork of the Holston River. This certainly puts these two men in approximately the same area of the Rich Valley.

The Loyal Land Company was a company that had been granted 800,000 acres of land in 1749 to extend from the North Carolina border, and "running to the Westward and to the North". The company surveyed and sold tracts of land at the rate of 10 cents per acre plus a "composition fee" of 13 shillings 4 pence per 100 acres, a surveyor's fee of $10.42 and a $1.77 patent fee. But in 1763, the British government denied the company an extension of time to finish surveying because a Royal Proclamation had been issued preventing anyone from taking up any land "beyond the heads or sources of any of the rivers which fall into the Atlantic Ocean". The proclamation also ordered that anyone already settled on such lands should "remove themselves from such settlements".

All of present-day Washington County, Virginia fell within the category of those who should "remove". Few of the settlers complied, but much hardship resulted from the proclamation, primarily because the colonists were unable to secure a good title to the land upon which they had settled. In 1767, a treaty with the Indians made it again possible to take up land west of the Blue Ridge, but a series of new problems developed. Those who had stayed on their land, braving problems with the Indians, felt that they had "earned" the right to their land. Since the Crown had refused to renew the Loyal Company's grant in 1763, they felt that the land had reverted to public domain, and even though the Company was again allowed to continue its surveying and sales, they refused to buy it from them. The Loyal Company ejected many of them and sold their homes and improvements to newcomers who were willing to pay the price set by the Company.

A second wave of settlers arrived to try to wrest the land from the original tenants. Veterans of the French and Indian War, with bounty land certificates in hand allowing them to claim any "waste and unappropriated" land, eyed the prime land that the early pioneers had improved, but for which they had no title. The Virginia Assembly finally came to the aid of the hardy group who had been on the land first. In 1776, they passed a law which allowed any persons who had "bona fide settled, or at his or her expense settled others on the land prior to June 24, 1776, a right to 400 acres of land", and which was to include their improvements. The land was free except for a ten shillings per acre fee. They were also given a preemption right to 1000 additional acres adjoining the 400, but they had to pay £40 per 100 acres for that land.

It is not known whether the Richardsons were in the first or second group of settlers to the area. But it is clear that they were in close proximity to the settlement of Alexander Wiley. In a Montgomery County land entry for a treasury warrant dated 4 March 1785, Robert Ewing bought
land "assigned by Alex. Willey" on the North Fork of the Holston River, and which mentions "William Richardson's" as a neighboring property. Another Montgomery County land entry dated 22 January 1795 mentions 63,000 acres granted to Philip Richard Fendal on two treasury warrants. The entry lists the "following prior claims" and two adjacent ones are "100 acres on North Fork of Holston for William Richeson" and "50 acres on North Fork of Holston for Alexander Wylie".

Both William Richardson and Alexander Wiley were listed as soldiers in Captain John Floyd's Company in what became known as Dunmore's War. This "war" was a reaction by the militia groups of southwestern Virginia to a series of Indian attacks in the area in late 1773 and early 1774. These attacks resulted in the deaths of dozens of white settlers. One of these attacks, interestingly enough, was on a group led by Daniel Boone, moving through the area in October 1773 to Kentucky. Because a detailed account of that particular attack exists, it will be given here.

Daniel Boone had always been a wanderer. Though he had a farm in North Carolina, Boone had traveled to Kentucky in 1772 and made the decision to settle there. On his return home in the spring of 1773, he sold his farm and all the household goods he could not carry with him. By mid August Boone had a party of 40 individuals ready to go with him to settle the vast wilderness of Kentucky. To the end of his days, wherever Daniel Boone went there were always plenty of eager adventurers to follow. Even in these early days, the man's influence and prestige was enormous. He even persuaded his wife's relatives, the Bryans, to go along. The party started in September 1773, like nomads, driving their livestock with them.

On 10 October 1773, in or near Powell's Valley in Virginia, and just sixty miles west of the Holston River where the Wileys and Richardsons lived, Boone decided that he needed more flour and farm tools and sent his son James back to Captain William Russell's to get them. Russell was a man Boone had met on his previous expeditions west. The party was still fairly near several settlements, and the boy seems to have ridden off alone without thought of danger. No one anticipated Indian trouble. Only the month before another party had returned from Kentucky without any difficulty except that of getting food.

James Boone found the Russell farm easily enough and started back accompanied by Russell's son Henry, a boy of about seventeen, two slaves, and a couple of white workmen. Either because they lost their way or because the cattle lagged, they camped that night on Walden's Creek, only three miles behind Daniel Boone and the main body. Probably neither group realized how near the other was. Just before dawn a party of Indians fired into them, shooting James Boone and young Russell through the hips, and killing most of the others. One man, who got away into the woods, was never seen again. A skeleton supposed to be his was ultimately found some distance from the scene, where he had presumably died of his wounds alone in the forest.

One negro slave managed to slip into a pile of driftwood by the river. Here he lay concealed, a terrified witness of the horrors that followed. The two boys, helpless with their wounds, were unable to move. The Indians had a great deal of fun torturing them to death. There was no time for a formal burning at the stake, but they did pretty well with their knives. James Boone had recognized among the band an Indian named Big Jim, a Shawnee who had often visited his father's cabin. He was a warrior of distinctive appearance and it was said to have been impossible to mistake him for any other Indian. Shivering in terror in his pile of driftwood, the slave heard James Boone begging his father's acquaintance to spare his life.
But the Indians were intent on torturing their victims. The hidden slave continued to hear James Boone scream for mercy, but later the only mercy that he requested was to be tomahawked at once and allowed to die quickly. But Big Jim refused. The torture went on, until at last the two boys died, their bodies slashed to ribbons, their nails torn out, their palms slashed in futile efforts to turn the blades of the Indian knives aside with bare hands.

That morning a member of Daniel Boone's party had deserted. He had been caught stealing from a comrade, and though not sent back had been made to feel very uncomfortable. Slipping away before the camp was awake, he paused only to steal a few deerskins that Boone had left by the trail for his sons to pick up, and pushed on. He came upon the scene of the massacre soon after the Indians had left. As he stood there staring at the horrible spectacle, Captain Russell and some others arrived from the other direction, on his way to join Boone's party. One man rushed ahead to warn Boone.

Russell's party began to dig the graves. Daniel Boone got his companions into the safety of a ravine the moment the alarm was given, sheltering the women and children in a large hollow which running water had washed under the roots of a beech tree, posted sentinels, and prepared for attack. According to one story, the Indians never came. According to another, they attacked and were driven off, Boone himself killing one Indian and wounding another. But in spite of all the danger, Rebecca Boone sent back a linen sheet to cover her son and keep the earth from his body.

Despite the modern television image of Daniel Boone, he and the other settlers were now too frightened to go on. Their cattle had been scattered and they suspected that larger war parties would be lying in wait for them farther on. They had already lost several men. Their courage failed completely, and the whole group returned immediately for the settlements. At Snoddy's Fort the sadly shaken little company rested for a while and then most of them returned to North Carolina.

The murders caused a tremendous sensation. Lord Dunmore, the Governor of Virginia, met with the Indian tribes who initially denied any guilt in the act. Eventually the Cherokees consented to execute one man, but they only wounded him and left him for dead. Learning that the guilty warrior was still alive, the colonial authorities insisted that the chiefs themselves go and kill him, which they eventually did. One other Cherokee was condemned to death, escaped, but was later captured and executed. Some of the stolen horses and other Boone property turned up in Pennsylvania, having been sold to traders by the Indians. The Shawnees later surrendered some of Captain Russell's books, which the murdered boys had been carrying. Why the Indians ever took them at all remains a mystery.

The Boones, who were now without a home, settled down to what must have been a most unhappy winter at the Snoddy fort on the Clinch River. Boone made a solitary trip back to Powell's Valley in May of 1774 to visit his son's grave. Indian troubles were gathering and the trip was dangerous, but Boone could not be talked out of the trip. As was the common practice, logs had been laid above the graves to keep the wolves away, but the animals had pawed them aside and dug part way down anyway. Boone opened the grave to make sure that the body, which he saw for the first time, had not been touched, and then carefully covered them up again.

While he was finishing this task, a sudden storm arose, so violent that it made return to the settlements impossible. As he waited for it to pass, the howling of the wind with the dreadful
associations of the spot where his son had been tortured to death, brought on a fit of profound melancholy which he later described as the worst of his life. When the storm had cleared, Boone moved a few hundred yards away from the graves, "hopped" his horse, put a bell on the animal so that it would be easy to find in the morning, and camped for the night. He could not sleep, and as he lay awake watching the sky, which had now cleared, he distinctly heard Indians creeping up on his campsite.

Instantly alert, Boone slipped away from his fire, quietly caught his horse, and drove it slowly along, stopping to jangle the bell now and then, as if the animal were moving about casually and grazing in perfect security. At a safe distance he silenced the bell and rode for his life, leaving the raiders to attack an empty camp. But for the storm which delayed them, they would probably have killed the father on the very spot where they had killed the son.

Despite the personal tragedy, Daniel Boone did not give up. In March 1775, starting from the Holston River, Daniel Boone led another band of 30 men west, when they cut the Wilderness Road to what they called Boonesborough. Other groups soon followed, including one that included Abraham Hanks, whose was the uncle of Nancy Hanks, Abraham Lincoln's mother. By the middle of June, with the tiny settlement at Boonesborough adequately staffed to be able to defend itself, Boone returned to the settlements in Virginia to get his family. He returned to his beloved Kentucky in late August of 1775 with his family, having ridden 300 miles through unbroken wilderness without a cabin or a trace of civilization. Boone always boasted about his "wife and daughter being the first white women that ever stood on the banks of Kentucke river."

The Indian problems that Boone had experienced in 1773 only grew worse. In the summer and fall of the next year, the militia groups in western Virginia were forced to take action. The records of Fincastle County indicate that 1600 men took part in this operation. The names of Abel and Nathan Richardson are listed, each having served 63 days each in Captain James Thompson's Company. The names William Richardson and Alexander Wiley are also listed, as part of Captain John Floyd's Company. They served 103 days and 93 days respectively.

A personal property tax list for Washington County in 1787 lists a William Richardson as "not tithable", perhaps indicating that he was "old" by this time. In the first extant Virginia census of 1810, no Nathan Richardsons are found in the state and the only William Richardson in Washington County is too young to have been the father of Isaac Richardson. Therefore, we may never know which of these two men, if either, was the father of our ancestor, Isaac Richardson.

Isaac Richardson left very few records in his wake. We have found no marriage record for him in Washington County, Virginia, despite the fact that both the bride and groom's parents lived there. The first record we have for him is an entry in early county records indicating that he was a member of 70th Regiment of the Washington County militia in 1809. He also is a member of the same militia group every year through 1812. Other Richardsons named David, Benjamin, Jesse, John and Nathan also appear in the militia musters in the same time period. But none of these names, including that of Isaac Richardson, appear after 1812.

Isaac Richardson is listed in the 1810 Virginia census, living in Washington County with a wife, three sons and three daughters, all but one of the children under the age of ten. But by the time the 1820 census was taken, there were only two Richardson families left in Washington County,
Virginia. All evidence points to the fact that Isaac Richardson and other members of our Richardson family moved from the area before 1820. Extensive searches of 1820 census indexes have failed to identify where the family might have moved.

Isaac\(^1\) appears in two later censuses. By 1830 he was living in Wayne County, Kentucky. In that census, he is listed as being 60-70 years old, and living five households away is Alexander Richardson, the only child of Isaac Richardson of whom we can be certain.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1830 Wayne County, Kentucky Census</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Males</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Females</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isaac Richardson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alexander Richardson</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In the 1840 census, both were living in Franklin County, Illinois. There is evidence that at least Alexander had been living there as early as 1832.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1840 Franklin County, Illinois Census</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Males</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Females</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isaac Richardson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alexander Richardson</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Notice that Isaac Richardson is listed as being in the same age bracket, 60 through 69 years old, in both censuses. This kind of result is not uncommon with early census schedules. This anomaly may help us set the approximate date of birth of Isaac Richardson\(^1\). If we accept that he was born about 1770, then both census schedules would be within a year of his correct age.

The older woman in the 1830 census schedule is probably the former Nancy Wiley\(^3\) who Isaac Richardson married. Her absence in the 1840 census likely indicates that she died between 1830 and 1840. As for Isaac\(^1\), he did not live long enough to be listed in the 1850 census. Despite an extensive search for a grave marker, will or probate administration records, we can only assume that he died between 1840 and 1850, probably in Franklin County, Illinois. The only known child of Isaac Richardson\(^1\) was:

1. Alexander W. Richardson\(^2\)  
   b. 2 Jan 1802  @ Washington County, Virginia  
   m. 26 May 1824 Elizabeth Gibbs @ Knox Co. TN  
   d. 16 Oct 1866 @ Labette County, Kansas

That Isaac Richardson\(^1\) had other children is without question. We just don't know their names. The 1830 census shows that he had six sons other than Alexander\(^2\) living with him, while by 1840, they are all gone from his household except for one married son. Unfortunately, even though Isaac\(^1\) was probably in Franklin County, Illinois not long after the 1830 census, there are virtually no records of him or his children there. One of the reasons is that the courthouse for Franklin County burned on 18 November 1843, destroying all early marriage and land records.

An examination of public domain land sale records for the state of Illinois as well as later Franklin County marriage records show the names of Robert Richardson and Isaac Richardson. There is a good likelihood that each were the sons of Isaac Richardson\(^1\). However, there is no proof
for this contention.

Our direct ancestor, Alexander W. Richardson\(^2\), was married to Elizabeth Gibbs\(^6\) on 26 May 1824 in Knox County, Tennessee. Elizabeth\(^6\), with whom we left off in the last chapter, was the daughter of David\(^5\) and Sarah\(^8\) (Tillman) Gibbs, and the granddaughter of Nicholas Gibbs\(^4\). We begin the next chapter with the story of Alexander W. Richardson\(^2\).
ALEXANDER WILEY RICHARDSON

From family records as well as several public records, we know that Alexander's full name was Alexander Wiley Richardson². He obviously was named for his maternal grandfather. Alexander² was born in Washington County, Virginia on 2 January 1802. His date of birth is based upon his tombstone, which has some meager confirmation based upon census records. Other people have placed his birth date at 2 January 1804, without supporting evidence.

| ——Alexander Wiley Richardson² (1802-1866) |
| ——Sarah Gibbs Richardson³ (1830-1902) |
| ——Elizabeth Gibbs⁶ (1804-1866) |

He received a license to marry on 22 May 1824 from Knox County, Tennessee. A bond in the amount of $1250 was posted by David Gibbs, the father of the bride and Alexander² himself. He was married to Elizabeth Gibbs⁶ by John Bayless, the Justice of the Peace on 26 May 1824. Though we know that Alexander² and Elizabeth⁶ lived for several years in Knox County, Tennessee and had at least one child there, no record of them has been found there. Likewise, no tax record or land record can be found for Alexander's father, Isaac Richardson¹, in Knox County. Hampering the search is the fact that the census for 1820 has been lost for eastern Tennessee counties, including Knox.

With his father, Alexander² appears in the 1830 census in Wayne County, Kentucky, and in the census ten years later, in Franklin County, Illinois, repeated here.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1830 Wayne County, Kentucky Census</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>--------- Males ---------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0-  5- 10- 15- 20- 30- 40- 50- 60-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4  9  14  19  29  39  49  59  69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isaac Richardson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alexander Richardson</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1840 Franklin County, Illinois Census</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>--------- Males ---------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0-  5- 10- 15- 20- 30- 40- 50- 60-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4  9  14  19  29  39  49  59  69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isaac Richardson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alexander Richardson</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

As seen in these records, in 1830 Alexander² and his wife Elizabeth⁶ already had an unlikely five children after only six years of marriage. However, records belonging to Richardson descendants confirm this, with the youngest probably being only a few weeks old when the census was recorded. Those family records, including some in the compiler's own family, indicate that these five children were each born in Knox County, Tennessee. But the family appears to have been living in Wayne County, Kentucky at the time of the 1830 census, which would seem to make this unlikely. An examination of Wayne County land records fails to show an Isaac or Alexander Richardson owning land in that county.
One could construct a scenario where the two families waited for Elizabeth to have their fifth child before departing for Illinois and the census taker enumerated them in Wayne County while they were traveling through the area. Though that helps explain the lack of records found in Wayne County, this scenario isn't very likely. Despite the lack of a land record to confirm this, the Richardsons probably lived for a time in Wayne County, Kentucky. One small confirmation of this conjecture is an entry for the 1860 census where Alexander's third child indicated that he was born in Kentucky (though both older and younger children indicated their birthplace as Tennessee and that the same child in the 1850 census indicated being born in Tennessee). This is a mystery that remains unresolved.

It is not known when the Richardsons arrived in Franklin County, Illinois, but at least Alexander Wiley Richardson was there by the spring of 1832, when he enlisted for duty in the Black Hawk War. To understand this conflict in Illinois in 1832, one must have an understanding of the treatment of the Indians at this time.

Following the Revolutionary War, it had been the policy of the federal government to buy very large tracts of land from the Indians by paying them a small amount per year over for a long period of years. Usually this annual payment was made in some type of goods that the Indians could use, such as cloth, shoes, firearms and trinkets. At St. Louis in 1804, William Henry Harrison (who later became President) plied five Fox and Sauk Indian chiefs with whiskey, and while they were too drunk to know what they were doing, persuaded them to sell fifty million acres to the government. The land extended into Missouri, Iowa and Wisconsin and was obtained for an allowance of $1000 a year in goods.

Although when sober the Indian chiefs always denied that they had signed away their lands, the central government held that the sale was genuine. The Indians accepted the settlement of these lands by the whites for years, until settlers finally bought land from the government where their chief Indian village was located. This was the seat of their tribal government and near their ancestral burial grounds. Keokuk, the principal chief of the Sauks, recognizing that the whites would not retreat, took the largest portion of the tribe to their lands on the west of the Mississippi. But another chief named Black Hawk, who by now had ceased to recognize Keokuk as chief, influenced a portion of the tribe to remain in their ancient village on the north side of the Rock River near present-day Moline, Illinois.

The inevitable finally happened. Settlers eventually purchased government land where the Sauk burial grounds were located and ordered Black Hawk's followers to leave and cross to the west side of the Mississippi. The Indians turned on the whites, "threw down their fences, turned horses into their cornfields, stole their potatoes, and leveled deadly weapons at the citizens", as described in a contemporary account. The settlers hastily left the area and petitioned the governor for aid. The state was declared "invaded", volunteers were called and an army of six hundred militia and one thousand federal troops were soon marching to the Rock River Valley. The Indians, knowing that they could not cope with this force, deserted their ancient homeland, and withdrew to Iowa. Begrudgingly, Black Hawk agreed to the treaty of 1804 and promised never to cross the Mississippi again.

Black Hawk did not keep his word. He decided he would raise a crop of corn farther up in the valley of Rock River, so on 6 April 1832, about one thousand Indians crossed the Mississippi and
journeyed up the Rock River Valley to near Prophetstown, Illinois. They were ordered back by the government but Black Hawk said that their errand was peaceable and refused to return to Iowa. The settlers became extremely alarmed, and over 1600 volunteers, thinking it would be an outing full of fun, marched to turn back the Indians. By the middle of May, Black Hawk saw that he had made a mistake and decided to ask permission to return to Iowa. A Major Stillman, with some 300 inexperienced troops, met with Black Hawk and about thirty of his warriors. Four of the warriors came forward with a white flag but the troops were so nervous that they shot at them. This enraged Black Hawk and he charged with his warriors into the troops, who retreated, running in the opposite direction reportedly some ten miles. This event became known ever afterwards as Stillman's Run.

Black Hawk and his followers were elated over their victory at Stillman's Run. This small success gave Black Hawk the false hope that he could permanently drive the whites out of the Rock River Valley. Marauding bands of Indians scoured the northern prairies, leaving burned homes, desolated fields and murdered settlers in their path. Some 200 white settlers were "cut down" in May and June of 1832. A new call for volunteers went out. Michigan sent help and federal troops arrived; soon 4000 men were amassed to put down the uprising of Black Hawk.

As the militia groups skirmished time and again with Black Hawk's warriors, the Indians slowly retreated northwest into Wisconsin. The retreat was through swamps and over rough wooded country with thick underbrush. Progress was slow, for the whites had to explore new country as they went. For the Indians, they moved slow because they were weakened by hunger and delayed by old men, women and children. At the Wisconsin River opposite Prairie du Sac, the militia came upon the Indians. Black Hawk sent fifty of his warriors to hold the militia in check, to allow his people time to cross the river. A thirty minute engagement took place, and although the Indians retreated to the river, the whites did not follow. Some of the Sauks took to boats and rafts and floated down the Wisconsin. The rest made their way slowly westward to the Mississippi. It was a victory for Black Hawk, for he kept back a larger force while his people crossed the Wisconsin. After this battle Black Hawk again asked for a chance to surrender, but no heed was paid to his request.

The Indians made it to the Mississippi, eighty miles away, in safety. One by one the starving children and elderly dropped from the retreating column as they made their march through the swamps and heavily wooded hills. When Black Hawk and the remnants of his tribe were preparing to cross the Mississippi, the steamboat Warrior with federal troops aboard approached. Black Hawk raised the white flag and asked for a boat so that he could go aboard and surrender. But the commander of the steamboat gave the Indians fifteen minutes to make ready for battle and then attacked them with cannon and musketry. At least 25 Indians were killed with no loss to the whites. The Illinois militia and federal troops attacked Black Hawk's band the next day, and before the Battle of Bad Axe was over, 150 Indians were killed and another fifty taken prisoner.

Those Sauks who crossed the Mississippi were treacherously attacked by the Sioux, so that of the 1000 who had crossed the river four months before, only 150 safely reached Iowa and the main tribe under Chief Keokuk. Black Hawk was taken prisoner, but was released by President Jackson in June 1833. Black Hawk spent his remaining years with the fragments of his tribe west of the Mississippi, where he died in 1838. This permanently ended trouble with the Indians in Illinois.

After Stillman's Run, when the call came for more men to defend against Black Hawk and his band, Alexander Wiley Richardson enlisted from Franklin County. He was enrolled at Fort
Wilbourn as a private on 16 June 1832 with Captain George Bowyer's Company in the Second Regiment of Illinois Mounted Volunteers. His enrollment was for 90 days, but he and the others in his unit were mustered out of the service at Fort Dixon on 7 August 1832, their service completed. As a sidebar, there was another Illinois soldier in the Black Hawk War who first was a private in Captain Iles’ Company and who later became a captain of his own company. He went on to considerable notoriety; his name was Abraham Lincoln.

Because the Franklin County courthouse burned on 18 November 1843, destroying all the early county records, we do not know where Alexander Wiley Richardson first lived in that county. However he may have settled first a few miles to the east, in Hamilton County, Illinois. The public domain land sale records for Illinois, which were maintained at a federal land office and which have survived intact, indicate that Alexander first bought federal land in Hamilton County. There on 5 November 1833, he purchased 40 acres of public land for $1.25 per acre.

To understand this purchase, we have to go back to when the Revolutionary War ended, when the new nation that now called itself the United States of America had lots of debt. But it also had one other thing in great abundance, land. As a result of the Treaty of Paris, which officially ended the war in 1783, Great Britain ceded the Northwest Territory to the colonies. The Northwest Territory comprised 265,878 square miles of land that occupies the present-day states of Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan, Wisconsin and part of Minnesota. Because the new nation desperately needed money and land was a commodity of which it had plenty, it was only natural to sell the newly acquired territory to settlers who were moving westward from the more populous eastern colonies.

On 20 May 1785, the Continental Congress (the U.S. Constitution had not yet been adopted, so there was not yet a U.S. Congress) passed a law specifically for the purpose of "ascertaining the mode of disposing of lands in the Western Territory". This act was a major piece of legislation which still has impact to the present day, in that it changed forever the methods used for surveying land and adopted a newly-developed rectangular grid system. Congress chose between two established systems: the New England practice of surveying lands before settlement and selling them in orderly blocks, or the southern custom of "indiscriminate location and subsequent survey" which allowed a settler to purchase a warrant, lay out his plot where he wished, and then have it surveyed.

Both methods had their strengths and weaknesses. The northern system did away with conflicting titles but discouraged immigration by overemphasizing the social group and by forcing the purchase of bad land along with good. The southern system, although favored by the frontiersmen, bred a confusion of conflicting titles, for each settler avoided poor soil by laying out irregularly shaped plots which could not be surveyed accurately. Somewhere between those two extremes, one sacrificing settlement for order and the other impossible to administer, Congress found the solution to its problem.

The result was the Ordinance of 1785, one of the most important legislative measures in American history. All government-owned lands, it stated, would be divided into townships six miles square. These, in turn, would be subdivided into 36 numbered "sections," each containing one square mile or 640 acres. Alternate townships would be sold as a whole and in sections, thus satisfying both New Englanders who wanted large units and southerners who wished smaller plots.
As a result of the Ordinance of 1785 the federal government sold land in thirty-six-section townships (23,040 acres) and in sections (640 acres) for a minimum of $1 per acre payable within one year. A new ordinance in 1796 raised the minimum price to $2 per acre, and another in 1800 (the Harrison Land Act) reduced the minimum size of a sale tract to 320 acres (a half section). The 1800 ordinance also allowed for four payments over a five-year period, but this extension of credit encouraged speculation and that system proved terribly unsuccessful. A new ordinance in 1820, passed because of the collapse the year before of the Western land boom, did away with credit sales, reduced the minimum size of a sale tract to 80 acres and lowered the minimum price to $1.25 per acre. Subsequent congressional acts reduced the required acreage to 40 acres. Land was sold under these acts until 1908.

The settlement of Franklin County was slow and gradual, as evidenced by the fact that only about half of the public lands had been settled by 1850. Then, in 1854, Congress passed the Graduation Act, commonly known as the Bit Act, which reduced the price for public land to 12½ cents (one bit) per acre if the particular tract of land had been on the market for thirty years or more. In October of 1854, a great rush was made to the General Land Office, then located at Shawneetown, Illinois, to grab all the land the settlers could pay for. Within a few years, almost all public land in Franklin County had been purchased.

Alexander Wiley Richardson² bought lots of public domain land in Illinois. Between 1833 and 1854, he and his wife purchased 600 acres of land from the Government Land Office in Shawneetown. The records of these sales have been reproduced here:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Date</th>
<th>Acres</th>
<th>Price</th>
<th>County</th>
<th>Range</th>
<th>Twp.</th>
<th>Sect.</th>
<th>Part</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Alexander</td>
<td>11/05/1833</td>
<td>40.00</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>HAMI</td>
<td>R05E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>SESE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Alexander</td>
<td>08/12/1836</td>
<td>40.00</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>FRAN</td>
<td>R04E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>NWSE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Elizabeth</td>
<td>04/19/1839</td>
<td>40.00</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>FRAN</td>
<td>R04E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>SWSE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Elizabeth</td>
<td>04/19/1839</td>
<td>40.00</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>FRAN</td>
<td>R04E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>NESW</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Alexander</td>
<td>05/14/1847</td>
<td>40.00</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>FRAN</td>
<td>R04E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>SESW</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Alexander</td>
<td>03/03/1851</td>
<td>40.00</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>FRAN</td>
<td>R04E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>NESE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Alexander</td>
<td>03/03/1851</td>
<td>40.00</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>FRAN</td>
<td>R04E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>NESW</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Alexander</td>
<td>03/03/1851</td>
<td>40.00</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>FRAN</td>
<td>R04E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>NWNE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Alexander</td>
<td>10/06/1851</td>
<td>40.00</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>FRAN</td>
<td>R04E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>SESW</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Alexander</td>
<td>11/24/1853</td>
<td>40.00</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>FRAN</td>
<td>R04E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>NWSE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Alexander</td>
<td>11/24/1853</td>
<td>40.00</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>FRAN</td>
<td>R04E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>SESE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Alexander</td>
<td>11/24/1853</td>
<td>40.00</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>FRAN</td>
<td>R04E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>SENE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Alexander</td>
<td>12/15/1853</td>
<td>40.00</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>FRAN</td>
<td>R04E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>SENW</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Alexander</td>
<td>12/28/1853</td>
<td>40.00</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>FRAN</td>
<td>R04E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>NNNW</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Alexander</td>
<td>10/04/1854</td>
<td>40.00</td>
<td>$0.12½</td>
<td>FRAN</td>
<td>R04E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>SWNE</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Alexander Wiley Richardson² also appears in other records in Franklin County. His family appears in the 1850 census:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Age</th>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>Occupation</th>
<th>County</th>
<th>Town</th>
<th>Township</th>
<th>Range</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A. W. Richardson</td>
<td>58</td>
<td>M</td>
<td>Farmer</td>
<td>1000</td>
<td>Va.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth</td>
<td>46</td>
<td>F</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Geo.</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caroline</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>F</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robt.</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jno.</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rachel</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>F</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Minerva</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>F</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alex</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louisa</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>F</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

CHAPTER 19 302 HIST/BIOG
On 16 March 1866, according to family records, Elizabeth Gibb Richardson died. Presumably she was buried in either Franklin County or Hamilton County, Illinois, although the location of her grave has not been found. Just weeks after her death, the extended family moved to southeastern Kansas, where most of the family settled in Labette County about May 1866. The *History of Labette County, Kansas*, published in 1901, states that in June of 1866, just three months after his wife of 42 years had died, Alexander Wiley Richardson and his family were already in Kansas. The book states that in June of that year "A. W. Richardson bought from William Springer, Jr., the claim on which he had settled, paying therefor $400. Mr. Springer had at the time some four or five acres broken out and planted to corn and garden truck."

Technically, Labette County did not exist yet when the family moved there. The county was still being formed at this time, and legally its citizens were still part of Neosho County, from which Labette was officially organized on 7 February 1867. Alexander Wiley Richardson settled in Liberty Township, which was being newly settled in the spring of 1866. Alexander bought 160 acres (SE¼ of R20E-T32S-S27) in Liberty Township, which would be located less than a mile west of the present-day town of Labette, Kansas. The property that Alexander bought straddled Labette Creek, after which the county was named.

The reason for the family's move to Labette County was the same as so many times before in this book, land. In the fall of 1866, the county began being surveyed and platted into townships and ranges in preparation for the sale of new land and settlement. The Squatter Sovereignty Law gave settlers preference to buy the quarter section on which they had built improvements and put land into cultivation, prior to the time it was surveyed. At the beginning of 1866, there were an estimated 40 white people living within the boundaries of what would become Labette County. By September of that year, when the first local census was made, the population of the new county had swelled to almost 700. Settlers were flooding the area to take up new land claims along either Neosho or Labette Creek. It was reported that about ninety percent of the new settlers came from Illinois, Iowa or Missouri.

The *History of Labette County, Kansas* also indicates that Alexander Wiley Richardson did not live long enough to enjoy his new farm. The history states that "in the fall of 1866 there was much sickness among the settlers, so much that there were scarcely enough well ones to wait on the sick." The history also tells us that "in September, 1866, A. W. Richardson died, and in December following, his son John Richardson was appointed administrator of his estate by the Probate Court of Neosho county. In February, 1867, he held a public sale of the effects of the estate. Francis Wall was auctioneer. The property was sold on time, and brought a good price, and every dollar of the purchase price was collected by the administrator. This was the first estate administered upon within the present limits of the county."
Alexander² was buried in what became known as the Mason-Richardson Cemetery, described as a family cemetery for the Richardson family. It is located on the west edge of section 35 of Liberty Township, about a mile southwest of Labette. The cemetery is located at approximately the site chosen in 1868 for the town of Neola, but which was latter abandoned when Labette was founded in 1870. The reason that Labette succeeded while the town of Neola died was because of the placement of the railroad. His grave marker, which has been broken and is no longer readable, was determined by others to read "Alexander Richardson", born "January 2, 1802", died "October 23, 1868".

If the date of Alexander's death was read correctly on his headstone, then it is obviously wrong since Neosho County probate records indicate that on 29 December 1866, his son John had been already appointed administrator of his estate. The county history states that he died in September of that year, but it was published in 1901, 35 years after the fact. More likely, in the opinion of the compiler, Alexander Wiley Richardson probably died on the month and day that appears on the tombstone, but two years prior to the year that was read from the stone. Since he died intestate, the sickness that swept through Kansas that year must have taken him quickly.

Of the eleven surviving children of Alexander Wiley Richardson², it is believed that most or all of them moved to the same area as did their father. Alexander² and Elizabeth⁶ (Gibbs) Richardson had thirteen children:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>No.</th>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Birth Date</th>
<th>Birth Place</th>
<th>Married Name</th>
<th>Married Date</th>
<th>Married Place</th>
<th>Death Date</th>
<th>Death Place</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.</td>
<td>David G. Richardson³</td>
<td>5 Mar 1825</td>
<td>Knox County, Tennessee</td>
<td>Rachel George</td>
<td>2 Jan 1844</td>
<td>Hamilton Co. IL</td>
<td>Apr 1899</td>
<td>Jasper County, Missouri</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.</td>
<td>Nancy A. Richardson³</td>
<td>1 May 1826</td>
<td>Knox County, Tennessee?</td>
<td>Reuben Allen</td>
<td>19 Dec 1844</td>
<td>Franklin Co. IL</td>
<td>1907</td>
<td>Webb City, Jasper, Missouri</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.</td>
<td>William L. Richardson³</td>
<td>10 Jul 1827</td>
<td>Knox County, Tennessee?</td>
<td>Harriet Scrivner</td>
<td>3 Sep 1848</td>
<td>Franklin Co. IL</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.</td>
<td>Isaac Richardson³</td>
<td>30 Dec 1828</td>
<td>Knox County, Tennessee?</td>
<td>Sarah E. Smith</td>
<td>16 Jan 1849</td>
<td>Franklin Co. IL</td>
<td>16 Feb 1863</td>
<td>Nashville, Tennessee</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.</td>
<td>George W. Richardson³</td>
<td>20 Mar 1832</td>
<td>Franklin County, Illinois</td>
<td>Harriet Boster</td>
<td>8 Apr 1853</td>
<td>Franklin Co. IL</td>
<td>2 Jan 1916</td>
<td>Seneca, Newton, Missouri</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.</td>
<td>Caroline Richardson³</td>
<td>19 Jan 1834</td>
<td>Franklin County, Illinois</td>
<td>James Scrivner</td>
<td>24 Apr 1856</td>
<td>Franklin Co. IL</td>
<td>7 Jun 1896</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8.</td>
<td>Robert Richardson³</td>
<td>18 Mar 1836</td>
<td>Franklin County, Illinois</td>
<td>Rebecca Davis</td>
<td>14 Sep 1859</td>
<td>Franklin Co. IL</td>
<td>28 Jan 1863</td>
<td>Nashville, Tennessee</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9.</td>
<td>John M. Richardson³</td>
<td>15 Dec 1837</td>
<td>Franklin County, Illinois</td>
<td>Sarah J. Sturman</td>
<td>3 Nov 1864</td>
<td>Hamilton Co. IL</td>
<td>5 May 1937</td>
<td>Labette County, Kansas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.</td>
<td>Rachel Richardson³</td>
<td>10 Oct 1839</td>
<td>Franklin County, Illinois</td>
<td>Sanford M. Webb</td>
<td>14 Jul 1859</td>
<td>Franklin Co. IL</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11.</td>
<td>Minerva Richardson³</td>
<td>16 Jan 1843</td>
<td>Franklin County, Illinois</td>
<td>John W. Kirk</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

CHAPTER 19 304 HIST/BIOG
12. Alexander W. Richardson
   b. 11 Sep 1845 @ Franklin County, Illinois
   d. 11 Nov 1866 @ Labette County, Kansas

13. Louisa M. Richardson
   b. 23 Jul 1848 @ Franklin County, Illinois
   m. 25 Dec 1867 Carl C. Wadsack @ Labette Co. KS
   d. 16 Nov 1921 @ Rhea County, Tennessee

David Gibbs Richardson, named for his maternal grandfather, was the oldest child and born just 9½ months after the marriage of his parents. He may have been the only one of the children born in Tennessee. As a boy, he moved with his parents to Illinois, where he married Rachel George on 2 January 1844 in Hamilton County. He may have actually married her in Franklin County, but since the courthouse there had burned just six weeks prior to his marriage, it may have been simply recorded in Hamilton County. Rachel George was also born in Tennessee and had moved with a half-sister to Illinois as a child. There was a story in her family that her parents died during her infancy and that she had but one brother. Further, the brother was supposed to have been governor of Georgia at one time and was killed while on his way to Illinois. Attempts by the compiler to confirm this story proved unsuccessful. Certainly no profiles of Georgia governors at this time match the story.

David Gibbs Richardson was a farmer and also worked as a blacksmith while he lived in Illinois. Public domain land records in Illinois tell us that David bought 40 acres in 1841 which immediately adjoined that of his parents. Interestingly enough, he was only 16 years old when he bought this property, so the purchase may have been funded by his father. David also bought a 40-acre parcel from the government in December 1853 which adjoined land that his father owned. He later sold both of these parcels to his father, and subsequently bought 120 acres of private land that also adjoined his father's land. David may or may not have been the person of that name that purchased land in Hamilton County earlier that year, as shown below:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Date</th>
<th>Acres</th>
<th>Price</th>
<th>County</th>
<th>Range</th>
<th>Twp.</th>
<th>Sect.</th>
<th>Part</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, David G</td>
<td>10/04/1841</td>
<td>40.00</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>FRAN</td>
<td>R04E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>SWNE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, David</td>
<td>02/19/1853</td>
<td>38.96</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>HAMI</td>
<td>R06E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>NESE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, David</td>
<td>02/19/1853</td>
<td>38.95</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>HAMI</td>
<td>R06E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>SENE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, David</td>
<td>12/01/1853</td>
<td>35.79</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>FRAN</td>
<td>R04E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>SWNE</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In 1866, David Gibbs Richardson moved with the rest of the family to Kansas, but within a year moved to Galena Township of Jasper County, Missouri, about 30 miles to the east. There, David lived about five miles northwest of Joplin, where he owned 110 acres of land (R33W-T28N-S16). He moved again in 1881 to Duval Township in the northern part of Jasper County, where he died in April 1899. He had a son named Jesse who ran a store at Breeze, Missouri for a number of years, and who also served as the postmaster of the town.

Nancy A. Richardson married Reuben Allen on 19 December 1844 in Franklin County. Reuben was born in 1821, the oldest of the fourteen children of Stephen and Rebecca (Webb) Allen. Reuben and Nancy lived on 120 acres (NWSE¼ and NESW¼ and NESE¼ of R4E-T5S-S10) less than a mile west of her father's farm. They moved with the rest of the Richardson family to Kansas in 1866, but like David Richardson, chose to settle in Jasper County, Missouri near Joplin. There, they lived on 75 acres (R33W-T28N-S17) in Galena Township, less than a mile from David. A 1895 plat map shows the land was still in the possession of Reuben Allen at that time. Nancy died near Webb City, Missouri in 1907; both her and Reuben were buried in the Peach Church Cemetery there.
**William L. Richardson**³ was born 10 July 1827, either in Knox County, Tennessee or in Wayne County, Kentucky. In the 1850 Illinois census, where he was living in Hamilton County with his wife and a one-year-old daughter, he claimed to have been born in Tennessee. In the 1860 census, when he was living in Franklin County near his father, he claimed that he was born in Kentucky. The latter state is probably correct. William³ married Harriet Scrivner (or Scrivener) on 3 September 1848 in Franklin County. She was born 5 August 1833, the daughter of John Scrivner, who died in Franklin County in 1842.

There are several land records involving the name William Richardson in Franklin and Hamilton County, Illinois, the first entry of which is almost certainly William³ since it adjoined the property of his father:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Date</th>
<th>Acres</th>
<th>Price</th>
<th>County</th>
<th>Range</th>
<th>Twp.</th>
<th>Sect.</th>
<th>Part</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, William</td>
<td>12/01/1843</td>
<td>40.00</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>FRAN</td>
<td>R04E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>SWSE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, William</td>
<td>12/06/1851</td>
<td>40.00</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>HAMI</td>
<td>R05E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>SWSW</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, William</td>
<td>09/22/1852</td>
<td>85.17</td>
<td></td>
<td>HAMI</td>
<td>R05E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>N2NW</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, William</td>
<td>10/29/1853</td>
<td>40.00</td>
<td>$1.25</td>
<td>FRAN</td>
<td>R04E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>NWNE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, William</td>
<td>09/28/1854</td>
<td>42.58</td>
<td>$0.12½</td>
<td>HAMI</td>
<td>R05E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>SENW</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

On 8 November 1852, William³ sold the forty acres he had purchased in 1843 to his father for $50. The price that he sold the land for, even to his own father, would indicate that there were no improvements on the land, since $1.25 per acre was the same price that anyone could buy bare land for at the General Land Office. In the 1854 Franklin County tax book, William³ is also listed as owning 190 acres very close to his father. William L. Richardson³ may not have moved to Kansas with the others since no record of him there has been found.

**Isaac Richardson**³ and **Robert Richardson**³ both joined the Union Army the same day and fought in the Civil War together. We know today that the odds of a soldier not coming home from that brutal war were one in four. Unfortunately for both Isaac³ and Robert³, neither of them beat those odds. As a result, we will examine them together.

Isaac Richardson³, named for his paternal grandfather, was born on 30 December 1828, probably in Wayne County, Kentucky. He appears in the 1850 Illinois census, living in Hamilton County next to his brother William³, and stated to the census taker that he was born in Tennessee. At that time he was living with his young wife, the former Sarah Emaline Smith, who he had married on 16 January 1849 in Franklin County. Unlike his older brother William³, Isaac Richardson³ continued to live in Hamilton County, where he bought the following public domain land:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Date</th>
<th>Acres</th>
<th>Price</th>
<th>County</th>
<th>Range</th>
<th>Twp.</th>
<th>Sect.</th>
<th>Part</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Isaac</td>
<td>10/04/1854</td>
<td>40.00</td>
<td>$0.12½</td>
<td>HAMI</td>
<td>R05E</td>
<td>T05S</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>NWSE</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Most of residents of the state of Illinois had moved there from the south. As a result, the Civil War was not overly popular among its citizens, but was especially opposed in Hamilton County, where it was considered by many to be an "unconstitutional war upon the South". Despite that, and the fact that he was a 33-year-old married man with a family, when the call came for troops, Isaac Richardson² enlisted in the Union Army. He enlisted on 13 August 1862 and after having a month to attend to his affairs at home, he was mustered into the service on 11 September 1862. Isaac³ was assigned to Company "K" of the 110th Illinois Infantry and, perhaps because of his age, was made a sergeant. Isaac died five months later, on 16 February 1863, at Nashville, Tennessee.
Robert Richardson³ was over seven years younger than his brother Isaac³. Robert³ was born 18 March 1836 in Franklin County, Illinois. He married Rebecca Davis on 14 September 1859 in the same county. There were at least three, and possibly four, men named Robert Richardson who lived in Franklin County at this time. It is possible, although doubtful, that Robert³ was the person of that name who was ordered to be arrested in April 1861 for "assault of Harrison Swoope with a large stick with intent to inflict bodily injury". The same person was ordered to be arrested five months later after having been indicted for "incest with Nancy Swoope, niece".

Robert³ enlisted in the 110th Infantry the same day that Isaac did, and was mustered into the service the same day. Since Robert Richardson³ was a private in the same Company "K", we can assume that they fought together in the same battles. The outcome for Robert³ was the same as for his brother. Civil War records indicate that he also died at Nashville, Tennessee, although he died over two weeks before his brother, on 28 January 1863.

There has been some confusion over the spouse of Robert Richardson³, since a "Robert H. Richardson" purchased 80 acres of land that adjoined that of Alexander Wiley Richardson², implying that this Robert was the son of Alexander². Complicating things even more is the fact that Robert³ and the "Robert H." married women in Franklin County a month and a half apart in 1859. But it is clear that the son of Alexander² is the Robert who married Rebecca Davis and died in the Civil War. This is based upon the fact that the pension file for Robert³ mentions a widow named Rebecca Edwards and that a Rebecca Richardson married Alexander Edwards on 20 May 1863, shy of four months after her husband's death.

No other information is available regarding the death of either Isaac³ or Robert³ Richardson from official sources, such as the Adjutant General's Report. But by researching county and Civil War histories, it has been possible to piece together what likely happened to Isaac³ and Robert³. On 23 September 1862, the 110th Illinois Infantry regiment was ordered to Louisville, Kentucky, where it was assigned to the 19th Brigade, also composed of the 41st Ohio, 9th Indiana and 6th Kentucky regiments, and commanded by Colonel William B. Hazen. These orders came just 12 days after the Richardson brothers joined the Union Army.

Four days later, the brigade left Louisville in pursuit of the Confederate force commanded by General Braxton Bragg. The troops marched by way of Bardstown to Perryville, Kentucky, when the 110th Illinois regiment was "in line of battle" by noon on 8 October 1862. They were not more than two miles from where the Battle of Perryville was being fought, but an advance was not ordered. The regiment lay in reserve through the night and advanced in the morning, only to find that during the night Bragg and his Confederate troops had retreated and escaped.

On 11 October 1862, the Union troops finally caught up with the enemy a mile from Danville, Kentucky. A battle line was formed and the rebels were driven through and beyond the town of Danville. This was the first skirmish in which the Illinois regiment was engaged. The regiment continued to pursue the rebel forces to the southeast in the direction of Crab Orchard, Kentucky. On 16 October, not far from Mt. Vernon, Kentucky, the rear of the enemy was encountered and after a series of sharp skirmishes the rebels were driven from their position and retreated more.

On the night of 16 October, the Union troops camped at Big Rockcastle Creek. Over the next three weeks, they chased Bragg's troops to within 45 miles of the Cumberland Gap, then west.
through Kentucky to Nashville, Tennessee. Along this long exhausting march, they passed through the towns of Somerset, Columbia and Glasgow (all in Kentucky) and Gallatin, Tennessee. The Union troops, including the 110th Illinois Infantry, arrived at Nashville on 7 November 1862, where it camped.

Hazen, the commander of the Union troops, stated in his report: "It is proper to remark that during the entire campaign, although we were destitute of many of the comforts usual in campaigns, without tents, often without sufficient food, through the most inclement weather, marches of almost unprecedented length, I have never heard a murmur, and now have to report a condition of health better than ever before know in the Brigade, and a state of thorough discipline in the highest degree satisfactory."

Hazen and his men now joined with the army of General William Rosecrans at Nashville. Confederate General Bragg had moved his army into Tennessee and settled about three miles north of Murfreesboro, Tennessee in October 1862, where he decided to make a stand along the Stones River. On 26 December 1862, General Rosecrans moved his 43,000 Union troops out of Nashville towards the Confederates with the intent of smashing Bragg's force of 38,000. Four days later, Rosecrans found his quarry at Stones River.

The two generals in the impending battle were an interesting contrast. A tall, chronically ill man of 45, Bragg had done little in his tenure to inspire the respect and admiration of his subordinates. An 1837 graduate of the Military Academy, he had served with distinction in Mexico and was well acquainted with many of the best known field commanders on both sides of the war. Sporting a coal black beard streaked with steel gray, Bragg had the appearance of a grizzled veteran and the consummate professional soldier.

But many of the officers in his command thought Bragg was quite adept at snatching defeat from the jaws of victory. They questioned his handling of the army at Perryville, and grumbled about having fought, bled and won what they considered to be a victory there, only to find themselves inexplicably retreating back into Tennessee. One of Bragg's harshest critics was Major General John C. Breckinridge, who had maintained a bitter war of words with Bragg for months. Breckinridge had previously been vice president of the United States under James Buchanan and had run unsuccessfully on the Democratic ticket against Abraham Lincoln in 1860.

The fortunes of the Union forces lay in the seemingly competent hands of Ohio Major General William S. Rosecrans. "Old Rosy", as he was called, had graduated from West Point in 1842, fifth in a class of 56. A devout converted Catholic who carried a rosary with him and had mass conducted every morning, the general stood six feet tall and was immensely popular with his troops. President Abraham Lincoln and Chief of Staff Henry Halleck hoped his appointment would inspire the previously sluggish Union forces in the west to greater action.

Upon reaching Bragg's forces on the Stones River, Rosecrans camped the night of 30 December 1862 within hearing distance of the Confederates. At dawn, Bragg's forces took the initiative, attacking the Yankees at dawn on New Year's Eve. The Confederates emerged from the cover of cedar trees at first light and formed in lines of battle six deep, advancing slowly at first and then picking up speed. Not until they were on top of the unsuspecting Yankees did the first Rebel yell break the early morning stillness. Some of the Union sentries had seen the rebels coming and had
given their comrades some warning, but many of the Union troops were caught with their weapons stacked, still preparing breakfast. The same thing had happened to the Union forces at the Battle of Shiloh the previous spring.

The Confederate troops drove the Union army steadily back, yielding their forward positions as their ammunition ran out. As the Confederate tide surged forward, entire Union brigades became disorganized and scattered. Occasionally the Union troops would rally and offer some resistance, but with frightening regularity these isolated units would find themselves outflanked and absorbing casualties from increasing rebel fire, some from their rear flanks. By mid-morning the Union army had been driven back four to five miles, almost to the Nashville Pike. The entire Union Army's right flank had swung back like a huge gate on a hinge.

Bragg sensed that complete and final victory was close at hand, but nearly a third of the troops in the Confederate front line had been killed or wounded in the morning's fighting. Reinforcements would be necessary to mount a decisive push against the Union line. The apex of the angular Union battle line rested in a grove of cedars so thick that their branches hung to the ground. Straddling the acute angle formed by the intersection of the Nashville Turnpike and the Nashville and Chattanooga Railroad, this area of dense cedar growth, underbrush and rocky outcroppings was known locally as the Round Forest. But by the end of the day, those who fought there would always remember it as "Hell's Half-Acre."

Bragg realized that the Round Forest battle line was the key to the entire Union position. Breaching the line at this point would allow the Confederates to flank their enemy on both the left and right sides. Bragg's forces attacked the Round Forest with renewed ferociousness. However, in one of the most heroic and least known defensive stands of the entire Civil War, the brigade commanded by Colonel Hazen, met the rebels head on and stood solid as a rock. For more than eight hours, Hazen's four regiments, including the 110th Illinois, stood their ground in the face of unrelenting Confederate attack.

Hazen later described the action: "Upon this point, as a pivot, the entire army oscillated from front to rear the entire day ... I dispatched word to the rear that assistance must be given, or we must be sacrificed ... and gave orders to Lieutenant-Colonel Wiley to fix his bayonets and to Colonel Casey (without bayonets) to club his guns and hold the ground at all hazards." With a tenacious defense, Hazen's troops refused to yield another inch, repulsing wave after wave of Confederate charges. As Hazen had referred to in his report, when their ammunition ran out, the Yankees fought with bayonets and used their muskets as clubs.

At one point in the battle, as Hazen's men began to waver under Confederate pressure, Rosecrans himself rode forward with his staff to rally them. In their gallop to the line, Rosecrans and his staff exposed themselves to heavy Rebel fire. A cannon shot just missed Rosecrans and struck his chief of staff, Colonel Julius P. Garesche, in the face. Rosecrans' overcoat was splattered with his close friend's blood and Garesche's headless body stayed astride its mount for 20 paces before falling lifeless to the ground. A number of soldiers close by reportedly urged "Old Rosy" to take cover, but the general reportedly responded: "Men, do you know how to be safe? Shoot low! But to be safest of all, give them a blizzard, and then charge with cold steel!"

The Confederate attempts to take the Union forces at the Round Forest failed at terrible cost to
both sides. The determined Confederates had thrown the strength of 10 brigades against the Union position, but still could not dislodge the defenders. As the cold and darkness of night closed in, the Confederates retreated to their camps by the Stones River. Bragg, flush with victory, cabled Richmond with news of the day's events as the last hours of 1862 passed into history. "God has granted us a happy new year," he informed the Confederate high command, fully expecting to find the Union army in complete retreat at sunrise.

As Rosecrans' exhausted troops bivouacked for the night, the Union generals discussed the possibility of retreating. Rosecrans concluded, however, that his men still had plenty of fight left and decided to retain their position. But he realized that he would have to reform his line to meet the possibility of a renewed Confederate attack. Rosecrans consolidated his battered forces during the night, reassuring his subordinates and encouraging the soldiers in the lines to be prepared for a renewal of the bitter contest at daylight.

While his adversary worked through the night, Bragg went to bed without changing troop dispositions at all. He expected to find the Union Army on the road back to Nashville on the first day of 1863. He was shocked to find the Union soldiers still in position to give battle on New Year's Day and lapsed into deep depression. There would be little fighting that day, as both exhausted armies silently recuperated from the ferocious battle of the previous day. On 2 January 1863, General Bragg sent a portion of his army to finish off the Yankees. Once again bending but refusing to break, the Union Army was pushed back to a river crossing known as McFadden's Ford. It was there that the Union artillery overlooking the field of battle crucified the Confederates. Within one hour, the field of battle as well as the river was littered with 1800 Confederate corpses. A member of General Bragg's staff, with a gift for brevity, described the episode as "a terrible affair, although short."

The battle ended with that final slaughter, and the retreating Confederates left the Union Army in control of central Tennessee. With its 24,645 casualties, the Battle of Stones River can be mentioned in the same breath as some of the worst bloodbaths of the Civil War. It ranks eighth in the list of the ten costliest battles of the war (in terms of total killed, wounded, missing, and captured):

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Battle</th>
<th>Date</th>
<th>State</th>
<th>Casualties</th>
<th>Union</th>
<th>Confed.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2. Battle of Chickamauga</td>
<td>Sep 1863</td>
<td>Georgia</td>
<td>34,624</td>
<td>16,170</td>
<td>18,454</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. Battle of Chancellorsville</td>
<td>May 1863</td>
<td>Virginia</td>
<td>30,099</td>
<td>17,278</td>
<td>12,821</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. Battle of Spotsylvania</td>
<td>May 1864</td>
<td>Virginia</td>
<td>27,399</td>
<td>18,399</td>
<td>9,000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. Battle of Antietam</td>
<td>Sep 1862</td>
<td>Maryland</td>
<td>26,134</td>
<td>12,410</td>
<td>13,724</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. Battle of The Wilderness</td>
<td>May 1864</td>
<td>Virginia</td>
<td>25,416</td>
<td>17,666</td>
<td>7,750</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7. Battle of Second Manassas</td>
<td>Aug 1862</td>
<td>Virginia</td>
<td>25,251</td>
<td>16,054</td>
<td>9,197</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8. Battle of Stones River</td>
<td>Dec 1862</td>
<td>Tennessee</td>
<td>24,645</td>
<td>12,906</td>
<td>11,739</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9. Battle of Shiloh</td>
<td>Apr 1862</td>
<td>Tennessee</td>
<td>23,741</td>
<td>13,047</td>
<td>10,694</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10. Battle of Fort Donelson</td>
<td>Feb 1862</td>
<td>Tennessee</td>
<td>19,455</td>
<td>2,832</td>
<td>16,623</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

As a result of the Battle of Stones River, the ranks of the 110th Illinois Infantry were decimated. After the battle, what was left of the regiment, along with the remainder of its brigade, was posted for a time at Readyville, Tennessee ten miles east of Murfreesboro. In May 1863, because the regiment had been so greatly reduced in size due to losses in battle, sickness and discharges, it was consolidated with another regiments.
We know from regimental records for the 110th Infantry that the unit was not involved in any further skirmishes for three months after the Battle of Stones River. Since Robert Richardson died about four weeks after the battle, and Isaac six weeks after it, we can probably assume that either they died from wounds incurred in the battle or from a disease contracted near the time of the battle. But in either case, their odds for recovery were not good.

With an estimated 970,000 military casualties on both sides, more Americans died in the four years of the Civil War than the combined total of the nation's dead in the Revolutionary War, The War of 1812, The Mexican War, The Indian Wars, The Spanish-American War, World War I, World War II, and the Korean War. Only after the casualties from the Vietnam War were added, did the total casualties from these other wars exceed those suffered in the Civil War.

When the Civil War began in April 1861, medicine was approaching what Surgeon General William Hammond called "the end of the medical Middle Ages." In Europe, the work of Koch and Pasteur was just beginning and American physicians had little knowledge of the cause and prevention of disease and infection. The Army Medical Department, which was responsible for the care of the sick and wounded in the North, was totally unprepared for the war. Their staff of about 98 doctors was experienced in dealing with the health problems of small military outposts, but had no idea of how to deal with large scale medical and logistical problems that the Civil War would bring upon them. In comparison, the South had just 24 doctors for its entire army.

Casualties in the Civil War were cared for by a woefully underqualified, understaffed, and undersupplied medical corps. During the period just before the Civil War, a physician in America received minimal training. Nearly all the older doctors served as apprentices in lieu of formal education. Even those who had attended one of the few medical schools in this country were poorly trained. In Europe, four-year medical schools were common, laboratory training was widespread, and a greater understanding of disease and infection existed. But in the United States, the average medical student trained for two years or less, received practically no clinical experience, and was given virtually no laboratory instruction. Harvard University, for instance, did not own a single stethoscope or microscope until after the war.

Early in the war it became obvious that disease would be the greatest killer. Two soldiers died of disease (dysentery, diarrhea, typhoid, and malaria) for every one killed in battle. Soldiers from small rural areas suffered from childhood diseases such as measles and mumps because they lacked immunity. Outbreaks of these camp and campaign diseases were caused by overcrowded and unsanitary conditions in the field. To remedy this, the U.S. government created the U.S. Sanitary Commission in June 1861. Despite the efforts of that commission, some 560,000 soldiers died from disease during the war.

About half of the deaths from disease during the Civil War were caused by intestinal disorders, mainly typhoid fever, diarrhea, and dysentery. The remainder died from pneumonia and tuberculosis. Camps populated by young soldiers who had never before been exposed to a large variety of common contagious diseases were plagued by outbreaks of measles, chicken pox, mumps, and whooping cough. The Union army reported that more than 995 out of every 1,000 men eventually contracted chronic diarrhea or dysentery during the war; the Confederates fared no better.

Second to disease as a cause of death were battlefield injuries, totaling some 200,000 casualties.
The overwhelming number of wounded created problems just in removing them from the battlefield. As late as 1862 there was no ambulance corps on either side. In August of that year, however, Union General George McClellan authorized the creation of a trained ambulance corps for the Army of the Potomac, and other armies, both Union and Confederate, soon did the same.

Risks from surgery were great. Doctors in the field hospitals had no notion of antiseptic surgery, resulting in extremely high death rates from post-operative infection. Instruments were simply wiped off on dirty surgeons aprons and used over and over again. Due to a frequent shortage of water, surgeons often went days without washing their hands or instruments, thereby passing germs from one patient to another as he treated them. Amputation of a wounded arm or leg was the most common operation, due largely to the .58 calibre Minie ball ammunition used during the war. This heavy conical-shaped bullet of soft lead distorted on impact causing large, gaping wounds filled with dirt and pieces of clothing. Its heavy weight shattered any bone it contacted. Because of the severity of the wounds and the overwhelming case load, surgeons usually elected for fast and easy amputation over trying to remove the bullet and save the limb. About 15 percent of the wounded died in the Civil War.

Contrary to popular myth, most amputees did not experience the surgery without anesthetic. Ample doses of chloroform were administered beforehand; the screams heard were usually from soldiers just informed that they would lose a limb or who were witness to the plight of other soldiers under the knife. But if supplies ran out, the surgeons would forego anesthesia, instead relying on the "surgical shock" of battle, when the patient's heart rate was greatest, to amputate.

Though roughly twice as many men died in the Civil War from disease as did from action in battle, it seems unlikely that this was the fate of Isaac3 and Robert3 Richardson. Since the dates of their deaths were listed so soon after the Battle of Stones River, in which the ranks of their regiment was decimated, we can probably assume that they died from wounds incurred in that battle. Once you accept that premise, then one can then further assume one of two possibilities. The first assumption, a rather sloppy one, is that they died on the battlefield and it took weeks to bury them, and further, that their dates of death were listed as of when they were buried. Or one can assume that Isaac3 and Robert3 Richardson were being treated at a field hospital in or near Nashville at the time of their deaths.

Both are buried at Nashville, in what is now the Nashville National Cemetery. There are 16,486 Union soldiers buried here, of which 3999 are unknowns. These men represented 730 different regiments that fought in the South. A record of the cemetery notes that a "very large proportion of the dead in this cemetery, however, were transferred from the hospital burial grounds in and around the city of Nashville." This helps confirm the contention that Isaac3 and Robert3 Richardson were both being treated in the hospital when they died from their wounds incurred at the Battle of Stones River.

Continuing with the other children of Alexander Wiley Richardson2, George Washington Richardson3 was born 20 March 1832 in Franklin County, Illinois. On 8 April 1853, he married Harriet Boster in the same county. She was born 28 October 1831, the daughter of Solomon and Elizabeth Boster, who were neighbors of the Richardson family. After their marriage, George3 and Harriet lived on a 40-acre parcel of land (NESW¼ of R4E-T5S-S2) that his father had purchased from the government land office on 3 March 1851. George, his wife and three children appear in
the 1860 census, where he is listed as a farmer.

George W. Richardson³ moved to Kansas with the rest of the family in 1866 and, according to the History of Labette County, bought 160 acres (NW¼ of R20E-T32S-S27) in Liberty Township from James Shelledy for $50. George³ apparently later sold this land and, on 9 March 1870, bought another 160 acre parcel (N½ of NE¼ of R20E-T32S-S27 and S½ of SE¼ of R20E-T32S-S22) from the government land office for $200.

The two youngest of the seven children of George W. Richardson³ died after his arrival in Kansas, and then his wife Harriet died on 4 November 1867. All three are buried in the Mason-Richardson Cemetery near Labette. George³ later remarried to Mary Kirk Clemons, by whom he had three more children. Though he continued to farm on his property, George³ became a baptist minister, for the History of Labette County mentions that "Rev. G. W. Richardson commenced preaching in a log cabin on section 27, belonging to A. W. Richardson's estate, in the fall of 1867. He continued to preach at intervals in that vicinity until the church was organized." The history also tells us that George W. Richardson³ served as the pastor of the new baptist church, built in 1877, "till 1879".

On 3 October 1881, George W. Richardson and his wife Mary sold their 160 acres in Labette County to his brother John³ for $1900 and moved to the town of Lowell, in Cherokee County, Kansas. George W. Richardson³ died on 2 January 1916, in the town of Seneca, in Newton County, Missouri.

Caroline Richardson³ was born in Franklin County, Illinois on 19 January 1834. She married James Scrivner in the same county on 24 April 1856. As with her older brother William³, who also married a member of the Scrivner family, Caroline³ may not have moved to Kansas. We have no further record of her other than a notation in family records that she died on 7 June 1896.

John Merrit Richardson³ was born 15 December 1837 in Franklin County, Illinois. Despite the fact that he was a 24-year-old unmarried man at the time that the Civil War broke out, there is no record that he served in that conflict. Rather John³ became quite religious, converting to the Baptist faith in March 1852 and became a deacon of that church at the age of 22, as described in his lengthy obituary years later. John M. Richardson³ married Sarah Jane Sturman in Hamilton County on 3 November 1864. She was the daughter of Hamilton County Judge A. M. Sturman, whose family lived at McLeansboro, Illinois.

His obituary described that John M. Richardson³ "did not have educational advantages, as the public school system had not been inaugurated at that time. Yet by study at home of such books as he could buy and attending subscription school whenever possible he procured a common education. When the public school system was inaugurated he taught several terms in district schools in Illinois, receiving from $20 to $40 per month."

With his wife and one child, he moved with the rest of the Richardson family to Labette County, Kansas in May 1866. On 2 June 1866, John M. Richardson³ bought a 160-acre tract of land (SW¼ of R20E-T33S-S2) in Fairview Township, about two miles south of the town of Labette. He continued to live on this farm until he became too old to pursue farming, selling it on 10 August 1914 at the age of 77. He and Sarah then moved six miles away to Altamont, Kansas, where she
died on 13 December 1926. "Uncle Johnny", as he was known to his friends, lived to be almost 100 years old. He became almost blind and suffered a stroke when he was 99. After lingering for six weeks, he died at the home of his daughter Flora near Labette. John\(^3\) and his wife Sarah are both buried in the Mason-Richardson Cemetery. He was the last of the children of Alexander Wiley Richardson\(^2\) to die.

Rachel Richardson\(^3\) was born in Franklin County on 10 October 1839. She married Sanford M. Webb on 14 July 1859 in the same county. They settled on two unconnected 40-acre parcels (SE¼ of NW¼ and NE¼ of SE¼ of R4E-T5S-S8) about three miles west of her parents in Franklin County. Nothing else is known about them. They may have gone to Kansas with the rest of the Richardson family and settled, as did some of the others, near Joplin, Missouri. This contention is based solely upon the tradition that the Webbs from Franklin County, Illinois were part of the family that founded Webb City, Missouri.

Minerva Richardson\(^3\) was born 16 January 1843 in Franklin County, Illinois. She married John W. Kirk, but the record of this marriage has not been found. They also went to Kansas with the others. They are listed in the 1870 Missouri census, living in Shoal Creek Township of Newton County, enumerated next to the household of her sister Sarah\(^1\). Since she and John only had one eight-month-old daughter living with them, they had probably been married only a couple of years. Therefore, they might have been married in Missouri. A "Theodore Kirk", who died on 18 September 1876 at the age of 7 months and 19 days, is buried in the Mason-Richardson Cemetery near Labette, Kansas. It is assumed that this was a child of John and Minerva\(^3\). No other record of Minerva\(^3\) or her husband is known.

Alexander W. Richardson\(^3\), obviously named for his father, was born in Franklin County, Illinois on 11 September 1845. He moved with his parents to Kansas in May 1866, and probably because of the sickness that swept through that region in the fall of that year, died on 11 November 1866 at the age of 21. Like other members of his family, Alexander\(^3\) is buried in the Mason-Richardson Cemetery near Labette. There is no record that he married.

Louisa M. Richardson\(^3\) was the youngest of the children, born 23 July 1848 in Franklin County, Illinois. She accompanied her parents to Kansas, where she married Carl Conrad Wadsack on Christmas Day of 1867 in the now abandoned town of Neola. He was always known as Charles Wadsack. In May 1866, Charles Wadsack purchased a 160-acre parcel of land (NW¼ of R20E-T33S-S12) in Fairview Township of Labette County, located about three miles south of the town of Labette. The Wadsacks lived in the Labette area for years. Family records indicate that Louisa\(^3\) died on 16 November 1921, but the place of her death is not given. She may be the "L.W." buried with a small marker bearing only that inscription in the Mason-Richardson Cemetery.

Sarah Gibbs Richardson\(^3\) was named for her maternal grandmother, the former Sarah Tillman\(^8\), and was our direct ancestor. She was born on 10 May 1830. Census records and family records, including those from the compiler's own family, indicate that Sarah\(^3\) was born in Tennessee, but she was more likely born in Wayne County, Kentucky since the family was enumerated there in 1830 when the census was taken. On 28 October 1849, she married Lewis Phillips in Franklin County, Illinois. We will continue with what is known of Sarah\(^3\) after introducing the Phillips family, next.
PHILLIPS AND WALKER FAMILIES

Attempting to trace the origins of the Phillips family has been most frustrating. The name is very common (the 45th most common name in America in the last census) and our family never lived anywhere that good records were kept. The situation with the Walker family is even worse. Walker is the 25th most common name in America today, and the first ancestor we know about with that surname was a John Walker who lived about the time of the Revolutionary War. A quick examination of most land, marriage or probate records at that time will quickly bring you to understand that about every third person with that surname was named John.

Phillips descendant Frank Rademacher of Mt. Prospect, Illinois published a family newsletter called *Phillips & Kin* for nearly 15 years. His hope in doing so was to locate the progenitor of the Phillips ancestors that came to Illinois in the early 1800s. Despite extensive research and the input of hundreds of people over the years, he never succeeded in accomplishing that goal. As a result, all that we have to go on before 1800 are family traditions. If having to base one's genealogy on family traditions were not bad enough, with the Phillips family, one can select from several conflicting ones. The various versions agree that we are descended from Jacob Phillips, who along with at least two brothers, came to Illinois about 1805. That is where the agreement ends.

One version of the story was published in the *History of Southern Illinois*, published in 1912, which contains an account of Dr. John Ezra Phillips. This account states that: "Dr. Phillips is a member of a family which settled here when this section was but a vast, heavily timbered forest, with Indians still lurking in ambush and wild game in plenty ... Jacob Phillips, Sr., the great-grandfather of Dr. Phillips, was born in North Carolina, a son of a French-Huguenot who was driven from France during the religious troubles, came to America at an early day and participated in the Revolutionary war. Jacob removed from North Carolina to Ohio in 1804, and to Illinois in 1815, settling in White (now Franklin) county, where he was one of the very earliest settlers."

One would surmise from this account that the father of Jacob Phillips was the immigrant Phillips ancestor of our family. But another family tradition, championed by a grand-aunt of Frank Rademacher, agreed that the family was active in the Revolutionary War but that Jacob's father was Joseph Phillips, and that Joseph's father was William Phillips who lived near Camden, North Carolina before 1800. She believed that the family had moved to North Carolina from one of the New England states in the late 1600s.

Another family tradition has it that the family descended from three "J's". That is, Jonathan, Joseph and Jacob Phillips. Yet another tradition has the Phillips family originating in Iredell County, North Carolina. But by far the most complete family tradition is the one that appears in the
History of the Phillips Family written by the 65-year-old descendant J. Clark Phillips in 1950. The author of this unpublished typewritten document stated in a prologue to the account that the information he had collected regarding the family had "been gathered from many sources over a long period of time". The origins of the family as stated by J. Clark Phillips are reproduced here (with minor editing for spelling and punctuation):

PETER PHILLIPS, of whom I find no record other than his name, lived somewhere along the North Carolina-Virginia border.

JOSEPH PHILLIPS, his son, who with his father and several brothers were soldiers in the Revolutionary War, is really the starting point in this narrative. Joseph served under Marion and Lee in the Carolina campaigns. He was descended from a long line of French stock who were originally called "Phillippe". They were French Huguenots (French Protestants of the 16 and 17 century) who left France because of religious persecution early in the 16th century, going first to Holland, then to England and hence to America, where they landed about 1649. At some point in their journey they Anglicized the name, changing it to Phillips.

Their first landing in this county was in what is now North Carolina from where they have spread to all parts of the country. Several other families of the same name have come from the New England states, also from New York and Penn. but they appear to be of English and Dutch origin and not related to our line.

In a letter from one John Christian Phillips, who lived in Raleigh, North Carolina about forty five years ago (he was then past 80 years of age) I secured most of the foregoing matters. He also said "in the battles of King's Mt. and the Cowpens the Phillips Clan with their long flint locks and their frontier knowledge were an important factor. Many of the hillsides along the N.C.-Va. border are dotted with their descendants to this day."

Joseph Phillips appears to have been married and had several children at the time of the Revolution. Shortly after the war about 1790, he built one or more rafts or barges and started down the Cumberland River (or one of it's tributaries). This river is formed along the Virginia-North Carolina border by the junction of several small streams, flowing in a southwesterly direction through the Cumberland Gap, thence south. There had to be a portage in Knox County, Kentucky in order to get to the Kentucky River which flows across eastern Kentucky to join the Ohio west of Cincinnati. This was one of the main thoroughfares to the west in that day. Joseph seems to have found a place to his liking now in Knox County, Kentucky, near Barbourville where he stopped, built his log home, and lived the rest of his life. He raised a large family, both boys and girls. In Knox County, Ky. he met the family of one John Walker who seems to have also had a large mixed family, and there being few from which to chose, it seems that most all the Phillips boys married Walker girls and most all the Phillips girls married Walker boys.

The Walker family were perhaps the most noted of the pioneer families of Kentucky. There is a "Walker Memorial Association" in Barbourville, Kentucky which has received considerable publicity and which holds annual meetings. A large and impressive monument has been erected to Dr. Thomas Walker who built the first cabin west of the Allegheny
Mountains about 1750. John Walker was perhaps a son of Dr. Thomas Walker.

One of the Phillips girls married a man named Sullivan. I met a great grandson of this union some years ago, he had spent most of his life in Knox County, Kentucky. His is the source of much of the foregoing, I regret that I did not spend more time with him.

About the year 1800-02 five of the Phillips brothers decided to look over the country further to the west, so they again took to the river. They seem to have made a short stop in Indiana where they had a small brush with the Indians. No one was hurt however and they continued on down the river and made their next stop in what is now Posey County, Indiana, near the mouth of the Wabash River. They seem to have stayed here two or three years. Soon, however, three of the brothers, Peter, Jacob, and John set out again, leaving two of the brothers, one of whom was named Benjamin, to become the ancestors of a long line of Phillips' whom I have met in many places. One of these brothers must have had a "Walker wife" as I find the name John Walker Phillips quite common among them.

One such John Walker Phillips became Governor of New Mexico; another being a member of the Indiana Supreme Bench; "James Phillips" of "Hoosier School Master" fame (who was a real person according to the author, and who could "spell like thunder and lightning" according to Bud Means) must have been one of the Indiana line. Another John Walker Phillips seems to be descended from another of Joseph's sons who migrated south and settled in Nashville, Tennessee. Frank Phillips of "Phillips Petroleum" fame seems to belong to this line, also Robert Phillips who lived near Sesser, Illinois, and married into the Illinois family. There is a township in NE White County, Illinois named "Phillips" and a small town called "Phillipsburg" that is just across the Wabash River from Posey County, Indiana. Carrol Phillips, a prominent farmer of Hamilton County seems to belong to the Indiana line, as well as the family near Thompsonville and one near West End.

PETER, JACOB and JOHN

JACOB PHILLIPS who was born about 1772, seems to have been married to SALLY WALKER about the time he started west. Peter who was older and John was younger do not appear to have been married at that time. The three brothers left the Ohio River at "the mouth of the Big Saline" according to an old record. This was about in 1804, according to this same record. They evidently stayed at that place for several years, as Jacob Jr. (Doc Ezra's grandfather), the eldest son (of who we have record) was born there to Jake and Sally, Nov. 8, 1811. Shortly thereafter they started in a northwesterly direction still searching for the ideal place for a home. They appear to have stopped in Knight's Prairie in Hamilton County for some time, but soon come on to what is now Northern Township in Franklin County, where they established their home sometime in 1814.

Most of the information given in this account cannot be verified today. Those parts that can do not hold up well to much scrutiny. A search of Revolutionary War rosters found a number of men named Joseph Phillips who fought in that war, but nearly all of them were from northern colonies. One Joseph Phillips fought for the 2nd North Carolina Regiment and a Joseph Phillips fought for the 15th Virginia Regiment, though the records indicate that the latter man deserted. There were also thirteen men named Peter Phillips (or some close variation of the name) that fought in the
Revolutionary War, but all of them were from New York or a New England colony.

Though the Cumberland River starts in the mountains on the border of Kentucky and Virginia (not the North Carolina-Virginia border), it does flow through Barbourville, Kentucky in present-day Knox County. Knox County formed from Lincoln County in 1800, which then occupied nearly half of the present-day state of Kentucky. A search of early records in both counties shows the names of Joseph Phillips and John Walker, but no connection to these men can be made. An index of old Kentucky deeds and land entries yields the names of one or more men named Joseph Phillips who settled on Otter Creek in Lincoln County, Kentucky about 1780-1783, but no such stream exists in present-day Knox County.

Dr. Thomas Walker, mentioned in the account, was quite famous. He was probably the first white man to ever enter the present-day state of Kentucky, when he made an expedition there in 1750, thirteen years before Daniel Boone "discovered" the same route. Walker Mountain in southwest Virginia, near where the Wileys and Richardsons lived, was named for him. He also named the Cumberland Gap and the Cumberland River after the Duke of Cumberland. Though Dr. Thomas Walker had both a brother and a son named John, we are not related to them. His son, John Walker, a United States senator from Virginia in 1790, died of a ruptured artery on 2 December 1809 in Orange County, Virginia while he was in his carriage on his way to Philadelphia to undergo "a surgical operation".

Regarding some of the other statements made by J. Clark Phillips, a check of the list of the governors of New Mexico reveals no one by the name of Phillips. And though two men named Frank and Lee Phillips started the petroleum company that still bears their name, the jury remains out on a connection between them and our family. Their family was reportedly from New England, but it is curious that the father of the two brothers was born along the Ohio River in Meigs County, Ohio in 1844 and named Lewis Franklin Phillips, with two given names that pop up more than once in our Phillips family.

As with other Phillips family researchers over the last 25 years, all personal attempts by the compiler to trace the Phillips family proved unsuccessful. Numerous published genealogies of various Phillips families were examined without any obvious connection to our family. In the course of the research, there were some interesting possibilities that came to light. For example, there was a Peter Phillips who died in Stewart County, Tennessee in 1804, who mentions his sons Lewis, Peter and Jacob. Then there was a Lewis Phillips who lived in Anson County, North Carolina about 1780 who reportedly had a son named William. And there was a John Phillips who lived in Moore County, North Carolina about 1755 who had a son named Lewis Phillips, born there in 1765. The given name "Lewis" is rather uncommon and since it was repeated several times in our Phillips family, it bears scrutiny anytime you find it.

Since all family traditions converge with regard to Joseph Phillips being the father of the "five brothers" who came to Illinois sometime after 1800, he is considered the first Phillips ancestor of whom we can be certain. Our ancestor may have been the Joseph Phillips who appears in the Logan County, Kentucky tax list for 1795 for that one year only. The next year a Wm. Phelps and Julian Phelps appear, the latter who might have been a widow "Julianne". In 1797 only Wm. Phelps is listed and the tax lists are missing for the following year. In 1799, there appear the names Wm. Phillips, Peter Phillips and Jacob Phillips. The next year, a William Phillips, Peter Phillips and
Jacob Phillips appear in the tax list again. Finally, in 1801, the names Jacob Phillips and Peter Phillips appear in the tax lists for Logan County for the last time, while that of a William Phillips continues.

It appears that about 1802, this Peter and Jacob Phillips had moved from the area. William Phillips might have stayed since a will can be found for a person of that name in Logan County, dated 1804 and probated in 1813. It was believed by Frank Rademacher that the family went to Ohio from Kentucky, but only stayed there for a few years, then moved to Illinois. This fits the family tradition that the Phillips brothers floated down the Ohio River on river rafts. Helping confirm the hypothesis of a Logan County connection is the fact that other family names like Clark, Creek, Taylor, Maulding and Ward appear in the tax lists for that county that later appear in Franklin County, Illinois where Jacob and Peter Phillips settled. And some of the Clarks that had been in Logan County stayed in Ohio.

In the History of Alexander, Union and Pulaski Counties, published in 1883, there appears an account that cannot be ignored. It mentions the Phillips and Clark families, who appear to have traveled together to Illinois. Frank Rademacher, for one, believed that the Phillips mentioned in the following account may have been Jacob Phillips. The compiler considers this idea rather fanciful, but the account will be reproduced here anyway, if for no other reason, because it is an interesting story:

The earliest history of which we have any accurate account of the location where Mound City now stands dates back to 1812, that being the time of the Indian massacre, and as it tells of the life and fate of many early pioneers in Illinois, we give the history of the massacre, as told by Thomas Falker, and as written by Rev. E. B. Olmstead, and published in the newspapers some years ago.

Thomas Falker, who died in Pulaski County in 1859, gave the facts of the massacre of the whites where Mound City now stands. The first white settlers of the extreme southern portion of Illinois were Tennesseans but it is not generally known that they were driven here by an earthquake, which gave its first shake December 16, 1811. The present site of Cairo was then known as Bird's Point. Two families, one named Clark and the other Phillips, lived near where is now Mound City. A man named Conyer had settled below the old town, America, and a Mr. Lyerle, a short distance above, and a man named Humphrey lived where Lower Caledonia now stands. They were all the Inhabitants of the country, from the mouth of the Ohio to Grand Chain--twenty miles. They had made but small improvement, and as the land had not yet come into market, of course they did not own the soil. The family of Clark consisted of only himself and wife; their children were grown up and elsewhere, but paid them an occasional visit. The other family near Mound City, consisted of Mrs. Phillips and a son and daughter nearly grown and a man named Kenady. The family originally were from Tennessee, and removed from that State into what is now Union County. Mr. Phillips having occasion to return to Tennessee, on business, Kenady became acquainted with his wife and persuaded her to abandon Phillips and live with him. No disturbance followed this delinquency, and the easy morals of the times seems to have winked at it.

In the fall of 1812, these families were enjoying their usual quiet, when some Indians, ten in number, paid them an unexpected visit. They belonged to the Creek tribe, which...
inhabited the lower part of Kentucky, and had been exiled and outlawed for some supposed outrages committed on their own nation. They were known to the inhabitants of that country as the "outlawed Indians," and on the occasion of this unwelcome visit were returning from a tour in the Northern part of the territory, where they had been to see some other tribes. On the same day, Mr. Phillips returned home, accompanied by a Mr. Shaver, who lived in Union County, and whose wife Mrs. Phillips had been attending in her sickness.

The cabin of Clark stood near the west boundary line of what is Mound City; that of Mrs. Phillips a short distance above, on the next elevation. Shaver stopped at Clark's and fastened his horse near the back door. When he saw the Indians, he expressed apprehension to Clark, but he told him he was acquainted with them, had traded with them, and did not suppose they had any bad intentions. Yet when Clark on one occasion went out to the smoke house Shaver saw by the pallor of his face that he was much alarmed. It was his opinion that Clark had seen or overheard through the openings of the house enough to satisfy him of the hostile intentions of the savages, but feared to speak to it lest Shaver should mount his horse and leave him to his fate. The Indians asked for something to eat. Mrs. Clark told them if they would grind some corn on the hand mill she would prepare them a meal. They did so and partook of the hospitality of a family they fully intended to butcher before night.

The Indians were aimed with guns and tomahawks; one of them came to Shaver and felt the muscles of his thighs, his knees, etc., as though he wished to judge of his ability to run. "Do you wish to run a race?" said Shaver. "No." The situation of the white settlers were becoming more alarming. They hoped, after the Indians had eaten, they would take their departure, but they sauntered around as if unwilling to do so. It was Shaver's intentions to carry home some whiskey, but Clark was afraid to draw it while the Indians were there. At length, five of the Indians went up to Mrs. Phillips'; the other five remained at Clark's. Two of the latter took their station with apparent carelessness in the front door (next the river), and two more stood near the fire-place, where sat Mr. and Mrs. Clark and Shaver. The latter happening to look at the Indians in the front door, saw one of them make a signal in the direction of Mrs. Phillips', which was in sight, by striking his hands together vertically several times. Directly he heard screams and shouts in that direction, and the next instant receiving a stunning blow on his head, from the hatchet of the Indian who stood near him. He fell forward, but being a powerful man, he dashed between the two Indians at the back door and ran for his horse, which, as said, was fastened near the back door. He soon saw however, his retreat in that direction would be cut-off, so he ran down the river bank, with two of the Indians in full pursuit. They doubtless supposed, as Shaver was already wounded, he would fall an easy prey; but he was fleet of foot, and then he was running for his life. Blinded by the blood which poured down his face, and which he occasionally dashed away with his hand, he made for the bayou below the present Marine Ways. A hatchet just missed his head and fell many yards in front of him. His first impulse was to pick it up and defend himself, but a moment's reflection convinced him the chances were too much against him. It was a half mile or so to the bayou; Shaver gained it in advance of the Indians. It was quite full and partially frozen over. He plunged in and gained the opposite shore. The Indians paused on the bank, afraid to follow. They told him he was a brave, and endeavored to induce him to return. Tradition says he addressed some very strong language to the Indians and made his way to the Union County settlements. His escape, considering the circumstances, was wonderful. The Indians murdered Clark and his wife, Mrs. Phillips, her
son and daughter and Kenaday. They ripped up the feather beds, destroyed the furniture and carried off whatever struck their fancy, including Shaver's fine horse. They crossed the river into Kentucky and were followed by the citizens of the settlement in Union County for some distance, but no trace of them could be found.

A few days after, Capt. Phillips, who was stationed at Fort Massac, came down with a company of men to bury the dead. A shocking sight met their gaze. Clark and his wife were found in their house dead. The body of young William Phillips was found drifted ashore about a mile below Mound City. His sister was not found; one of her slippers was found on the bank of the river. It is supposed she and her brother got into a skiff and were shot down before they could get away. Kenaday was found some distance from the cabin of Mrs. Phillips. His shoulder and back much cut in gashes by the tomahawks of the savages. The body of Mrs. Phillips was found, and also the body of her unborn babe, impaled upon a stake.

From all accounts as well as the scanty records that can be found, the first known member of our branch of the Phillips family was Joseph Phillips\(^1\), about whom nothing else is known. We know only that he had at least the following children:

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. Peter Phillips(^2)</td>
<td>b. 1769</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>m. 4 Mar 1819 Mary Hughes @ White Co. IL</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>d. 1846 @ Stoddard County, Missouri</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>+ 2. Jacob Phillips(^2)</td>
<td>b. 1772</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>m. 19 Jul 1838 (1) Sally Walker</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>(2) Mary Taylor @ Franklin Co. IL</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>d. 24 Jul 1842 @ Franklin County, Illinois</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. John Phillips(^2)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

There were undoubtedly other children. Family tradition tells of at least two other brothers, including one named Benjamin, as well as a sister who married a Sullivan and a sister who married a Walker. There is a record of a Benjamin Phillips who obtained land on the Scioto River in Ohio in 1804. This coordinates well with the rest of the family tradition, except for the "names and places". In the experience of the compiler, that's the best one can expect from such traditions.

There is a story in the Phillips family about a family bible that was brought with the brothers to Illinois, which contained some notes mentioning the trip to Illinois. No one today knows where the bible is, so its contents cannot be verified. But there supposedly was mention of the family coming down river by river boat and stopping for a time, presumably in Ohio or Indiana. The bible was said to have described troubles with Indians there, causing the family to move on down the Ohio River.

Almost nothing is known of John Phillips\(^2\). He and Peter\(^2\) supposedly lived with Jacob\(^2\) and Sally for several years, but John\(^2\) eventually moved west and settled near Farmington, Missouri where he raised a family. The name of his wife or children is not known, except that he was said to have had one daughter named Rado, probably short for Eldorado. That name would figure prominently in future generations in the Phillips family. Nothing else is known of him.

Peter Phillips\(^2\) was born in 1769 according to family records, and was the oldest of the three brothers. He married Mary Hughes on 4 March 1819 in White County (now Franklin or Hamilton County), Illinois, which may not have been his first marriage. She was born about 1782 in North
Carolina. For a number of years, he and his brother Jacob² moved together and lived in the same places. Therefore, many of the records regarding Peter² will be mentioned in the description of Jacob². Only two children from his marriage to Mary are known. He had a son named Benjamin Franklin Phillips, born 7 January 1820, who married Susannah Wilfong. Benjamin died 7 March 1870 in Franklin County, Illinois, and he and his wife are buried in the Phillips Cemetery. The second child was Sally (or Sarah) Phillips who was born about 1825, married a man with the last name of Johnson, and relocated to Union County, Illinois.

Peter Phillips² lost his land in Franklin County, Illinois as a result of a judgement of the Illinois Supreme Court. The details of this case are not known but Peter² had his land sold by the sheriff on 6 April 1833 to satisfy the judgement. No record of Peter² can be found in Illinois after this date. We know that Peter² moved west to Stoddard County, Missouri by 1840, when he appears in the census there. There is a family tradition that his younger brother John² moved to Missouri about this same time, so it is likely that they traveled there together. Peter Phillips² died in Stoddard County, Missouri in 1846. Mary was still alive in the 1850 census, living with her son Benjamin.

Jacob Phillips² moved to Illinois about 1804-1806, according to family tradition. Legend tells us that after coming down the Ohio River, the three brothers settled near the mouth of the Big Saline River. In 1886, a son of Jacob² recorded that "Father moovd to this country While it was a teritory Some Time about the year 1805 & settled on the Ohio River about the mouth of the Big Saline River". Records bear out this information. A census was taken in the Indiana Territory in 1807, which at that time included a small part of present-day Illinois. In Knox County, which included a small portion of southeastern Illinois, appears the name Jacob Phillips. No record exists that tells when they moved onto the land they settled, since at the time they arrived there were no land offices and no way to stake a claim.

Land offices had been established at Vincennes and Kaskaskia in the new territory that became Illinois as early as 1804. But their only job was to settle years-old French claims in the area, and these offices did not sell land to new settlers until some years later. The protracted delay in the opening of the area to new land sales resulted in a messy situation for both the government and the settlers. When the first territorial legislature met in 1812, they declared that "from the establishment of a land office in the Territory several years ago, a general opinion prevailed that the public land would shortly thereafter be offered for sale, whereby the great majority of the citizens now residing in the Territory were induced to move into it and settle themselves, hoping that they would have an opportunity of purchasing the land they occupied ...".

The legislature further declared that "those good people have made valuable and permanent improvements on the land they thus occupied (at the same time that they have risked their lives in defending it against the barbarous savages who invaded it), but are now in danger of losing the whole value of their labor by competition at the sales or by the holders of unlocated claims being permitted to locate on their improvements." This was because the sale of land by the government at this time was to the highest bidder, as long as land sold for the minimum price of $2.00 per acre set by the government. After land had once been offered at public sale without finding a purchaser, it could then be bought at private sale for the minimum price.

In the eyes of the law, settlers like Jacob Phillips² were intruders with no legal rights to the land they occupied. In the past, Congress had usually refused to recognize the claim of such settlers on
the grounds that to do so would encourage illegal settlement. But the opening of land sales in Illinois had been postponed for so long that Congress passed an act on 5 February 1813 that was of great importance to the people of that territory. The act allowed for Illinois settlers who had "actually inhabited and cultivated a tract of land" to be granted a preemption right to no more than a quarter section of the land they occupied, as long as they acted within two weeks of the opening of sales in the district in which they lived. The terms of the sale was the same as for other sales, but the settler was relieved from any danger of having to bid against others for the land that he had occupied.

It was not until 1814, just four years before Illinois became a state, that land finally began being offered for sale anywhere in that territory. Different districts were opened up at different times over the next six years and we can probably assume that Jacob Phillips 2, with the preemption right granted him by Congress, purchased the land he occupied soon after it was made available. From the Shawneetown Land Entry records we find that Jacob Phillips 2 claimed 160 acres (NW¼ of R10E-T11S-S17) in what would today be Hardin County, Illinois. True to the family tradition, the land was just south of the Saline River, no more than a mile from where it empties into the Ohio. No record of Peter 2 having a claim near the Saline exists, helping to confirm the tradition that he and John 2 lived with their brother Jacob 2.

The reader may be wondering why the Saline River was so named, since salt water doesn't flow from inland rivers. Salt was extremely important to the early pioneer. Without salt to cure his meat, there was no way to lay in provisions for the winter, and that might mean the difference between starvation and survival. Early explorers had discovered that the region near the mouth of the Saline River had strong brine springs and soon wells were dug and furnaces built to harvest the salt. The wood-fueled furnaces would evaporate the water from the salt, and it took 125 to 280 gallons of brine to procure a bushel (50 pounds) of salt. The production of salt near the Saline River began as early as 1807 and, at one time, as many as a thousand people were involved in the production of the salt. By 1819, over 500 bushels of salt per day were produced at the salt works. The area supplied salt to settlers for many miles around.

The fuel required to evaporate such an immense amount of water eventually stripped the country of timber for miles around. In the beginning, the furnaces were built near the springs and salt wells, but the fuel requirements finally required the hauling of wood from a considerable distance. The ingenious pioneers soon figured it might be easier to take the water to the wood and eventually built what are thought to be the first pipelines ever constructed in this country. Pipes were made from logs between ten and sixteen inches in diameter which were bored lengthwise with holes about four inches in diameter. At first, the holes were bored by hand, and later by a horse-powered device (a one horsepower drill?). The logs were then reamed at one end and tapered at the other. With iron bands around the reamed end to prevent splitting, the logs were jammed tightly together to form a wooden pipeline. A map prepared about 1816 shows seven of these pipelines in use leading from the salt springs, some of which were more than two miles in length.

What any of this had to do with Jacob Phillips 2 is not known, but since he lived in such close proximity to the area, there is a good chance that he worked in some capacity in the salt-making trade for a time as well as farming his claim. The local salt industry required many "axemen, kettlemen, coopers, packers, timekeepers, foremen, mule drivers, derrick builders, tank makers", etc. The area directly around the salt works was owned by the government and individual operators
obtained leases to make and sell the salt. In an early form of government regulation, the salt was "not to sell for more than 50 cents per bushel." As with most government price controls, the regulation was often circumvented, and black market salt sold widely for considerably higher prices.

The skimpy records available show that Jacob Phillips\(^2\) served during the War of 1812. He was enrolled as a private in Captain Leonard White's Company of Infantry in the Illinois Militia, which was called into service "for the defence of the frontiers of Illinois Territory against the hostile Indians". His service began 13 March 1813 and expired 10 June of the same year. Jacob\(^2\) received eight dollars per month for his 90 days of service, for a total of $23.56. No additional records regarding his War of 1812 service are available.

The family tradition is that about this time the Phillips brothers traveled "in a Northwesterly direction still searching for the ideal place for a home." A son of Jacob Phillips\(^2\), Peter\(^3\), wrote down some notes regarding his father in 1886. In those notes, with regard to Franklin County, Illinois, he wrote "Father mooved to this county May 1st 1817". Again records confirm this information. In the Federal Land Tract Book at the Shawneetown Land Office is an application for land filed by Jacob Phillips\(^2\) in White County, Illinois dated 29 April 1817 (Franklin County was formed in 1818 from parts of White County). The first claim for 160 acres (NE¼ of R4E-T5S-S23) was followed by another claim dated 13 November 1833, in which he purchased an adjoining 80 acres (W½ of NW¼ of R4E-T5S-S24).

Jacob Phillips\(^2\) supposedly selected the site for his claim in Franklin County because they found a good spring, some prairie land that could be cultivated without having to clear it, and plenty of timber for buildings, fences and firewood. They built a log cabin on the land and Jacob\(^2\) and Sally lived in this location the rest of their lives. The spring that was on the land flowed until a few years ago, when considerable reshaping of the land by modern farming equipment caused it to cease flowing. On the northwest corner of his property, Jacob Phillips\(^2\) built a log church that was called the Gilgal Church, that was still standing as late as 1910. Gilgal Cemetery was established beside the church, which today serves as the only reminder of where this church was located. Jacob's log cabin stood on the side of a slight hill about 300 yards east and about a hundred yards south of the cemetery. For those interested, Gilgal is a place on "the plains of Jericho" mentioned in the Bible where the Israelites first encamped after crossing the Jordan.

At the time Jacob Phillips\(^2\) bought his land, the government permitted the settler to pay for it on credit, a system later abandoned because of abuse by speculators. The government required that one-twentieth of the purchase amount be paid down to hold the land, and the balance of 25 percent was due within forty days. The remaining 75 percent was due in three equal installments at the end of two, three and four years from the date of entry. No interest was charged if payments were promptly made; if not, six percent interest was charged from the date of sale. A discount of eight percent was allowed on all advance payments. If the installments were not all paid at the end of five years from the date of entry, the land reverted to the United States and was offered at public auction. Should it then bring more than the amount still due with interest, the balance went to the original purchaser.

The entries at the Shawneetown Land Office show the account that Jacob Phillips\(^2\) kept with the federal government. On the day he filed the claim, Jacob\(^2\) paid $80, the required 25 percent for the 160-acre claim. Just short of two years later, on 23 April 1819, Jacob\(^2\) paid another $80, but
received an eleven cent discount for paying six days early. On 14 March 1820, he paid another $80, this time receiving a discount of 80 cents for being even earlier with his payment. Jacob Phillips received his final payment on 26 July 1822 and was charged 99 cents in interest for being late. The records show that a patent for the land was granted to Jacob on 7 June 1824.

The older brother, Peter Phillips, married on 4 March 1819, and probably inspired by his new responsibility as a husband (it appears that he lived unmarried with his brother Jacob until he was about 50), filed a claim for land in Franklin County twelve days later. On 16 March 1819, Peter claimed 80 acres (which was the minimum claim size for specified sections in each township beginning in 1817) located about a mile south of where Jacob lived. This land entry (E½ of SE¼ of R4E-T5S-S26) was augmented by the claim on another 80 acres (E½ of NE¼ of R4E-T5S-S26) on 18 July 1820. This is the land that was ultimately sold by the Franklin County Sheriff in 1833 as a result of the judgement against Peter handed down by the Illinois Supreme Court.

Before their land claims were filed, it appears that Jacob and Peter got into a disagreement with other men regarding the possible boundaries of the land that they settled. In the 1817 White County, Illinois court records appears the following entry: "Peter Phillips and Jacob Phillips, plaintiffs, against William Hungate and Andrew Vance, defendants: In trespass By order of the plaintiff in his proper person, it is ordered that the suit be dismissed." Immediately below that is the entry: "William Hungate, plaintiff, against Jacob Phillips and Peter Phillips, defendants: In trespass vi et armis. By order of the plaintiff in his proper person it is ordered that the suit be dismissed." The following entry appeared below that: "Peter Phillips, plaintiff, against Andrew Vance, defendant: In trespass; ordered that the suit be laid over till to-morrow." It is not known what the circumstances were behind these lawsuits, and whether the one involving only Peter might have been connected in some way to the fact that his land was seized in 1833.

When Illinois entered the union as the twenty first state in 1818, a state-wide census was conducted to see how many people lived there. The name "Jacob phillips" was listed with two "free white males 21 yr. & upward" and nine "other white inhabitants" in his household. The two males are presumably Jacob and Peter. It is not clear who the other nine individuals are, since Jacob's family could not account for all those. In the 1820 federal census taken two years later, the now married and land-owning Peter Phillips appears with his own household of five people (leading one to suspect that either Mary Hughes was a middle-aged widow with children or Peter had children by an earlier unknown marriage). Jacob Phillips is listed with two white males over 21 and six others in his household, possibly indicating that his younger brother John was living with him. Both Jacob and Peter Phillips appear in the 1830 census for Franklin County. Jacob alone appears in the 1840 census, since Peter had moved to Stoddard County, Missouri by this time.

The book *Franklin County History* tells us that in the early days of Franklin County, Frankfort was the county seat (today Benton is). The town grew around the original settlement of Francis Jordan. Later Francis Jordan's Fort was just called Francis' Fort, and later yet, shortened to Frank's Fort, and still later to Frankfort. A road was laid out between that town and McLeansboro in what became neighboring Hamilton County. The route for the road was selected in a rather unusual fashion, but in a way that demonstrates the ingenuity of our pioneer forefathers: they selected a mare and colt to do the surveying. The colt was left at McLeansboro and the mare was taken to Frankfort and turned loose. Following the instinct of nature, she took the most direct line back home to her colt. Men followed her, making blaze marks on the trees, and this later became the road.
The same book describes the wheat grown in the early years of the county, which was cut by hand using a reap hook. The wheat was then tied into sheaves and threshed by having horses walk on it. The wheat was sacked and thrown across a horse and taken to a mill to be ground into flour. The early mills for grinding wheat or corn were burr horse mills, powered by one or more horses. Later, water mills were developed which performed the same task more efficiently. The first water mill built in Franklin County was built by Jacob Phillips in 1834 on Middle Fork Creek about a mile south of his home. Jacob continued to operate this mill until his death in 1842. Today a marker that was erected in 1918 indicates the location of that early water-driven mill, although the marker itself is now almost impossible to find.

Nothing is known about the origins of the Sally Walker that Jacob Phillips married, other than her father's name was John Walker. It is not known where or when Sally and Jacob married. It has been suggested that perhaps Sally was the second wife of Jacob and that his oldest son, born in 1811 near the mouth of the Saline River, was not from Sally. However, no evidence to support this claim exists. Many stories were handed down in the Phillips family about "Sally Walker". It was said she was a tall woman with blue eyes and straight black hair. Described as having a "vivid personality", Sally was said to have been resourceful, entertaining and blessed with tireless energy. Despite the fact that there were no schools and few people on the frontier were literate in her day, she taught all of her children to read, write and perform elementary math.

It was also said that Sally was an excellent shot with a rifle. She was described as being able to swing an ax, handle her end of a cross-cut saw or drive an ox team along with any man. Despite her physical energy, she died on 27 February 1836 from pneumonia, a terrible killer on the frontier. After her death, on 19 July 1838, Jacob married a widow named Mary (Polly) Brunner, whose maiden name had been Taylor, by whom he had two more daughters. Jacob Phillips died, also of pneumonia, on 24 July 1842. Both he and Sally are buried in Gilgal Cemetery.

In August 1893, their son Peter arranged to hold a family reunion at the cemetery, and had was planning to erect a monument over his parents' graves. However, Peter suffered a stroke and died on 4 July 1893. Despite that, the reunion was held and the monument erected anyway. Today, Gilgal Cemetery has been abandoned and is in a sad state of neglect. Were it not for the efforts of George M. Phillips, a descendant of Jacob who still lives in the area, the cemetery might be lost forever. George still occasionally mows the cemetery grounds and looks after it. Though it once held many graves, the cemetery now contains just the single monument to Jacob and Sally.

Jacob Phillips had the following children, all born in Illinois. The first ten were by the former Sally Walker and the last two by the former Mary (Taylor) Brunner:

1. Jacob Phillips  
   b. 8 Nov 1811 @ Gallatin County, Illinois  
   m. 23 Apr 1835 Nancy Aikin @ Franklin Co. IL  
   d. Nov 1841 @ Franklin County, Illinois

2. Peter Phillips  
   b. 5 Jan 1817 @ White County, Illinois  
   m. 19 May 1836 (1) Ellen Aikin @ Franklin Co. IL  
   m. 7 Apr 1850 (2) Maria Harrison @ Franklin Co.  
   m. 4 Mar 1860 (3) Frances Clark @ Franklin Co.  
   m. 12 Mar 1878 (4) Minerva Harrison @ Franklin  
   d. 4 Jul 1893 @ Franklin County, Illinois

3. Sally Phillips  
   b. 5 Jan 1817 @ White County, Illinois  
   m. 22 Oct 1835 Lazarus C. Webb @ Franklin Co. IL

CHAPTER 20 326 BIOG/HIST
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>Full Name</th>
<th>Birth Date</th>
<th>Birth Place</th>
<th>Marriage Details</th>
<th>Death Date</th>
<th>Death Place</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>David Phillips</td>
<td>17 Apr 1819</td>
<td>Franklin County, Illinois</td>
<td></td>
<td>22 Dec 1904</td>
<td>Franklin County, Illinois</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>William Phillips</td>
<td>3 Jun 1821</td>
<td>Franklin County, Illinois</td>
<td>m. Sarah Boster</td>
<td>8 Mar 1879</td>
<td>Franklin County, Illinois</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>Hannah Phillips</td>
<td>12 Jun 1823</td>
<td>Franklin County, Illinois</td>
<td>m. Amzey G. Elkins</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Elizabeth Phillips</td>
<td>5 Sep 1825</td>
<td>Franklin County, Illinois</td>
<td>m. John Kirk</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Malinda Phillips</td>
<td>25 Sep 1827</td>
<td>Franklin County, Illinois</td>
<td>m. 1 Apr 1845 (1) John S. King @ Franklin Co. m. 12 Jul 1859 (2) Robert Phillips @ Franklin Co. m. (3) Joshua Teague</td>
<td>8 Mar 1879</td>
<td>Franklin County, Illinois</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>Lewis Phillips</td>
<td>24 Apr 1830</td>
<td>Franklin County, Illinois</td>
<td>m. Sarah G. Richardson @ Franklin Co.</td>
<td>24 Oct 1916</td>
<td>Franklin County, Illinois</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>Andrew Walker Phillips</td>
<td>13 Apr 1832</td>
<td>Franklin County, Illinois</td>
<td>m. 2 Mar 1853 Martha Jane Byars @ Adams Co. IL m. 15 Apr 1906 @ Clayton, Adams County, Illinois</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>Mary A. Phillips</td>
<td>22 Jun 1839</td>
<td>Franklin County, Illinois</td>
<td>m. Wilson Rice</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
<td>Louisa J. Phillips</td>
<td>20 Mar 1841</td>
<td>Franklin County, Illinois</td>
<td>m. ----- Obenchain</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

There was apparently another unnamed daughter who died as an infant. In Gilgal Cemetery, the large stone that marks the grave of Jacob and Sally also has the inscription "Infant Dau of J. & S. Phillips".

**Jacob Phillips** (Jr.) was born in Gallatin County, Illinois on 8 November 1811, while the family lived near the Saline River in what today would be Hardin County. On 6 April 1833, when he was only 21 years old, he purchased from the Sheriff of Franklin County the land that had belonged to his uncle Peter Phillips. Jacob paid $116, or 72½ cents per acre, for the 160 acres that had been taken from his uncle Peter after the Illinois Supreme Court decided against him. Jacob served in the Black Hawk War as a First Lieutenant in Captain George Bowyer's Company of Mounted Volunteers. This was the same militia company in which Alexander Wiley Richardson served. Like the others in his unit, Jacob served from 15 May 1832 until 7 August 1832.

On 23 April 1835, Jacob married Nancy Aikin, who was born 26 September 1814, the daughter of James W. and Jane (McLean) Aikin. Nancy's parents were first cousins. Her father was also known as "Squire Jimmy". Their family name was often spelled Akin, Aiken or Aken, and the town of Akin, Illinois was named after them. On 31 January 1838, Jacob Phillips bought federal land in Hamilton County, east of Akin and near where his wife's parents lived. However, there is no evidence that he ever lived on this land. Jacob died in November 1841 at the age of only 30. His grandson, Dr. Ezra Phillips, referred to Jacob in his biographical sketch years later, saying that "the hardships of soldier life undermined his health and hastened his death."

Following his death, his widow Nancy gave birth to their fifth child. She later attempted to receive bounty land as a result of her husband's service in the Black Hawk War. It is from these
documents, in which she had to prove her marriage to him, when he was born and when he died, that we know what we do about Jacob³. Both he and Nancy are buried in the Liberty Church Cemetery in Franklin County, Illinois.

**Peter Phillips³** was one of a pair of twins born on 5 January 1817 in White County (today Franklin County), Illinois. He was arguably the most interesting of the children of Jacob², and without a doubt the most prolific, since he had 21 children. Much more is known about him than the other children, even our own ancestor. Peter³ received part of the original homestead (W½ of NW¼ of R4E-T5S-S24) from his father in a gift deed dated 12 October 1840. The deed was signed and sealed in the presence of the Justice of the Peace Alexander Wiley Richardson². He eventually owned the 160-acre farm owned by his father when he paid off his brothers and sisters in exchange for quit-claims against the property in the 1850s. Peter Phillips³ became a successful merchant and farmer and, for the time, accumulated considerable wealth and prominence. He dabbled in local politics and became one of the most respected and influential citizens of the county. It has also been noted that he was a darn good carpenter and blacksmith. Peter³ bought a significant amount of federal land, at one time owning more than a thousand acres.

In 1858, he moved into Benton, the county seat of Franklin County. Here he operated a general store and had a home that was located where the County Jail now stands. When the Civil War broke out, Peter² enlisted in 1862 as a First Sergeant in Company "F" of the 15th Illinois Cavalry. Before leaving, he moved his family to a farm (in R4E-T5S-S31) that he had owned for several years and where he had built a three-room house he had yet to occupy. During the war, Peter served in the Vicksburg campaign under General Grant. His eldest son, John Walker Phillips, also enlisted but in a different regiment. That left his son Joseph, who was about 16, at home to look after the family. Joseph did for awhile, but eventually took the best horse left at home, lied about his age, and went off to war too. By pure coincidence, he was assigned to the same cavalry regiment as his father. Peter³ knew nothing about this until he recognized the horse, which was called *Old Dave*, at an inspection one day. Peter Phillips³ was made a First Lieutenant in July 1863 and was discharged in October 1864 at Helena, Arkansas. He returned home, having never been wounded.

In 1876, he was elected to the state legislature for a two-year term. About 1878, he opened another general store, which was located just west of his home and built a blacksmith shop across the road from the store. Twelve lots were laid out for Peter³ on 11 September 1882 and he called the town *Cuba*, a name that had been applied to the general area for some time. Every successful town had to have a post office, so Peter Phillips³ applied for a post office to be named *Cuba*. The name was rejected because there was already another Cuba post office in Illinois. Several other names were suggested and refused. Finally the Post Office Department suggested the name *Gresham*, in honor of the Postmaster General under President Chester Arthur. This name was accepted and the Gresham, Illinois post office opened on 1 August 1883.

Several other businesses, including a sawmill, another store, a restaurant, a woodworking shop and a barber shop soon opened. The tiny town, still called "Little Cuba" by the locals, flourished for ten years. But when Peter Phillips³ died in 1893, the store and post office were sold at a public auction to Moses Webb, who operated the business for a few years, sold it to another man, and then bought it back from him. The post office closed 11 December 1901. Moses Webb became too old to run the store anymore and eventually closed it. The other shops moved or closed and the town eventually disappeared. Today there are no buildings at all where Peter Phillips³ ran his successful
businesses.

Peter³ married first, on 19 May 1836, Ellen Aikin, who was the younger sister of the Nancy Aikin just mentioned. Peter³ met Ellen when he visited his older brother's farm and Ellen was also there visiting. Peter³ and Ellen, who was born 30 May 1818, had seven children before she died on 6 July 1848 at the age of 30. Peter³ remarried on 7 April 1850 to 21-year-old Maria L. Harrison, by whom he had another five children before she died on 18 March 1859, also at the age of 30. Peter's third wife was Frances Clark, who always went by the nickname "Frankie". She was also 21 years old when Peter³ married her on 4 March 1860, even though he was 43 at the time.

Presumably Peter Phillips³ kept hoping by marrying a young woman he would find one that would not die on him. He would be disappointed yet a third time, when on 6 September 1876, Frances died of pneumonia at the age of 38 after giving him nine more children. Peter may have decided to change his tactics after the loss of his third wife. On 12 March 1878, he married for a fourth time, choosing this time 55-year-old Minerva L. Harrison, the cousin of his second wife. Perhaps Peter³ thought she had withstood the test of time. But the truth was that Peter³ simply needed a wife to take care of his home.

After his third wife died, Peter³ tried having relatives live with him and care for the house and children, but this situation did not work well. The cooking and housekeeping chores eventually fell to the oldest child left at home, 17-year-old Henry. Henry's brother would later describe "We had eaten Henry's cooking until we hated to go to the table. He was doing the best he could but Henry was never cut out for housework and the rest of us kids were too small to help much." Peter³ probably disliked his son's cooking as well, and had to do something.

Minerva L. Harrison was born on 22 August 1822, the daughter of Lemuel Harrison, who was from Virginia and was supposedly related to Presidents William Henry Harrison and Benjamin Harrison. On 12 August 1841, Minerva had married William Combs, an Englishman who was a cabinet and furniture maker. When they were still courting, Minerva's father had forbidden her to see Combs because he ate tomatoes. Most everyone in those days called them "French apples" and thought that they were poisonous. It was a long time before Combs was able to persuade Minerva to try one. After their marriage, Minerva had nine children by her husband, of whom four died in infancy.

When the Civil War broke out, William Combs and his oldest son Marion enlisted after moving the rest of his family to DuQuoin, Illinois. Both returned from the war, but each had contracted tuberculosis during the conflict. Within a short time three of the other four children contracted the disease as well. William Combs died in 1869 and the oldest son Marion took over support of the family. Marion became a minister and moved the family to Rockwood, Illinois where he established a ministry. Marion Combs died in 1872 from tuberculosis. He had married not long before he died and his wife also contracted the disease and died soon after Marion.

By this time, Minerva was in a desperate situation. Her family was sick and she had no income. But Minerva had a sister named Charlotte who had married a William King and lived in Franklin County near Peter Phillips³. When King heard of the plight of his sister-in-law, he took three wagons and drove 70 miles, loaded up Minerva and her family and brought them back to Franklin County. There he fixed her up in a log cabin on his property and informed her that her worries were
over. On 12 March 1878, she was busy about her log cabin when she saw a buggy, drawn by a fine
team, turn into the lane of her cabin. A man in tall silk hat got out of the buggy and knocked on her
door. When she opened the door, he said "I am Peter Phillips, may I come in?"

Peter\(^3\) walked in, placed his hat on the table, noticed that the fire was a little low, went outside
and returned with an armload of wood which he put on the fire, all the while saying nothing. Finally
he seated himself, studied the fire a few moments and then came directly to the point: "Mrs. Combs,
I am a widower with a house full of children who need a mother. I understand that you have a
similar problem. I believe that it would be mutually advantageous if you would become my wife."
He waited patiently for her response.

Minerva had heard of Peter Phillips, for he had been married to her cousin. But she had never
even seen the man until a few minutes before and here he sat in her cabin having just proposed
marriage. She confessed years later that she knew even before he had finished speaking what her
answer would be and that her reasons were purely mercenary. Another of her children had already
died of tuberculosis by this time and her only remaining son also suffered from the disease. The
only treatment known at that time was a change to a warmer climate, Florida being the most widely
acceptable haven then. She knew that Peter Phillips was relatively wealthy and could finance
sending her son to Florida.

Minerva also realized that one of the most prominent men in the county had just offered her what
amounted to a purely business proposition. The biggest problem as she saw it was how to say yes
without being unseemly anxious. Peter Phillips sat there, still waiting for her answer. Minerva said
she finally got her mouth open and made some sort of noise that she hoped he would interpret as a
"yes". He apparently did, since he stood and said "Very well, I will drive to Benton and get the
license and we will be married at two o’clock this afternoon. Minerva responded "Very well, I will
be ready."

Minerva rushed to her sister's house and the two of them spent the next two hours throwing
together a wedding dress. When Peter\(^3\) returned, he and Minerva were married in the cabin where
she lived. Peter's son Henry later described that he "was in the kitchen attempting to mix biscuits
for supper, when some of the kids yelled 'Here comes Dad and he's got a woman with him.' I looked
out the window and knew at once that we had a new mother. I put on my hat and went to the barn
leaving her to face the most awful mess anybody had ever saw. In about an hour somebody called
me to supper, and when I came in the beds were made, the floors swept and the whole place had a
new look. My biscuits had been finished and the best meal we had had for months was on the table.
I made up my mind right then that Dad had done all right. And I never changed my mind."

Despite the inauspicious beginnings of there marriage, Peter\(^3\) and Minerva had a happy and
loving marriage. The Phillips children adored her and loved her as much as they had their own
mother. Despite being sent to Florida, Minerva's remaining son died from his tuberculosis in
Pensacola about 1880. Another of her daughters, who had married before Minerva received her
proposal, moved to St. Louis with her new husband. But both her and her husband soon died from
tuberculosis about 1880 as well. Of her nine children, only one daughter escaped contracting the
disease, as did Minerva herself. Sadly, even that daughter died at age 44, preceding her mother in
death by a year.

CHAPTER 20 330 BIOG/HIST
Peter Phillips³ suffered a stroke on 7 September 1892, which left him paralyzed on the right side. The paralysis was diagnosed at the time as being the result of the rheumatism from which he had suffered for a number of years. He lingered on in this condition until 2 July 1893, when he suffered a second stroke, which left him in a comatose situation. He lived two more days before died at four in the morning on 4 July 1893. Minerva died on 1 April 1909 at the age of 86, having outlived all nine of her children and two husbands.

Peter Phillips³ and all four of his wives are buried in the private Peter Phillips Cemetery located about a half mile from the site of his old home. The cemetery, in a cluster of trees completely enclosed by surrounding farm land, has 24 graves. One of them is a daughter-in-law, five are unknown, and twelve are children of Peter Phillips³ who all died young. The last grave is of a transient that Peter³ discovered along the roadside one day while on the way home. Peter³ took the stranger into his home but the man died before his identity could be learned.

The house that Peter Phillips³ built just before Civil War still stands in its original location. Today, Peter's great-grandson George M. Phillips lives in the home, which has had more than a few additions put on over the years. But the front of the house, with its three rooms, is still original.

Sally Phillips³ was the twin sister of Peter³, also born 5 January 1817. She married, on 22 October 1835, Lazarus C. Webb, who was born 17 October 1814, the son of Eli and Margaret (Sandusky) Webb. The Webbs lived most of the their lives in Benton. Lazarus died 2 April 1872 and Sally³ died on 22 December 1904. Both are buried in the Middle Fork Cemetery in Franklin County.

David Phillips³ was born 17 April 1819 in Franklin County, Illinois. He died as an infant and is probably buried near his parents in the family plot at Gilgal Cemetery. William Phillips³ was born in Franklin County, Illinois on 3 June 1821. William³ married Sarah Boster and two others, but their names are unknown. He moved from Franklin County to near Altamont, Illinois. He had one son who died at Shiloh in the Civil War. According to family records, William³ died 8 March 1879. Hannah Phillips³ was born 12 June 1823. Nothing else is known of her except that she married a man named Amzey G. Elkins. Elizabeth Phillips³ was born 5 September 1825. She married John Kirk. Nothing else is known of these children.

Malinda Phillips³ was born 25 September 1827 in Franklin County. On 1 April 1845, when she was just 17, Malinda³ married John S. King, a 37-year-old widower. He had originally married Elizabeth Browning on 15 March 1830 and had five children when he married Malinda Phillips³. Malinda³ had four children of her own by King. Probably sometime between 1855 and 1860, John S. King died and is buried in Browning Hill Cemetery in Franklin County. On 12 July 1859 Malinda³ married Robert Phillips, who was 26 years older than her. He is thought by some to have been a distant cousin, possibly related to the Ohio Phillips family. They lived in Barren Township of Franklin County. Robert Phillips died 9 July 1884 and is buried in Horse Prairie Cemetery. Malinda³ married a third time to Joshua Teague. She died 24 October 1916 and is buried in Horse Prairie Cemetery.

Andrew Walker Phillips³, the last of the children that Jacob² had by Sally Walker, was born 13 April 1832 in Franklin County. In 1851, when he was about 19, he moved to Adams County, Illinois. On 2 March 1853, he married Martha Jane Byars in that county. They soon moved to Clark
County, Missouri, near Wayland, where their first child was born. But Andrew\(^3\) and his wife
returned to Adams County and lived many years in Concord Township near the town of Clayton.
Andrew\(^3\) died on 15 April 1906 in Adams County and is buried in South Side Cemetery there. His
wife Martha Jane moved a year after his death to Kansas, where she died at Ionia on 21 August
1913.

By his second wife, Mary (Taylor) Brunner, Jacob Phillips\(^2\) had two additional children. Mary
A. Phillips\(^3\) and Louisa J. Phillips\(^3\) were born 22 June 1839 and 20 March 1841 respectively in
Franklin County. After Jacob\(^2\) died in 1842, his widow Mary was said to have moved to Hancock
County, Kentucky. According to George M. Phillips, the younger Mary\(^3\) eventually married Wilson
Rice, who later deserted her and several children. Louisa\(^3\) married a man named Obenchain.
Nothing else is known of them.

Lewis Phillips\(^3\) was our direct ancestor. Little was known about him by the Phillips descendants
who still live in Illinois. In fact, Frank Rademacher claimed for some years in his Phillips & Kin
newsletter that it was believed that Lewis\(^3\) had died as an infant. That fact, of course, came as a bit
of a surprise to those of us who are descended from him. Part of the problem was that Lewis\(^3\) left
the state of Illinois as a relatively young man. We will take up the story of Lewis Phillips\(^3\) next.
LEWIS PHILLIPS

In the course of researching your family origins, one can work either forward in time or backwards in time with respect to tracing the movement of your ancestors. The textbooks preach that you should always work backward, using what you know about the family's later whereabouts to try to gain knowledge of the family's earlier locations. In reality, one often has to work both directions. Lewis Phillips\(^3\) was an example where only working backward was of much value. As extensive as they were, early Phillips family records in the possession of descendants in Illinois were of little help in providing information about Lewis\(^3\). For years those descendants thought Lewis\(^3\) had died young. Then it was discovered that he had married in Franklin County in 1849 to a Sarah Robinson. But it turned out that even the name of the lady he married was wrong.

Lewis Phillips\(^3\) was born 24 April 1830 in Franklin County, the ninth child of Jacob\(^2\) and Sally (Walker) Phillips. When they were both just 19, Lewis\(^3\) married Sarah Gibbs Richardson\(^3\), the daughter of Alexander Wiley Richardson\(^2\) and his wife, the former Elizabeth Gibbs\(^6\). The Richardsons were neighbors who lived no more than a mile and a half north of the Phillips farm. What has lead many researchers astray over the years is the original marriage records in the Franklin County courthouse in Benton, Illinois. One of the entries in the old handwritten records is:

State of Illinois Franklin County I do hereby Certify that I Celebrated the rites of Marriage between Lewis Philips and Sarah Robinson on the 28th day of October 1849 given under my hand and Seal this 28th day of October 1849 ... Solomon M. Webb JP

The only problem is that Solomon Webb, the Justice of the Peace, made a mistake and misidentified the bride when he wrote her name. In the same records, the marriage license was issued two days before with the following notation:

Licenses Issued for Lewis Philips & Sarah Richardson on the 26th day of October 1849

It is difficult to develop much confidence in a county clerk who could not spell the word license, but at least this time Sarah\(^3\) was correctly identified.

In the 1850 Illinois census, newly-married Lewis\(^3\) and Sarah\(^3\), both 20 years old, are living together in their own house. Since Lewis Phillips\(^3\) did not yet own any land, they were probably living in a cabin on the farm owned by Sarah's oldest brother David Richardson\(^3\), who is enumerated next to them in the census. On 1 September 1851, Lewis\(^3\) and his wife received six dollars from his brother Peter Phillips\(^3\) for his share in the original 160-acre claim filed by their father Jacob\(^2\). In signing the release, Lewis signed his name and Sarah made her mark, indicating she could not read or write. After saving his money, Lewis Phillips\(^3\) was able to buy 80 acres of land (E\(\frac{1}{2}\) of NE\(\frac{1}{4}\) of R4E-T5S-S16) from Henry M. Williams and his wife on 7 April 1852. This land was about a mile and a half west of both the Richardson and the Phillips farms.

Exactly what Lewis Phillips did to earn the money is not clear but there is evidence that he worked for a time as a school teacher. An autobiographical sketch of a person named William J. Whittington appears in the Franklin County History. In that sketch, he identifies several names of
men who were his schoolmasters. One of those names is "Lewis Phillips".

In 1854, Congress passed the Gradation Act, or what was more popularly known as the "Bit Act". With this act, the government started selling off its land in what could be best described as a fire sale. Unclaimed land that previously had been offered for sale for $1.25 per acre was now reduced in price to one bit, or 12½ cents per acre. When the act took effect in October 1854, people rushed to the land office at Shawneetown to buy some of the less desirable land that had gone unsold for years. But the feeling was at 12½ cents per acre, who cared. People bought all of the land they could pay for. Land was land, and like Mark Twain would remark years later, "they aren't making any more of it."

Lewis Phillips was one of the people who purchased such land. On 4 October 1854 he bought 227.36 acres (S½ of NW¼ and N½ of SW¼ and NW¼ of SE¼ and SE¼ of NE¼ of R3E-T6S-S4) for $28.42. Several weeks later, on 14 November 1854, he bought another 68.18 acres (NW¼ of NW¼ and NE¼ of NE¼ of R3E-T6S-S4) for $8.52. The land probably wasn't very good for farming but at these prices, Lewis probably figured it was a good investment. On 12 September 1864, Lewis Phillips bought a 40-acre farm (NE¼ of SE¼ of R4E-T5S-S3) from William Barbee for $300. This land adjoined some of the Richardson land. Despite these purchases, there is no evidence that Lewis Phillips lived anywhere but on the original 80-acre parcel that he bought first. The 1860 census shows the value of his real estate and personal property were both $300, which meant that Lewis and his family were of low to medium wealth.

There were a number of men named Lewis Phillips who fought in the Civil War, including one from Illinois who was drafted into Company "H" of the 53rd Illinois Infantry. But there is no evidence that this person was our ancestor. Nothing in Civil War records, pension claims later in life, or family records that would indicate that Lewis Phillips participated in this war.

Lewis Phillips moved to southwest Missouri by 1869. It is highly likely that he moved with his in-laws, the Richardsons, in the spring of 1866 when they went west to Kansas and Missouri. Like several of Alexander Wiley Richardson's children and sons-in-law, he did not settle in Labette County, Kansas but nearby in the Joplin, Missouri area.

On 8 March 1870, Lewis bought 80 acres (S½ of SW¼ of R33W-T26N-S2) in Newton County, Missouri about six miles south of Joplin. He bought the land for $850 from James Nicholas. Three days later, Lewis borrowed $250 from Joseph Alkin, agreeing to pay $50 back one year after the sale, and the remaining $200 after two years. A notation on the deed dated 29 August 1872 indicates that the mortgage was satisfied. The deed also indicates that Lewis and Sarah Phillips were already "of Newton County" at the time they purchased the property.

Lewis and his family were part of a tide of people who came into southwestern Missouri at this time. When the Civil War began in 1861, Newton County had a population of nearly 10,000 (the 1860 census was 9319). During the war, the armies on both sides preyed upon the citizens of the area to such an extent that almost no one's money or property were safe. Scenes of murder and pillage became so common that nearly the whole county was depopulated, and those that stayed did so in the larger towns of Neosho and Newtonia. Many people simply left and never returned. By 1865, when the war ended, the population of the county was less than 3000. But with the restoration of peace, people moved here in droves, and by 1870 the population of the county was 12,821.
The parcel of land Lewis Phillips purchased in Newton County was located just south of Shoal Creek, northeast of the tiny town of Spring City. A few months later, Lewis and his family appear in the 1870 census for Shoal Creek Township in Newton County. On 18 August of that same year, the Phillips' oldest daughter, 19-year-old Charity, married William Jacobs in Newton County. However, Lewis and Sarah did not stay long in Newton County. On 26 August 1872, they effectively traded their property for 70 acres located about 4½ miles north of Joplin. On that day, Lewis paid $1000 for an irregular shaped plot (mostly in NE¼ of R33W-T28N-S17) in Jasper County, Missouri, buying the land from James R. Seal and his wife. The next day, Seal purchased the 70 acres that Lewis owned in Newton County, also for $1000.

The reason for this land swap remains unknown. But the likely reason is that Lewis Phillips became less interested in farming and more interested in mining. In 1848, a man living about two miles northwest of present-day Joplin had discovered a chunk of some mineral near his house. He told his neighbor, a man named William Tingle, who took his pick and shovel to the spot, and in a matter of minutes uncovered nearly a hundred pounds of lead ore. What none of these men could know at the time was that immense deposits of lead and zinc started at Springfield, Missouri and ran west in a 30-mile wide path to near Miami, Oklahoma. Because of the Civil War and a lack of railroads into the area, it would not be until about 1870 that extensive mining in the area would begin.

But the mining industry that resulted led to a huge influx of people into the area and resulted in the founding of Joplin. Joplin was, at one time, the tenth largest mining town in the world. Within a few years, there were about 5000 mines in the area, many of which were operated by just two to six men. Fortunes were made and lost overnight as mining claims either paid out or went bust. Wood-fired blast furnaces were built, first powered by a horse and later by water power, and the lead ore processed. The miners also mined another material called "black jack" out of the same ground, but it was considered worthless and discarded into huge piles. A miner named Mesplay wrote an article that appeared in the Newton County Tribune on 30 September 1868, calling to the miners' attention that the "black jack" was really zinc ore. He advised them to save it and predicted that it would be valuable one day.

Mesplay's article was laughed at by most of the miners, but a man in St. Louis read the same article and arranged for 500 pounds of the material to be sent there. The rocks were analyzed and found to contain enough zinc to be profitable. But since it takes greater heat to process the zinc from its ore than it did for lead, it could not be done from wood-fired smelters. Rather, it required about two tons of coal to smelt one ton of zinc ore and was not thought to be economically practical in the Joplin area. However, after the railroads were completed into this area, the once worthless "black jack" was shipped to Illinois, Pennsylvania and eastern Missouri, where it was profitably converted to zinc.

In the History of Jasper County, Missouri, published in 1876, it was predicted that the "mineral resources of Jasper County are inexhaustible." In another book, the History of Jasper County, published in 1881, it was similarly stated that "the deposits of lead and zinc ores are inexhaustible". In describing just one large vein of ore, the book stated that it "would require a century and a half to exhaust the known supply, and saying nothing of future probable discoveries." Needless to say, these predictions turned out a bit optimistic. The deposits eventually dwindled and the last of the ore mines in the Joplin area closed in 1970.
The discovery of lead and zinc in the ground around Joplin lead to a period of unprecedented growth in the area. On 22 June 1871, the newspaper *The Carthage Banner* wrote: "There is a new town in Jasper County. Its name is Joplin; location 14 miles southwest of Carthage on the farm of John C. Cox; has lead in unlimited quantities under it. Everybody out of employment ought to go there and dig. That is better than doing nothing and it may lead to certain fortune." The advice was promptly heeded by thousands who descended upon the area and began to dig furiously for underground wealth. Clusters of tents, huts and hovels arose as many unorganized, crude mining camps burst into existence overnight.

As with the camps that sprung up in California during the gold rush days there, and the cow towns of Kansas, there was a considerable amount of lawlessness and corruption. The "camps on Joplin Creek" were described as "the worst hell-hole on earth". Lawlessness was rampant and was referred to later as the "reign of terror". In January 1872, when a notorious miner named Dutch Pete was physically subdued and disarmed by another miner named Lupton, the latter was promptly made the first marshal of Joplin.

On 29 August 1872, just three days after he purchased the 70-acre parcel in Galena Township of Jasper County, Missouri, Lewis Phillips\(^3\) borrowed $200 from Cyrus Newby. Lewis\(^3\) mortgaged the property he had just purchased to get the money, which had to be paid back in 12 months with ten percent interest. This money was probably used to get the farm into cultivation, or perhaps to buy some mining equipment. The loan was repaid as indicated by a notation on the deed in the Jasper County courthouse.

That Lewis Phillips\(^3\) began to mine the property, or at least explore it for minerals, is nearly certain. On 20 December 1873, Lewis\(^3\) entered into a contract with two St. Louis men named R. O. Thompson and J. W. McConnell, leasing the mineral rights of his land to them in exchange for one dollar. The lease gave Thompson and McConnell "the exclusive right" for five years to mine for "coal, silver, lead, copper, kaolin, iron, zinc, nickel, antimony, plumbago, mineral paint, baryta, cobalt, sulphur, or other valuable substances". *Kaolin* is a fine clay used in ceramics and as a coating for paper, *plumbago* is graphite, and *baryta* is a form of barium, used in rat poisons and to deoxidize copper. It was further specified in the contract that Thompson and McConnell would "not disturb in mining the lands now in use as farm land".

In exchange for leasing the mineral rights, Lewis Phillips\(^3\) was to receive royalties on all material removed from his property. For any coal removed, except for coal removed from shafts and coal used on site, Lewis\(^3\) was to receive \(\frac{1}{4}\) cent per (85 pound) bushel. For the more valuable minerals, Lewis\(^3\) was to share in the revenue generated when the mineral was sold. His royalty was one tenth of the money received for lead, kaolin, zinc, antimony, cobalt and mineral paint. He was to receive one twentieth of the money received for the other minerals. The contract provided for payments to be made quarterly and specified the dates when those payments were due. One of the St. Louis men, R. O. Thompson, certified that he personally "examined" the property on 18 December 1873 as one of the "obligatory considerations" of the contract.

Lewis Phillips\(^3\) and his family were probably ready for the money to start rolling in, but it didn't happen. The agreement appears to have unraveled fast. On 5 March 1874, just two and a half months after signing the contract, Lewis Phillips\(^3\) filed a notice deed at the Jasper County courthouse, serving notice that "a suit is pending in the Circuit Court of Jasper County Mo. wherein
Lewis Phillips is Plaintiff and R. O. Thompson and J. W. McConnell are Defendants. The notice deed was a public record to indicate that, as of the date it was filed, the 70-acre property owned was involved in an unresolved litigation.

For reasons not stated, a motion was filed for a change of venue for the lawsuit, and the suit was heard in the McDonald County court at Pineville, about 35 miles to the south. The case dragged on for nearly two years, during which time R. O. Thompson died. McConnell alone then had to represent the defendants in the suit. On 12 February 1876, the case was finally decided and the judgement found in favor of Lewis Phillips. The court decided that Lewis was "overreached, deceived and defrauded" by the men from St. Louis (overreached means "cheated"). Lewis received no money other than his costs for having retained an attorney, but the lease was declared void by the court.

It was never clear from the court records exactly what kind of deception was practiced by Thompson and McConnell. The court records indicate that they sold the lease to a third person who the court held was aware of "the fraud practiced upon plaintiff in procurement of said deed of lease". Lewis Phillips also was not the only person who was deceived by the St. Louis men. The attorney who represented Lewis also represented a number of other people who had also signed contracts with the same two "con men" from St. Louis.

Meanwhile, while this lawsuit dragged through the courts, Lewis Phillips sold the land in Jasper County. On 23 November 1874, he sold his 70-acre tract to his brother-in-law, Reuben Allen. Reuben had married Nancy A. Richardson, the sister of Lewis' wife Sarah. Like Lewis, Reuben Allen had followed the Richardson family when they left Illinois for Kansas and Missouri. Lewis received $2100 for the property which he had paid $1000 for just two years before. The added value might have reflected the potential value of the minerals on the property, or maybe was just an indication of the rapidly escalating property values as more and more miners flocked to the Joplin area.

An examination of the land records for both Jasper and Newton counties does not show that Lewis Phillips bought any other land in either county following the sale of his 70-acre property north of Joplin. But it is clear that he stayed in the area, for on 14 April 1876, Lewis entered into another contract to work another mining claim. In what essentially was an employee agreement signed by Lewis, he agreed to mine for lead and zinc ore for five years on "mining lot 8 & the east half of lot 7" (in part of the E½ of SW¼ of R33W-T27N-S15) in Jasper County. This land was no more than two miles south of Joplin.

Lewis agreed to "mine said lands at all times in a good workmanlike manner and continuously with intermission during the continuance of this contract"). Exception was made "on account of bad weather, unavoidable accident or sickness ... for a period of thirty days when necessary but no longer without written permission". For doing the "mining, raising and cleaning" of the ore, Lewis was to receive $25 per 1000 pounds for lead and "the cash price" in Joplin "less 20%" for zinc. Although he alone signed the contract, Lewis probably had at least one or two other men to assist him in the mining work, since it would have been nearly impossible to do the work alone.

The shaft of the lead and zinc mines in the Joplin area usually started in loose soil and after a few feet continued in solid rock. The shaft at the surface was often simply a hole in the ground without
any fence or guard rail around it. Most early mine shafts were only five by seven feet in size, with the later ones usually being six feet square. Once into solid rock, the mine shaft was simply a rough hole, with the only real criteria that it be vertical and that all loose rocks and boulders be removed from the shaft walls. Where the shaft bottomed out into an ore deposit, the lower end of the shaft might simply be a hole in the ceiling of a large room 30 or 40 feet high.

The ore was brought out of the mine in a can hooked to a rope or cable and raised by a hoist. The hoists used by the early shallow mines were usually a man-powered windlass that could be made at low cost using a tree trunk for the cable drum, and a few planks. In the deeper small mines a horse walking in a circle turned a large gear wheel that drove a pinion gear attached to the shaft that turned the drum on which the hoisting rope or cable was wound. A lever operated both the clutch and the brake. The horse driven hoist was not very reliable as the clutch and brake that controlled the drum failed in a number of instances letting the can drop to the bottom of the shaft.

The shafts for many mines were sunk by teams of two or three men working under contract. One man would work on the surface to hoist the broken rock, water, and tools from and to the man at the bottom of the shaft. The man at the bottom would drill the holes for the dynamite, load them and light the fuses. It was then up to the surface man to hoist his partner out of the shaft before the charges went off. The hoists used by the miners were sometimes not very reliable and the bottom man in several instances was dropped back to the bottom in time to be killed as the charges went off. The miners would trade positions, so that each would work on both the surface and the shaft bottom.

The can was also the way that men got to and from the bottom of the mine shaft in all but the smallest mines. To make the trip down in the can, the can would be halted at the surface, pulled over to the side, and the miner stepped into the can from the edge of the shaft, and after the can was steadied, he was lowered. A loaded can might weigh 1000 to 1500 pounds when being hoisted up the shaft full of rocks. Many of the more shallow mines also had a ladder as an emergency exit.

Mining was extremely dangerous and there were many accidents in these early mines. Most fatalities resulted from the fall of rocks or other objects, or the fall of the miners themselves down the mine shaft. For the miner in the early lead and zinc mines, there were hundreds of ways to get killed. If anything fell down the shaft there was no place for the bottom man to take cover. Hoisting cables corroded and sometimes broke under normal loads. Cables became unattached to the drum allowing the load to fall. The cause of many fatalities, according to mine inspector reports, was either the improper hooking of a can to the cable, or the failure of the hook itself.

The area near the bottom of the shaft was an especially dangerous one. Various objects fell down the shaft, such as timbers and boards from the cribbing, tools of all sorts, rocks, all killing someone at or near the bottom of the shaft. Objects falling down the shaft sometimes killed men some distance from the shaft bottom as the falling object bounced and ricocheted around. One case was recorded when a man at the bottom of the mine shaft was killed when a pig fell down the shaft onto him. If a can were filled too full a rock might fall off, or if the can was not steadied properly it could bump the rough side of the shaft and spill some of its load.

Underground away from the bottom of the shaft was not a lot safer. A slab of rock might fall on a miner, crushing him. A rock roof that looked safe yesterday might be dangerous the next day. Some men were killed as the result of blasting, or rock falls, in a neighboring mine. Some areas had
many adjoining mines that made a continuous mining operation for considerable distances.

Bad air took the lives of a number of miners who failed to test the air before entering an old mine. Unlike a coal mine in which the "bad air" was methane, which is inflammmable and explosive when mixed with air, the bad air in the lead and zinc mines was carbon dioxide, also known as "white damp". A few mines smelled of hydrogen sulfide, which has the odor of rotten eggs, but as long as you could smell it, its concentration was not lethal. It was reported that higher concentrations of hydrogen sulfide paralyzed the sense of smell and was deadly.

It is not known how long Lewis Phillips³ mined his contract claim south of Joplin. George M. Phillips of Benton, Illinois is in possession of some old letters from Lewis Phillips³ that give us some interesting insight into his life and his mining activities. This letter was written to his brother Peter Phillips³ back home in Illinois (with some punctuation added for readability):

```
Joplin Mo Dec 20/76

Peter Phillips

    Dear Bro, yours of 9th inst is at hand. Glad to hear from you & your welfare. I want you to use your influence with J. A. Logan in regard to that matter & you will be apt to see him in person at Springfield & get all the information from him you can in regard to those Indian appointments. It is now thought here that Indian affairs will be changed that. The General Supt. will be done away & the Indians be controlled by military authorities if so that will still not do away the appointment that I want. Appointments heretofore have Generally been made [by] the Supt. of Indian affairs. But it is now thought they will be made direct by Congress. You can perhaps learn from Logan.

    I am very unwell today & my general health is poor of late but I will write more when I hear from you. I have talked to one or two men here of note, they say they will do all they can for me to get the appointment but there is but few I can depend upon. If Logan sets his head for me I can depend upon him to do all he can. Let me hear from you again.

    Lewis Phillips

N.B. My mining prospects is only moderate. I have good mineral opened up but I have got them rented that my best lot rented to parties that is not doing right but to avoid trouble I let them have their way. I have other ground equally good I think but cannot work on account of water & the pump perhaps will not drain it before spring so I can work it.

    L. P.
```

It would appear from this letter that Lewis³ was still working the claim he had contracted to mine eight months before, but that health problems were requiring that he use other people to do much of the work. Health problems may have continued to plague Lewis Phillips³ the remainder of his life. He wrote the following letter about a month after the last one:

```
Joplin Mo Jasper Co.
Jan 22nd 1877

Peter Phillips

    Dear Bro, I have not any word from you yet since you have been in Springfield but hope you have good health & success in business. I have been sick ever since I wrote to you & am hardly able to set up yet but am decidedly a going slowly. The Doctor said I had Typhoid & Pneumonia fever combined. I am reduced down very week but I think by good I will be able for business in a month. I think I have a good Doctor attending to me.

    As to business that I was writing to you about I have been entire shut out of doing any
looking out here on account of health. I have thought that if you have seen Logan & had a
talk with him perhaps he would give you some Idea wherther he would be favorable for me
to have an appointment or not. If the one I ask for is not likely to be had there are a plenty
of othery Indian Agencies to fill equally as good.

The Cheroche agency is the best of all but if Logan will set himself to work in that
department for he would be apt to be successfull. So I want you to do the talking to him for
me & you can give me such information as you can. I have wrote to Logan on on this subject
since Congress met but have had no answer.

I want you to send me some of Springfield newspar that that will give your Legislative
proceedings. I am very anxius to Learn whether Logan gets the Senatorial appointment
again or not. Send me a paper while the Legistar is in session & until it adjourns & I will
be much obliged. You must excuse bad writing for I can harly writ.

Lewis Phillips

One can sense the difficulty with which Lewis

3 wrote the last letter. If suffering from a

combination of both typhoid and pneumonia as he stated, he was lucky he wasn't dead. Either of

these diseases by themselves often killed a person in this era. We can probably assume that Lewis

lived on the claim that he was mining at the time he wrote these letters, especially since we can find

no other record of him owning any land during this period. Another letter in possession of George

M. Phillips is one from a son of Peter Phillips

3:

Joplin, Mo.     Dec 22, 1877

Peter Phillips

Webbs Hill, Ills.

Dear Father, I should have wrote to you before, but have not had time. Joplin is much

larger than I expected to find it. I am getting along as well as could be expected. I arrived

here on the 29th of last month. I left those accounts with Will. Parrish. I guess you heard

that the other boys went back when they got to St. Louis. They wanted me to go back with

them but I could not see it and am glad I did not. I guess that I will not stay in Joplin very

long.

I guess you will say "that is the way he won't stay in one place no time but will go to

some other and spend what little he does make a moving about." Joplin is a good place to

make money and a very good place to spend it. And the inhabitants a[re] awful rough. I

guess I will work in a printing office awhile and then I will go some other place. Uncle

Lewis lives about 1½ miles out of town but is going to move before long. You need not

answer this until you hear from me again.

Yours Resp,     F. M. Phillips

The letter, which sounds much like one written by any vagabond 19-year-old son in any era, was

written by Frank Phillips, the 19-year-old son of Peter Phillips

3 and a nephew of Lewis Phillips

4. The important information contained in this letter is the fact that Lewis was still living near Joplin,

probably on the mining claim south of town, but that he intended to move soon. The compiler only

wishes Frank had been a little more forthcoming in identifying the location where Lewis

3 was planning to move. Where Lewis Phillips moved about this time, and where he lived for the next four

years is a puzzle never solved.

From the time the last letter was written to Peter Phillips in late 1877 until early 1882, the

whereabouts of Lewis Phillips and his family is a mystery. Lewis Phillips

3 does not appear in the
1880 census for Jasper or Newton counties. In fact, exhaustive searches of the census indexes for eight different states has turned up no record of Lewis Phillips³ or his family in the 1880 census. It could be, of course, that his family was simply missed by the census taker. But there is another possible explanation and that is that he wasn't in a place where they took a census in 1880. The clue to where he might have been in 1880 comes in the letters that Lewis³ wrote to his brother.

Possibly because of his increasing health problems or maybe because he found mining too difficult or too dangerous, Lewis Phillips³ wanted desperately to receive an appointment as an Indian agent. The primary focus of both of his letters to his brother Peter³ was to solicit his assistance in getting him such an appointment. The key to getting this appointment was the man mentioned in Lewis' letters, John A. Logan, a man that Lewis³ had apparently met and with whom his brother Peter Phillips³ was almost certainly acquainted.

John Alexander Logan was a very influential man of his time, and today one can find at least twelve different books written about him. Logan lived in southern Illinois and served two terms in the Illinois state legislature in the 1850s. He was a member of the U.S. House of Representatives from 1859 to 1862. With the outbreak of the Civil War, he resigned his seat in the House to become a colonel in the Union Army. He was later promoted to Major General and commanded an entire division at Vicksburg, where Peter Phillips³ also served as a much more junior officer. After Vicksburg surrendered, Logan was appointed military governor of the city. In 1864, he commanded the entire Union forces in the Battle of Atlanta. In 1867, after the war ended, Logan returned to his seat in the House of Representatives. He later served as a U.S. Senator from Illinois from 1871 to 1877 and again from 1879 to 1886. In 1884, John A. Logan was chosen as the Vice Presidential running mate of James G. Blaine on the Republican ticket, but they lost the election by a very narrow margin to the Democratic candidate, Grover Cleveland. Logan is also credited with founding the Grand Army of the Republic, an organization of Union veterans. And in 1868, he became the founder of Memorial Day as a national holiday.

It was to this man that Lewis Phillips³ looked to initiate his appointment as an Indian agent. At the time that Lewis³ wrote the letters to his brother, Peter³ was in the Illinois state legislature at Springfield. Whether or not Peter³ had an opportunity to speak to Logan when he was there is not known, but it certainly is not unreasonable that this may have happened. Had he wanted to, it would not have been difficult for a man of Logan's influence to see that such an appointment occurred. If such an appointment did occur, it would explain several things. First it would explain why Peter Phillips³ son did not mention where his Uncle Lewis was moving in his letter to his father. Peter³ would already have been very aware of where Lewis was moving. Further, it would explain completely the absence of Lewis Phillips³ and his family in the 1880 census.

His appointment as an Indian agent, if it occurred, would have taken Lewis Phillips³ to the Indian Territory, now the state of Oklahoma. No federal census exists for that territory or state before 1900. The compiler has never been able to locate even the existence of any records of the appointments of Indian agents, so these records cannot be verified. All attempts to examine Indian tribal records of this period have proved fruitless in that few white men are mentioned in these incredibly disorganized records, even Indian agents. If Lewis Phillips³ lived in the Indian Territory about 1878-1882, that could also explain why he had two daughters marry at the courthouse of McDonald County, Missouri in 1879 when there is no evidence that Lewis³ or his family lived there. McDonald County was probably the closest courthouse outside of the Indian Territory.
The Indian Territory had been established in 1834 with autonomous rule by the tribal authority granted. But after the Civil War, Americans were on the move like no other period previous, and settlers were itching to get their hands on some of the land within the Indian Territory. Although whites were forbidden by law to settle on these lands, there were lots of ways around these regulations and outright violations of the law common. In both 1879 and 1880, President Rutherford B. Hayes issued proclamations forbidding settlement in the Indian Territory. Despite this, the "silent migration" of white settlers into the Indian Territory continued.

There was a considerable amount of complicity on the part of the Indians in this white migration. The Indians and the white intruders worked out complex arrangements to evade the laws. Tribal governments adopted permit laws that allowed mechanics and laborers and their families to settle in the territory. This permit system became an important source of revenue for the Indians since an annual permit for laborers cost $2.50 and five dollars for mechanics and farmers. Indian leaders defended this practice by claiming the new source of labor was essential to replace the black slaves they had held until the Civil War liberated them.

Another way for the white man to enter the territory legally was to marry an Indian girl. By 1877, it was reported that 700 outsiders had married Cherokee women, 60 had taken Creek wives, and 1500 were married to Choctaw and Chickasaw women. One man who married a Chickasaw woman then imported a hundred families as tenants on his vast farm. By 1886, it was reported that one part of the Indian Territory was "almost one continuous farm for fifty miles, most of the holdings farmed by white and black tenants."

After "disappearing" for a couple of years, probably into the Indian Territory, Lewis Phillips emerged in 1882, living in McDonald County, Missouri. On 21 January 1882, when he was "of McDonald County", Lewis purchased Lots 1 and 2 in Block 23 in the town of Saratoga Springs, Missouri. He bought these two lots for $300 from T.N. O'Bryant. Less than a month later, Lewis bought another lot, Lot 16 in Block 27, in the same town. This lot he bought for $50 from John C. Cox, who was the man on whose farm lead ore was originally discovered near Joplin. Of special interest is the fact that Saratoga Springs was located only about three miles from the eastern boundary of the Indian Territory.

The town of Saratoga Springs was laid out in October 1880, containing 700 lots. One hundred of those lots were sold and 26 houses built in less than six months, as well as construction started on a school and church building. Named for a spring that flowed from the side of a bluff about two hundred yards from the center of the town, Saratoga Springs was similar to many new towns that were platted and lots sold with varying degrees of success, but which eventually failed to flourish. For a year or two, Saratoga Springs promised to be a place of some importance, and many undoubtedly bought lots there on speculation.

For a time the town did well, with several businesses opening and even attracting a newspaper which started there. But the appeal of Saratoga Springs ultimately faded and the town disappeared. Today one can find it as just Saratoga, Missouri, a spot with a few homes along a highway. On 4 January 1884, after Lewis Phillips probably realized that he was not going to become wealthy from his town lots in Saratoga Springs, he and Sarah sold all three of them to their single daughter Eldorado for $100, less than a third of what they had paid. Eldorado sold the same three lots on 29 August of the same year to Frederick Young of Labette County, Kansas.
On the same day that the daughter of Lewis Phillips and Sarah Phillips sold their lots in Saratoga Springs to him, Frederick Young, in turn, sold 3.1 acres he owned in Cherokee County, Kansas to Sarah Phillips. They paid $500 for the farm in Cherokee County, which included a promissory note given to Young for $75, which was due in six months with ten percent interest. The note was satisfied according to a notation on the deed filed in the courthouse. The land that Sarah purchased was in the town of Hallowell, Kansas, located in Lola Township of Cherokee County. Their farm was about twelve miles west of Labette, where some of Sarah's relatives (the Richardsons) still lived.

The interesting part of this transaction is that Lewis Phillips appears to have been partially incapacitated, either mentally or physically, by this time. The deed and the promissory note were both recorded in the name of "Sarah Phillips wife of Lewis Phillips", suggesting that Lewis was no longer able to transact business on his own and that Sarah was acting as his guardian. It is also interesting to note that Sarah Phillips signed both documents with her mark, indicating that despite being 54 years old and having been married to a former school teacher, she still could not read or write.

Kansas was a state that conducted a state census every ten years, on years ending in "5". In the 1885 state census, in Lola Township of Cherokee County is listed the following family:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Age</th>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>Race</th>
<th>Mar/Single</th>
<th>Occupation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Lewis Phillips</td>
<td>54</td>
<td>M</td>
<td>W</td>
<td>M</td>
<td>Farmer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah Phillips</td>
<td>54</td>
<td>F</td>
<td>W</td>
<td>M</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elderado Phillips</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>F</td>
<td>W</td>
<td>S</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arena Phillips</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>F</td>
<td>W</td>
<td>S</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>L.F. Phillips</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>F</td>
<td>W</td>
<td>S</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eddie Phillips</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>M</td>
<td>W</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Unlike the federal census, the Kansas state census also had a place for the census taker to indicate whether or not the man of the household was a military veteran and in which regiment he had served. The census taker did not fill this information for Lewis Phillips, further indicating that he did not enlist in the Civil War.

On 21 October 1886, "Sarah Phillips and Lewis Phillips" sold their 3.1 acres at Hallowell, Kansas to "Mary A. Miller wife Robert H. Miller oldest daughter now Living of Lewis & Sarah Phillips". The Millers, who were listed as living in Kansas City, Missouri, bought the farm for $500. We do not know if Mary and her husband came to live on the farm or they simply purchased it so that her parents would have a place to live and some money on which to survive. Although both Lewis and Sarah were listed as the sellers, the fact that she was listed first further indicates that Lewis might not have been well.

About five months before he died, Lewis Phillips wrote a letter to his brother Peter back in Illinois, also in the possession of George M. Phillips of Benton, Illinois. In it, he claims to be well:

```
Hallowell Ks    July 20/90

Capt. Peter Phillips & family

Dear Bro, we all well as common considering this Hot dry weather, the children all married but Rado, she has been to Eureka Springs all season til lately got home. Health much improved weighs 178 lb. Florence & Mary in Colo. Sarah & Arena in Mo.

Crops much injured for want of rain here, we [had] one good rain last week. Have all our Ill. relatives & friends forsaken us? or why do we not get letters? We would like some
```
of you would visit us this fall, can't you? Surely some of you could. We never hear from Andy no more. How about sister Malinda getting her limbs broke? Is she got well? Write & tell us if you are alive; & if you ain't say so. We want to visit Ills. in a year or two if things goes well with us. All come & see us we have now plenty to eat - raise good garden & plenty potatoes & milk, two good cows, & lots of young chick to eats.

Ask Jimmy & Horace if they can write. If so tell them to drop a line to us once every five years anyway. Love to all,

L & S Phillips

Henry, when you come bring that big pipe, your aunt Sallie has lots of good old homespun tobacco to smoke

Lewis Phillips died on 21 December 1890, probably never having made his planned trip back to Illinois. He was buried in Dove Cemetery near Hallowell. Today the cemetery is located on a dirt road and is virtually abandoned. His wife, the former Sarah Richardson, later moved with her daughters to Portland, Oregon. In the 1895 Portland city directory, she was shown residing at an address of 189½ Grant, with her daughter "Miss Rado Phillips" boarding with her. She appears again in the 1900-1 city directory, residing at 84 9th N and boarding with her is another daughter, "Miss Arena Phillips".

Sarah Phillips died from tuberculosis in Portland on 31 October 1902. At the time of her death she was shown residing at the "foot of Ivon St.", where she had lived for six months. Two days later she was buried in the Lone Fir Cemetery in Portland. Lewis and Sarah (Richardson) Phillips had the following children:

1. Charity Phillips 4  
   b. 18 Dec 1850 @ Franklin County, Illinois  
   m. 18 Aug 1870 William Jacobs @ Newton Co. MO  
   d. 16 Dec 1872

2. Nancy Jane Phillips 4  
   b. 12 Apr 1853 @ Franklin County, Illinois  
   d. 28 Dec 1853 @ Franklin County, Illinois

3. Malinda C. Phillips 4  
   b. 9 Jan 1855 @ Franklin County, Illinois  
   m. 19 Dec 1972 Charles E. Hamond @ Jasper Co. MO  
   d. 5 Nov 1879

4. Mary A. Phillips 4  
   b. 10 Mar 1857 @ Franklin County, Illinois  
   m. 6 Dec 1874 (1) Joseph A. Graham @ Jasper Co.  
   m. (2) Robert H. Miller

+ 5. Sarah E. Phillips 4  
   b. 3 Mar 1859 @ Franklin County, Illinois  
   m. 24 Jan 1879 (1) William Jones @ McDonald Co.  
   m. 16 Mar 1885 (2) William H. Nutter  
   m. 5 May 1920 (3) Lorenzo D. McKay  
   d. 24 Nov 1926 @ Portland, Multnomah Co., Oregon

6. Hester Phillips 4  
   b. 27 Apr 1861 @ Franklin County, Illinois  
   d. 24 Jan 1862 @ Franklin County, Illinois

7. Eldorado Phillips 4  
   b. 22 Feb 1864 @ Franklin County, Illinois  
   m. 24 Jan 1879 George W. King @ McDonald Co. MO  
   d. 3 Apr 1898 @ Portland, Multnomah Co., Oregon

8. Arena Alice Phillips 4  
   b. 2 Dec 1869 @ Newton County, Missouri  
   m. 13 Mar 1889 (1) ----- Jacobs  
   m. 18 Sep 1909 (2) Robert F. Smith @ Portland, OR  
   d. 15 Jul 1938 @ Portland, Multnomah Co., Oregon

9. L. Florence Phillips 4  
   b. 9 Nov 1871 @ Newton County, Missouri  
   m. 2 Jun 1890 (1) J. Stalcup
After nine daughters in a row, their tenth child was a son. But three of the children, Nancy Jane Phillips⁴, Hester Phillips⁴ and the son William L. Phillips⁴ all died between the ages of eight months and one year. The other seven daughters all lived long enough to marry, although three of them did not long lives. Five of the daughters have mysteries associated with them that have never been solved, as will be evident in a moment.

Charity Phillips⁴, the oldest daughter, married while the family lived in Newton County, Missouri. On 18 August 1870, when she was still nineteen, she married William Jacobs, who was born in Kentucky in April 1846, the son of Joel and Martha (Huff) Jacobs. Charity⁴ had two children, Lewis and Sarah, before dying 16 December 1872, possibly of complications from child birth, since it was less than six weeks after her daughter was born. She is probably buried in Newton County, Missouri where she and William lived. William Jacobs remarried to a woman named Nancy before 1879.

Malinda C. Phillips⁴ married Charles E. Hamond (or Hammond) on 19 December 1872, a few months after the family moved to Jasper County north of Joplin, Missouri. The marriage was recorded in the Jasper County marriage records. We have no further record of Malinda other than she died on 5 November 1879, at the age of 24.

Mary A. Phillips⁴ married 6 December 1874 in Jasper County to Joseph A. Graham. Mary⁴ is one of the mystery children. The letter that Lewis Phillips³ wrote a few months before his death mentions that Mary was in "Colo", presumably a reference to Colorado. When her sister Sarah⁴ died in 1926, her obituary mentioned that Sarah⁴ was survived by a sister "Mrs. Mary Graham of Los Angeles, Cal." One would assume then that Mary⁴ and her husband went west, eventually settling in southern California. How then does one account for the deed dated 21 October 1886 in which "Mary A. Miller wife Robert H. Miller oldest daughter now living of Lewis & Sarah Phillips" bought the land where her parents lived at Hallowell, Kansas? There are several possibilities, the most likely being that someone got Mary's married name confused when the obituary was placed in 1926. No other information is known about Mary⁴.

Eldorado Phillips⁴ is another mystery child, the one with the exotic and unusual name. She was probably named after her aunt "Rado", the daughter of John Phillips² the brother who went to Missouri while the other brothers stayed in Illinois. The name Eldorado probably came from the town of Eldorado, Illinois, an early settlement on the road from Shawneetown to Franklin County. Even the town got its name in a strange way. About 1824, Samuel Elder moved to Illinois from Kentucky and travelled up what was then called the Kaskaskia Trail from Shawneetown. At this time, this was the main artery for settlers moving north into southern and central Illinois, and for at least 30 years there was an immense amount of traffic over this road.

Many wayside inns were established along the route to accommodate the travelers. When Samuel Elder reached a place along the Kaskaskia Trail where Coleman Brown had built a blockhouse, he decided this would be a good place to establish another inn for new immigrants such
as himself. He bought some land from Brown and paid for it with the proceeds of one month's hunting and trapping. He built a double log house on the east side of the trail so that it faced down the road in order to see the travelers coming (even Samuel knew in 1824 that "location is everything"). In 1852, Joseph Read bought land on the west side of the road, and Elder and Read decided to plat a town when they learned that the railroad was coming to the area.

Being the forward-thinking visionaries that they were, Read and Elder laid out the village with not one but two streets. They named the village Elder-Reado after themselves, and it was so called for a number of years. There is a story that the name later became corrupted to its modern form of Eldorado when the railroad finally arrived in 1872. The story is that when the painters placed the name on the railroad station, they spelled the name Eldorado, thinking the two gentlemen did not know how to spell. And even if its not true, it makes a great story.

Regardless of the origin of her name, Eldorado Phillips4, like her aunt, often went by the shortened nickname Rado. Eldorado4 apparently had health problems since Lewis Phillips3 referred to that in his letter in 1890, although at 178 pounds, we can probably assume that anemia wasn't one of her conditions. He mentioned that Eldorado4 had been at Eureka Springs "all season". That reference was to Eureka Springs, Arkansas, about 90 miles southeast of Hallowell. Crystal clear springs were first found by the Indians at Eureka Springs and were noted for their healing powers. The legend of the curative properties of the "Magic Healing Springs" has been traced back to the Osage Indians. Some historians have even postulated that the springs at Eureka Springs were the ones that Ponce de Leon had heard about from the Indians of Florida, sending him on his quest for the Fountain of Youth.

It can probably be assumed that the health of Eldorado Phillips4 may also have been the reason why her parents purchased the lots in the fledgling town of Saratoga Springs, since that area was also known for its "medical springs". After her father died, Eldorado Phillips4 accompanied her mother and sisters to Portland, Oregon, where they were by 1895. There is possibility that she was the "Rado Phillips" who married a Joseph Sharp on 30 July 1896 in Walla Walla County, Washington. According to family records in the possession of the compiler, Eldorado4 died on 3 April 1898 at the age of 34. A record of her death has not been found and the location of her grave has not been located.

In his letter of 1890, Lewis Phillips3 refers to the fact that all of his daughters were then married "but Rado". Since the 1895 Portland City Directory lists "Miss Rado Phillips" boarding with her mother, it would be natural to assume that she never married. However, family records indicate that she did marry, and have been confirmed by a marriage record for McDonald County, Missouri. On 24 January 1879, Eldorado Phillips4 was married to George W. King by the Justice of the Peace, despite the fact that Eldorado4 was still only 14 years, 11 months old. This is the youngest marriage ever encountered in our family history and would normally be considered highly suspect. However, her sister Sarah4, our ancestor, was married the same day by the same Justice of the Peace. The unusual double wedding is also noted in our family records. One might suspect that Eldorado4 may have been in a motherly way despite her young age and that the young George King was not Lewis' favorite person, but there is no record of her ever having a child.

Because she was ever after referred to as "Eldorado Phillips" and carried the title "Miss", it is possible that the marriage was either annulled or that the couple divorced, although no record of
either has been located. If such an annulment or divorce occurred in the Indian Territory, and there were certainly judges there who could rule on such things, there would be no record of it. But stay tuned, Eldorado wasn't the only one who practiced the art of the "disappearing marriage".

**Arena Alice Phillips** was the first of the children born in Missouri. She was born 2 December 1869 in Newton County. On 13 March 1889, at the age of 19, she married a man by the name of Jacobs, but whose first name is unknown. We know the date of her marriage from family records but nothing else, including where the marriage took place. Arena was listed twice in the 1900 census (this was more common than many people think). In Portland, Oregon, she was enumerated on 1 June 1900 and listed as "Arena Phillips". On 23 June 1900, she was listed again in the census for Walla Walla, Washington, living with her sister Sarah. Again her last name was given as "Phillips" and in both census schedules her marital status was written as "single". In the 1900-01 Portland City Directory, she was listed as "Miss Arena Phillips". Yet she married Robert F. Smith in Portland on 18 September 1909, and her marriage license identifies her as "Arena Alice Jacobs".

Robert F. Smith was born in England and had been married before. He and Arena raised his three children: Forester, Alexander and Evelyn. Arena and Robert always lived in Portland, for many years at 6231 S.E. 71st Street. Robert always worked in the printing business for various companies such as Glass & Prudhomme, the Irwin-Hodson Company and the Oregonian. But for most of his life, Robert Smith worked for another early daily paper, the Evening Telegram, or as it was later known, the Portland Telegram. Arena died 15 July 1938 in the Multnomah County Hospital of a rare incurable disease called **multiple myeloma**. This disease, which affects the production of red blood cells, occurs in less than forty out every million people. Arena was buried in Riverview Cemetery.

**L. Florence Phillips** always went by Florence, and what the initial "L" stood for is not known. Florence also had a mystery marriage. Family records indicate that she was married on 2 June 1890, but the records do not indicate to whom or where this marriage occurred. An old photo of Florence probably taken before 1900, and found among the possessions of Nellie Bly Nutter years later, gives the only hint of the first husband of Florence. The photo identifies Florence as Mrs. J. Stalcup of 208 Wood Street, Dallas, Texas. The lack of 1890 census records makes it difficult to verify this information. By the 1900 census Florence was in Portland, Oregon.

Florence married again at her mother's house in Portland on 17 April 1900. She married Aaron Wells and the name she provided on their marriage license was "Florence Phillips". Wells, who was from Wisconsin, was a harness maker 13 years older than Florence. From early Portland City Directories, we find the following entries:

1900-01 Wells Aaron, harnessmaker, bds 84 9th N
1901-02 Wells Aaron, harnessmkr JCP Westengard, res 667 Hodd
1903 Wells Aaron, stockman J Clark Saddlery Co, res Mt. Tabor
1904 Wells Aaron, harness mkr J Clark Saddlery Co, res ft E Salmon
1905 Wells Aaron, harness mkr J Clark Saddlery Co, res E Water corner E Salmon
1906 Wells Aaron, harnessmkr J Clark Saddlery Co, res 108 ft E Salmon
1907-08 Wells Aaron, supt Olive Branch Mission, res 2 2nd
1909 Wells Rev Aaron, supt Olive Branch Mission, res 2 2nd
1910 Wells Aaron pres Pacific Coast Rescue & Protective Society h 747 E 41st
1910 Wells Mrs Florence treas Pacific Coast Rescue & Protective Society h 747 E 41st
1911 Wells Rev Aaron pastor Brentwood Ch of the Nazarene h 747 E 41st
1912 Wells Rev Aaron leader Commons Mission pastor Brentwood Nazarene Ch h 747 E 41st
1912 Wells Mrs Florence city missionary Portland Commons h 747 E 41st
The address where they lived in the 1901-02 directory is an error; the address where they lived was "667 Hood". It is clear from the records that after being a harness maker for a number of years, Wells decided to try his hand at being a minister. He first preached at the Olive Branch Mission in downtown Portland, where he and Florence also operated the Pacific Coast Rescue and Protective Society about 1910. After being the pastor of the Brentwood Nazarene Church for five years, Aaron and Florence moved to Salem about 1916, where Wells continued being a minister. Florence died in Salem on 5 May 1923 of encephalitis, which is an inflammation of the brain. Aaron Wells died in the same city 12 June 1932.

Sarah E. Phillips was our direct ancestor. Born 3 March 1859 in Franklin County, Illinois, she moved with her parents to Missouri when she was about seven. She appears in her parents' household in the 1860 Illinois census for Franklin County as a one-year-old and in the 1870 Missouri census for Newton County as eleven years old. Sarah presumably lived with her parents when they later moved to Jasper County, Missouri near Joplin, and possibly to the Indian Territory where her father may have been an Indian agent.

On 24 January 1879, 19-year-old Sarah E. Phillips married William I. Jones in McDonald County, Missouri. She was one of two Phillips daughters who were married that day by the Justice of the Peace in his office, the other being her 14-year-old sister Eldorado. Her whereabouts at the time of the 1880 census remains unknown, but the explanation previously given that the extended family was in the Indian Territory at the time is handy if nothing else. Refuting that hypothesis, however, is the fact that Sarah and William had a son named Edward Jones, born 5 February 1880, and whose birthplace was always listed as Missouri. The marriage between Sarah and William Jones is not as mysterious as those of her sisters, but it also contains some mystery. No record of William I. Jones as ever been found following their marriage.

Sometime between 1880 and 1885, William I. Jones apparently died, since according to family records Sarah became a widow. On 16 March 1885, according to family records, Sarah married a second time to William H. Nutter. All attempts to find the location of that marriage have been unsuccessful despite a protracted search that, even conservatively, amounted to hundreds of hours. Two other records, however, give us some clues as to where that marriage may have occurred. The first is the 1885 Kansas state census mentioned earlier. In that census Lewis and Sarah Phillips were living in Cherokee County, Kansas in the small town of Hallowell. Sarah was not counted by the census taker, so she was presumably not living there at the time, but her son Edward was. Edward, who always went by Eddie, was listed as "Eddie Phillips" on the census and his age was correctly listed as five years old.

The date that the census taker came to the Phillips' small farm at Hallowell was listed as 1 March 1885. That would have been 15 days before Eddie's mother remarried, so it would seem likely that Sarah, who might have been living with her parents at Hallowell, was off someplace to be married. The compiler spent over ten years checking courthouse records in counties for hundreds of miles around, looking for the record of Sarah's marriage to William H. Nutter. All such search efforts were unsuccessful. Finally, a telephone call early in 1998 to a man in Burlington, Iowa provided...
the second clue. The man, a retired teacher named Richard Anderson, is a shirt-tail relative of the Nutters (he is the nephew of a woman who married the son of William H. Nutter⁸).

After discussing the son of William H. Nutter⁸ at some length (more on this later), Richard was asked if he knew anything about William⁸ himself. He confessed he didn't but several hours later, he called back to say that he had found an old letter from William⁸ that letter would turn out to be quite prophetic in helping to unravel the mystery of where William⁸ and Sarah⁹ married on 16 March 1885. The topic of the letter will be taken up in the next chapter, when we return to the Nutter family after a long hiatus, and resume with the account of William H. Nutter⁸.
WILLIAM H. NUTTER

William H. Nutter was the youngest of six children born to Joseph Richardson Nutter and his wife, the former Rosamond F. Furber. William was born in Macoupin County, Illinois on 26 May 1849 and grew up on the family farm at Bunker Hill. But unlike his brothers and sisters, he did not stay in Illinois. Like his father and so many of our ancestors, William H. Nutter seems to have been a bit restless. The lure of the land which he had not yet seen always seemed to beckon to him.

---

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Family Tree</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Joseph Richardson Nutter (1806-1892)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William Henry Nutter (1849-1919)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rosamond F. Furber (1809-1882)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nellie Bly Nutter (1892-1982)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lewis Phillips (1830-1890)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah E. Phillips (1859-1926)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah Gibbs Richardson (1830-1902)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

William appears in the 1850, 1860 and 1870 Illinois census schedules, living in the household of his parents at Bunker Hill. In the first record, he is only one year old, listed as ten in the second, and as 21 years old in 1870. On 29 October 1873, William married Sarah DePew (also Depew or Depue) in Macoupin County. Sarah DePew was born 11 June 1852 in Iowa, the daughter of Abraham P. DePew and his wife Mary Ann, who lived on a 40-acre farm 2-3 miles outside of Bunker Hill. Abraham DePew died in St. Louis, where he had probably been taken because of illness, on 3 May 1870. Both he and Mary Ann are buried in the Bunker Hill Cemetery. Perhaps his death left the family in desperate straits because the 1870 census schedule, filled out just 34 days after Abraham DePew died, shows 17-year-old "Sarah Depew" working as a domestic servant for Henry Hutchinson, who was a grocery merchant at Bunker Hill.

William and Sarah Nutter soon moved away from Bunker Hill and went to Missouri. There, they settled in Pike County, which is one of ten counties in the United States named after Zebulon Pike, a noted explorer who ventured along the upper Mississippi in 1805. Pike later explored the west, including Colorado, where the famous mountain was named for him. But unlike the other nine counties with the same name, Pike County, Missouri developed a rather interesting legacy. Somewhere along the line, probably about the time of the Gold Rush, anyone from Pike County was assumed to be a crude, low-grade individual.

The connotation was made popular in the west, especially in the gold fields of California. New York's Knickerbocker Magazine printed in 1857: "Our only neighbor was a squatter, and a Pike of the pikiest description. There may possibly be some untutored minds who do not understand the meaning of the term 'Pike'. It is a household word in San Francisco, originally applied to Missourians from Pike County, but afterwards used to designate individuals presenting a happy compound of verandancy and ruffianism."

That was a mild description. A man named Bayard Taylor printed a book called At Home and Abroad in 1862 in which he described: "The first immigrants that came over the plains were from Pike County, Missouri, but as the phrase 'a Pike County man' was altogether too long for this short
life of ours, it was soon abbreviated into 'a Pike'. The Pike was further described as an "Anglo-Saxon relapsed into semi-barbarism. He is long, lathy and sallow; he expectorates vehemently; he takes naturally to whisky; he has the 'shakes' his life long at home, though he generally manages to get rid of them in California; he has little respect for the rights of others; he distrusts men is 'store clothes', but venerates the memory of Andrew Jackson."

Mark Twain was born in 1835 in what was then part of Pike County, Missouri. He was already famous in 1883, when he wrote the following as an explanatory preface to his book *The Adventures of Huckleberry Finn*: "In this book a number of dialects are used, to wit: the Missouri Negro dialect; the extremist form of the backwoods Southwestern dialect; the ordinary 'Pike County' dialect; and four modified versions of the last. The shadings have not been done in haphazard fashion, or by guesswork; but painstakingly, and with the trustworthy guidance of personal familiarity with these several forms of speech." Examples of the Pike County dialect used by Mark Twain were phrases like "It don't make no difference anyhow". The book included words and combinations so new in their time that nobody had ever seen them in print, although verbally they may have been commonplace, especially in Pike County. Mark Twain, by the way, is credited with adding an estimated 12,000 new words or word usages to the English language because of his writings.

The ballad *Sweet Betsy from Pike*, popularized about 1858, is about an unmarried couple from Pike County, Missouri who travel to California. Part of the song is familiar to most:

- Did you ever hear tell of Sweet Betsy from Pike,
- Who crossed the wide mountains with her lover Ike,
- Two yoke of cattle, a large yeller dog,
- A tall Shanghai rooster, and a one-spotted hog.

There are many more stanzas to this song, some of which specifically mention Pike County.

Then there is the word *piker*, a slang expression for a stingy, petty person, especially one who is a cautious gambler who places small bets. Many dictionaries indicate the origin of the word is unknown. But H.L. Mencken, who compiled the multi-volume work *The American Language*, left no doubt about the word’s origin. He wrote "the term piker meant a yokel from Pike County, Missouri, then (in the 1800's) the common symbol of everything poverty-stricken and uncouth".

Despite its widely-known reputation, William H. Nutter moved to Pike County and became a "Piker". On 2 May 1878, he and his wife Sarah bought 40 acres in Hartford Township, about two miles southwest of the town of Ashley, Missouri. William, who was already "of Pike County" when he purchased the property according to the deed, bought the farm from Joseph and Catherine Henderson. The land (NW¼ of NE¼ of R3W-T51N-S4) lay along the "Jefferson Road" and straddled Brush Creek. William H. Nutter paid $350 for the property, plus he agreed to pay the taxes for the year 1878. William didn't have that much money; he signed a promissory note for all $350, to be paid in three installments on the first of January for each of the three next years. The first year he had to pay $100, then $125 the next two years. The note was fully repaid, as indicated on the deed.

Today, Jefferson Road is Illinois Highway 161 and any vestiges of the farmhouse have long vanished, the ground having largely reverted to its natural state. At the time, the town of Ashley had a population of about 400, boasting a hotel, general stores of all descriptions, a blacksmith business, a machine shop, a factory that manufactured reapers and mowers, and a chair factory. Today, less
than a hundred people live in Ashley. The area where William H. Nutter\(^8\) lived did not even get a gravel road until the early 1900s and did not have electricity until 1935.

On 4 April 1880, Sarah Nutter died at the age of 27 and was buried in Ashley-Fairview Cemetery just north of the town of Ashley. Despite having been married over 6½ years, there is no record of any children born to William\(^8\) and Sarah. A few months later, in the 1880 census, William Nutter was listed by the census taker as living by himself. Six and a half months after the death of his first wife, on 20 October 1880, William\(^8\) married Ann E. King, the daughter of Willis J. and Susan J. (Wilbarger) King. Willis J. King and his wife were both born in Kentucky and his family had come from there to Pike County in 1830. The King farm was located just a half mile east of William's farm.

The father of William's new wife, Willis J. King, had already died by the time he married her. Probate records for Pike County indicate that Willis J. King died in 1876 without leaving a will and that his estate was declared insolvent, resulting in part of his land being sold to pay his debts. After the widow died in 1881, the rest of the King farm was sold to the eldest son, Jacob W. King. The remaining King children received money from the estate of their parents after they signed a release to Jacob. On 10 May 1883, William H. Nutter\(^8\) and his wife Ann received $145 as their share of her parent's estate.

On 24 August 1881, Ann gave birth to a son, Hugh A. Nutter. But he would be the last of any children born to her and William\(^8\). Ann E. Nutter died 4 August 1884 and was buried next to her parents in Old Ashley Cemetery. Today, this cemetery is in deplorable condition, with many stones knocked over and broken. At one time, livestock were allowed to graze within the boundaries of the cemetery. Interestingly enough, William\(^8\) selected exactly the same style stone for his second wife's grave as he did for the first.

After burying two wives in a span of a little over four years, and attending the funeral of his mother back in Bunker Hill in between, William H. Nutter\(^8\) had enough of Pike County. He arranged for his three-year-old son Hugh to stay with his uncle, Jacob W. King, who with his wife Clara, raised Hugh to adulthood. An entry filed before the Pike County probate court on 15 May 1889 made Jacob W. King the guardian of Hugh Nutter. In the 1900 census, Hugh was still living with the King family. Hugh probably saw his natural father very few times after this.

On 20 September 1884, less than seven weeks after burying his second wife, William\(^8\) sold his farm near Ashley, Missouri. He sold the farm to James M. Riggs for $700, doubling his money. With his money in his pocket, William\(^8\) moved away from Pike County, but his destination remained unknown for a number of years. As mentioned in the last chapter, a telephone conversation with Richard Anderson of Burlington, Iowa in 1998 led to the discovery of an old letter which helps us understand where William H. Nutter went, as well as a few other things.

In the possession of Richard Anderson is a very old round wooden box. An inscription on the underside of the lid of the box stated: "This Box was bought By Willis J. King in Pike County Missouri In the year 1843." Since Willis married Susan J. Wilbarger on 31 August 1843, perhaps the wooden box was meant for his new bride. Inside the box were a number of old deeds and tax slips having to do with the King farm. But of the most interest to this work was the letter found in the box, reproduced here:
Brother Jacob,

I received your letter today with contents. I am sorry that you did not send all of it. I do not see how I am to get along without it. You know that I calculated to get it this spring. I will be in Bowling Green Thursday fore noon. Try and get it for me on my road to Bunker Hill

Vinita, I.T. March 14th 1885

Received $50.00 Fifty Dollars of Jacob W. King in part payment on a promissory note given October 16th 1884

William H. Nutter

The letter was written to Jacob W. King and was a receipt for fifty dollars which King had sent to William H. Nutter. However, William also expressed his displeasure for not having received the full amount of a promissory note that Jacob had obviously given William five months before, presumably before he left Pike County. Why Jacob owed money to William is not clear. However, two other things are important about this letter, and both occur in the top line. William H. Nutter was in Vinita, I.T. at the time that he wrote the letter, presumably where he was living at the time, since he had also received a letter there. The letters "I.T." stand for Indian Territory, and Vinita was in the district controlled by the Cherokee Nation. Vinita was located in the northeastern portion of the Indian Territory only about 30 miles from Missouri and about 25 miles from Kansas.

It is not clear exactly what William H. Nutter was doing in the Indian Territory at a time when white men were not allowed there except by permit. The safe assumption would be that he was working there in some capacity and had a legal permit to be in that territory. The second interesting thing about the letter is the date it was written, 14 March 1885. William H. Nutter married Sarah (Phillips) Jones two days later, on 16 March 1885, according to family records. In his letter, William indicated that he was planning to travel to Bowling Green, Missouri, the county seat of Pike County, and then on to Bunker Hill, Illinois, probably to visit his family. By this time, travel by train allowed relatively short travel times, and William probably knew from the train schedule that his train would arrive in Bowling Green on 19 March in the morning, which was the next Thursday.

The obvious presumption for the reason for this visit back to Missouri and Illinois was his honeymoon. What better way to spend it than to return to your old home so that your family could meet your new bride? Obviously, this is all conjecture. But the fact that William H. Nutter was provably in the Indian Territory, where we also suppose that Lewis Phillips lived for a time, shows that is not unreasonable to assume that William and Sarah married there. It is very possible that Sarah was working there also. Or she might have arranged to go there to marry, since it was easier to marry in the Indian Territory than in the surrounding states. Coupled with the fact that no marriage record has been uncovered in surrounding counties makes it seem likely that William H. Nutter and Sarah E. (Phillips) Jones married in the Indian Territory.

For fifteen years after their marriage, the whereabouts of William Nutter and his family remains a bit of a mystery. At some point after their marriage, William and Sarah moved to Jasper County, Missouri, near Webb City. We know this because several of their children claimed to have been
born in or near Webb City. Confirming this is the fact that a newspaper notice of the death of Joseph Richardson Nutter7 back in Bunker Hill in 1892 mentioned a surviving son "Will of Webb City, Mo.". No other records can be found to indicate they ever lived in Jasper County, Missouri during this time. There are no records indicating they purchased land near Webb City or anywhere else in Jasper County. A thorough search of all extant records, including birth, death, marriage records and city directories have turned up nothing. And the 1890 census records, which would have been extremely helpful in this case, are lost. One possibility, completely unproven, is that William8 and Sarah4 Nutter lived with her aunt and uncle (Reuben Allen and Nancy Richardson) on their farm in Webb City during this time.

The next record we find of William Nutter8 and his family is in the 1900 census for Walla Walla County, Washington. Sometime between 1894 and 1900, the family moved west by train and settled in the town of Walla Walla. The 1900 census schedule, filled out 23 June 1900, shows the following family:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Relation</th>
<th>Race</th>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>D.O.B.</th>
<th>Age</th>
<th>Marr?</th>
<th>Yrs</th>
<th>Ch?</th>
<th>Living</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nutter, W.H.</td>
<td>head</td>
<td>W</td>
<td>M</td>
<td>May 1849</td>
<td>51</td>
<td>M</td>
<td>15</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nutter, Sallie</td>
<td>wife</td>
<td>W</td>
<td>F</td>
<td>March 1859</td>
<td>41</td>
<td>M</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nutter, Edward</td>
<td>son</td>
<td>W</td>
<td>M</td>
<td>Feb 1880</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>S</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nutter, Andy</td>
<td>son</td>
<td>W</td>
<td>M</td>
<td>Dec 1889</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>S</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nutter, Nellie</td>
<td>daughter</td>
<td>W</td>
<td>F</td>
<td>Feb 1892</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>S</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nutter, Mary</td>
<td>daughter</td>
<td>W</td>
<td>F</td>
<td>June 1894</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>S</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phillips, Arena</td>
<td>s-in-law</td>
<td>W</td>
<td>F</td>
<td>Dec 1869</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>S</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The child missing in this family is Fred Nutter, who was born just six days before the census was taken. This was not an oversight on the part of the census taker. The census was supposed to be a snapshot of the population of the country as it was on just one day, despite the fact that it took weeks to complete the count. The instructions for the census taker in 1900 stated that he should count "every man, woman and child whose usual place of abode on the first day of June, 1900, was within your district". The instructions further stated that "no entry is to be made of a child born between the first day of June, 1900, and the day of your visit".

As mentioned previously, Arena A. Phillips was also listed in the census in Portland on 1 June 1900. It would seem that sometime after that she travelled to Walla Walla to stay with her sister and to help out while Sarah4 had her baby. In the census schedule, a few other facts are given. It also indicated that William H. Nutter8 was a farm laborer, had been unemployed for four months during the past year, and that the family owned their own home, which was free of a mortgage. Everyone in the family could also read and write except the small children.

Despite the fact that the census record indicates that the Nutters owned a home in Walla Walla, the county courthouse does not have a record of them buying or selling property in Walla Walla County. The only other record found of William H. Nutter8 in that area is in the 1902 Walla Walla City and County Directory. Listed in that directory is:

Nutter Wm H, sewer man Bowman Bros, res 814 S 9th

Listed under "Bowman & Bro." was a business on 14 S. 1st Street in Walla Walla that did plumbing and steam or gas fitting. William8 obviously worked for them as a "sewer man". There was also a similar city directory for the years 1900-01 but William H. Nutter was not listed in it, nor in later directories.
Based on this scanty information, it would appear that William H. Nutter and his family came west from Webb City, Missouri shortly before 1900, stayed in Walla Walla for a short time, and then moved to the Portland area. At the time their youngest child was born on 15 December 1902, William and Sarah were living in Oregon City, where William worked in a mill. About 1904, William moved his family to Portland, and as in Walla Walla, there is no evidence that they owned their own property or house in Portland. But we can use the following entries in old Portland City Directories to track the family's location during those years:

- 1905     Nutter Wm H, lab, bds 1674 E 19th
- 1906     Nutter Wm H, lab Sibson Rose Nurseries, res 580 Ash, City View Park
- 1907-08  Nutter Wm H, lab res 589 Glenwood Ave
- 1909     Nutter Wm H, florist Clark Bros, res Anabel Sta.
- 1910     Nutter Wm H, lab h Dow bet McCoy and Cooper
- 1911     Nutter Wm, gardener h Brentwood
- 1912     --- no listing ---
- 1913     Nutter Wm H, florist Clarke Bros h es 64th SE 4 s 65th av SE
- 1914     Nutter Wm H (Sarah) florist h Dow av nw cor McCoy Brenwood
- 1915     Nutter Wm H (Sarah E) florist h Dow av sw cor Cooper Brenwood
- 1916     Nutter Wm H (Sarah) florist h Dow av sw cor Cooper av Brenwood
- 1917     Nutter Sarah E Mrs h 6416 72nd SE
- 1917     Nutter Wm H gardener 175 Broughton av
- 1918     Nutter Sarah Mrs h 6416 66th SE
- 1918     Nutter Wm H lab r Transit House
- 1919     --- no directory available for this year ---
- 1920     Nutter Sarah h 6504 55th av SE

A close study of the City Directory entries tell us that, while in Portland, William H. Nutter worked as a flower gardener or florist. He first worked for Sibson Rose Nurseries, which were located at 1180 Milwaukie, and later for Clarke Brothers Florists, located at 287 Morrison and E. 45th. By at least 1910, the Nutters lived in the Brentwood area of what became southeast Portland. The Dow Avenue where they lived is now 65th Avenue. At the time, they lived in the block between Cooper and McCoy Streets, which today is between Cooper and Ogden Streets.

Scrutiny of the City Directory entries also tells us something else. Through 1916, William and Sarah lived together, but in both the 1917 and 1918 City Directories, they are listed as living apart. In 1918, William H. Nutter roomed in a facility called Transit House, which was located in north Portland. No City Directory exists for 1919, the year in which William died, and Sarah Nutter appears under that name in the City Directory for the last time in 1920.

William H. Nutter died of a cerebral hemorrhage in Portland on 10 June 1919 and was buried in Rose City Cemetery two days later. On 5 May 1920 in Vancouver, Washington, Sarah married Lorenzo D. McKay, a widower farmer from the Beaverton area of Washington County who was five years her junior. McKay's previous wife, Beatrix, had also died. Sarah and her third husband later lived at 6602 SE 80th Street in Portland.

Sarah died of pneumonia in Multnomah Hospital on 24 November 1926. Two days later, she was also buried in Rose City Cemetery. The graves of both Sarah and William are unmarked. Lorenzo McKay remarried to someone named Fanny, to whom he was married when he died in Beaverton on 25 January 1930. William H. and Sarah E. (Phillips) Nutter had the following children (the first was only Sarah's by her first husband, and the second was only William's by his...
Edward C. Jones was Sarah's son by her first husband, William I. Jones. A later census record as well as his death certificate indicate that he was born in Missouri, but the exact location of his birth is unknown. He was born 5 February 1880 and was five years old when his mother married William H. Nutter. He lived with his mother and stepfather at Webb City, Missouri and later at Walla Walla, Washington when the family moved there. After the family moved to Portland, he married someone named Ethel, last name unknown. On 10 November 1908, at the age of 28, Edward committed suicide. The following article appeared in the Portland Oregonian the next day:

**WANTED WIFE AT FUNERAL**

**SUICIDE LEAVES NOTE ASKING HER TO ATTEND**

Ed. C. Jones Drinks Laudanum and Is

Found Dead by Roommate Next Morning

Leaving a written request to his wife that she attend his funeral, Ed. C. Jones, foreman of the Seed Contracting Company, committed suicide by drinking laudanum some time during the early hours of yesterday morning.

"It is the last thing I shall ever ask of you." Jones scrawled in the note of farewell to his wife, from whom he was separated.

Jones died while lying beside his roommate, E.E. Metzger, in a boardinghouse at 305 First street. Metzger did not awaken while the tragedy was being enacted. At daylight he awoke and turned about to shake Jones. He made the horrifying discovery that Jones was dead.

The police and Coroner were notified and it was only after a close search of the room that the cause of death was learned. Under the bed was found a small chloroform vial.
was plain that Jones took the poison after retiring and threw the vial under the bed so that it might not be discovered by Metzger, who was away until nearly 10 o'clock. Metzger says the man was asleep and breathing heavily when he entered and retired without lighting the lamp. He suspected nothing wrong.

The wife in the case, Mrs. Ethel Jones, is a cashier at a Nickelodeon, on Morrison street, near First. They have been separated for about a year. The note of farewell to her follows:

"Dear Ethel: Now and forever, this is the last of me. As I am not able to end my troubles in this world, I am going to die. Please attend my funeral. It is the last thing I shall ever ask of you. I die your loving husband. Ed Jones."

Then, as today, the Oregonian had things wrong. His death certificate confirms that the drug that Edward C. Jones drank was chloroform, which was used at the time as an anesthetic in surgery. Despite what the paper reported, Edward did not drink laudanum, which is a tincture of opium. The evening paper of the day, the Oregon Daily Journal, also ran a story on the suicide in its 10 November 1908 edition with a different slant and a few additional details:

**SLEEPS WITH CORPSE OF FRIEND**

**Roommate Finds E.C. Jones Dead in Bed on Awakening**

**Domestic Trouble Leads Young Contractor to Commit Suicide**

When E.E. Metzger awoke in his room in a lodging house at 305 First street, at 5 o'clock this morning, he found himself lying beside the corpse of his friend and roommate, Ed Jones. Investigation disclosed the fact that Jones had committed suicide during the night.

Domestic troubles appear to have been the cause of the self murder. Jones left a note, which was found in his coat pocket addressed to his wife, asking her to think well of him if she could, and saying that as he could not end his troubles in this world, he was going to try to end them in the next. He asked his wife to attend his funeral.

Jones and his wife had not been living together for some time. Her home is on Thurston street, and she is employed in a 5-cent moving picture show on First street between Main and Madison streets. It appears that despairing of being able to effect a reconciliation Jones decided to end his troubles by death.

It is probable that the man took chloroform, a bottle containing that poison being found in the room. Deputy Coroner Dunning is inclined to believe he took the chloroform early in the evening.

E.E. Metzger says that he went home at 9:30 last night, and went to bed beside Jones without lighting the lamp. Jones was snoring heavily, and Metzger made him turn over. Metzger then went to sleep. He awoke at 5 o'clock, and knowing that his friend had to go to work early, called him.

Jones failed to respond, and Metzger reached over and touched him. He was horrified to find that the man was dead. He hastily summoned the landlord, who called the coroner, and the body was removed to the morgue.

E.C. Jones, or Ed Jones, as he was commonly called, was 28 years old, and a general construction man by trade, being a foreman for J.S. Seed, an east side contractor. He had lived in Portland for at least 12 years, his parents residing on the east side. He was a member of the order of Eagles of the Oregon City lodge.

The coroner will not hold an inquest over the body.

The note addressed to the dead man's wife reads:

"To Mrs. Ethel Jones -- Dear Ethel: Now and forever. This is the last of me. As I am not able to end my troubles in this world, I am going to die. Please attend my funeral. This
is the last thing I shall ever ask of you. Ed Jones."

Edward's death certificate states that he died of "chloral hydrate poisoning (suicide)". It is not known, of course, if the estranged wife of Edward C. Jones came to the funeral or not. Ed was buried two days after his death in an unmarked grave in Rose City Cemetery in Portland. His cemetery plot was paid for by his half-brother Andy Nutter. Oddly enough, the 1909 city directory has the following listing:

Jones Ethel (wid Edward C), res 305 1st

This indicates that his young widow, after Edward's suicide, went to live in the same boarding house where Edward had taken his life.

Hugh A. Nutter was the son of William H. Nutter by his second wife, Ann E. King, and born near Ashley in Pike County, Missouri on 24 August 1881. His mother died a few weeks before his third birthday, and Hugh was given to his maternal uncle, Jacob W. King, to be raised. His father moved away from Pike County and it's not likely that Hugh saw his father much after that. The reason that William H. Nutter abandoned his child is not clear. The evidence indicates that William probably moved to the Indian Territory to work, since he was at Vinita when he wrote the letter to Jacob W. King about five months after selling his farm in Pike County. Clearly he would not have been able to care for such a small child and work at the same time. But why William did not retrieve his child following his marriage to Sarah E. (Phillips) Jones is not understood.

As mentioned previously, Jacob W. King became the legal guardian of Hugh A. Nutter on 15 May 1889. On that date, Jacob was "appointed by the Probate court of Pike County Missouri Guardian of the person and curator of the estate of Hugh A. Nutter aged 8 years of said count a minor". Jacob W. King and his wife, the former Clara B. Galbreath, raised Hugh to adulthood. The Kings only had two children of their own and one of them died young; the surviving child was named Nellie S. King. In the 1900 census, 18-year-old Hugh A. Nutter was living with the Kings in their rented home in Keithsburg, Illinois, a small town on the Mississippi River. They apparently lived in town since Jacob W. King worked as a "button cutter", probably in a small factory. Hugh possibly worked in the same factory since he was listed as being a "machinist (apprentice)".

Young Hugh soon left the home of his uncle and aunt and moved to Galesburg, Illinois, a larger town about 30 miles east of Keithsburg. In Galesburg, Hugh A. Nutter went to work for the railroad. In the First Baptist Church there on 30 June 1904, Hugh A. Nutter married Mabel H. Mason. She had been born about 1880 in Saybrook, Illinois, the daughter of W.T. and Rhoda (Green) Mason. They were married less than two years when Mabel died on 15 March 1906 at the age of 26. Hugh worked as an locomotive engineer and travelled through many small towns in Illinois. While in tiny Carman, Illinois, he took his wash to a lady named Minnie McCaleb, who did laundry for people. It turned out that Hugh would become more interested in Mrs. McCaleb's daughter Ethel than getting his laundry done.

Hugh A. Nutter and Ethel C. McCaleb were married 19 February 1907 in Burlington, Iowa and were married for over sixty years. Ethel was born at Carman on 26 May 1887, the daughter of William and Minnie McCaleb. Hugh and Ethel lived in Galesburg all their lives, where Hugh worked as a locomotive engineer for over fifty years. Galesburg was a railroad town when Hugh A. Nutter first moved there and is still one today, where Galesburg Railroad Days are celebrated every year. The first train pulled into Galesburg in December 1854 and it was the beginning of a
new era for that city. From the Galesburg Railroad Museum, the massive Burlington Northern Railroad yards south of town, the two Amtrak depots, and the freight and passenger trains rumbling through town everyday, it is very apparent that Galesburg, Illinois is still a railroad hub.

For years, Hugh A. Nutter was a locomotive engineer with the Chicago, Burlington & Quincy Railroad (the CB&Q), a regional railroad especially prominent in northern Illinois. The CB&Q merged with Great Northern Railroad and Northern Pacific Railroad in 1970 to become Burlington Northern, as it is known today. Hugh's "run" was from Galesburg to Chicago and back, which he made every other day with a day off in between. Hugh was the first engineer for the CB&Q to pilot a diesel train after it was developed in West Burlington, Iowa. Hugh continued being a locomotive engineer into his seventies, but eventually there was an incident in which a train he was piloting was found to be going over the speed limit. He was forced into retirement following a hearing regarding the matter. Hugh always maintained that there had been a mechanical defect and that the incident was not his fault.

After his retirement on 3 February 1953, Hugh and Ethel continued to live in Galesburg, their last residence being at 235 E. Fremont Street in that city. Hugh died 5 November 1969 at the age of 88 in St. Mary's Hospital in Galesburg. Ethel lived another two years, dying on 13 September 1971 in the Abingdon Nursing Home. They were buried together at Linwood Cemetery in Galesburg, next to the grave of his first wife Mabel.

Hugh and Ethel were never able to have children, so they adopted a child named AnnaLee Virginia Morrison about 1916. The Morrisons were a poor family who lived in Burlington and the adoption was handled privately, rather than through an agency. The child's mother was Anna Morrison, who had been very ill for some time. Anna died about three weeks after giving birth to AnnaLee on 8 December 1915, and was buried at a poor cemetery called Potter's Field in Burlington.

AnnaLee supposedly had seven brothers and sisters by her birth parents. There is a story in this family that one of the Morrison brothers became the actor John Wayne. This belief was probably based upon the fact that John Wayne was born Marion Robert Morrison in Winterset, Iowa on 26 May 1907. The story probably got started because of the same name, being born in the same state, and about the right time frame. But John Wayne's parents were Clyde and Molly (Brown) Morrison, who moved to California when the Duke was still a boy. As an interesting aside, Marion Robert Morrison's mother named her second son Robert and changed Marion's middle name to Mitchel. Marion himself changed his middle name to Michael before later assuming the stage name John Wayne. His mother was still alive long after John Wayne became a famous actor.

As a child, AnnaLee was not told she had been adopted. One day at school, she learned the truth from a playmate, and came home crying. Only after confronting her mother about what she had been told did she learn the truth from her parents. AnnaLee never knew the name of her birth mother until after Hugh and Ethel died, when she found the name in a letter that her mother had kept. AnnaLee purchased grave markers for her birth parents after both Hugh and Ethel were dead.

AnnaLee Nutter eloped with Walter F. Swanson on 29 April 1936 in Galesburg. She was twenty at the time and he was 37. Walter had been married before but his first wife Louise had entered the hospital for some tests in 1932. Upon learning that she would never be able to bear children, Louise
committed suicide by throwing herself from the hospital window. Hugh9 and Ethel disapproved of the marriage between AnnaLee and Walter Swanson and never forgave him for it. There was always a level of animosity in the family regarding Walter. For fifty years, Walter Swanson worked as a machinist for the railroad in Galesburg. On 13 July 1978, ten years after he retired, Walter went to his doctor in Galesburg for a checkup, was pronounced physically fit by the doctor, but within minutes had a fatal heart attack while still in the doctor's office.

AnnaLee also worked for what became the Burlington Northern Railroad, having served as a clerk for that company for 25 years. She and Walter had only one daughter, Carole Swanson, born 5 February 1937. When Carole was 39, she was working at her job as a cashier at the Galesburg Holiday Inn when she complained of feeling dizzy. She fell from the edge of the stool she was sitting on and struck her head on the floor. Carole never regained consciousness and it was never determined exactly why she died. After Walter Swanson died, AnnaLee became good friends with a 28-year-old male renter. When AnnaLee finally died of cancer on 4 December 1982, her friend ended up with both her homes and an insurance settlement.

Frank Nutter9 was the first child born to both William H. Nutter8 and his third wife, the former Sarah E. Phillips4. The child was born 12 November 1888 but died when he was about eight months old.

Andrew C. Nutter9 was born 21 December 1890 in Missouri, probably in Jasper County near Webb City. Andy9, as he was always known, came with his family to Walla Walla, and later, to Oregon City and then Portland. On 16 December 1912, Andy Nutter9 married Emma Koontz in Portland. Emma was the daughter of Elsie Koontz, who was a Swiss emigrant who had lived in Kansas. Early in the spring of 1912, Andy9 had purchased two lots in the Brentwood area of southeast Portland and began building a house on one of the lots. Apparently convinced that he could make money building a house for resale, Andy9 took out three mortgages totalling $1475 on this property. On 2 November 1912, Andy9 entered into an agreement with John O. Johnson to sell Johnson the house that was nearly complete by that time.

Andy9 agreed to "complete painting the house, on outside and inside including the floors, brick up the toilet and complete the same, hang the doors and finish all the woodwork, complete all plumbing in first class order, put glass mirror in front hall, finish wood-lift and complete any and all other work about the house in workman-like manner". The contract gave Andy9 only 13 days to complete the additional work. Apparently he was able to do so, since the sale of the house for $2500 was completed on 27 November 1912. This house still stands today and is located at 6948 SE 64th Avenue in Portland.

Flush with his initial success as a housing contractor, Andy C. Nutter9 soon started to build another house on his second lot, located one street over and just behind the first lot. Just three days after completing the sale of the first house, Andy9 borrowed $500 from a man named R.T. Brennan, presumably to begin the second house. The loan was secured by the deed for the second lot, which Andy conveyed to Brennan. However, just nine days later, the man who bought the first house, John O. Johnson, also loaned Andy C. Nutter9 $310 against the second lot, with Andy9 also securing that loan with a deed for the second lot. How Andy9 managed to secure two loans with one deed for the property would soon become the subject of considerable discussion.
On 2 March 1914, Andy C. Nutter was indicted by the Circuit Court of the State of Oregon for "obtaining money by false pretenses". It was claimed by the state that Andy had obtained the $310 from Johnson by "having a fraudulent warranty deed". It was further claimed in the indictment that Andy did not own the second lot and that he obtained the loan from Johnson with a deed that "was not valid", presumably because the original valid deed had been given to Brennan. The case was submitted to the grand jury, but Andy must have had a good story, because on 4 May 1914, the case against him was dismissed and the "defendant discharged from custody".

But Andy's troubles didn't end there. Shortly after the indictment against Andy was dismissed, on 17 June 1914, R.T. Brennan foreclosed on Andy for failing to make his payments to Brennan. The man foreclosing was Robert T. Brennan, the manager of Modern Painless Dentists in downtown Portland. He probably had loaned the money as an investment, since the loan was to be repaid by Andy in three years at 8% annual interest. However, in his lawsuit, Brennan claimed that Andy was in arrears $60 on his interest and that Andy had also not paid the taxes on the property as he had agreed to do. The unpaid taxes were $15 and the lawsuit stated that the "taxes are now a lien".

The defendants were declared in default on 13 October 1914 and the court ordered that the property be seized by the Sheriff of Multnomah County and sold at public auction, the plaintiff being permitted to purchase the property after the proceeds of the sale were applied to the loan principal, interest, attorney fees, court costs, etc. The house was seized, and on 5 April 1915, was purchased by Brennan. Multnomah County deed records indicate that the house on this second lot was built in 1915, but it is not clear whether it was built by Andy C. Nutter or finished later by Brennan. As an interesting sidebar, Andy's wife Emma was named as a co-defendant in the lawsuit, but identified as "Doe Nutter".

Andy continued to live in Portland, where he is listed in the City Directories either as a plumber, steam fitter or pipe fitter. He and Emma later moved to California, where he lived in Oakland and operated his own plumbing shop. Andy was an adventuresome individual, reportedly running whiskey during Prohibition and trying his hand at gold mining near Placerville for a time. For a time he raised pigeons and sold squabs to fancy restaurants in San Francisco. Andy Nutter died on 12 May 1954 in Sacramento as the result of a fall from a horse. He was buried two days later in Evergreen Cemetery in Oakland. Emma died 8 April 1964 in Santa Cruz County, California. Andy and Emma did not have any children.

Mary Olease Nutter was born in Webb City, Missouri on 2 June 1894. As a child she accompanied her parents west to Walla Walla and later on to Oregon. In Portland on 11 April 1911, she married George Henry Nash, to whom she was married for nearly 54 years. George worked as a lather and a shingler while he was still able to work. Later in life, George suffered from Parkinson's Disease and was unable to work for many years. Mary also worked most of her life, from jobs as a maid in the famous Biltmore Hotel in Los Angeles to hospital and caretaker work.

George and Mary Nash made several trips to California and back, but they lived in Portland after about 1944. They stayed in Portland the rest of their lives, their last address being at 10925 NE Schuyler Street. George Nash died 3 April 1965 while in a nursing home. Mary died 6 March 1975, also in a nursing home. They are both buried in Lincoln Memorial Park in Portland. George and Mary Nash had eight children: Laura, Mary, Edward C., Margie, Bernard J., Jack D., Bob W. and Albert L. Nash. All but Laura and Jack are still alive at the time of this writing, and all but
Albert live in California.

Fred Theodore Nutter\(^9\) was born in Walla Walla, Washington on 17 June 1900. The family soon moved to Oregon City and then later to Portland, where Fred\(^9\) grew up. At 18 in Vancouver, Washington, he married 17-year-old Minerva Emeline Wilson, who was the daughter of Robert and Bertha (Chatterson) Wilson, who had both come to Portland from Canada. But Fred\(^9\) and Minerva soon divorced, and on 26 July 1922 also in Vancouver, Fred\(^9\) married Alberta Ella Shatto, whose family was from Scappoose. Alberta was the daughter of John and Mary (Porter) Shatto. Soon after their marriage, Fred\(^9\) and Alberta moved to Oakland, California, driving down in a Model T. In Oakland, Fred\(^9\) worked with his brother Andy\(^9\) in his plumbing shop. Fred\(^9\) and Alberta returned to Oregon in the late 1920s or early 1930s and lived at Rainier, where Fred\(^9\) worked as a farmer and in the shingle mill. About 1944, Fred\(^9\) and Alberta moved back to the Portland area.

Fred Nutter\(^9\) worked for a time for Clackamas County on their experimental farm, later drove truck for Gadsby Furniture for seven or eight years, and last worked as a manager of a grocery outlet store. Alberta worked for some years in a motel. Fred\(^9\) died in Portland on 26 December 1979 and Alberta on 11 February 1988. Both are buried at Hilltop Cemetery in Rainier, Oregon. Fred\(^9\) and Alberta had two sons. The first, Fred Andy Nutter\(^10\), was born 18 April 1926 in Oakland, California. He died at the age of 28 on 21 July 1953 in Kaiser Hospital in Vancouver, Washington. Since he had served as a corporal in the Army Air Corps from 1944 to 1946, Fred\(^{10}\) was buried at Willamette National Cemetery in Portland. The second son, William Robert Nutter\(^10\), was born 16 November 1931 in Portland, although his parents lived at Rainier at the time. He currently lives with his wife Barbara in Milwaukie, Oregon.

Sylvia Ruth Nutter\(^9\) was born in Oregon City on 15 December 1902. She grew up in Portland, where the family moved soon after. Just before her eighteenth birthday, Sylvia\(^8\) married Samuel Archibald "Archie" Pritchard in Portland on 20 November 1920. Pritchard was born in Paris, Idaho in 1901. He worked for the Union Pacific Railroad as a machinist, retired from the railroad in California and lived at Lynwood, California until his death in 1981. Sylvia\(^8\) and Archie divorced a few years after they were married, but not before one son, Dale Pritchard, was born on 19 September 1923. Sylvia remarried in Portland on 16 April 1931 to Virgil O. Grimm. Virgil worked in a rooming house, later ran a service station, and finally worked as a mechanic for Greyhound Bus Lines.

Virgil Grimm died 6 July 1938 in Portland. Sylvia continued to live in Portland, working for various printing and binding companies such as Metropolitan Printing and Lane Miles Standish. She also worked for a time as a seamstress for a Portland fur retailer. Just one day after turning 79, on 16 December 1981, Sylvia\(^9\) died at her home on 612 SE Manchester Place in Portland. Dale Pritchard and his wife Jeanne still live in Milwaukie, Oregon.

Nellie Bly Nutter\(^9\) was our direct ancestor. Her story will be continued in the next chapter.
NELLIE BLY NUTTER

Nellie Bly Nutter⁹ was born 28 February 1892 in Jasper County, Missouri near Webb City. Nellie⁹, who was considered a truly remarkable woman by everyone who ever knew her, missed being born on Leap Day by one day. Nellie⁹ was named for a Stephen Foster song and a famous reporter for the New York World. Elizabeth Jane Cochran had been born 5 May 1865 and raised in the small mill town of Cochran's Mills, Pennsylvania, where she received one year of formal education. Elizabeth's father died when she was about six and her mother soon moved the family near Pittsburgh. When Elizabeth was 15, she attended a boarding school for one year and then decided to stay at home and learn on her own. She would spend hours at a time reading and writing in the family library. Elizabeth began to think that her name was too plain, so she added an "e" to her last name and went by Elizabeth Cochrane.

In 1886, at the age of 21, Elizabeth and her sister moved into Pittsburgh, where Elizabeth began searching for a job. She had an extremely hard time finding any employment available to a woman other than mundane duties like being a governess, maid, store clerk, factory worker or companion to elderly women. Elizabeth wanted a career at a time when such things were denied women. One day Elizabeth was reading the Pittsburgh Dispatch and came across an article entitled "What Girls Are Good For." This article poked fun of women trying to get jobs that men typically occupied. The article stated that unless women became nurses or teachers, they should stay at home and leave work to men. This infuriated Elizabeth and she mailed an angry response to the newspaper with a contrary opinion, signing the letter "Lonely Orphan Girl".

The newspaper published her letter, so Elizabeth decided to pay a visit to newspaper office and see what the managing editor, George Madden, really thought about her letter. The visit landed her a job with the Dispatch as a reporter. She assumed the pen name Nellie Bly, based upon the following Stephen Foster tune:

Nelly Bly! Nelly Bly! Bring de broom along,
We'll sweep the kitchen clean, my dear, and hab a little song.
Poke de wood, my lady lub, And make de fire burn,
And while I take de banjo down, Just gib de mush a turn.
Heigh! Nelly Ho! Nelly, listen, lub, to me,
I'll sing for you and play for you a dulcem melody.
Nelly Bly hab a voice like de turtle dove,
I hear it in de meadow and I hear it in de grove.
Nelly Bly hab a heart warm as it can be,
And bigger dan de sweet potato down in Tennessee.
Heigh! Nelly Ho! Nelly, listen, lub, to me,
I'll sing for you and play for you a dulcem melody.
Nelly Bly! Nelly Bly! Nebber, nebber sigh,
And nebber bring de tear drop to de corner ob your eye.
For pie is made ob punkins and de mush is made ob corn,
And der's corn and punkins plenty, lub, a lyin in de barn.
Heigh! Nelly Ho! Nelly! listen, lub, to me,
I'll sing for you and play for you a dulcem melody.

Elizabeth Cochrane, alias Nellie Bly, had a talent for investigative journalism, when such a thing was virtually unknown. Nellie wanted to write about corruption and urban social conditions. Her first major assignment was to go into the factories around Pittsburgh where women were employed and see what the conditions were like. She did, noticing the dirty floors and walls, rats running around, the cold and dreary working environment, the terrible pay and the fact that none of the workers talked to each other. Nellie became the voice for the working women of Pittsburgh and most of her readers loved the articles that she wrote. The sales of the paper shot up.

Nellie Bly then decided to pose as a poor working woman and get hired in a factory so that she could experience the conditions first hand. She experienced workers getting hurt, including herself. Her hands would be cut and bleed from twisting heavy copper wires into cables, but her pleas to the foreman went unheeded. She wrote her "inside story" articles about her experiences in factories where children only 10 and 12 years old were working long hours. Because of her newspaper articles, bills were soon introduced in the state legislature to rectify the reported problems. But the factory owners were furious and threatened to stop all advertising in the Dispatch if Nellie's articles weren't halted. The editors were pressured into stopping Bly from writing further investigative articles and she was reassigned to articles about things such as the theater and art.

Nellie soon talked her way into a job working for the Dispatch as a foreign correspondent from Mexico. She wrote about the music, fashion, food, the bullfights, the streets, the people and the countryside. Nellie's articles not only were published in the Pittsburgh Dispatch but also in other newspapers across the country. After six months, Nellie Bly returned to Pittsburgh and was assigned to standard news reporting. She was miserable because she missed the adventure and challenges of more investigative journalism. Her mother had moved to New York City by this time, so Nellie decided to move there as well since it the newspaper capitol of the world.

Nellie wasn't well known in New York City and, as usual, no one wanted to hire a woman reporter. But after much persistence, Nellie was finally able to get an interview with Joseph Pulitzer and John Cockerill, the owner and managing editor of the New York World. The World was then a major newspaper famous for its sensationalism, careful and extensive exposés, and crusades against corruption. Joseph Pulitzer, a Hungarian immigrant, went on to found the famous prize for journalism in his name. Pulitzer and Cockerill were somewhat doubtful of Nellie but were very impressed with the ideas that she presented. They gave her a job and in three days Nellie got her first assignment. She pretended to be insane and had herself committed to the insane asylum on Blackwell's Island (now Roosevelt Island). Bly disguised herself as a poor mad woman from Cuba whose insanity prevented her from knowing how to get back to her family and home.

After ten days, Nellie was rescued from the asylum and wrote a series of articles about the conditions and treatment of the inmates entitled "Among the Mad". Copies of the World sold as fast as they were printed. In the articles she gave detailed accounts of how the doctors did very little to prove she was insane, but were confident that she was indeed insane. She also described the unsanitary conditions the women were forced to live in, and how the nursing staff at the asylum...
abused the women. Her exposé of conditions among the patients, also later collected in a book *Ten Days in a Mad House* published in 1887, precipitated a grand-jury investigation of the asylum and helped bring about needed improvements in patient care. Similar exploits as a reporter took her into sweatshops, jails (after pretending to shoplift), and the legislature (where she exposed bribery in the lobbyist system). She was far and away the best-known woman journalist of her day and became very famous.

One day Nellie told John Cockerill about a book that she had read by Jules Verne called *Around the World in Eighty Days* and that she wanted to try to beat his record. The newspaper liked her idea, a news-making stunt to send the "plucky young reporter" on a trip around the world to challenge factually the fictional record set by Jules Verne's Phileas Fogg. She claimed that she could make the trip in 75 days. On 14 November 1889, Nellie Bly departed by ship from New Jersey. Riding ships, trains, boats, sampans, horses and burros, she made the trip of a lifetime and even had time to stop in France and interview Jules Verne himself. The *New York World* sponsored a national contest to guess the exact time it would take her to complete the trip and nearly one million people entered the contest. The winner was to receive a trip to Europe.

Joseph Pulitzer had sent a special train to meet her in San Francisco, and she arrived in New York City on 25 January 1890, after 72 days, 6 hours, 11 minutes and 14 seconds. She was greeted by fireworks, gun salutes, brass bands and a parade on Broadway. The stunt made her world famous. Nellie Bly's book, titled *Around the World in Seventy-two Days* and published in 1890, was extremely successful. The name Nellie Bly became synonymous for a female star reporter or any female with self-made success. A great many female babies born about this time acquired the name.

As a followup, in 1895 at the age of 30, Nellie Bly married Robert L. Seaman, an 80-year-old millionaire, and retired from journalism. When Seaman died in 1904, Nellie ran his company, none too successfully, and the company went bankrupt in 1913. Still personally wealthy, she left for a vacation in Europe, and was in Austria in 1914 when World War I broke out. She could not get back to the United States so she decided to return to newspaper work and began writing a column in the New York Evening Journal corresponding from Austria. Elizabeth Cochrane, alias Nellie Bly, died from pneumonia in New York City on 27 January 1922.

Nellie Bly Nutter was born in 1892, when her famous namesake was at the very height of her fame. It can be assumed today that her parents had either followed the articles in the *New York World*, reprinted in many other newspapers of the time, or later read Nellie Bly's hugely popular book about her globe-trotting exploits. In either case, Nellie Bly Nutter came west on the train with her parents, and after a brief stint in Walla Walla, Washington and Oregon City, moved to Portland about 1903.

As a teenager, she lived with her uncle and aunt, Aaron and Florence (Phillips) Wells. Her aunt and uncle were quite religious people and Nellie attended the Free Methodist Church with them. While in church one day in 1907, she met a young man named Clyde Van Blaricom, who attended the same church. She told years later that, at first, she had trouble remembering Clyde's last name because it was such "a darn fool name". Clyde and Nellie got to know one another better when they each spent time at the Cedar Park church camp near St. Johns, which was operated by the Free Methodist Church.
Clyde Wily Van Blaricom had been born in Columbia County, Oregon, near the town of Vernonia, on 27 September 1881, eight days after President James Garfield died from an assassin's bullet. Clyde was the son of John W. Van Blaricom and his wife, the former Julia E. Parker. Clyde grew up on his father's farm just southwest of Vernonia and attended the Wilson school in that town. Clyde, like many of his generation, was needed on the farm and did not attend high school, receiving only a basic education. After his family moved to Portland from Vernonia about 1899, with only a minimal education and a knowledge of farming, Clyde would spend most of his life working as a common laborer. The old Portland City Directories give us some record of his employment and place of residence early in his life.

From 1901 to 1912, the directories provide the following information:

1901-02  Van Blaricom Clyde, mach opr Troy Laundry, res Mt. Tabor
1903       --- No listing that year ---
1904     Van Blaricom Clyde W, lab Am Can Co, bds Base Line rd 4 w West av.
1905     Van Blaricom Clyde W, lab Am Can Co, res Base Line rd 4 w West av.
1906     Van Blaricom Clyde W, lab E&W Lbr Co, bds Base Line rd 4 w West av.
1907-08  Van Blaricom Clyde W, lab, bds 1490 E Oak
1909     Van Blaricom Clyde W, lab US Laundry, bds Tremont
1910     Van Blaricom Clyde W ctr FC Stettler, h Tremont Pl
1911     Van Blaricom Clyde W lab h ss 60th av SE 2 w 67th SE
1912     Van Blaricom Clyde W emp Am Can Co

Clyde worked for Troy Laundry, which was located at 201 E. Water for a time after his family moved to Portland. He was about 20 years old at the time. His sister Ella also worked at Troy Laundry as an ironer. Both were living at home with their parents in their home near Mt. Tabor.

About 1903-04, Clyde began working for American Can Company, which manufactured tin cans and was located at NW Front Avenue at 14th in downtown Portland. Both of his brothers, Clark and John, worked there as well, although Clark only worked there a short time. From the directory listings, we can ascertain that Clyde did not have steady work at American Can Company since he had at least three other jobs in the years listed. The "E&W Lbr Co" listed was Eastern & Western Lumber Company, located near his other job at N.W. Front Ave and 21st. His job at United States Laundry was at S.E. Grand Avenue at the corner with Yamhill. Finally, he worked as a cutter at the Frank C. Stettler Company, a paper box manufacturer located at N.W. 10th and Glisan.

Although Nellie⁹ was only 16 years old, and Clyde was 27, the two married on 21 November 1908 in Portland. Since both came from very poor families, the new household was very sparse, but they made do. For the first few months of their marriage, they rented a house from a person named Howe in the Mt. Tabor area, but the house was soon sold and they had to move. Clyde and Nellie⁹ then rented a house on 65th and Millard Avenue for six months, where their first child, Nita, was born on 17 May 1909. They then rented another house for less than a year from a man named Ford, but while they were living at this location, they began building their own home. On 9 March 1909, less than four months after he and Nellie⁹ were married, Clyde Van Blaricom had purchased 1.61 acres from his parents, paying them $150 for the land. The property, at Gilbert, was subdivided from the 6.25 acres that his parents had purchased less than two weeks before.

Clyde and Nellie⁹ Van Blaricom moved into their new house at Gilbert in April 1911, where they were to live for most of the next eleven years. An examination of early mortgage records for Multnomah County indicates a family that never was able to get ahead. On 23 December 1912, Clyde and Nellie⁹ took out a $300 mortgage from Albert Joffray, the amount payable in one year at
an interest rate of ten percent. That loan was paid off a year later, but the next day Clyde and Nellie\(^9\) took out a $376 mortgage from David Mathews, again for a year and with ten percent interest. Finally, on 4 March 1920, the records show that the family took out a mortgage in the amount of $550 from L. Ferdinand Floss, at seven percent interest for three years. Whereas most families are able to pay their home mortgages down over the years, Clyde and Nellie's mortgages kept getting larger.

Nellie's brother, Andy C. Nutter\(^9\), was originally the source of the problem. Andy\(^9\) reportedly talked Clyde into taking a mortgage on their house to fund him in his house building venture, described earlier. The man from who Clyde borrowed money, Albert Joffray, was the same person from whom Andy C. Nutter\(^9\) had mortgaged his property to build his first house. But the shenanigans that Andy\(^9\) pulled regarding the bogus deed on his second lot caused others just as much pain as he caused himself. When the venture failed, Andy was unable to repay his sister and brother-in-law, and Clyde and Nellie\(^9\) lost possession of their house for a time.

Nellie\(^9\) noted years later that they had to move to a rented house in Tremont for six months in 1916, with their three children, Eva and Cleman having been added to the family at Gilbert. While living in the rented house at Tremont, their fourth child, Ella, was born. But somehow they were able to recover the house they had built and eventually returned to it. On 28 August 1921, Clyde and Nellie\(^9\) sold their house and property at Gilbert to George H. Hamilton and his wife Minnie. The Hamiltons paid $1500 for the property, plus they assumed the mortgage of $550 mentioned above.

For the next four months, Clyde and Nellie\(^9\) rented a house in Brentwood, where the Nutters had lived. The small addition was located in southeast Portland between Duke and Flavel streets and between 62nd and 72nd Avenues. On 15 December 1921, they purchased a small two-room house on what would eventually become Raymond Street in Portland, moving into the house six days later. They moved many of their possessions to the house by a team and wagon that Clyde apparently borrowed. The move is remembered to this day by Clyde's oldest daughter Nita, since she accompanied him in the wagon on the trip. The day was very cold and Portland had experienced an ice storm, resulting in treacherous footing for the horses pulling the wagon. Nita remembers being very frightened over the fact that the horses were slipping and sliding on the sheet ice during their trip to the new house. There was no heat in the little house when they arrived there, and Nita remembers that a neighbor lady took them in for awhile so that they could warm themselves.

The City Directories for Portland for the years 1923 through 1934 provide an interesting look at the addresses that were used to identify the same house:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Year</th>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Address</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1923</td>
<td>Van Blaricom Clyde W (Nellie)</td>
<td>lab h 50th av SE nr 103rd SE R 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1924</td>
<td>Van Blaricom Clyde W (Nellie)</td>
<td>lab h 50th av SE and 104th SE R 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1925</td>
<td>Van Blaricom Clyde W (Nellie)</td>
<td>c1nr h 51st av SE 104 SE RD 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1926</td>
<td>Van Blaricom Clyde W (Nellie)</td>
<td>lab h 51st av SE nr 104th SE RD 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1927</td>
<td>Van Blaricom Clyde (Nellie)</td>
<td>lab h 51st av SE nr 104th SE RD 3 box 53BD</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1928</td>
<td>Van Blaricom Clyde (Nellie)</td>
<td>lab h 51st av SE nr 102nd SE RD 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1929</td>
<td>Van Blaricom Clyde W (Nellie)</td>
<td>lab Jones Lbr Co r 10291 51st av SE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1930</td>
<td>Van Blaricom Clyde janitor Jones Lbr Co r 10291 51st av SE</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1931</td>
<td>Van Blaricom Clyde W (Nellie M)</td>
<td>janitor Jones Lbr Co h 10291 51st av SE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1932</td>
<td>Van Blaricom Clyde W (Nellie B)</td>
<td>lab h 10291 51st av SE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1933</td>
<td>Van Blaricom Clyde W (Nellie B)</td>
<td>millwkr h 10291 51st av SE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1934</td>
<td>Van Blaricom Clyde W (Nellie B)</td>
<td>lab 10257 SE Raymond</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The address used in the last listing would remain the same until today and should be very
recognizable by everyone who knew Clyde and Nellie. Directory listings in subsequent years were similar to 1934, and offer no new significant information.

Clyde W. Van Blaricom and his wife Nellie continued to live in their small house on Raymond Street for many years, although the house suffered through many an addition. Clyde worked at Jones Lumber Company for years, primarily as a janitor and cleanup man. The company's mill was located at 1280 Macadam, and Clyde rode the streetcar to get to work. Clyde never owned nor ever learned to drive a car. During World War II, Clyde worked in the Oregon Shipyards, retiring after the war ended.

As with many families, World War II had a tremendous impact on the Van Blaricom family. All three sons of Clyde and Nellie served in the war, though each in a different branch of the military. The oldest of the three, Cleman G. Van Blaricom, joined the Navy in March 1942 and left for training in July 1942; he served in the Construction Brigade, or the "SeaBees". The middle brother, Sherben E. Van Blaricom, always wanted to fly and joined the Army Air Corps in December 1941 and became a bomber pilot; Sherben died in the war. The youngest of the three, Ervin H. Van Blaricom, joined the Marine Corps the day after Pearl Harbor was attacked, and left for his training the day after Christmas 1941.

Clyde Van Blaricom was noted as quite a story teller, and both children and grandchildren listened intently for hours as he spun his tales. Whether or not his stories had any basis in fact was never questioned by the young sets of ears, for it was the telling of the story that was the best part. Even his biases contributed to his stories, such as the story that he told about the Van Blaricom ancestors that hid in a barn all night in order to kill Lincoln, which probably grew more from Clyde's never-understood dislike of Abraham Lincoln than anything else.

Clyde was noted for his unusual jokes as much as for his spellbinding tales. It is doubtful that anyone ever understood the point to some of them, such as this:

_I gits me up in the morgan, the sun vas about a hof hour low from the ground. I yust yump the bed out of me und mine britches on me und I goes mine stairs down. Und dere vas mine vife und mine little son Chon all broked out mit da bed bugs. Den I hears a noise vat be's outdoors. Und dere was a panther up a sycamore tree about 4 feet low from the ground. I yust take mine little fiest dog ofer mine shoulder und mine double-barreled shot gun he comes along too shure nuff und I goes mine doors out und I shoot that sycamore tree I do. Den I goes me out to mine pumpkin patch und dere vas mine pumpkins all broked out und eatin' all mine hogs up. I yust sic those hogs on mine little fiest dog; we run the fence around the field across und I fall across a stake-a-rider fence und almost killed I are._

_Den I goes me out to mine barn - I yust yump da barn out of mine horse, my horse on mine saddle und mine saddle on me und ve ride da road down, the bridge across, und da crick upstream und I goes me down to Mr. Yake's - I holler, "Hello Yake!" He yust stick da door right out mit his head und he hollers, "Hello, is dot you?" "Ya, dot's me already now." I say, "You got any whiskey?" He say, "Ya, 'bout t'ree quarts, but dey be's all drunked up now."

_I yust be so mad, I turns around, I rides da road down, da bridge across and the crick upstream und I goes me down to Mrs. Andy Morrison's. I holler, "Hello." She yust stick der vinder right out mit her head und she hollers "Hello, is dot you?" "Ya, dot's me already_
now." I say, "You got any pretty girls?" She say, "Ya, 'bout t'ree; von be's dead, von be's married und de odder von be's a little boy." I yust be so mad, I turns around, I rides da road down, da bridge across und da crick upstream und I goes me back to mine house und I yump mineself in mine vagonbox und I never vakes up anymore in da morgan. I finds out da more vot a man lives da more vot he finds out.

As pointless as they might have been, his stories were nonetheless entertaining, which had to come more from their delivery than their content. Clyde was also known for his extreme interest in the business of every strange car that should enter his street. He also amused nearly everyone with the unusual technique he employed to attract the attention of Nellie⁹, who had hearing problems all her life, and was nearly totally deaf in her later years. Clyde Wily Van Blaricom died on 21 August 1959, when he was nearly 78, and was immediately missed by everyone who knew him. He is buried in Lincoln Memorial Cemetery in southeast Portland.

After Clyde's death, Nellie⁹ continued to live in the house on Raymond Street in Portland. She had many friends, and with the many children and grandchildren, she rarely was lonely for company. Nellie⁹ was well known for her ability to make people laugh with her humor, and then wonder what was so funny. An extraordinary cook to the end, she could go into her kitchen, and with the sounds of clattering pots, pans and dishes that would rival the average construction site, prepare a mouth-watering dinner in 20 minutes flat. On 7 April 1978, after living in the house on Raymond Street for over 56 years, Nellie⁹ moved to an apartment because the care of the yard was becoming increasingly difficult for her. Nellie⁹ (Nutter) Van Blaricom died on 6 Apr 1982 and was buried beside her husband of over 50 years in Lincoln Memorial Cemetery in Portland.

By the time Clyde and Nellie⁹ Van Blaricom had moved to the Raymond Street house in December 1921, their family numbered six children, the youngest, Ervin, being only four months old. Three more daughters would be born to Clyde and Nellie⁹, one of which would not survive:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Date of Birth (Time and Place)</th>
<th>Parents</th>
<th>Husbands 1</th>
<th>Husbands 2</th>
<th>Husbands 3</th>
<th>Husbands 4</th>
<th>Husbands 5</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nita Marie</td>
<td>17 May 1909 (@ 2 PM in Portland, OR)</td>
<td>Van Blaricom⁴⁰</td>
<td>17 Apr 1926 (1) Alden George Hunt @ Vancouver</td>
<td>Vern Schuster @ Portland, OR</td>
<td>Art Galloway @ Manzanita, OR</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sherben Edward</td>
<td>7 Jul 1919 (@ 10 AM in Portland, OR)</td>
<td>Van Blaricom⁴⁰</td>
<td>15 Jul 1943 @ Adak Island, Alaska</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ervin Henry</td>
<td>28 Aug 1921 (@ 7 PM in Portland, OR)</td>
<td>Van Blaricom⁴⁰</td>
<td>14 Jul 1943 Betty Persons</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Betty Jean</td>
<td>6 Aug 1925 (@ 4 PM in Portland, OR)</td>
<td>Van Blaricom⁴⁰</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

CHAPTER 23 369 BIOG/HIST
Van Blaricom\textsuperscript{10} m. 1 Aug 1946 (1st) Ralph Conlee
m. 10 Nov 1951 (2nd) Thomas V. Carter

8. Peggy Marie b. 9 Mar 1929 (@ 5:29 AM in Portland, OR)
Van Blaricom\textsuperscript{10} m. 21 Aug 1949 Donald M. Salvey

9. (unnamed girl) b. 16 Jun 1930 @ Portland, Multnomah Co. OR
Van Blaricom\textsuperscript{10} d. 16 Jun 1930 @ Portland, Multnomah Co. OR

All of the children were born in Portland and all are alive at the time of this writing with the exception of Sherben, who was killed in World War II, and the last child, a baby girl who died within two hours of birth. She is buried at Multnomah Park Cemetery in Portland. All seven of Clyde and Nellie's remaining children married and started their own families.

Nita Marie Van Blaricom\textsuperscript{10}, at the age of 16, married Alden George Hunt in Vancouver, Washington on 17 April 1926. Alden was a restless jack-of-all-trades who had many different jobs in his life. He was always looking for a better way to make a living and tried more than a few. He had his own lawn mower sharpening business for awhile, bought a fishing boat about 1938 and tried his hand at commercial fishing for a short time. Alden also dabbled in raising chickens, his own welding business, raising chinchillas and running a small dairy farm for a time. But he worked as a welder most of his life, including teaching the skill to new shipyard workers during World War II. Later in life, Alden and Nita owned and operated two different motels on the Oregon coast, from 1957 until 1963. After that they owned two different trailer parks for a few years in Estacada and John Day, Oregon.

Nita and Alden had an unnamed son born 31 January 1933, who was stillborn. They later had three other sons:

- Gary Alden Hunt born 19 Apr 1935
- Darrell Lee Hunt born 17 Aug 1938
- Roger Dale Hunt born 2 May 1946

With the exception of the years spent in Lincoln City, Estacada and John Day, Nita and Alden lived most of their lives in the Portland area. During the depression, they drove to California in a Model T in search of work. Alden was able to find employment in a Pig-N-Whistle restaurant in Los Angeles, and he and Nita lived in Alhambra for over a year on $25 per week. Alden died of a heart attack in John Day, Oregon on 7 April 1970 after nearly 44 years of marriage. Nita married two more times and currently resides with her husband, Arthur John Galloway, in either Woodburn, Oregon or Yuma, Arizona, depending upon the time of year and the current snowbird migratory pattern.

Eva Nona Van Blaricom\textsuperscript{10}, or Eve as she preferred to be called, married James Ormandy in 1930 and had one son:

- Ray Loren Ormandy born 22 Nov 1935

Eve was probably the most travelled of Clyde and Nellie's children, alternating between Portland and California several times. Besides the years that she spent in the Portland area, she also has lived at different times in San Francisco, Lake Tahoe, Ashland (OR), Sacramento, Lodi, Merced and Roy (WA). Eve's first job was for Roberts Brothers, a prominent department store in downtown Portland. Eve worked as a salesperson, a clerical worker and an apartment manager at different times during her life. Today, Eve lives in Walnut Creek, California, with her husband Erle Hanson, while her son Ray lives in Japan.
Cleman Gordon Van Blaricom, who always went by "Cle", grew up in Portland. With the outbreak of World II, Cle joined the Navy in March 1942 and was sent to Norfolk, Virginia for his basic training. He then returned to Seattle by train before being transported by ship to the Aleutian Islands. There, he served at Dutch Harbor, on Unalaska Island, which the Japanese had bombed the same day as Pearl Harbor. Cle arrived at Dutch Harbor in September 1942, and was stationed there for 14 months. During this time, he drove truck for awhile, later working in a maintenance capacity on small engines and pumps. Cle left Dutch Harbor about December 1943 and returned to Oakland, where he was stationed for a short time at Camp Parks, then transferred to Oxnard, from where he was shipped to Pearl Harbor. Cle left Hawaii and then spent some time on the Eniwetok Atoll in the Marshall Islands, which was later used by the United States for atomic tests.

Cle was then shipped to Saipan, and although the major battle there was already over by the time Cle arrived, there was still active fighting. Cle then was transported by LSTs from Saipan to Okinawa, a distance of about a thousand miles. While en route to Okinawa, their group of ships was attacked by three Japanese submarines, two of which were sunk and the third considered a probable sinking. Cle spent the rest of the war on Okinawa, leaving the island in November 1945 and returning on an Army ship to San Pedro, California because that was the quickest way home. Cle Van Blaricom did not arrive back on United States soil until early December 1945, well after the war had ended.

Cle, who had started work for Pacific Greyhound Lines on 18 March 1934, went to work as a bus driver for Greyhound in 1937, and continued to do so until his retirement on 1 June 1972, excepting the four years he spent in the military. Cle never kept track of the miles that he drove for Greyhound but estimates that it was near three million, all without a serious accident. Cle married Esther L. Wright in 1935 and had one son:

Ralph Lee Van Blaricom born 9 Oct 1939

The infant Ralph Van Blaricom died 7 Jan 1940 before reaching three months of age. Cle later was divorced from Esther and after World War II married Leora Vaulker, by whom he had one son:

Neil Kent Van Blaricom born 6 Nov 1948

Cle lived in Portland until 1958, when he and his family moved to Ashland, where they later operated the Greyhound bus terminal. Cle moved to Medford in 1966, to Gold Hill in 1974 and back to Medford in 1981, where he lives today with his wife, Mary.

Ella May Van Blaricom married Hollis Mack in 1933 and had two children by him:

Velma Jean Mack born 25 May 1934

Donald Burnett Mack born 18 Oct 1937

Ella and Hollis divorced and in 1947 she married William Ingram. Ella's two children changed their names to Ingram, and Ella had two more daughters:

Janet Kay Ingram born 25 Apr 1948

Karen Marie Ingram born 26 Apr 1950

Ella lived in Portland all of her life and worked at the Parkrose and Shady Rest Taverns that William Ingram operated. Ella's third husband of over twenty years, Earl Sutherland, worked for Davis Plumbing. Earl passed away on 11 May 1994. Today Ella lives in Gresham, Oregon.

Sherben Edward Van Blaricom, who was working in southern California when the war broke out, officially entered the Army Air Corps on 14 January 1942 and enrolled in officer training so that he could become a fighter pilot. Sherben disliked his name enough to cease using it while in the
military, preferring to be called by his middle name, Edward. He had to attend night school to augment his education in order to qualify for the officer training program. Sherben later attended the Victorville Army Flying School at Victorville, California and won his flying wings there on 14 July 1942. He was too tall to become a fighter pilot, not being able to fit into the tiny cockpits of these aircraft, and had to become a bomber pilot instead. S. Edward Van Blaricom, as he was known to his fellow pilots, graduated with a group of Class 42-G twin engine pilots from the school on 26 July 1942.

Sherben, by then a Second Lieutenant, continued to receive additional bomber training, and was stationed for a time at an air base near Tonopah, Nevada. He was then transferred to McChord Air Field at Ft. Lewis, near Tacoma, staying there only a short time; he then moved on to Ft. Lawton, near Seattle. While there, Sherben was flying submarine patrol over the Pacific Ocean to help protect our bases in Puget Sound and other areas along the Washington coast. On 24 March 1943, Sherben visited his home in Portland, which was the last time that any of the family at home saw him alive. At that time, he didn't know where he would be shipped overseas and stated that he "didn't care as long as it wasn't the Aleutian Islands". In early April 1943, he was shipped to the Aleutian Islands.

Sherben was stationed on Adak Island and was involved in bombing runs over Japanese-held islands in the Aleutian chain. For awhile he was making bombing runs over Paramushir Island in the Kuril Islands, a chain of islands in the extreme northeastern portion of Russia, and north of Japan. This was an extremely long flight for the B24 Liberator bomber that Sherben flew, with the airplanes having just enough fuel to reach the island, drop their payload of bombs and return to Adak. In Sherben's letters that he wrote home, he always demonstrated a genuine concern for his parents and the rest of his family, asking that Nellie not "work so hard" and "not worry about him", and hoping that Clyde didn't "have to work so hard at his job". He also inquired about Pep, the dog left at home, numerous times. Sherben also mentioned Donna many times, his girlfriend whom he planned to marry when he returned from the war.

On 13 June 1943, Sherben Van Blaricom achieved a goal that he had been awaiting for ten and a half months; he made the rank of First Lieutenant. Unfortunately, Sherben did not have much time to enjoy his new rank, for he was killed when his bomber crashed at Adak on 15 July 1943, while he was departing for a bombing run to the island of Kiska. There has been confusion over the years regarding the circumstances surrounding the crash, made worse by the fact that the official records regarding the incident no longer exist. In 1973, a fire at the National Personnel Records Center in St. Louis, Missouri destroyed the military records of all personnel who left the army before 1960, or the Air Force before 1964, and who had last names from Hubbard through the end of the alphabet. Unfortunately, Sherben's records were included in those destroyed by that fire. Official letters sent to the family following the death were also seriously lacking in details.

The best account at the time came from Sherben's brother Cle, who was en route to visit his brother when Sherben was killed. Cle, who was stationed at Dutch Harbor while Sherben was at Adak, had been in close contact with Sherben by mail and the two had planned for Cle to ride along on one of Sherben's bombing runs as a tail gunner. When asked years later what he knew about being a tail gunner in a B24 Liberator bomber, Cle responded "not a damn thing", but they had both thought it would be fun to be together on one of the bombing sorties. When Cle arrived on Adak Island, he was shocked to learn that Sherben had been killed the day before. Cle wrote home in a
letter dated 5 August 1943 that "I learned of his accident and went out to learn what I could and had a long talk with his fellow officers and the major of his squadron. They treated me swell and told me as much as they knew of the crash. He... took off on a bombing mission in very bad weather conditions and crashed into a high mountain killing them instantly. There were nine or ten other officers also killed in the crash. I got to visit his grave and am glad that I had that opportunity. He is buried in a very nice place on a hill overlooking the sea and had a very nice funeral."

In another letter written home by Cle, dated 18 August 1943, responding to a letter written to him by his mother, Cle added: "There is a difference in the information that you got and what they told me as the way his Major told me the crash occurred right after he took off from the field at his base, the plane crashing into one of the high mountain peaks nearby. They showed me the mountain that the plane hit. They did not know or probably never will know just what went wrong to cause the accident other than the fog and bad weather conditions. You can't imagine how bad flying conditions can be up here unless you have been here. I was at his base about the same time you heard from Washington. Other than this what I have told you, it is about all the information that I can give you." Cle also remembers clearly that his commanding officer told him that "he had lost one of his best pilots".

A letter from the War Department that is still in the possession of the family reported something quite different than what Cle stated in his letter. In a letter dated 22 July 1943 from the Adjutant General's Office of the War Department, it is stated: "I profoundly regret that I must confirm the telegram in which you were informed of the death of your son, First Lieutenant Sherben E. Van Blaricom, 0-727,949, Air Corps, on 15 July, 1943, in Alaska. The official casualty report states that he was killed in action as a result of a crash landing when returning from a bombing mission over Kiska. No further details of this tragic accident have been reported." The letter was signed by Brigadier General H. B. Lewis.

The Sunday Oregonian for 1 August 1943 reported the official version of the incident, reporting the "death of First Lieutenant S. E. Van Blaricom, killed in action when his plane crashed returning from a Kiska raid July 15". Another newspaper account in the Oregon Journal on 12 October 1948 similarly reported that Sherben "was killed when his plane crashed following a raid on Kiska July 15, 1943". Over the years, yet another variation of the fatal accident surfaced, which stated that Sherben's plane was not carrying any bombs that day, but instead was carrying a number of military "brass", a war photographer and a war correspondent. Their plane accompanied other bombers on the flight to Kiska, and after the other planes had dropped their bombs, went in low for a look at the damage that they had done. While making this low pass over the island, they received many anti-aircraft hits, severely affecting the ability of the aircraft to be properly controlled. The crippled bomber made it back to its base at Adak, but crashed while attempting to land. In the crash, everyone was killed except the correspondent and photographer, who were thrown clear with the tail section of the aircraft.

Which of these conflicting versions of the incident is correct may never be determined. Even Cle, some 50 years after the incident, wasn't sure which was the correct version. In all probability, though, the account given in 1943 by Cle, telling of having talked with the other pilots and Sherben's commanding officer and being shown the mountain that the plane hit, has to be considered the most accurate account. Regardless of which version of the accident was correct, as Cle described in his 1943 letter, Sherben was buried in the Post Cemetery on Adak Island in the Aleutians. After the war
ended, the bodies of many of the servicemen killed in the war were brought back to the United States for burial in the national cemetery of the family's choice. Because Willamette National Cemetery was not yet available, Sherben's body was relocated to Golden Gate National Cemetery in San Bruno, California, where he was re-buried on 20 October 1948. Sherben's name also appears on the wall at the Memorial Coliseum in Portland.

Ervin Henry Van Blaricom, the youngest of the three brothers, joined the Marines the day after Pearl Harbor and left for six weeks of boot camp in San Diego on 26 December 1941. He was then shipped to Pearl Harbor on 20 February 1942 and, from there, was involved in brutal fighting in the Pacific, manning a 90mm anti-aircraft battery during much of his service. He saw intense action in the battle of Midway and later participated in the first landing in the Solomon Islands, returning to Pearl Harbor between the two battles. In July 1942, American intelligence had become aware that the Japanese were building an air base on the island of Guadalcanal, near the southern tip of the Solomon Islands.

Ervin and his fellow Marines sailed from Pearl Harbor on the USS Zeilin, a troop transport that was part of a much larger attack force. The Zeilin had been built in 1921 as the Silver State, renamed the President Jackson in 1922, and served as a steamship in trading between the west coast and the Far East in the 1920s and 1930s. In 1940, the ship was acquired by the Navy and converted to a troop transport. When they left Pearl Harbor, Ervin and the other troops were unaware of their destination. They stopped in Fiji for a short time, but soon sailed northwest in the direction of Guadalcanal, arriving there about a month after their departure from Pearl Harbor. While underway, they learned of their destination and their mission, which was to land and capture the islands of Guadalcanal and Tulagi as well as several other small islands in Tulagi Harbor.

Operation Watchtower, the American assault to take the islands, began at dawn on 7 August 1942. It was the first of many seaborne landings that would be carried out by the U.S. Marines during World War II. Ten thousand U.S. Marines went ashore at Red Beach on Guadalcanal and quickly captured the Korean construction workers, but the next day, Japanese planes prevented U.S. transports from unloading supplies. Although there was relatively little opposition to the initial landing on Guadalcanal, the worst was to come and the Marines would spend months dislodging the well-entrenched and suicidally-inclined Japanese troops. Ervin's battalion was to land on and capture the island of Tulagi, which was only about three miles long and one mile wide, and defended by about 600 Japanese soldiers. Ervin was involved in numerous skirmishes in the four weeks that it took to flush out and kill all of the Japanese who were holding the island. On 11 September 1942, Ervin's unit boarded small Yacht Patrol boats and were moved the 20 miles across the channel to Guadalcanal to assist the other Marine battalions there, who were having a tougher time of it than on Tulagi.

For the two months following the initial landing on Guadalcanal, the U.S. Marines had built up their presence on that island to more than 17,000 troops, which were under near continual bombardment by nearby Japanese naval vessels. The Americans had quickly captured the air field and renamed it Henderson Field, which then began serving as a base for our airplanes, but Guadalcanal was a large island and thousands of Japanese soldiers remained. During the night of 13 November 1942, a Japanese naval force arrived off the coast of Guadalcanal and a fierce naval battle ensued in which the U.S. Navy lost two cruisers. One of the cruisers, the Juneau, had 700 men aboard including the now-famous five brothers named Sullivan. The next night, U.S. warplanes
departing from Henderson Field sank seven and severely damaged four of the eleven troop transport vessels that were bringing Japanese reinforcements to Guadalcanal. By the time the naval battle of Guadalcanal ended, the Japanese Navy had lost one aircraft carrier, two battleships, four cruisers, eleven destroyers and six submarines, and withdrew without accomplishing their mission of retaking the island.

Ervin Van Blaricom and his fellow Marines on Guadalcanal, who had an average age of only 19 years, had the task of flushing out the Japanese jungle-trained troops hid in the dense jungle of the island. This was an incredibly difficult task, given the discomfort of terrible heat, humidity, poisonous snakes and insects that could provide you with dysentery, malaria and a host of other illnesses. Ervin wrote in a letter from Guadalcanal dated 14 November 1942: "Home certainly will be a pleasant place to live after these jungles. The conditions on these south sea islands certainly aren't like the movies show them. Everything is designed to make white men miserable. We have to share our living quarters with rats, land crabs, spiders, and mosquitos, all of which are of enormous sizes." The Marines methodically fought their way inch by inch across the island, encountering suicidally motivated Japanese snipers the entire way and destroying pockets of Japanese soldiers in caves and dugouts as they went.

Years later, Ervin described daily life on Guadalcanal: "Every single day we were bombed by heavy bombers from the Jap base on Rabaul. Every single day we were shelled by Jap field guns. Every single night we were bombarded by off-shore warships. Every single week more fresh Jap troops were landed on the north end of the island where we were not in control. What pissed us off more than anything else was the fresh troops being landed. We never got any reinforcements and yet we had to keep facing new Japs faster than we could kill the old ones."

At the time, however, Ervin somehow maintained a bright, even philosophical, attitude about the Marines' task on Guadalcanal. Although he was faced daily with the horrors of brutal jungle warfare, he wrote home only: "The war is still continuing here in the Solomons and getting better every day. Things really get interesting at times. The outfit I'm in has it easy compared to some of them." He also wrote "I guess you know a little about what our job is. I am in a small way responsible for a lot of Jap bombers that don't ever return to their bases." Ervin believed strongly in the reason he was on Guadalcanal when he wrote to his mother: "We're only here to fight a war and we get to go back home when it's over. So we'll be rewarded for our efforts when it's all over; we'll have a better world to live in for several generations."

In a skirmish with Japanese troops on the night of 3 December 1942, Ervin was severely wounded in the jungle fighting on Guadalcanal when a grenade, with either a defective timing mechanism or one that had been sabotaged in an American weaponry plant, exploded as he was about to throw it. A medical corpsman heavily powdered Ervin's terrible wounds with sulfa powder, did a hasty bandaging job on the wound, and transported him to a field hospital located in an underground bunker. Ervin doesn't recall many details after that because he received heavy doses of morphine for the extreme pain he was in, but does remember a Navy doctor that was about to perform surgery on him before he was anesthetized. The next thing he remembered was lying under a wing of a DC-3 at Henderson Field, waiting to be evacuated to a better hospital. Before they took off, Ervin's Marine captain and four of his best buddies came racing up in a jeep to tell him goodbye and to wish him luck, and to give him his wallet which contained $145 that Ervin had won in a crap game earlier.
Ervin and a number of other injured Marines were flown over 600 miles to the island of Espiritu Santo in the New Hebrides Islands, which had a large American base that served as a staging area for the Solomons campaign. This island was much safer than the Solomons; in fact, the Japanese bombed Espiritu Santo only once, and then only managed to kill a cow. A photo taken in 1944 showed the animal's grave marker, which read: "Here lies Bossy. Tojo got her Sept. 15, 1943, because she was walking around during a blackout." Ervin spent a short time at the hospital at Espiritu Santo and then was loaded on the Navy Hospital ship Solace and was shipped to a Navy Hospital on the outskirts of Wellington, New Zealand. The Solace had been one of the ships at anchor in Pearl Harbor when it was attacked by the Japanese. After recovering enough to be able to make the trip back to the United States, Ervin was put aboard another ship for the long voyage back. Ervin crossed under the Golden Gate Bridge at San Francisco on New Years Day, 1943.

A month following his injury, on 3 January 1943, Ervin wrote a letter to his brother Sherben from Oak Knoll Naval Hospital in Oakland, California, in a child-like scrawl using his left hand. In that letter, Ervin was to tell his story for the first time to anyone in his family: "Dear Van, Don't be too alarmed at this horrible writing -- I'm not as bad off as this writing suggests. As you can readily guess I am writing with my left hand which I have never done before. Just try it sometime! I have been wounded in a recent action on Guadalcanal Island (Dec. 3), and after a speedy evacuation by plane, train & ship I am now in a good Navy Hospital near Oakland, California.

"I must say that I am very, very lucky to be alive today! I will explain the details to you later -- but here are the facts. A hand grenade went off in my hand and blew most all my right hand off. All I have left is a stump with my little finger attached. I am very lucky to get off so easy and I can't tell you how useful my one finger is that survived the explosion. The explosion broke one of my ear drums and fragments went into my left arm, my neck and my face and knocked out one of my eye-teeth. However, my eardrum is rapidly mending and my hearing is getting better each day. And my left arm is back in working order except for one finger which is still frozen due to severed nerves in my biceps. I will have a scar on my throat where a fragment barely missed my jugular vein, and a very small scar on my right cheek (I mean my face). As for my tooth -- it had a cavity in it anyway, and it doesn't show.

"So you see, I'm just the same as ever except for the loss of a thumb and three fingers. I am a long way from being a cripple and I will develop my south paw to a very high state of efficiency within a few months. Right now I am as clumsy as a cub bear with boxing gloves on. Of course people will stare at my powerful right arm swinging around with only one puny finger attached, but to hell with them -- I've seen too many of my buddies lose their arms, legs, and their lives to be feeling sorry for myself. By all the laws of war, I'm supposed to be dead now anyway as a grenade will easily kill a half-dozen men. Needless to say, I will soon be an ex-Marine, and I expect to be home with a medical discharge within a month. Although I didn't mind fighting Japs, I will sure be glad to be a civilian again. And now I can be an 'Armchair Admiral' and do my fighting at home by the radio.

"You are the only one I have told about me being wounded so far. I thought it would be better if I told you and have you tell mom as my writing might scare her -- anyway I don't want to write anymore letters than I have to. You see what I mean. I hope you can read this -- its my first attempt at being a south paw. Happy Landings, Ervin." Ervin was later transferred to San Diego Naval Hospital, where he recovered sufficiently to travel to Los Angeles on leave to see his sister Eve and
his brother Sherben, which would prove to be the last time he would see Sherben. There were delays and foul-ups regarding Ervin's final pay from the Marines; his predictions of how soon he would be home proved to be considerably optimistic since he was not discharged from the Marines until 12 June 1943.

Ervin returned to Portland and, only a month after he was discharged from the Marines, married "the girl next door", Betty Persons. Ervin and Betty had four daughters:

- Joan Marie Van Blaricom born 24 Sep 1944
- Judy Ann Van Blaricom born 8 Dec 1945
- Cathy Lynn Van Blaricom born 30 Nov 1949
- Carol Lee Van Blaricom born 14 Sep 1951

Ervin had a succession of farms, the first two of which were small, a 10-acre farm at Colton and a 33-acre farm at Molalla, both in Oregon. On 30 December 1954, Ervin and his family moved to a large farm near Pasco, Washington and on 26 December 1969 to one near Joseph, Oregon. Ervin recently sold their farm and today he and Betty live near Joseph, having been married for over 50 years. Ervin still enjoys his major love in life, after Betty, of hunting and fishing in the beautiful Wallowa Mountains.

Betty Jean Van Blaricom was married briefly to Ralph Conlee, divorced and then married Thomas Vincent Carter, by whom she had two sons:

- Thomas Allen Carter born 26 Jun 1952
- Christopher Scott Carter born 8 Oct 1953

Tom Carter went to Parkrose High School and joined the Navy in World War II. He served aboard the escort aircraft carrier USS Altamaha, which was built in Tacoma in 1942 and named after a river in Georgia. After the war, Tom returned to Portland and attended the University of Portland on the G.I. Bill. Tom had a background in journalism and, for a time, was editor of a local publication titled Fishing and Hunting News. Tom worked for First National Bank (later First Interstate Bank) for 25 years, much of the time as their Advertising Manager and ten years as a Vice President of the bank. Tom passed away on 29 April 1997. Betty spent many years working as a secretary, her first job at Pacific Power & Light, and including ten years for U.S. National Bank. Betty lives in northeast Portland.

Peggy Marie Van Blaricom, who always went by Marie, married Donald M. Salvey, who was a dredge operator for many years. Marie and Don had two children:

- Danny Roland Salvey born 30 Oct 1951
- Patty Sue Salvey born 1 Nov 1953

Marie and Don lived in the Portland area most of their lives, although they did spend two years living in Osaka, Japan, and two separate tours of duty in Hawaii, each where Don was working at the time. Marie also worked as an office worker for a number of years, including a long stint at Rose City Precut Buildings. Marie lost her son Danny in July 1982, killed in a motorcycle traffic accident, and her husband of 43 years on 11 October 1992. Marie continues to live in southeast Portland.

This completes the family history of the Nutter family, or at least that portion of the family from which the compiler of this work descends. There is much more that could be told, and since many of the people mentioned in this chapter are still alive, family history is still being made. Some of the grandchildren of Nellie Bly (Nutter) Van Blaricom listed above already have grandchildren.
themselves. Much more could be written about them and their families but that work will be left to other persons to complete. Perhaps they will find this work to be of some value as a starting point.
CHAPTER 1 - THE EARLY EXPLORATION OF NEW ENGLAND
United States History, 1600-1987; Immigration and Naturalization Service; 1987
Our Country (8 volumes); Benson J. Lossing; 1905
Newington, New Hampshire; John Frink Rowe; The Newington Historical Society
Colonial Era History of Dover, New Hampshire; John Scales; 1923

CHAPTER 2 - THE NUTTER FAMILY ARRIVES IN AMERICA
History of Dover, New Hampshire; John Scales; 1923
Nutter Newsletter; Jan Nutter Alpert; December 1995
Persons and Places in Old Dover, N.H.; Alonzo H. Quint; 1900
The Pioneers of Maine and New Hampshire, 1623 to 1660; Charles H. Pope; 1928-1939
Newington, New Hampshire Families in the Eighteenth Century; Henry W. Hardon; 1924
Newington, New Hampshire; John Frink Rowe; The Newington Historical Society
History of the Treman, Tremaine, Truman Family in America; Ebenezer M. Treman; 1901
Knight, Chase and Allied Families; Robert Whiting Knight
Genealogical and Family History of the State of New Hampshire; Ezra S. Stearns; 1908
Piscataqua Pioneers, 1623-1775; John Scales; 1919
Hatevil Nutter of Dover, New Hampshire and his Descendants; Frederick R. Boyle; 1997
Probate Records of the Province of New Hampshire; Albert Batchellor; 1907
The Cox Families of Holderness; Louis S. Cox; 1939

CHAPTER 3 - THE NEXT FIVE GENERATIONS OF NUTTERS
History of Dover, New Hampshire; John Scales; 1923
Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire; Noyes, Libby & Davis; 1928-1939
Nutter Lineage; Winifred Lovering Holman; 1930
Persons and Places in Old Dover, N.H.; Alonzo H. Quint; 1900
Knight, Chase and Allied Families; Robert Whiting Knight
Maugans - Ancestors of Fay E. Maugans and Leta Love Maugans; FHC Library
Newington, New Hampshire; John Frink Rowe; The Newington Historical Society
The Cox Families of Holderness; Louis S. Cox; 1939
The Great Migration Begins, Immigrants to New England, 1620-1633; Robert Anderson; 1995
Hatevil Nutter of Dover, New Hampshire and his Descendants; Frederick R. Boyle; 1997
Newington, New Hampshire Families in the Eighteenth Century; Henry W. Hardon; 1924
Ancestry of the Trickey Family; William Deland Trickey; 1938
Nutter Genealogy; Marilyn Nutter Pederson; FHC Library #1597831/17; 1991
Index of References to American Women in Colonial Newspapers through 1800; Helen F. Evans; 1979
The Compact History of the Revolutionary War; Dupuy and Dupuy; 1963
History of the Town of Wolfeborough, New Hampshire; Benjamin Franklin Parker; 1901
History of Carroll County, New Hampshire; Georgia Drew Merrill; 1889

CHAPTER 4 - THE RICHARDSON FAMILY
Hatevil Nutter of Dover, New Hampshire and his Descendants; Frederick R. Boyle; 1997
Descendants of William Richardson (1620-1657); Helen Richardson Kluegel; 1959
The Richardson Memorial; John Adams Vinton; 1876
Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England; James Savage; 1860-1862
Moultonborough to the 20th Century; Helen Sturtevant Matthews; 1963
History of Carroll County, New Hampshire; Georgia Drew Merrill; 1889
New Hampshire State Papers; Moultonborough Public Library
Revolutionary War Pension Records; File W17540; Moultonborough Public Library
The War of the Revolution; Christopher Ward; 1952
John Grenaway; NEHG Register, Vol. 32; January 1878
The Old Families of Salisbury and Amesbury, Massachusetts; David W. Hoyt; 1982
The Essex Antiquarian, Vol. III No. 2; February 1899
Early Massachusetts Wheelers; Joseph Quinton Wheeler; 1989
A Genealogy of Some of the Descendants of Richard Goodale of Newbury, Mass.; George E. Williams; 1983
Ancestors and Descendants of Thomas Millett; George Francis Millett; 1959
Moulton Annals; Henry W. Moulton; 1906
The "Mary and John"; Maude Pinney Kuhns; 1971

CHAPTER 5 - JOSEPH RICHARDSON AND GRAFTON NUTTER
CHAPTER 6 - THE FURBER FAMILY
Angel Gabriel information; various Internet websites
Funk & Wagnalls New Encyclopedia; Vol. 5 and 22; 1983
Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire; Noyes, Libby & Davis; 1928-1939
Newington, New Hampshire; John Frink Rowe; The Newington Historical Society
Landmarks in Ancient Dover, New Hampshire; Mary P. Thompson; 1892
Colonial Era History of Dover, New Hampshire; John Scales; 1923
Persons and Places in Old Dover, N.H.; Alonzo H. Quint; 1900
The Early Marriages of Strafford County, New Hampshire, 1630-1850; Robert S. Canney
Probate Records of the Province of New Hampshire; Albert Batchellor; 1907
Lieut. Roger Plaisted of Kittery; M.F. King; 1904

CHAPTER 7 - THE HULL, HEARD AND NUTE FAMILIES
The Ancestors and Descendants of George Hull; Robert E. Hull; 1994
Genealogy of Buell, Gillett, Hull, Pisinge Families; Internet website
Knight, Chase and Allied Families; Robert Whiting Knight
The Hull Family in America; Col. Charles H. Wegant; 1910
Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire; Noyes, Libby & Davis; 1928-1939
Piscataqua Pioneers, 1623-1775; John Scales; 1919
History of the Town of Durham, New Hampshire; Everett S. Stackpole & Winthrop S. Meserve
History of York, Maine; Charles Edward Banks
New England Historical and Genealogical Register (CD-ROM)
Colonial Era History of Dover, New Hampshire; John Scales; 1923
Heard - Hurd Genealogy, 1610-1987; Charles Candage & Ralph Peak; 1988
The Otis Genealogy; April 1851 NEHGR

CHAPTER 8 - NEHEMIAH FURBER AND THE LEIGHTON FAMILY
Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire; Noyes, Libby & Davis; 1928-1939
New England Historical and Genealogical Register (CD-ROM)
Plaque in front of Newington Town Church; 1997 photograph
Historical Sketch of Newington, N.H., 1713-1810; Rev. Myron Dudley; July 1904 NEHGR
Newington, New Hampshire Families in the Eighteenth Century; Henry W. Hardon; 1924
A Leighton Genealogy; Perley M. Leighton; 1989
The Leighton Family; Walter L. Leighton; 1940

CHAPTER 9 - THE FABYAN AND RELATED FAMILIES
Halls of New England; Rev. David B. Hall; 1883
Colonial Era History of Dover, New Hampshire; John Scales; 1923
Persons and Places in Old Dover, N.H.; Alonzo H. Quint; 1900
Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire; Noyes, Libby & Davis; 1928-1939
Lincolnshire Origin of Exeter Settlers; NEHGR 68:79; January 1914
Balthazar Willix; NEHGR 50:46; January 1896
The Daughters of Balthazar Willix of Exeter; NEHGR 68:81; January 1914
The Annals of Tisbury (Massachusetts); Internet website
Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England; James Savage; 1860-1862
The Great Migration Begins, Immigrants to New England, 1620-1633; Robert Anderson; 1995
Newington, New Hampshire; John Frink Rowe; The Newington Historical Society
The Cox Families of Holderness; Louis S. Cox; 1939
Genealogical and Family History of the State of New Hampshire; Ezra S. Stearns; 1908
Newington, New Hampshire Families in the Eighteenth Century; Henry W. Hardon; 1924
Probate Records of the Province of New Hampshire; Albert Batchellor; 1907
Genealogy of George Huntress of Newington, N.H.; Robert Parker Hunt; 1981
Huntress Family; Henry Winthrop Hardon
Ham Family in Dover, N.H.; NEHGR 26:388; October 1872
The History of Martha's Vineyard; Charles Edward Banks; 1966

CHAPTER 10 - THE FIELD, DOWNING, HATCH AND WOODMAN FAMILIES
Field Genealogy; Frederick Clifton Pierce; 1901
Mt. Washington (NH) Internet web site
Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire; Noyes, Libby & Davis; 1928-1939
Piscataqua Pioneers, 1623-1775; John Scales; 1919
Old Kittery and Her Families; Everett S. Stackpole; 1903
Philip Hatch of York County, Maine; Mrs. Henry I. Hiday; 1949
Norman W. Littlefield notes and correspondence
Genealogy and History of the Descendants of Mr. Edward Woodman; John A. Woodman; 1995
The Woodman Family, NEHGR; G. Andrews Moriarty; July 1943

CHAPTER 11 - THE COLEMAN, BRACKETT AND JOHNSON FAMILIES
The Coleman Family, 1602-1898; Silas Bunker Coleman; 1898
The History of Nantucket; Alexander Starbuck; 1969
NEHG Register; Vol. 12; April 1858
Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire; Noyes, Libby & Davis; 1928-1939
Early Settlers of Rowley, Massachusetts; Blodgett & Jewett; 1981
Nicholas Jackson of Rowley, Massachusetts; Blake Smith Jackson; 1976
NEHG Register; Vol. 62; October 1908
Descendants of Anthony Brackett; Alpheus L. Brackett; 1897
Brackett Genealogy; Herbert I. Brackett; 1907
Newington, New Hampshire Families in the Eighteenth Century; Henry W. Hardon; 1924
Piscataqua Pioneers, 1623-1775; John Scales; 1919
NEHG Register; Vol. 31; July 1877

CHAPTER 12 - RICHARD FURBER AND OTHER RELATED FAMILIES
The New Hampshire Genealogical Record; 8:1; January 1991
The Great Migration Begins, Immigrants to New England, 1620-1633; Robert Anderson; 1995
Batchelder, Batcheller Genealogy; Frederick Clifton Pierce; 1898
Stephen Bachiler and the Plough Company of 1630; V.C. Sanborn; 1903
The Ancestors ... of George Edward Richardson; Helen Kluegel; 1976
The Reverend Stephen Bachiler - Saint or Sinner?; Philip Mason Marston; 1961
Batchelder/Bachilder Genealogy; Carl W. Brage; 1985
Stephen Bachiler, An Unforgiven Puritan; Victor C. Sanborn; 1917
The Revised Gen. Records of ... John Emery; Judith Elaine Burns; 1982
The Genealogical Digest (Essex County MA); January 1968
A Line of Descendants of Anthony Emery; John A. Leppman; 1983
Anthony Emery, Progenitor of the Emery Families of Maine; William M. Emery; 1940
The Ancestry of Sarah Miller, 1755-1840; Walter Goodwin Davis; 1939
Old Kittery and Her Families; Everett S. Stackpole; 1903
Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire; Noyes, Libby & Davis; 1928-1939
Newington, New Hampshire Families in the Eighteenth Century; Henry W. Hardon; 1924
Revolutionary War pension file - Richard Furber; FHC Library #0971038

CHAPTER 13 - LEVI AND WILLIAM FURBER
Rockingham County NH land records; FHC Library
Rockingham County NH probate records; FHC Library
Newington, New Hampshire Families in the Eighteenth Century; Henry W. Hardon; 1924
The Compact History of the Revolutionary War; Dupuy and Dupuy; 1963
Revolutionary War Rolls, New Hampshire; FHC Library
Our Country (8 volumes); Benson J. Lossing; 1905
Newington (NH) Town Records; FHC Library
Colonial Era History of Dover, New Hampshire; John Scales; 1923
Strafford County NH land records; FHC Library
Strafford County NH court records; FHC Library
Macoupin County IL land records; FHC Library
Portrait and Biographical Record of Macoupin County, Illinois; 1891
History of Strafford County, New Hampshire

CHAPTER 14 - THE NUTTER FAMILY MOVES WEST
Correspondence with Rex L. Nutter, Cleveland, OK
Illinois Historical and Statistical; John Moses; 1889
Westward Expansion, A History of the American Frontier; Ray Allen Billington; 1974
Funk & Wagnalls New Encyclopedia; Vol. 27; 1983
A History of Travel in America; Seymour Dunbar; 1937
History of Macoupin County, Illinois; 1879
Bunker Hill History; possession of Glenn Scroggins, Bunker Hill, IL
Macoupin County IL land records; FHC Library
Macoupin County IL probate records; FHC Library
Bunker Hill Gazette newspaper records; Illinois State Archives
Carlinville Democrat newspaper records; Illinois State Archives
Portrait and Biographical Record of Macoupin County, Illinois; 1891
Bunker Hill Revisited, Volume One, 1866-1881; Carl L. Stanton; 1997

CHAPTER 15 - THE TILGHMAN AND DRYDEN FAMILIES
Know Your Relatives; Genevieve E. Peters; 1972
The Tillman Family; Stephen Frederick Tillman; 1930
Spes Alit Agricolam; Stephen Frederick Tillman; 1935
Spes Alit Agricolam; Stephen Frederick Tillman; 1962
Tillman & Hamilton Family Records; James David Tillman Jr.; 1959 & 1963
Tobias Tillman Revolutionary War Pension Claim S6247
Dryden Family and Descendants; Leslie Powell Dryden; 1992

CHAPTER 16 - THE GRAVES, SHARP AND TILLMAN FAMILIES
Know Your Relatives; Genevieve E. Peters; 1972
John Graves and His Descendants; Roy Stockwell; 1954
Graves Family History and Genealogy; Aubrey E. Graves
Graves Family Newsletter; FHC Library; 929.27305 G783g
Spes Alit Agricolam; Stephen Frederick Tillman; 1962
Tobias Tillman Revolutionary War Pension Claim S6247

CHAPTER 17 - THE EFLAND AND GIBBS FAMILIES
Know Your Relatives; Genevieve E. Peters; 1972
Hedges - Brumfield - Eveland Genealogy; Ruth Bradford Lacey; 1977
Nicholas Gibbs and His Descendants; Nicholas Gibbs Historical Society; 1977
The American Presidents; David C. Whitney; 1982
Information for Members of the Nicholas Gibbs Society ...; Martha Brodersen; 1991
Ancestry of Nicholas Gibbs; Sonja Collins; 1987
The Compact History of the Revolutionary War; Dupuy and Dupuy; 1963
Gibbs Community History, 1787-1986; Emma G. Dunn; 1986
Correspondence with Carolyn Buff; Casper College; Casper, Wyoming

CHAPTER 18 - THE WILEY AND RICHARDSON FAMILIES
Colliers Encyclopedia 1998 (CD-ROM)
The Great Wagon Road; Parke Rouse Jr.; 1995
Early Western Augusta Pioneers; George W. Cleek; 1957
Baptism Registers of the First Presbyterian Church of Philadelphia; FHC Library #0468374/3
Augusta County VA land records; FHC Library
Botetourt County VA land records; FHC Library
Tustin Genealogy; Albert W. Tustin; 1977
Early Adventurers on the Western Waters; Mary B. Kegley & F.B. Kegley
Appalachia Crossroads; Clayton R. Cox
The Sellards through Two Centuries; Elias Howard Sellards; 1949
Washington County VA land records; FHC Library
Washington County VA probate records; FHC Library
Battle of King's Mountain; Washington County (VA) Historical Society
Annals of Southwest Virginia; Lewis Preston Summers; 1970
Fincastle & Kentucky County VA Records & History; Michael L. Cook
 Chronicles of the Scotch-Irish Settlement in Virginia; Lyman Chalkley; 1974
A Seed-Bed of the Republic; Robert Douthat Stoner
History of Southwest Virginia, 1746-1786; Lewis Preston Summers; 1971
Soldiers of Fincastle County, Virginia, 1774; Mary B. Kegley; 1974
Daniel Boone, Master of the Wilderness; John Bakeless; 1939

CHAPTER 19 - ALEXANDER WILEY RICHARDSON
Knox County, Tennessee marriage records; FHC Library
Wayne County, Kentucky census records; FHC Library
CHAPTER 20 - PHILLIPS AND WALKER FAMILIES
Phillips & Kin of Franklin County, Illinois; Frank Rademacher; Vols. 1-15
A History of the Phillips Family; J. Clark Phillips; 1950
Correspondence from Frank Rademacher; 1986
Personal records of George M. Phillips, Benton, Illinois
Gallatin County, Gateway to Illinois; Lucille Lawler
Franklin County History; Hiram M. Aiken
Illinois 1818; Ronald Vern Jackson
Illinois 1820 State Census; Ronald Vern Jackson
Franklin County, Illinois land records; FHC Library
Census of Indiana Territory for 1807; Indiana Historical Society; 1980
Northern Township (Franklin Co. IL) Cemetery Book; Frankfort Area Genealogical Society
Shawneetown Land Entry Plat Maps, 1814-1820; Doris Nelson
1840-1850 Franklin County IL census records; FHC Library
History of White County, Illinois; 1883
Phillips Family Workbook; John Phillips
A History of Southern Illinois; George Washington Smith; 1912
Logan County, Kentucky Tax List, 1792-1800; Logan County Genealogical Society; 1991
Illinois Federal Land Tract Book, Shawneetown; FHC Library #1445458
History of Gallatin, Saline, Hamilton, Franklin & Williamson Counties, Illinois; 1887
Illinois in 1818; Solon Justus Buck; 1917
The Black Hawk War, 1831-1832; Ellen M. Whitney; 1970

CHAPTER 21 - LEWIS PHILLIPS
Franklin County, Illinois marriage records; FHC Library
1850-1860 Franklin County IL census records; FHC Library
Franklin County History; Hiram M. Aiken
Illinois Federal Land Tract Book, Shawneetown; FHC Library #1445457
Franklin County, Illinois land records; FHC Library
Newton County, Missouri land records; FHC Library
History of Newton County, Missouri; Lewis Wills & P.R. Smith
Pioneers of the Six Bulls, Vol. XXVI; Larry A. James; 1984
1870 Newton County MO census records; FHC Library
History of Jasper County, Missouri; F.A. North; 1883
Historical Atlas of Jasper Co. Missouri, 1876
Jasper County, The First Two Hundred Years; Marvin L. VanGilder; 1995
Jasper County, Missouri land records; FHC Library
CHAPTER 22 - WILLIAM H. NUTTER

Family records in possession of compiler
1850-1870 Franklin County IL census records; FHC Library
Franklin County, Illinois marriage records; Franklin County courthouse
Franklin County, Illinois probate records; Franklin County courthouse
Pike County, Missouri People, Places & Pikers; Karen Schwadron
Pike County, Missouri land records; Pike County courthouse
Standard Atlas of Pike County, Missouri; W.R. Brink & Co.; 1875
Pike County, Missouri court records; FHC Library #0956911
Pike County, Missouri probate records; FHC Library #0956911, 0956918, 0956905
1880 Pike County MO census records
Pike County, Missouri marriage records; FHC Library #0974635
Cemetery Inscriptions, Pike County, Missouri; Pike County Chapter DAR; 1987
Pike County, Missouri land records; FHC Library #0974631, 0974625, 0974632
1900 Walla Walla County WA census records; FHC Library
Walla Walla City & County Directory; Whitman College Library, Walla Walla, Washington
Oregon State Death Certificates; Oregon State Archives, Salem, Oregon
The Oregonian newspaper files; Multnomah County Library, Portland, Oregon
The Oregon Journal newspaper files; Multnomah County Library, Portland, Oregon
1900 Mercer County IL census records; FHC Library
Knox County, Illinois marriage records; FHC Library
Telephone conversations with Richard P. Anderson, Burlington, Iowa
Galesburg Register-Mail newspaper files; Galesburg City Library, Galesburg, Illinois
1910-1920 Knox County IL census records; FHC Library
Multnomah County, Oregon marriage records; Genealogical Forum of Oregon
Telephone conversations with William R. Nutter, Milwaukie, Oregon
Telephone conversations with Dale Pritchard, Milwaukie, Oregon
Telephone conversations with Bernie Nash, La Marinda, California

CHAPTER 23 - NELLIE BLY NUTTER

Family records in possession of compiler
Chronicles of the Cochrans; Ida Cochran Haughton; 1925
Multnomah County OR land records; Multnomah County Tax Assessor, Portland, Oregon
Portland, Oregon City Directories; Multnomah County Library, Portland, Oregon
Oregon Historical Society, early Portland plat maps
Multnomah County Marriage Indexes, Genealogical Forum of Oregon
State of Oregon Death Indexes, Multnomah County Library
World War II; Ivor Matanle; 1989
My Memoirs; Ervin H. Van Blaricom; 1994
Internet web sites on World War II ships
South Pacific Handbook; David Stanley; 1993
Family records in possession of Betty J. Carter
Ancestral Chart
## INDEX OF KEY FAMILY NAMES

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Abbott, Elisha</td>
<td>39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abbott, James</td>
<td>255, 256</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adair, Catherine</td>
<td>251, 253</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adams, Joseph</td>
<td>106, 108, 131, 132, 206</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adams, Nehemiah</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aikin, Ellen</td>
<td>326, 329</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aikin, Nancy</td>
<td>326, 327, 329</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Albright, Henry</td>
<td>267, 271, 272</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allen, Abigail</td>
<td>41, 48, 50, 51, 386</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allen, Benjamin</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allen, Catherine</td>
<td>53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allen, Elsie</td>
<td>99, 100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allen, Hannah</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allen, Jeremiah</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allen, John</td>
<td>44, 50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allen, Joseph</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allen, Martha</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allen, Mary</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allen, Reuben</td>
<td>304, 305, 337, 354</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allen, Richard</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allen, Ruth</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allen, William</td>
<td>48, 50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andross, Mary (Pike)</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Atkinson, Henry</td>
<td>183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Austin, Winnefred</td>
<td>229</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ayers, Anne</td>
<td>21, 22, 105, 165, 386-388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ayers, Peter</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ayres, Moses</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ayres, Rebecca</td>
<td>173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bachiler, Ann</td>
<td>183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bachiler, Deborah</td>
<td>183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bachiler, Mary</td>
<td>150, 181-184</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bachiler, Nathaniel</td>
<td>183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bachiler, Reverend Stephen</td>
<td>176, 181-183, 381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bachiler, Samuel</td>
<td>183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bachiler, Stephen</td>
<td>176-183, 188, 381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bachiler, Theodate</td>
<td>183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bailey, John</td>
<td>190</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bailey, Rebecca</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banfield, John</td>
<td>128, 129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barker, Bridget</td>
<td>29, 30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barnes, Elizabeth</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Batten, Hugh</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beard, Napoleon Bonaparte</td>
<td>271, 275</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beedle, Mary</td>
<td>181, 182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bennett, Mary (Goddard)</td>
<td>147</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benston, Thomas</td>
<td>234, 235</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Berry, Mary ............................................................ 133, 140
Berry, Mehitable ........................................................ 140, 141
Bickford, Jethro .......................................................... 195
Bickford, John ............................................................. 71, 73-75, 88, 90, 91, 195
Bickford, Thomas .......................................................... 73, 75
Bill, Ann (Allen) .......................................................... 172
Bix, Thomas ............................................................... 229
Blake, Judith ............................................................... 55, 56
Blaricom, Betty Jean Van ............................................ 377, 390
Blaricom, Carol Lee Van ............................................. 377
Blaricom, Cathy Lynn Van ............................................ 377
Blaricom, Cleman Gordon Van ..................................... 371, 390
Blaricom, Clyde Van .................................................... 9, 356, 365, 366, 368
Blaricom, Ella May Van ................................................. 371
Blaricom, Ervin Henry Van ............................................ 374
Blaricom, Eva Nona Van .............................................. 370
Blaricom, Joan Marie Van ............................................ 377
Blaricom, John W. Van ............................................... 366
Blaricom, Judy Ann Van .............................................. 377
Blaricom, Neil Kent Van .............................................. 371
Blaricom, Nita Marie Van ............................................. 370
Blaricom, Peggy Marie Van .......................................... 377
Blaricom, Ralph Lee Van ............................................. 371
Blaricom, Sherben E. Van ........................................... 368, 373
Blaricom, Sherben Edward Van .................................... 371
Blaricom, Sherben Van ................................................ 9, 372
Blount, James ............................................................ 124
Bly, Nellie ................................................................. 5, 9, 22, 347, 356, 362-365, 377, 384
Blyth, William .......................................................... 131, 132
Boone, Daniel ........................................................... 293-295, 318, 382
Boothby, Thomas ....................................................... 196
Boster, Harriet ........................................................... 304, 312
Boster, Sarah ............................................................. 327, 331
Bowland, Sarah .......................................................... 235, 236
Brackett, Anthony ..................................................... 165, 168-171, 381, 389
Brackett, Eleanor ....................................................... 170-172
Brackett, Jane ........................................................... 170, 171
Brackett, John ........................................................... 131, 132, 170, 171
Brackett, Mary .......................................................... 131-134, 139
Brackett, Thomas ....................................................... 169-171, 207
Bradbury, Ann ........................................................... 42
Bray, Hannah ............................................................ 64, 65
Brewster, Sarah .......................................................... 210, 211
Brintnall, Elizabeth ..................................................... 51
Brooks, Emily ............................................................ 235, 236
Brown, Francis ........................................................... 42
Brown, Isaac ............................................................... 42
Brown, John ............................................................... 160
Brown, Mary ............................................................. 42, 160
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Brown, Thomas</td>
<td>42, 187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bunker, Ann</td>
<td>166, 167</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bunker, James</td>
<td>102</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bursley, John</td>
<td>88, 89</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Button, Mathias</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Byars, Martha Jane</td>
<td>327, 331</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Canneby, Thomas</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carr, Bradbury</td>
<td>53, 54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carter, Christopher Scott</td>
<td>377</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carter, Thomas Allen</td>
<td>377</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carter, Thomas V.</td>
<td>370</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cate, John</td>
<td>172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chamberlain, John</td>
<td>131, 132</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chamberlain, Samuel A.</td>
<td>64, 220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chamberlain, Samuel Adams</td>
<td>65, 217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chandler, Isaac</td>
<td>210-212</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chase, Aquila</td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chater, Hannah</td>
<td>192</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chater, John</td>
<td>190-193</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chater, Lydia</td>
<td>192</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chesley, James</td>
<td>198, 209</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chesley, Thomas</td>
<td>135, 136</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clark, Adam</td>
<td>196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clark, Elizabeth</td>
<td>72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clark, Frances</td>
<td>326, 329</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clark, William</td>
<td>72, 73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cleaves, Sarah</td>
<td>196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cleman Gordon Van Blaricom</td>
<td>371, 390</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clifford, Elizabeth</td>
<td>39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clifford, John</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coble, Turley</td>
<td>241, 242</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cochran, Elizabeth Jane</td>
<td>363</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cochran, Levi</td>
<td>210, 211</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cochrane, Elizabeth</td>
<td>363-365</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Colbath, James</td>
<td>115, 116</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cole, Benjamin</td>
<td>32, 35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coleman, Alice</td>
<td>165, 174, 175, 198-200, 207, 208, 210-212, 388, 389</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coleman, Anna</td>
<td>15, 139, 166, 173-175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coleman, Benjamin</td>
<td>166, 174, 211</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coleman, Deborah</td>
<td>168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coleman, Eleazor</td>
<td>24, 115, 116, 168, 173-175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coleman, Elizabeth</td>
<td>174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coleman, Ephraim</td>
<td>168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coleman, Isaac</td>
<td>166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coleman, Jabez</td>
<td>168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coleman, James</td>
<td>173, 174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coleman, Joanna</td>
<td>166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coleman, John</td>
<td>163, 164, 166, 167, 174, 175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coleman, Joseph</td>
<td>166, 167, 174</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Coleman, Judah ........................................................................ 168
Coleman, Lydia ........................................................................ 168, 174
Coleman, Mary ........................................................................ 136, 138, 139, 173, 174
Coleman, Mehitable .................................................................... 175
Coleman, Phineas ........................................................................ 139, 173, 174
Coleman, Rosamond .................................................................... 174
Coleman, Sarah ........................................................................... 168, 174
Coleman, Susanna ........................................................................ 166
Coleman, Thomas ........................................................................ 165, 166, 168, 187
Coleman, Tobias ........................................................................ 166-168
Coleman, Woodman .................................................................... 174
Collins, Ezekiel .............................................................................. 46
Collins, William ........................................................................ 115, 116
Conlee, Ralph ............................................................................. 370, 377
Cossens, Maude .......................................................................... 83
Cotes, Thomas ............................................................................. 126
Cotton, William ........................................................................... 128, 129, 137, 194
Coulbourn, Jane ........................................................................ 234, 235
Cowell, Amy ................................................................................ 73, 74
Cowell, John ................................................................................ 193, 194
Crethorn, Mary .......................................................................... 32, 36
Crockett, Joshua .......................................................................... 28, 29
Cromwell, Philip ......................................................................... 112
Curtis, Joseph ............................................................................. 156
Cutts, Hannah ............................................................................. 32, 34
Daines, Anne ............................................................................... 148, 389
Dam, John .................................................................................... 73, 74, 102, 110, 120, 121
Dam, Moses ................................................................................. 80, 136
Dam, Richard ............................................................................. 114, 115
Dam, William ............................................................................. 102
Dame, Moses .............................................................................. 207
Dame, Richard ............................................................................ 207
Daniels, David ............................................................................. 88
Daniels, Joseph ............................................................................ 135, 136
Daniels, William .......................................................................... 44
Davis, Dolor ................................................................................ 88, 89
Davis, Lydia ................................................................................ 53
Davis, Martha ............................................................................... 163
Davis, Rebecca ........................................................................... 304, 307
Davis, Simon .............................................................................. 207
Davis, Solomon ............................................................................ 52
Dennett, Susanna ........................................................................ 195, 196
DePew, Sarah ............................................................................... 222, 350
Devonshire, Ruth .......................................................................... 229
Dibrell, Lee Anne ......................................................................... 271
Dodge, Ruth ................................................................................ 46, 52
Doe, Elizabeth ............................................................................. 163
Doe, Martha ................................................................................. 163
Doe, Mary ................................................................................... 184
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Pages/References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Downing, Abigail</td>
<td>174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downing, Alice</td>
<td>156, 195-197</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downing, Arabella</td>
<td>156</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downing, Benjamin</td>
<td>133, 134, 176, 195, 196, 388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downing, Dennis</td>
<td>6, 148, 149, 155, 156</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downing, Elizabeth</td>
<td>156, 162, 196-198, 211</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downing, Hannah</td>
<td>195, 196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downing, John</td>
<td>134, 149, 156, 185, 193-196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downing, Jonathan</td>
<td>195, 196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downing, Joseph</td>
<td>195, 196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downing, Joshua</td>
<td>148-150, 154-156, 195, 196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downing, Josiah</td>
<td>195, 196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downing, Mary</td>
<td>131, 132, 196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downing, Patience (Ham)</td>
<td>185</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downing, Phebe</td>
<td>196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downing, Richard</td>
<td>156, 195-197</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downing, Samuel</td>
<td>196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downing, Sarah</td>
<td>156, 196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downing, Susanna</td>
<td>139, 185, 196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downing, Temperence</td>
<td>196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downing, Tryphena</td>
<td>210, 211</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Doyle, Rachel</td>
<td>271, 276</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Drake, Abigail</td>
<td>55, 58, 61, 62, 64, 67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Drake, Susanna</td>
<td>170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Drew, John</td>
<td>148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Drown, Thomas</td>
<td>138</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dryden, David</td>
<td>231, 233-235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dryden, Elizabeth</td>
<td>231, 232</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dryden, Eva</td>
<td>230, 234, 236</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dryden, Jane</td>
<td>232, 233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dryden, John</td>
<td>231-234, 236</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dryden, Joshua</td>
<td>235, 236</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dryden, Margaret</td>
<td>231, 232</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dryden, Mary</td>
<td>232, 234, 235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dryden, Samuel</td>
<td>234, 235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dryden, Sarah</td>
<td>234, 235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dryden, William</td>
<td>231, 233, 234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dunlap, Anderson</td>
<td>279</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duston, Thomas</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eastman, Ruth</td>
<td>99</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edge, Patience</td>
<td>150, 154</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Efland, Catherine</td>
<td>243, 260</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Efland, David</td>
<td>260</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Efland, Elizabeth</td>
<td>260</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Efland, John</td>
<td>244, 260, 261</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Efland, Mary</td>
<td>260, 261, 264, 266, 270, 276</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Efland, Peter</td>
<td>259, 260</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Efland, Phyllis</td>
<td>260</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Efland, Sarah</td>
<td>242, 243, 260</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Name</td>
<td>Page References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----------------------</td>
<td>--------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elkins, Amzey G</td>
<td>327, 331</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elwell, Isaac</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elwell, Joshua</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emerson, Mary</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emery, Alice</td>
<td>176, 190, 191, 388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emery, Anne</td>
<td>186, 190</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emery, Anthony</td>
<td>186-188, 381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emery, Ebenezer</td>
<td>190, 191</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emery, Eleanor</td>
<td>190</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emery, Hugh</td>
<td>186, 187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emery, John</td>
<td>159, 186-190, 193, 381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emery, Jonathan</td>
<td>190, 191</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eveland, Catherine</td>
<td>259</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eveland, David</td>
<td>258, 259</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eveland, Frederick</td>
<td>259</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eveland, John</td>
<td>259</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eveland, Magdalene</td>
<td>259</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eveland, Margareta</td>
<td>259</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eveland, Mary</td>
<td>259</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fabyan, Abigail</td>
<td>140, 141</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fabyan, Elizabeth</td>
<td>133, 134, 140, 141, 195, 196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fabyan, John</td>
<td>114, 121, 130, 133, 140</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fabyan, Joseph</td>
<td>133, 134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fabyan, Mary</td>
<td>133, 134, 140, 141, 163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fabyan, Mehitable</td>
<td>133, 134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fabyan, Phoebe</td>
<td>133, 134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fabyan, Rosamond</td>
<td>117, 140, 141, 206</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fabyan, Samuel</td>
<td>133, 134, 139-141, 173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fairfield, Mary</td>
<td>196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Feld, Adam De</td>
<td>143</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Feld, John</td>
<td>144</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Feld, John Del</td>
<td>143</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Feld, Richard</td>
<td>144</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Feld, Richard De</td>
<td>143</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Feld, Robert</td>
<td>143</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Feld, Roger De</td>
<td>143</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Feld, Thomas</td>
<td>144</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Feld, Thomas Del</td>
<td>143</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Feld, William</td>
<td>144</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Felde, Thomas Del</td>
<td>143</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ferniside, Hannah</td>
<td>89, 93</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ferniside, Sarah</td>
<td>99, 100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Field, Darby</td>
<td>145-147, 360</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Field, Elizabeth</td>
<td>147, 148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Field, Henry</td>
<td>145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Field, John</td>
<td>144, 145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Field, Joseph</td>
<td>147, 148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Field, Mary</td>
<td>147, 148, 161</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Field, Nathaniel</td>
<td>144, 145</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Furber, Samuel .......................................................... 198, 207
Furber, Sarah ............................................................. 117, 207
Furber, Susanna ....................................................... 73, 75, 196
Furber, William . 5, 6, 69, 71-80, 90, 99, 103-110, 121, 161, 171, 175, 196, 197, 199, 200, 206-
                                                                             210, 381
Galloway, Art ................................................................ 369
Garfield, Hannah .......................................................... 167
Garland, Jabez ........................................................... 99, 101
Gee, Anna .................................................................... 126
Gee, John .................................................................... 117, 124-126, 130, 132
Gee, Martha .................................................................. 126
Gee, Mary .................................................................... 126-130
George, Rachel ............................................................ 304, 305
George, Susannah .......................................................... 278
Gibbons, Mary Margaret .................................................. 230
Gibbs, Abraham ............................................................ 264, 265
Gibbs, Annie ............................................................... 279
Gibbs, Barbara ............................................................. 271, 278, 279
Gibbs, Catherine ........................................................... 271, 274
Gibbs, Daniel ............................................................. 262, 264, 271, 276
Gibbs, David ................................................................ 7, 255, 256, 271, 278, 279, 298, 305
Gibbs, Elizabeth .......................................................... 7, 270, 271, 279, 280, 296-298, 333
Gibbs, George W. ......................................................... 271, 275, 276
Gibbs, Henry ............................................................... 279
Gibbs, Jacob ................................................................. 271, 274
Gibbs, John ................................................................ 271, 273, 274, 278-280
Gibbs, Mary ............................................................... 271, 272, 278
Gibbs, Nancy ............................................................... 279, 280
Gibbs, Nicholas ........................................................... 7, 245, 260-268, 270, 271, 273-277, 297, 382
Gibbs, Nicholas Tillman .................................................. 279
Gibbs, Rachel Tillman .................................................. 279
Gibbs, Sally (Sarah) ...................................................... 250
Gibbs, Sarah ............................................................... 251, 271, 272, 314, 333
Gibbs, Sarah Angeline .................................................. 279
Gibbs, Silphena ............................................................ 271, 275
Gibbs, Sophia .............................................................. 271, 275
Gibbs, Susannah ........................................................... 279
Gibs, Anna Maria .......................................................... 263
Gibs, Catherine ........................................................... 264
Gibs, Herman .............................................................. 262, 263
Gibs, Johann Adam ....................................................... 263
Gibs, Johann Niclas ...................................................... 263, 264
Gibs, Mary ................................................................. 264
Gibs, Peter ................................................................. 263, 264
Gilmore, Sarah .............................................................. 32, 33
Godfrey, Andrew .......................................................... 43
Godfrey, Elizabeth .......................................................... 43
Godfrey, James ............................................................ 43
Godfrey, Joanna ............................................................ 43
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page(s)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Godfrey, Margaret</td>
<td>41-43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Godfrey, Mary</td>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Godfrey, Peter</td>
<td>42, 43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Godfrey, Sarah</td>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodale, Benjamin</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodale, Christopher</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodale, Elizabeth</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodale, Ellen</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodale, Frances</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodale, Hester</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodale, John</td>
<td>48, 49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodale, Joseph</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodale, Mary</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodale, Mordechaus</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodale, Rebecca</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodale, Richard</td>
<td>47-50, 379</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodale, Thomas</td>
<td>48, 49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goode, Mary</td>
<td>29, 31, 32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodhue, Mary</td>
<td>53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodridge, Mary</td>
<td>159, 160</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodwin, Thomas</td>
<td>196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gowen, Mercy</td>
<td>52, 141</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Graff, Johann Sebastian</td>
<td>238, 239</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Graham, Joseph A.</td>
<td>344, 345</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grantham, Alice</td>
<td>176, 186, 187, 190, 388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Graves, Angeline</td>
<td>279</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Graves, Barbara</td>
<td>238, 242, 246, 390</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Graves, Boston</td>
<td>242-245, 260, 261, 270</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Graves, Jacob</td>
<td>241-243</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Graves, James</td>
<td>279, 280</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Graves, John</td>
<td>7, 238, 239, 241, 242, 246, 247, 249, 250, 252, 382</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Graves, Peter</td>
<td>242, 245, 253, 267</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greeley, Richard</td>
<td>32-34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greenway, Ann</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greenway, Elizabeth</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greenway, John</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greenway, Katharine</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greenway, Mary</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greenway, Susannah</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greenway, Ursula</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Griggs, Rachel</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grimm, Virgil O.</td>
<td>356, 362</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grow, John</td>
<td>131, 132</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gutch, Magdalen</td>
<td>229</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Haines, Matthias</td>
<td>170, 171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hall, John</td>
<td>13, 119-121</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hall, Joseph</td>
<td>121</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hall, Sarah</td>
<td>120, 121</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ham, Abigail</td>
<td>114, 115, 119, 136-138, 387</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Name</td>
<td>Pages</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----------------------</td>
<td>----------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hull, Ruth</td>
<td>88, 92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hull, Samuel</td>
<td>88, 92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hull, Sir William</td>
<td>82, 83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hull, Temperance</td>
<td>86, 88, 90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hull, Thomas</td>
<td>82-84</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hull, Tristram</td>
<td>88-90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hunt, Alden George</td>
<td>369, 370</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hunt, Darrell Lee</td>
<td>370</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hunt, Gary Alden</td>
<td>370</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hunt, Roger Dale</td>
<td>370</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hunt, Sarah</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huntress, Abigail</td>
<td>136, 139, 173, 174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huntress, Ann</td>
<td>135, 136</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huntress, Elizabeth</td>
<td>133, 134, 139-141</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huntress, George</td>
<td>134-136, 138, 139, 380</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huntress, Hannah</td>
<td>136</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huntress, John</td>
<td>136</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huntress, Joseph</td>
<td>139, 140</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huntress, Mary</td>
<td>135, 136</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huntress, Paul</td>
<td>139, 140</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huntress, Samuel</td>
<td>6, 136-139, 173, 174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huntress, Solomon</td>
<td>139, 140</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huntress, William</td>
<td>139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hussey, Christopher</td>
<td>179, 183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hussey, Olive</td>
<td>210, 211</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ilhardt, Max M.</td>
<td>222, 224</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ingram, Janet Kay</td>
<td>371</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ingram, Karen Marie</td>
<td>371</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ingram, William</td>
<td>369, 371</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irwin, Jane</td>
<td>251, 253</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jackson, Caleb</td>
<td>167</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jackson, Jonathan</td>
<td>167</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jackson, Lydia</td>
<td>166, 167</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jackson, Nicholas</td>
<td>167, 381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jackson, Samuel</td>
<td>167</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jacobs, William</td>
<td>335, 344, 345</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Janvrin, Mary</td>
<td>131, 132</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jaques, Henry</td>
<td>131, 189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jelly, Mercy</td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jewett, Dearborn</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johnson, Ebenezer</td>
<td>172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johnson, Hannah</td>
<td>172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johnson, James</td>
<td>172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johnson, John</td>
<td>27, 170, 172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johnson, Mary</td>
<td>42, 165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johnson, Rosamond</td>
<td>26, 27, 172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jones, Edward C.</td>
<td>8, 356-358</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jones, Francis</td>
<td>124, 125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jones, Jenkin</td>
<td>99, 100</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Jones, Joseph ............................................................. 26, 27
Jones, Sarah E. (Phillips) .............................................. 222, 353, 358
Jones, Stephen ........................................................ 26, 27, 31, 147, 148
Jones, William I. .................................................... 348, 356
Keck, Henrietta ........................................................... 250, 251
Kennard, Elizabeth ..................................................... 77-80, 137
Kent, John ............................................................ 160
Kent, Oliver .............................................................. 88, 90
Killum, Joseph ........................................................... 64, 65
Kimbal, Hannah .......................................................... 43
King, Ann Eliza .......................................................... 8, 222, 352, 358
King, George W. .................................................... 344, 346
King, Jacob W. .......................................................... 352, 353, 358
King, John S. ............................................................ 327, 331
King, Joseph S. ........................................................... 64, 65
Kirk, John .............................................................. 327, 331
Kirk, John W. ........................................................... 304, 314
Knight, John ............................................................ 28, 102, 188
Koontz, Emma ........................................................... 9, 356, 360
Ladd, Abigail ............................................................ 55, 56
Lancaster, Hannah .................................................... 185
Lane, Sarah ............................................................. 52
Langstaff, Henry ....................................................... 23, 24, 28, 29, 72, 76, 101, 168, 173
Langstaff, Mary ........................................................... 24, 168, 173
Langstaff, Sarah ........................................................... 21-23, 25
Lavers, Jacob ............................................................ 26, 27
Leach, James ............................................................ 130, 131
Lear, John ............................................................... 124
Leathers, Abednego .................................................. 163
Lee, Lois ................................................................. 61
Leighton, Abigail ....................................................... 105, 108, 109, 114, 116, 117, 200, 387
Leighton, Deborah ................................................... 114-116, 174
Leighton, Elizabeth ................................................... 23, 112-115
Leighton, Haveli ........................................................ 114-116
Leighton, John ......................................................... 103, 110, 113-115
Leighton, Keziah ....................................................... 115, 116, 173, 174
Leighton, Mary ........................................................ 112
Leighton, Olive ........................................................ 115, 116
Leighton, Sarah ........................................................ 112
Leighton, Thomas ..................................................... 21-23, 74, 109-116, 120
Leonard, Hopestill .................................................. 50
Lester, Ann ............................................................ 45
Littlefield, Mary ....................................................... 154, 155
Lord, Calvin ........................................................... 64, 67
Lovejoy, Dorcas ....................................................... 185
Lovejoy, Lydia .......................................................... 185, 186
Lowell, Benjamin ..................................................... 160
Lowin, Elizabeth ...................................................... 229
Lowle, John ........................................................... 49
Nutter, James R. .......................................................... 222, 223
Nutter, John ......................................................... 26, 27, 64, 65, 168, 172, 173, 209
Nutter, Joseph ................................................................. 29-31
Nutter, Joseph R. .................................................. 7, 64, 65, 67, 68, 210, 212, 213, 215-221
Nutter, Joseph Richardson ........................................ 62, 64, 67-69, 213, 217, 221, 350, 354
Nutter, Josiah S. .................................................. 64, 66, 67
Nutter, Jotham .......................................................... 39
Nutter, Louisa .......................................................... 64, 65
Nutter, Margaret .................................................. 64, 65
Nutter, Mary ...................................................... 21-23, 26, 27, 29-33, 38, 39, 63, 64, 131, 173
Nutter, Mary E. .................................................... 222, 224
Nutter, Mary Olease .................................................. 356, 361
Nutter, Matthias .......................................................... 173
Nutter, Miranda ...................................................... 222, 224
Nutter, Nellie Bly .................................................. 5, 9, 22, 347, 356, 362, 363, 365, 384
Nutter, Rebecca E. .................................................. 64, 65
Nutter, Rosamond .................................................. 133, 134, 140, 173, 221
Nutter, Samuel .................................................. 26, 32, 33, 35, 64, 65, 350, 352
Nutter, Sarah .......................................................... 26, 32, 33, 35, 64, 65, 350, 352
Nutter, Sylvia Ruth .................................................. 356, 362
Nutter, Valentine .................................................. 29, 31-33, 35
Nutter, William .................................................. 32, 33, 63-65, 68, 352-354
Nutter, William H. .................................................. 5, 8, 9, 222, 223, 225, 344, 348-356, 358, 360, 384
Ordway, James .................................................. 190
Ormandy, James .................................................. 369, 370
Ormandy, Ray Loren .................................................. 370
Otis, Experience .................................................. 99, 100
Pandreth, Anna .................................................. 226, 228, 229, 390
Pandreth, Miles .................................................. 229
Parham, Susannah .................................................. 229
Parker, Julia E. .................................................. 366
Parker, Matthew .................................................. 231, 232
Peabody, Frances (Hoyt) .................................................. 28
Pearson, Phoebe .................................................. 168
Pearson, Priscilla .................................................. 369, 377
Peirce, George .................................................. 108, 109
Perkins, Anne .................................................. 84
Persons, Betty .................................................. 369, 377
Pesisge, Joanne .................................................. 83
Pesisge, John .................................................. 83
Pesisge, Richard .................................................. 83
Philbrick, Martha .................................................. 170, 171
Phillips, Andrew Walker .................................................. 331
Phillips, Arena Alice .................................................. 344, 347
Phillips, Charity .................................................. 344, 345
Phillips, David .................................................. 327, 331
Phillips, Eldorado .................................................. 344-346
Phillips, Elizabeth .................................................. 327, 331
Phillips, Florence .................................................. 8, 344, 347
Phillips, Hannah ......................................................... 327, 331
Phillips, Hester .......................................................... 344, 345
Phillips, Jacob ...................................... 7, 8, 315, 317-319, 321-327, 332
Phillips, John ................................................... 318, 321, 345, 383
Phillips, Joseph ..................................................... 315-318, 321
Phillips, L. Florence ...................................................... 344, 347
Phillips, Lewis ...................... 5, 8, 304, 314, 318, 327, 332-337, 339-346, 353, 383
Phillips, Louisa J. ................................................ 327, 332
Phillips, Malinda ........................................................ 327, 331
Phillips, Malinda C. ...................................................... 344, 345
Phillips, Mary A. ................................................ 327, 332, 344, 345
Phillips, Nancy Jane ...................................................... 344, 345
Phillips, Peter ........................................................ 8, 316-319, 321, 322, 325-331, 333, 339-341, 343
Phillips, Robert ..................................................... 317, 327, 331
Phillips, Sally ........................................................ 326, 331
Phillips, Sarah E. ....................................................... 8, 9, 225, 344, 348, 360
Phillips, William .................................................. 315, 318, 319, 321, 327, 331
Phillips, William L. .......................................................... 345
Phippin, Mrs. Sarah ...................................................... 84
Pickering, Abigail ......................................................... 128, 129, 131, 132
Pickering, Ann ........................................................ 140, 141
Pickering, Elizabeth ...................................................... 131, 132
Pickering, Ephraim ...................................................... 131, 174
Pickering, Hannah ...................................................... 131, 132
Pickering, Hazelelponi ..................................................... 132
Pickering, James ......................................................... 131, 132, 140, 141, 173
Pickering, John ........................................................ 29, 30, 117, 127-132
Pickering, John Gee ...................................................... 117, 132
Pickering, Joshua ...................................................... 131, 132
Pickering, Martha ...................................................... 131, 132
Pickering, Mary ......................................................... 121, 128-130, 133
Pickering, Mehitable ...................................................... 131, 132
Pickering, Rebecca ..................................................... 128, 129, 131
Pickering, Sarah ........................................................ 128-131
Pickering, Thomas ..................................................... 117, 124, 126, 128-132, 174
Pickering, William .................................................... 140, 141
Pierce, Benjamin ........................................................ 39, 62
Pierce, Robert .......................................................... 44
Piles, Jesse .............................................................. 255
Pinkham, Elizabeth ...................................................... 103
Pinkham, Richard ....................................................... 113, 114
Pitman, Ezekial .......................................................... 185
Pitman, Judith ............................................................ 138
Plaisted, Roger ........................................................... 73, 74, 95, 380
Porter, Nathaniel ....................................................... 64, 67, 187
Portler, Bridget .......................................................... 41, 48, 386
Powers, Mary ............................................................ 198, 199
Prescott, Mary ........................................................... 168
Price, Thomas ............................................................ 231, 232
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page(s)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pritchard, Samuel Archibald</td>
<td>356</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pryor, Elizabeth</td>
<td>157</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Quick, Daniel</td>
<td>193, 194</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Quick, Elizabeth</td>
<td>72, 73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Randall, Nick</td>
<td>369</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reed, Huldah (Bullard)</td>
<td>271, 274</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rice, Martin</td>
<td>255, 278</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rice, Wilson</td>
<td>327, 332</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richards, Abigail</td>
<td>28, 176, 184, 388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richards, Samuel</td>
<td>184</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richards, William</td>
<td>183, 184</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Alexander W</td>
<td>297, 314</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Ann</td>
<td>52, 53, 55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Benjamin</td>
<td>41, 42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Betty</td>
<td>53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Bradbury</td>
<td>54-59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Caleb</td>
<td>43, 53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Caroline</td>
<td>304, 313</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Daniel</td>
<td>43, 53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, David G.</td>
<td>304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Elizabeth</td>
<td>39, 42, 43, 54, 57, 61, 67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Elizabeth &quot;Betsy&quot;</td>
<td>40, 61-65, 220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, George W.</td>
<td>304, 313</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Isaac</td>
<td>291, 295, 296, 298, 304, 306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, John M.</td>
<td>304, 313</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Joseph</td>
<td>5, 6, 38, 41-43, 52-55, 57-62, 64, 67-69, 200, 213, 217, 221, 350, 354, 379</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Louisa M.</td>
<td>305, 314</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Margaret</td>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Mary</td>
<td>43, 47, 53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Minerva</td>
<td>304, 314</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Molly</td>
<td>61</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Moses</td>
<td>53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Nancy A.</td>
<td>304, 305, 337</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Polly</td>
<td>60, 61</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Rachel</td>
<td>304, 314</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Rebecca</td>
<td>60, 61, 307</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Robert</td>
<td>7, 296, 304, 306, 307, 311</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Samuel</td>
<td>55, 57, 61</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Sarah</td>
<td>8, 43, 333, 344</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Sarah G.</td>
<td>304, 327</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, Thomas</td>
<td>43, 53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson, William L.</td>
<td>306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ricker, Maturin</td>
<td>136</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riggin, Naomi</td>
<td>235, 236</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riggin, Rachel</td>
<td>234, 236</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riggs, Aaron</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riggs, Abigail</td>
<td>46, 52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Name</td>
<td>Pages</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----------------------</td>
<td>----------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riggs, Andrew</td>
<td>43, 47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riggs, Ann</td>
<td>41, 43, 52, 386</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riggs, Anna</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riggs, Anne</td>
<td>46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riggs, Elizabeth</td>
<td>46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riggs, Hannah</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riggs, John</td>
<td>46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riggs, Joshua</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riggs, Lydia</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riggs, Mary</td>
<td>46, 52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riggs, Moses</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riggs, Sarah</td>
<td>46, 52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riggs, Thomas</td>
<td>45-47, 51, 52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riley, Sarah</td>
<td>167</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ring, Mary</td>
<td>139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Roberts, Elizabeth</td>
<td>99</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Roberts, John</td>
<td>21-23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Roberts, Sarah</td>
<td>148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Roberts, Thomas</td>
<td>4, 15-17, 23, 43, 91, 99, 112</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Roberts, Timothy</td>
<td>117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rogers, Rebecca</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rollins, Samuel</td>
<td>128, 129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Roscoe, Robert</td>
<td>124</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Salvey, Danny Roland</td>
<td>377</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Salvey, Donald M.</td>
<td>370, 377</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Salvey, Patty Sue</td>
<td>377</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Salway, Joanna</td>
<td>158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Samways, Elizabeth</td>
<td>83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sanders, Anna</td>
<td>226, 228, 229, 390</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sanders, Edward</td>
<td>228, 229</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sanders, John</td>
<td>228, 229</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sayward, Mary (Rishworth) (White)</td>
<td>93</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Schuster, Vern</td>
<td>369</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scrivner, Harriet</td>
<td>304, 306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scrivner, James</td>
<td>304, 313</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seavey, James</td>
<td>131, 132</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seward, Henry</td>
<td>136</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seward, Mary</td>
<td>88, 92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shackford, Abigail</td>
<td>185</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shackford, Elizabeth</td>
<td>185</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shackford, Hannah</td>
<td>174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shackford, John</td>
<td>29, 185, 186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shackford, Joshua</td>
<td>29, 185, 186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shackford, Mary</td>
<td>26, 28, 29, 108, 185, 186, 197</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shackford, Samuel</td>
<td>28, 184-186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shackford, William</td>
<td>28, 29, 185</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sharp, Catherine</td>
<td>237, 238, 250, 253-255, 390</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sharp, Conrad</td>
<td>245, 250-252, 271-273</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sharp, Daniel</td>
<td>250, 252</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Sharp, Elizabeth ......................................................... 250, 251
Sharp, George .......................................................... 251-254
Sharp, Henry ......................................................... 242, 245-254, 256, 267, 273
Sharp, Jacob ........................................................ 247, 250, 252
Sharp, John ........................................................ 260, 261
Sharp, Mary ........................................................ 250, 252
Sharp, Sallie .......................................................... 271
Sharp, Sarah ........................................................ 250, 252
Sharp, William ...................................................... 249, 251, 253
Shatto, Alberta E. ..................................................... 356
Shaw, John Moulton .................................................. 64, 65
Sheldon, Elizabeth .................................................... 64, 67
Sherburne, Samuel ................................................... 185
Silloway, Daniel ........................................................ 47
Simonton, John ....................................................... 255, 256
Sloper, Elizabeth ...................................................... 138
Small, Edward .......................................................... 162
Smith, Elizabeth ..................................................... 121, 163
Smith, Mary (Jewett) .................................................. 163
Smith, Robert F. ....................................................... 344, 347
Smith, Sarah E. ........................................................ 304
Smithson, Deborah ................................................... 131, 132
Smithson, Mary ....................................................... 115, 116
Snodderly, John ....................................................... 271
Snodgrass, Joseph ..................................................... 237
Southel, Seth ......................................................... 124, 130
Spence, Adam ........................................................ 231, 232
Spiess, Anna Maria .................................................... 258, 263, 390
Spiess, Johann Adam .................................................. 263
Spinney, Sarah ........................................................ 195, 196
Squier, Grisel ............................................................ 51
Stalcup, J. .............................................................. 344, 347
Stanley, Mary .......................................................... 145
Stanton, Joanna ....................................................... 102
Stanwood, Experience ............................................... 52
Stanyan, Mary ........................................................ 128, 129
Starbuck, Esther ....................................................... 77, 79
Stephens, Honor ...................................................... 137
Stevens, Elizabeth ................................................... 160
Stiner, Philopena ....................................................... 250, 252
Stiner, Rachel .......................................................... 251, 253
Stone, Jonathan ....................................................... 196
Stone, Mrs. Mary ..................................................... 48
Stowers, Susanna ..................................................... 48
Sturman, Sarah Jane ................................................ 313
Sutherland, Earl ...................................................... 369, 371
Swanson, Carole ..................................................... 360
Swanson, Walter F. ................................................... 359
Sykes, Richard ....................................................... 210, 211
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Tapper, Rosanna</td>
<td>230</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tarr, Benedictus</td>
<td>102, 103</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tateman, Joseph</td>
<td>53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor, Elizabeth (Partlett)</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor, Mary</td>
<td>321</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor, Mrs. Rachel</td>
<td>163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Teague, Joshua</td>
<td>327, 331</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thing, Sarah (Little)</td>
<td>195</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas, Mary</td>
<td>255</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thompson, Elizabeth</td>
<td>172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thompson, John</td>
<td>162, 233, 234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thompson, William</td>
<td>162, 233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tibbetts, Deborah</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tibbetts, Mary (Titcomb)</td>
<td>163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tilghman, Aaron</td>
<td>230</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tilghman, Armigill</td>
<td>229</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tilghman, Christopher</td>
<td>226, 228, 229, 253, 390</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tilghman, Eleanor</td>
<td>230</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tilghman, Elizabeth</td>
<td>230, 237</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tilghman, Gideon</td>
<td>229, 230, 236</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tilghman, Isaac</td>
<td>229</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tilghman, John</td>
<td>228-230, 234, 236, 254</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tilghman, John Stephen</td>
<td>230</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tilghman, Joseph</td>
<td>230</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tilghman, Mary</td>
<td>229</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tilghman, Moses</td>
<td>230</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tilghman, Nicholas</td>
<td>228</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tilghman, Roger</td>
<td>229</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tilghman, Solomon</td>
<td>230</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tilghman, Tobias</td>
<td>237</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tillman, Barbara</td>
<td>255</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tillman, Catherine</td>
<td>255, 256</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tillman, Elizabeth</td>
<td>255, 256</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tillman, Eva</td>
<td>255</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tillman, Henry</td>
<td>255, 256</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tillman, Jacob</td>
<td>255, 256</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tillman, John</td>
<td>255, 256</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tillman, Margaret</td>
<td>255</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tillman, Mary</td>
<td>255, 256</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tillman, Phoebe</td>
<td>255</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tillman, Rachel</td>
<td>255, 279</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tillman, Sarah</td>
<td>255, 256, 271, 278, 314</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tillman, Tobias</td>
<td>7, 237, 247, 249, 250, 253-255, 382</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Toppan, Enoch</td>
<td>174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Triboulet, Carl</td>
<td>369</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trickey, Deborah</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trickey, Ephraim</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trickey, Isaac</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trickey, Joseph</td>
<td>28, 156</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Wheeler, Mrs. Rachel ......................................................... 50
Wheeler, Nathaniel .......................................................... 51
Wheeler, Roger .............................................................. 48
Wheeler, Ruth .................................................................. 46, 51
Wheeler, William .......................................................... 47, 51
Whetenhall, Anna .................................................. 226, 228, 229, 390
Whidden, Abigail ............................................................ 173
Wiggin, Andrew ............................................................ 39, 62
Wildes, Ephraim ............................................................ 196
Wiley, Catherine ............................................................ 291
Wiley, James .................................................................. 291
Wiley, John .................................................................. 7, 283-287, 290
Wiley, Mary .................................................................. 286, 291
Wiley, Nancy ............................................................... 291, 296
Wiley, Peter ................................................................. 285-287
Wiley, Thomas ............................................................. 286
Willix, Anna .................................................................. 123, 124
Willix, Balthasar .......................................................... 119, 121-124, 387-389
Willix, Edward ............................................................. 123
Willix, Hazelelponi .......................................................... 124-126
Willix, Peregrine ........................................................... 122
Willix, Susanna ............................................................ 123
Willix, Susannah ........................................................... 124, 125
Wills, Benjamin ............................................................. 32, 33
Wilson, Mary .................................................................. 48
Wilson, Minerva E. ......................................................... 356
Wing, John ............................................................... 21-23, 183
Wingate, John ............................................................... 21-23
Wise, Sarah .................................................................. 47
Wiseman, Elizabeth .......................................................... 41
Witrents, Dorothy ........................................................... 49, 50
Wittum, Elizabeth ........................................................... 28
Wood, Mrs. Elizabeth ...................................................... 46, 52
Wood, Obadiah ............................................................. 124, 126, 127
Woodman, Alice ............................................................ 163
Woodman, Anne ............................................................ 158
Woodman, Archelaus ......................................................... 158, 163
Woodman, David ............................................................ 158
Woodman, Downing .......................................................... 163
Woodman, Ebenezer ......................................................... 163
Woodman, Edward .......................................................... 6, 157-160, 163, 381
Woodman, Elizabeth .......................................................... 158, 163, 164
Woodman, Jane ............................................................. 160
Woodman, John ............................................................. 72, 113, 133, 134, 147, 148, 160-163
Woodman, Jonathan .......................................................... 156-158, 160-164
Woodman, Joshua ............................................................. 160, 163
Woodman, Mary ............................................................. 158, 160, 162-164, 174, 190, 191